DANIEL DERONDA

By George Eliot

Let thy chief terror be of thine own soul:

There, 'mid the throng of hurrying desires

That trample on the dead to seize their spoil,

Lurks vengeance, footless, irresistible

As exhalations laden with slow death,

And o'er the fairest troop of captured joys

Breathes pallid pestilence.

CONTENTS.

BOOK I. THE SPOILED CHILD

" II. MEETING STREAMS

" III. MAIDENS CHOOSING

" IV. GWENDOLEN GETS HER CHOICE

" V. MORDECAI

" VI. REVELATIONS

" VII. THE MOTHER AND THE SON

" VIII. FRUIT AND SEED

DANIEL DERONDA.

BOOK I.--THE SPOILED CHILD.

CHAPTER I.

Men can do nothing without the make-believe of a beginning. Even

science, the strict measurer, is obliged to start with a make-believe

unit, and must fix on a point in the stars' unceasing journey when his

sidereal clock shall pretend that time is at Nought. His less accurate

grandmother Poetry has always been understood to start in the middle;

but on reflection it appears that her proceeding is not very different

from his; since Science, too, reckons backward as well as forward,

divides his unit into billions, and with his clock-finger at Nought

really sets off \_in medias res\_. No retrospect will take us to

the true beginning; and whether our prologue be in heaven or on earth,

it is but a fraction of that all-presupposing fact with which our

story sets out.

Was she beautiful or not beautiful? and what was the secret of form or

expression which gave the dynamic quality to her glance? Was the good

or the evil genius dominant in those beams? Probably the evil; else why

was the effect that of unrest rather than of undisturbed charm? Why was

the wish to look again felt as coercion and not as a longing in which

the whole being consents?

She who raised these questions in Daniel Deronda's mind was occupied in

gambling: not in the open air under a southern sky, tossing coppers on

a ruined wall, with rags about her limbs; but in one of those splendid

resorts which the enlightenment of ages has prepared for the same

species of pleasure at a heavy cost of guilt mouldings, dark-toned

color and chubby nudities, all correspondingly heavy--forming a

suitable condenser for human breath belonging, in great part, to the

highest fashion, and not easily procurable to be breathed in elsewhere

in the like proportion, at least by persons of little fashion.

It was near four o'clock on a September day, so that the atmosphere was

well-brewed to a visible haze. There was deep stillness, broken only by

a light rattle, a light chink, a small sweeping sound, and an

occasional monotone in French, such as might be expected to issue from

an ingeniously constructed automaton. Round two long tables were

gathered two serried crowds of human beings, all save one having their

faces and attention bent on the tables. The one exception was a

melancholy little boy, with his knees and calves simply in their

natural clothing of epidermis, but for the rest of his person in a

fancy dress. He alone had his face turned toward the doorway, and

fixing on it the blank gaze of a bedizened child stationed as a

masquerading advertisement on the platform of an itinerant show, stood

close behind a lady deeply engaged at the roulette-table.

About this table fifty or sixty persons were assembled, many in the

outer rows, where there was occasionally a deposit of new-comers, being

mere spectators, only that one of them, usually a woman, might now and

then be observed putting down a five-franc with a simpering air, just

to see what the passion of gambling really was. Those who were taking

their pleasure at a higher strength, and were absorbed in play, showed

very distant varieties of European type: Livonian and Spanish,

Graeco-Italian and miscellaneous German, English aristocratic and

English plebeian. Here certainly was a striking admission of human

equality. The white bejewelled fingers of an English countess were very

near touching a bony, yellow, crab-like hand stretching a bared wrist

to clutch a heap of coin--a hand easy to sort with the square, gaunt

face, deep-set eyes, grizzled eyebrows, and ill-combed scanty hair

which seemed a slight metamorphosis of the vulture. And where else

would her ladyship have graciously consented to sit by that dry-lipped

feminine figure prematurely old, withered after short bloom like her

artificial flowers, holding a shabby velvet reticule before her, and

occasionally putting in her mouth the point with which she pricked her

card? There too, very near the fair countess, was a respectable London

tradesman, blonde and soft-handed, his sleek hair scrupulously parted

behind and before, conscious of circulars addressed to the nobility and

gentry, whose distinguished patronage enabled him to take his holidays

fashionably, and to a certain extent in their distinguished company.

Not his gambler's passion that nullifies appetite, but a well-fed

leisure, which, in the intervals of winning money in business and

spending it showily, sees no better resource than winning money in play

and spending it yet more showily--reflecting always that Providence had

never manifested any disapprobation of his amusement, and dispassionate

enough to leave off if the sweetness of winning much and seeing others

lose had turned to the sourness of losing much and seeing others win.

For the vice of gambling lay in losing money at it. In his bearing

there might be something of the tradesman, but in his pleasures he was

fit to rank with the owners of the oldest titles. Standing close to his

chair was a handsome Italian, calm, statuesque, reaching across him to

place the first pile of napoleons from a new bagful just brought him by

an envoy with a scrolled mustache. The pile was in half a minute pushed

over to an old bewigged woman with eye-glasses pinching her nose. There

was a slight gleam, a faint mumbling smile about the lips of the old

woman; but the statuesque Italian remained impassive, and--probably

secure in an infallible system which placed his foot on the neck of

chance--immediately prepared a new pile. So did a man with the air of

an emaciated beau or worn-out libertine, who looked at life through one

eye-glass, and held out his hand tremulously when he asked for change.

It could surely be no severity of system, but rather some dream of

white crows, or the induction that the eighth of the month was lucky,

which inspired the fierce yet tottering impulsiveness of his play.

But, while every single player differed markedly from every other,

there was a certain uniform negativeness of expression which had the

effect of a mask--as if they had all eaten of some root that for the

time compelled the brains of each to the same narrow monotony of action.

Deronda's first thought when his eyes fell on this scene of dull,

gas-poisoned absorption, was that the gambling of Spanish shepherd-boys

had seemed to him more enviable:--so far Rousseau might be justified in

maintaining that art and science had done a poor service to mankind.

But suddenly he felt the moment become dramatic. His attention was

arrested by a young lady who, standing at an angle not far from him,

was the last to whom his eyes traveled. She was bending and speaking

English to a middle-aged lady seated at play beside her: but the next

instant she returned to her play, and showed the full height of a

graceful figure, with a face which might possibly be looked at without

admiration, but could hardly be passed with indifference.

The inward debate which she raised in Deronda gave to his eyes a

growing expression of scrutiny, tending farther and farther away from

the glow of mingled undefined sensibilities forming admiration. At one

moment they followed the movements of the figure, of the arms and

hands, as this problematic sylph bent forward to deposit her stake with

an air of firm choice; and the next they returned to the face which, at

present unaffected by beholders, was directed steadily toward the game.

The sylph was a winner; and as her taper fingers, delicately gloved in

pale-gray, were adjusting the coins which had been pushed toward her in

order to pass them back again to the winning point, she looked round

her with a survey too markedly cold and neutral not to have in it a

little of that nature which we call art concealing an inward exultation.

But in the course of that survey her eyes met Deronda's, and instead of

averting them as she would have desired to do, she was unpleasantly

conscious that they were arrested--how long? The darting sense that he

was measuring her and looking down on her as an inferior, that he was

of different quality from the human dross around her, that he felt

himself in a region outside and above her, and was examining her as a

specimen of a lower order, roused a tingling resentment which stretched

the moment with conflict. It did not bring the blood to her cheeks, but

it sent it away from her lips. She controlled herself by the help of an

inward defiance, and without other sign of emotion than this

lip-paleness turned to her play. But Deronda's gaze seemed to have

acted as an evil eye. Her stake was gone. No matter; she had been

winning ever since she took to roulette with a few napoleons at

command, and had a considerable reserve. She had begun to believe in

her luck, others had begun to believe in it: she had visions of being

followed by a \_cortÃ¨ge\_ who would worship her as a goddess of luck and

watch her play as a directing augury. Such things had been known of

male gamblers; why should not a woman have a like supremacy? Her friend

and chaperon who had not wished her to play at first was beginning to

approve, only administering the prudent advice to stop at the right

moment and carry money back to England--advice to which Gwendolen had

replied that she cared for the excitement of play, not the winnings. On

that supposition the present moment ought to have made the flood-tide

in her eager experience of gambling. Yet, when her next stake was swept

away, she felt the orbits of her eyes getting hot, and the certainty

she had (without looking) of that man still watching her was something

like a pressure which begins to be torturing. The more reason to her

why she should not flinch, but go on playing as if she were indifferent

to loss or gain. Her friend touched her elbow and proposed that they

should quit the table. For reply Gwendolen put ten louis on the same

spot: she was in that mood of defiance in which the mind loses sight of

any end beyond the satisfaction of enraged resistance; and with the

puerile stupidity of a dominant impulse includes luck among its objects

of defiance. Since she was not winning strikingly, the next best thing

was to lose strikingly. She controlled her muscles, and showed no

tremor of mouth or hands. Each time her stake was swept off she doubled

it. Many were now watching her, but the sole observation she was

conscious of was Deronda's, who, though she never looked toward him,

she was sure had not moved away. Such a drama takes no long while to

play out: development and catastrophe can often be measured by nothing

clumsier than the moment-hand. "Faites votre jeu, mesdames et

messieurs," said the automatic voice of destiny from between the

mustache and imperial of the croupier: and Gwendolen's arm was

stretched to deposit her last poor heap of napoleons. "Le jeu ne va

plus," said destiny. And in five seconds Gwendolen turned from the

table, but turned resolutely with her face toward Deronda and looked at

him. There was a smile of irony in his eyes as their glances met; but

it was at least better that he should have disregarded her as one of an

insect swarm who had no individual physiognomy. Besides, in spite of

his superciliousness and irony, it was difficult to believe that he did

not admire her spirit as well as her person: he was young, handsome,

distinguished in appearance--not one of these ridiculous and dowdy

Philistines who thought it incumbent on them to blight the gaming-table

with a sour look of protest as they passed by it. The general

conviction that we are admirable does not easily give way before a

single negative; rather when any of Vanity's large family, male or

female, find their performance received coldly, they are apt to believe

that a little more of it will win over the unaccountable dissident. In

Gwendolen's habits of mind it had been taken for granted that she knew

what was admirable and that she herself was admired. This basis of her

thinking had received a disagreeable concussion, and reeled a little,

but was not easily to be overthrown.

In the evening the same room was more stiflingly heated, was brilliant

with gas and with the costumes of ladies who floated their trains along

it or were seated on the ottomans.

The Nereid in sea-green robes and silver ornaments, with a pale

sea-green feather fastened in silver falling backward over her green

hat and light brown hair, was Gwendolen Harleth. She was under the

wing, or rather soared by the shoulder, of the lady who had sat by her

at the roulette-table; and with them was a gentleman with a white

mustache and clipped hair: solid-browed, stiff and German. They were

walking about or standing to chat with acquaintances, and Gwendolen was

much observed by the seated groups.

"A striking girl--that Miss Harleth--unlike others."

"Yes, she has got herself up as a sort of serpent now--all green and

silver, and winds her neck about a little more than usual."

"Oh, she must always be doing something extraordinary. She is that kind

of girl, I fancy. Do you think her pretty, Mr. Vandernoodt?"

"Very. A man might risk hanging for her--I mean a fool might."

"You like a \_nez retroussÃ©\_, then, and long narrow eyes?"

"When they go with such an \_ensemble\_."

"The \_ensemble du serpent\_?"

"If you will. Woman was tempted by a serpent; why not man?"

"She is certainly very graceful; but she wants a tinge of color in her

cheeks. It is a sort of Lamia beauty she has."

"On the contrary, I think her complexion one of her chief charms. It is

a warm paleness; it looks thoroughly healthy. And that delicate nose

with its gradual little upward curve is distracting. And then her

mouth--there never was a prettier mouth, the lips curled backward so

finely, eh, Mackworth?"

"Think so? I cannot endure that sort of mouth. It looks so

self-complacent, as if it knew its own beauty--the curves are too

immovable. I like a mouth that trembles more."

"For my part, I think her odious," said a dowager. "It is wonderful

what unpleasant girls get into vogue. Who are these Langens? Does

anybody know them?"

"They are quite \_comme il faut\_. I have dined with them several times

at the \_Russie\_. The baroness is English. Miss Harleth calls her

cousin. The girl herself is thoroughly well-bred, and as clever as

possible."

"Dear me! and the baron?".

"A very good furniture picture."

"Your baroness is always at the roulette-table," said Mackworth. "I

fancy she has taught the girl to gamble."

"Oh, the old woman plays a very sober game; drops a ten-franc piece

here and there. The girl is more headlong. But it is only a freak."

"I hear she has lost all her winnings to-day. Are they rich? Who knows?"

"Ah, who knows? Who knows that about anybody?" said Mr. Vandernoodt,

moving off to join the Langens.

The remark that Gwendolen wound her neck about more than usual this

evening was true. But it was not that she might carry out the serpent

idea more completely: it was that she watched for any chance of seeing

Deronda, so that she might inquire about this stranger, under whose

measuring gaze she was still wincing. At last her opportunity came.

"Mr. Vandernoodt, you know everybody," said Gwendolen, not too eagerly,

rather with a certain languor of utterance which she sometimes gave to

her clear soprano. "Who is that near the door?"

"There are half a dozen near the door. Do you mean that old Adonis in

the George the Fourth wig?"

"No, no; the dark-haired young man on the right with the dreadful

expression."

"Dreadful, do you call it? I think he is an uncommonly fine fellow."

"But who is he?"

"He is lately come to our hotel with Sir Hugo Mallinger."

"Sir Hugo Mallinger?"

"Yes. Do you know him?"

"No." (Gwendolen colored slightly.) "He has a place near us, but he

never comes to it. What did you say was the name of that gentleman near

the door?"

"Deronda--Mr. Deronda."

"What a delightful name! Is he an Englishman?"

"Yes. He is reported to be rather closely related to the baronet. You

are interested in him?"

"Yes. I think he is not like young men in general."

"And you don't admire young men in general?"

"Not in the least. I always know what they will say. I can't at all

guess what this Mr. Deronda would say. What \_does\_ he say?"

"Nothing, chiefly. I sat with his party for a good hour last night on

the terrace, and he never spoke--and was not smoking either. He looked

bored."

"Another reason why I should like to know him. I am always bored."

"I should think he would be charmed to have an introduction. Shall I

bring it about? Will you allow it, baroness?"

"Why not?--since he is related to Sir Hugo Mallinger. It is a new

\_rÃ´le\_ of yours, Gwendolen, to be always bored," continued Madame von

Langen, when Mr. Vandernoodt had moved away. "Until now you have always

seemed eager about something from morning till night."

"That is just because I am bored to death. If I am to leave off play I

must break my arm or my collar-bone. I must make something happen;

unless you will go into Switzerland and take me up the Matterhorn."

"Perhaps this Mr. Deronda's acquaintance will do instead of the

Matterhorn."

"Perhaps."

But Gwendolen did not make Deronda's acquaintance on this occasion. Mr.

Vandernoodt did not succeed in bringing him up to her that evening, and

when she re-entered her own room she found a letter recalling her home.

CHAPTER II.

This man contrives a secret 'twixt us two,

That he may quell me with his meeting eyes

Like one who quells a lioness at bay.

This was the letter Gwendolen found on her table:--

DEAREST CHILD.--I have been expecting to hear from you for a week. In

your last you said the Langens thought of leaving Leubronn and going

to Baden. How could you be so thoughtless as to leave me in

uncertainty about your address? I am in the greatest anxiety lest this

should not reach you. In any case, you were to come home at the end of

September, and I must now entreat you to return as quickly as

possible, for if you spent all your money it would be out of my power

to send you any more, and you must not borrow of the Langens, for I

could not repay them. This is the sad truth, my child--I wish I could

prepare you for it better--but a dreadful calamity has befallen us

all. You know nothing about business and will not understand it; but

Grapnell & Co. have failed for a million, and we are totally

ruined--your aunt Gascoigne as well as I, only that your uncle has his

benefice, so that by putting down their carriage and getting interest

for the boys, the family can go on. All the property our poor father

saved for us goes to pay the liabilities. There is nothing I can call

my own. It is better you should know this at once, though it rends my

heart to have to tell it you. Of course we cannot help thinking what a

pity it was that you went away just when you did. But I shall never

reproach you, my dear child; I would save you from all trouble if I

could. On your way home you will have time to prepare yourself for the

change you will find. We shall perhaps leave Offendene at once, for we

hope that Mr. Haynes, who wanted it before, may be ready to take it

off my hands. Of course we cannot go to the rectory--there is not a

corner there to spare. We must get some hut or other to shelter us,

and we must live on your uncle Gascoigne's charity, until I see what

else can be done. I shall not be able to pay the debts to the

tradesmen besides the servants' wages. Summon up your fortitude, my

dear child; we must resign ourselves to God's will. But it is hard to

resign one's self to Mr. Lassman's wicked recklessness, which they say

was the cause of the failure. Your poor sisters can only cry with me

and give me no help. If you were once here, there might be a break in

the cloud--I always feel it impossible that you can have been meant

for poverty. If the Langens wish to remain abroad, perhaps you can put

yourself under some one else's care for the journey. But come as soon

as you can to your afflicted and loving mamma,

FANNY DAVILOW.

The first effect of this letter on Gwendolen was half-stupefying. The

implicit confidence that her destiny must be one of luxurious ease,

where any trouble that occurred would be well clad and provided for,

had been stronger in her own mind than in her mamma's, being fed there

by her youthful blood and that sense of superior claims which made a

large part of her consciousness. It was almost as difficult for her to

believe suddenly that her position had become one of poverty and of

humiliating dependence, as it would have been to get into the strong

current of her blooming life the chill sense that her death would

really come. She stood motionless for a few minutes, then tossed off

her hat and automatically looked in the glass. The coils of her smooth

light-brown hair were still in order perfect enough for a ball-room;

and as on other nights, Gwendolen might have looked lingeringly at

herself for pleasure (surely an allowable indulgence); but now she took

no conscious note of her reflected beauty, and simply stared right

before her as if she had been jarred by a hateful sound and was waiting

for any sign of its cause. By-and-by she threw herself in the corner of

the red velvet sofa, took up the letter again and read it twice

deliberately, letting it at last fall on the ground, while she rested

her clasped hands on her lap and sat perfectly still, shedding no

tears. Her impulse was to survey and resist the situation rather than

to wail over it. There was no inward exclamation of "Poor mamma!" Her

mamma had never seemed to get much enjoyment out of life, and if

Gwendolen had been at this moment disposed to feel pity she would have

bestowed it on herself--for was she not naturally and rightfully the

chief object of her mamma's anxiety too? But it was anger, it was

resistance that possessed her; it was bitter vexation that she had lost

her gains at roulette, whereas if her luck had continued through this

one day she would have had a handsome sum to carry home, or she might

have gone on playing and won enough to support them all. Even now was

it not possible? She had only four napoleons left in her purse, but she

possessed some ornaments which she could sell: a practice so common in

stylish society at German baths that there was no need to be ashamed of

it; and even if she had not received her mamma's letter, she would

probably have decided to get money for an Etruscan necklace which she

happened not to have been wearing since her arrival; nay, she might

have done so with an agreeable sense that she was living with some

intensity and escaping humdrum. With ten louis at her disposal and a

return of her former luck, which seemed probable, what could she do

better than go on playing for a few days? If her friends at home

disapproved of the way in which she got the money, as they certainly

would, still the money would be there. Gwendolen's imagination dwelt on

this course and created agreeable consequences, but not with unbroken

confidence and rising certainty as it would have done if she had been

touched with the gambler's mania. She had gone to the roulette-table

not because of passion, but in search of it: her mind was still sanely

capable of picturing balanced probabilities, and while the chance of

winning allured her, the chance of losing thrust itself on her with

alternate strength and made a vision from which her pride sank

sensitively. For she was resolved not to tell the Langens that any

misfortune had befallen her family, or to make herself in any way

indebted to their compassion; and if she were to part with her jewelry

to any observable extent, they would interfere by inquiries and

remonstrances. The course that held the least risk of intolerable

annoyance was to raise money on her necklace early in the morning, tell

the Langens that her mother desired her immediate return without giving

a reason, and take the train for Brussels that evening. She had no maid

with her, and the Langens might make difficulties about her returning

home, but her will was peremptory.

Instead of going to bed she made as brilliant a light as she could and

began to pack, working diligently, though all the while visited by the

scenes that might take place on the coming day--now by the tiresome

explanations and farewells, and the whirling journey toward a changed

home, now by the alternative of staying just another day and standing

again at the roulette-table. But always in this latter scene there was

the presence of that Deronda, watching her with exasperating irony,

and--the two keen experiences were inevitably revived

together--beholding her again forsaken by luck. This importunate image

certainly helped to sway her resolve on the side of immediate

departure, and to urge her packing to the point which would make a

change of mind inconvenient. It had struck twelve when she came into

her room, and by the time she was assuring herself that she had left

out only what was necessary, the faint dawn was stealing through the

white blinds and dulling her candles. What was the use of going to bed?

Her cold bath was refreshment enough, and she saw that a slight trace

of fatigue about the eyes only made her look the more interesting.

Before six o'clock she was completely equipped in her gray traveling

dress even to her felt hat, for she meant to walk out as soon as she

could count on seeing other ladies on their way to the springs. And

happening to be seated sideways before the long strip of mirror between

her two windows she turned to look at herself, leaning her elbow on the

back of the chair in an attitude that might have been chosen for her

portrait. It is possible to have a strong self-love without any

self-satisfaction, rather with a self-discontent which is the more

intense because one's own little core of egoistic sensibility is a

supreme care; but Gwendolen knew nothing of such inward strife. She had

a \_naÃ¯ve\_ delight in her fortunate self, which any but the harshest

saintliness will have some indulgence for in a girl who had every day

seen a pleasant reflection of that self in her friends' flattery as

well as in the looking-glass. And even in this beginning of troubles,

while for lack of anything else to do she sat gazing at her image in

the growing light, her face gathered a complacency gradual as the

cheerfulness of the morning. Her beautiful lips curled into a more and

more decided smile, till at last she took off her hat, leaned forward

and kissed the cold glass which had looked so warm. How could she

believe in sorrow? If it attacked her, she felt the force to crush it,

to defy it, or run away from it, as she had done already. Anything

seemed more possible than that she could go on bearing miseries, great

or small.

Madame von Langen never went out before breakfast, so that Gwendolen

could safely end her early walk by taking her way homeward through the

Obere Strasse in which was the needed shop, sure to be open after

seven. At that hour any observers whom she minded would be either on

their walks in the region of the springs, or would be still in their

bedrooms; but certainly there was one grand hotel, the \_Czarina\_ from

which eyes might follow her up to Mr. Wiener's door. This was a chance

to be risked: might she not be going in to buy something which had

struck her fancy? This implicit falsehood passed through her mind as

she remembered that the \_Czarina\_ was Deronda's hotel; but she was then

already far up the Obere Strasse, and she walked on with her usual

floating movement, every line in her figure and drapery falling in

gentle curves attractive to all eyes except those which discerned in

them too close a resemblance to the serpent, and objected to the

revival of serpent-worship. She looked neither to the right hand nor to

the left, and transacted her business in the shop with a coolness which

gave little Mr. Weiner nothing to remark except her proud grace of

manner, and the superior size and quality of the three central

turquoises in the necklace she offered him. They had belonged to a

chain once her father's: but she had never known her father; and the

necklace was in all respects the ornament she could most conveniently

part with. Who supposes that it is an impossible contradiction to be

superstitious and rationalizing at the same time? Roulette encourages a

romantic superstition as to the chances of the game, and the most

prosaic rationalism as to human sentiments which stand in the way of

raising needful money. Gwendolen's dominant regret was that after all

she had only nine louis to add to the four in her purse: these Jew

dealers were so unscrupulous in taking advantage of Christians

unfortunate at play! But she was the Langens' guest in their hired

apartment, and had nothing to pay there: thirteen louis would do more

than take her home; even if she determined on risking three, the

remaining ten would more than suffice, since she meant to travel right

on, day and night. As she turned homeward, nay, entered and seated

herself in the \_salon\_ to await her friends and breakfast, she still

wavered as to her immediate departure, or rather she had concluded to

tell the Langens simply that she had had a letter from her mamma

desiring her return, and to leave it still undecided when she should

start. It was already the usual breakfast-time, and hearing some one

enter as she was leaning back rather tired and hungry with her eyes

shut, she rose expecting to see one or other of the Langens--the words

which might determine her lingering at least another day, ready-formed

to pass her lips. But it was the servant bringing in a small packet for

Miss Harleth, which had at that moment been left at the door. Gwendolen

took it in her hand and immediately hurried into her own room. She

looked paler and more agitated than when she had first read her mamma's

letter. Something--she never quite knew what--revealed to her before

she opened the packet that it contained the necklace she had just

parted with. Underneath the paper it was wrapped in a cambric

handkerchief, and within this was a scrap of torn-off note-paper, on

which was written with a pencil, in clear but rapid handwriting--"\_A

stranger who has found Miss Harleth's necklace returns it to her with

the hope that she will not again risk the loss of it.\_"

Gwendolen reddened with the vexation of wounded pride. A large corner

of the handkerchief seemed to have been recklessly torn off to get rid

of a mark; but she at once believed in the first image of "the

stranger" that presented itself to her mind. It was Deronda; he must

have seen her go into the shop; he must have gone in immediately after

and repurchased the necklace. He had taken an unpardonable liberty, and

had dared to place her in a thoroughly hateful position. What could she

do?--Not, assuredly, act on her conviction that it was he who had sent

her the necklace and straightway send it back to him: that would be to

face the possibility that she had been mistaken; nay, even if the

"stranger" were he and no other, it would be something too gross for

her to let him know that she had divined this, and to meet him again

with that recognition in their minds. He knew very well that he was

entangling her in helpless humiliation: it was another way of smiling

at her ironically, and taking the air of a supercilious mentor.

Gwendolen felt the bitter tears of mortification rising and rolling

down her cheeks. No one had ever before dared to treat her with irony

and contempt. One thing was clear: she must carry out her resolution to

quit this place at once; it was impossible for her to reappear in the

public \_salon\_, still less stand at the gaming-table with the risk of

seeing Deronda. Now came an importunate knock at the door: breakfast

was ready. Gwendolen with a passionate movement thrust necklace,

cambric, scrap of paper, and all into her \_nÃ©cessaire\_, pressed her

handkerchief against her face, and after pausing a minute or two to

summon back her proud self-control, went to join her friends. Such

signs of tears and fatigue as were left seemed accordant enough with

the account she at once gave of her having sat up to do her packing,

instead of waiting for help from her friend's maid. There was much

protestation, as she had expected, against her traveling alone, but she

persisted in refusing any arrangements for companionship. She would be

put into the ladies' compartment and go right on. She could rest

exceedingly well in the train, and was afraid of nothing.

In this way it happened that Gwendolen never reappeared at the

roulette-table, but that Thursday evening left Leubronn for Brussels,

and on Saturday morning arrived at Offendene, the home to which she and

her family were soon to say a last good-bye.

CHAPTER III.

"Let no flower of the spring pass by us; let us crown ourselves with

rosebuds before they be withered."--BOOK OF WISDOM.

Pity that Offendene was not the home of Miss Harleth's childhood, or

endeared to her by family memories! A human life, I think, should be

well rooted in some spot of a native land, where it may get the love of

tender kinship for the face of earth, for the labors men go forth to,

for the sounds and accents that haunt it, for whatever will give that

early home a familiar unmistakable difference amid the future widening

of knowledge: a spot where the definiteness of early memories may be

inwrought with affection, and--kindly acquaintance with all neighbors,

even to the dogs and donkeys, may spread not by sentimental effort and

reflection, but as a sweet habit of the blood. At five years old,

mortals are not prepared to be citizens of the world, to be stimulated

by abstract nouns, to soar above preference into impartiality; and that

prejudice in favor of milk with which we blindly begin, is a type of

the way body and soul must get nourished at least for a time. The best

introduction to astronomy is to think of the nightly heavens as a

little lot of stars belonging to one's own homestead.

But this blessed persistence in which affection can take root had been

wanting in Gwendolen's life. It was only a year before her recall from

Leubronn that Offendene had been chosen as her mamma's home, simply for

its nearness to Pennicote Rectory, and that Mrs. Davilow, Gwendolen,

and her four half-sisters (the governess and the maid following in

another vehicle) had been driven along the avenue for the first time,

on a late October afternoon when the rooks were crawing loudly above

them, and the yellow elm-leaves were whirling.

The season suited the aspect of the old oblong red-brick house, rather

too anxiously ornamented with stone at every line, not excepting the

double row of narrow windows and the large square portico. The stone

encouraged a greenish lichen, the brick a powdery gray, so that though

the building was rigidly rectangular there was no harshness in the

physiognomy which it turned to the three avenues cut east, west and

south in the hundred yards' breadth of old plantation encircling the

immediate grounds. One would have liked the house to have been lifted

on a knoll, so as to look beyond its own little domain to the long

thatched roofs of the distant villages, the church towers, the

scattered homesteads, the gradual rise of surging woods, and the green

breadths of undulating park which made the beautiful face of the earth

in that part of Wessex. But though standing thus behind, a screen amid

flat pastures, it had on one side a glimpse of the wider world in the

lofty curves of the chalk downs, grand steadfast forms played over by

the changing days.

The house was but just large enough to be called a mansion, and was

moderately rented, having no manor attached to it, and being rather

difficult to let with its sombre furniture and faded upholstery. But

inside and outside it was what no beholder could suppose to be

inhabited by retired trades-people: a certainty which was worth many

conveniences to tenants who not only had the taste that shrinks from

new finery, but also were in that border-territory of rank where

annexation is a burning topic: and to take up her abode in a house

which had once sufficed for dowager countesses gave a perceptible tinge

to Mrs. Davilow's satisfaction in having an establishment of her own.

This, rather mysteriously to Gwendolen, appeared suddenly possible on

the death of her step-father, Captain Davilow, who had for the last

nine years joined his family only in a brief and fitful manner, enough

to reconcile them to his long absences; but she cared much more for the

fact than for the explanation. All her prospects had become more

agreeable in consequence. She had disliked their former way of life,

roving from one foreign watering-place or Parisian apartment to

another, always feeling new antipathies to new suites of hired

furniture, and meeting new people under conditions which made her

appear of little importance; and the variation of having passed two

years at a showy school, where, on all occasions of display, she had

been put foremost, had only deepened her sense that so exceptional a

person as herself could hardly remain in ordinary circumstances or in a

social position less than advantageous. Any fear of this latter evil

was banished now that her mamma was to have an establishment; for on

the point of birth Gwendolen was quite easy. She had no notion how her

maternal grandfather got the fortune inherited by his two daughters;

but he had been a West Indian--which seemed to exclude further

question; and she knew that her father's family was so high as to take

no notice of her mamma, who nevertheless preserved with much pride the

miniature of a Lady Molly in that connection. She would probably have

known much more about her father but for a little incident which

happened when she was twelve years old. Mrs. Davilow had brought out,

as she did only at wide intervals, various memorials of her first

husband, and while showing his miniature to Gwendolen recalled with a

fervor which seemed to count on a peculiar filial sympathy, the fact

that dear papa had died when his little daughter was in long clothes.

Gwendolen, immediately thinking of the unlovable step-father whom she

had been acquainted with the greater part of her life while her frocks

were short, said--

"Why did you marry again, mamma? It would have been nicer if you had

not."

Mrs. Davilow colored deeply, a slight convulsive movement passed over

her face, and straightway shutting up the memorials she said, with a

violence quite unusual in her--

"You have no feeling, child!"

Gwendolen, who was fond of her mamma, felt hurt and ashamed, and had

never since dared to ask a question about her father.

This was not the only instance in which she had brought on herself the

pain of some filial compunction. It was always arranged, when possible,

that she should have a small bed in her mamma's room; for Mrs.

Davilow's motherly tenderness clung chiefly to her eldest girl, who had

been born in her happier time. One night under an attack of pain she

found that the specific regularly placed by her bedside had been

forgotten, and begged Gwendolen to get out of bed and reach it for her.

That healthy young lady, snug and warm as a rosy infant in her little

couch, objected to step out into the cold, and lying perfectly still,

grumbling a refusal. Mrs. Davilow went without the medicine and never

reproached her daughter; but the next day Gwendolen was keenly

conscious of what must be in her mamma's mind, and tried to make amends

by caresses which cost her no effort. Having always been the pet and

pride of the household, waited on by mother, sisters, governess and

maids, as if she had been a princess in exile, she naturally found it

difficult to think her own pleasure less important than others made it,

and when it was positively thwarted felt an astonished resentment apt,

in her cruder days, to vent itself in one of those passionate acts

which look like a contradiction of habitual tendencies. Though never

even as a child thoughtlessly cruel, nay delighting to rescue drowning

insects and watch their recovery, there was a disagreeable silent

remembrance of her having strangled her sister's canary-bird in a final

fit of exasperation at its shrill singing which had again and again

jarringly interrupted her own. She had taken pains to buy a white mouse

for her sister in retribution, and though inwardly excusing herself on

the ground of a peculiar sensitiveness which was a mark of her general

superiority, the thought of that infelonious murder had always made her

wince. Gwendolen's nature was not remorseless, but she liked to make

her penances easy, and now that she was twenty and more, some of her

native force had turned into a self-control by which she guarded

herself from penitential humiliation. There was more show of fire and

will in her than ever, but there was more calculation underneath it.

On this day of arrival at Offendene, which not even Mrs. Davilow had

seen before--the place having been taken for her by her brother-in-law,

Mr. Gascoigne--when all had got down from the carriage, and were

standing under the porch in front of the open door, so that they could

have a general view of the place and a glimpse of the stone hall and

staircase hung with sombre pictures, but enlivened by a bright wood

fire, no one spoke; mamma, the four sisters and the governess all

looked at Gwendolen, as if their feelings depended entirely on her

decision. Of the girls, from Alice in her sixteenth year to Isabel in

her tenth, hardly anything could be said on a first view, but that they

were girlish, and that their black dresses were getting shabby. Miss

Merry was elderly and altogether neutral in expression. Mrs. Davilow's

worn beauty seemed the more pathetic for the look of entire appeal

which she cast at Gwendolen, who was glancing round at the house, the

landscape and the entrance hall with an air of rapid judgment. Imagine

a young race-horse in the paddock among untrimmed ponies and patient

hacks.

"Well, dear, what do you think of the place," said Mrs. Davilow at

last, in a gentle, deprecatory tone.

"I think it is charming," said Gwendolen, quickly. "A romantic place;

anything delightful may happen in it; it would be a good background for

anything. No one need be ashamed of living here."

"There is certainly nothing common about it."

"Oh, it would do for fallen royalty or any sort of grand poverty. We

ought properly to have been living in splendor, and have come down to

this. It would have been as romantic as could be. But I thought my

uncle and aunt Gascoigne would be here to meet us, and my cousin Anna,"

added Gwendolen, her tone changed to sharp surprise.

"We are early," said Mrs. Davilow, and entering the hall, she said to

the housekeeper who came forward, "You expect Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne?"

"Yes, madam; they were here yesterday to give particular orders about

the fires and the dinner. But as to fires, I've had 'em in all the

rooms for the last week, and everything is well aired. I could wish

some of the furniture paid better for all the cleaning it's had, but I

\_think\_ you'll see the brasses have been done justice to. I \_think\_

when Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne come, they'll tell you nothing has been

neglected. They'll be here at five, for certain."

This satisfied Gwendolen, who was not prepared to have their arrival

treated with indifference; and after tripping a little way up the

matted stone staircase to take a survey there, she tripped down again,

and followed by all the girls looked into each of the rooms opening

from the hall--the dining-room all dark oak and worn red satin damask,

with a copy of snarling, worrying dogs from Snyders over the

side-board, and a Christ breaking bread over the mantel-piece; the

library with a general aspect and smell of old brown-leather; and

lastly, the drawing-room, which was entered through a small antechamber

crowded with venerable knick-knacks.

"Mamma, mamma, pray come here!" said Gwendolen, Mrs. Davilow having

followed slowly in talk with the housekeeper. "Here is an organ. I will

be Saint Cecilia: some one shall paint me as Saint Cecilia. Jocosa

(this was her name for Miss Merry), let down my hair. See, mamma?"

She had thrown off her hat and gloves, and seated herself before the

organ in an admirable pose, looking upward; while the submissive and

sad Jocosa took out the one comb which fastened the coil of hair, and

then shook out the mass till it fell in a smooth light-brown stream far

below its owner's slim waist.

Mrs. Davilow smiled and said, "A charming picture, my dear!" not

indifferent to the display of her pet, even in the presence of a

housekeeper. Gwendolen rose and laughed with delight. All this seemed

quite to the purpose on entering a new house which was so excellent a

background.

"What a queer, quaint, picturesque room!" she went on, looking about

her. "I like these old embroidered chairs, and the garlands on the

wainscot, and the pictures that may be anything. That one with the

ribs--nothing but ribs and darkness--I should think that is Spanish,

mamma."

"Oh, Gwendolen!" said the small Isabel, in a tone of astonishment,

while she held open a hinged panel of the wainscot at the other end of

the room.

Every one, Gwendolen first, went to look. The opened panel had

disclosed the picture of an upturned dead face, from which an obscure

figure seemed to be fleeing with outstretched arms. "How horrible!"

said Mrs. Davilow, with a look of mere disgust; but Gwendolen shuddered

silently, and Isabel, a plain and altogether inconvenient child with an

alarming memory, said--

"You will never stay in this room by yourself, Gwendolen."

"How dare you open things which were meant to be shut up, you perverse

little creature?" said Gwendolen, in her angriest tone. Then snatching

the panel out of the hand of the culprit, she closed it hastily,

saying, "There is a lock--where is the key? Let the key be found, or

else let one be made, and let nobody open it again; or rather, let the

key be brought to me."

At this command to everybody in general Gwendolen turned with a face

which was flushed in reaction from her chill shudder, and said, "Let us

go up to our own room, mamma."

The housekeeper on searching found the key in the drawer of the cabinet

close by the panel, and presently handed it to Bugle, the lady's-maid,

telling her significantly to give it to her Royal Highness.

"I don't know what you mean, Mrs. Startin," said Bugle, who had been

busy up-stairs during the scene in the drawing-room, and was rather

offended at this irony in a new servant.

"I mean the young lady that's to command us all-and well worthy for

looks and figure," replied Mrs. Startin in propitiation. "She'll know

what key it is."

"If you have laid out what we want, go and see to the others, Bugle,"

Gwendolen had said, when she and Mrs. Davilow entered their black and

yellow bedroom, where a pretty little white couch was prepared by the

side of the black and yellow catafalque known as the best bed. "I will

help mamma."

But her first movement was to go to the tall mirror between the

windows, which reflected herself and the room completely, while her

mamma sat down and also looked at the reflection.

"That is a becoming glass, Gwendolen; or is it the black and gold color

that sets you off?" said Mrs. Davilow, as Gwendolen stood obliquely

with her three-quarter face turned toward the mirror, and her left hand

brushing back the stream of hair.

"I should make a tolerable St. Cecilia with some white roses on my

head," said Gwendolen,--"only how about my nose, mamma? I think saint's

noses never in the least turn up. I wish you had given me your

perfectly straight nose; it would have done for any sort of

character--a nose of all work. Mine is only a happy nose; it would not

do so well for tragedy."

"Oh, my dear, any nose will do to be miserable with in this world,"

said Mrs. Davilow, with a deep, weary sigh, throwing her black bonnet

on the table, and resting her elbow near it.

"Now, mamma," said Gwendolen, in a strongly remonstrant tone, turning

away from the glass with an air of vexation, "don't begin to be dull

here. It spoils all my pleasure, and everything may be so happy now.

What have you to be gloomy about \_now\_?"

"Nothing, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, seeming to rouse herself, and

beginning to take off her dress. "It is always enough for me to see you

happy."

"But you should be happy yourself," said Gwendolen, still

discontentedly, though going to help her mamma with caressing touches.

"Can nobody be happy after they are quite young? You have made me feel

sometimes as if nothing were of any use. With the girls so troublesome,

and Jocosa so dreadfully wooden and ugly, and everything make-shift

about us, and you looking so dull--what was the use of my being

anything? But now you \_might\_ be happy."

"So I shall, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, patting the cheek that was

bending near her.

"Yes, but really. Not with a sort of make-believe," said Gwendolen,

with resolute perseverance. "See what a hand and arm!--much more

beautiful than mine. Any one can see you were altogether more

beautiful."

"No, no, dear; I was always heavier. Never half so charming as you are."

"Well, but what is the use of my being charming, if it is to end in my

being dull and not minding anything? Is that what marriage always comes

to?"

"No, child, certainly not. Marriage is the only happy state for a

woman, as I trust you will prove."

"I will not put up with it if it is not a happy state. I am determined

to be happy--at least not to go on muddling away my life as other

people do, being and doing nothing remarkable. I have made up my mind

not to let other people interfere with me as they have done. Here is

some warm water ready for you, mamma," Gwendolen ended, proceeding to

take off her own dress and then waiting to have her hair wound up by

her mamma.

There was silence for a minute or two, till Mrs. Davilow said, while

coiling the daughter's hair, "I am sure I have never crossed you,

Gwendolen."

"You often want me to do what I don't like."

"You mean, to give Alice lessons?"

"Yes. And I have done it because you asked me. But I don't see why I

should, else. It bores me to death, she is so slow. She has no ear for

music, or language, or anything else. It would be much better for her

to be ignorant, mamma: it is her \_rÃ´le\_, she would do it well."

"That is a hard thing to say of your poor sister, Gwendolen, who is so

good to you, and waits on you hand and foot."

"I don't see why it is hard to call things by their right names, and

put them in their proper places. The hardship is for me to have to

waste my time on her. Now let me fasten up your hair, mamma."

"We must make haste; your uncle and aunt will be here soon. For

heaven's sake, don't be scornful to \_them\_, my dear child! or to your

cousin Anna, whom you will always be going out with. Do promise me,

Gwendolen. You know, you can't expect Anna to be equal to you."

"I don't want her to be equal," said Gwendolen, with a toss of her head

and a smile, and the discussion ended there.

When Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne and their daughter came, Gwendolen, far

from being scornful, behaved as prettily as possible to them. She was

introducing herself anew to relatives who had not seen her since the

comparatively unfinished age of sixteen, and she was anxious--no, not

anxious, but resolved that they should admire her.

Mrs. Gascoigne bore a family likeness to her sister. But she was darker

and slighter, her face was unworn by grief, her movements were less

languid, her expression more alert and critical as that of a rector's

wife bound to exert a beneficent authority. Their closest resemblance

lay in a non-resistant disposition, inclined to imitation and

obedience; but this, owing to the difference in their circumstances,

had led them to very different issues. The younger sister had been

indiscreet, or at least unfortunate in her marriages; the elder

believed herself the most enviable of wives, and her pliancy had ended

in her sometimes taking shapes of surprising definiteness. Many of her

opinions, such as those on church government and the character of

Archbishop Laud, seemed too decided under every alteration to have been

arrived at otherwise than by a wifely receptiveness. And there was much

to encourage trust in her husband's authority. He had some agreeable

virtues, some striking advantages, and the failings that were imputed

to him all leaned toward the side of success.

One of his advantages was a fine person, which perhaps was even more

impressive at fifty-seven than it had been earlier in life. There were

no distinctively clerical lines in the face, no tricks of starchiness

or of affected ease: in his Inverness cape he could not have been

identified except as a gentleman with handsome dark features, a nose

which began with an intention to be aquiline but suddenly became

straight, and iron-gray, hair. Perhaps he owed this freedom from the

sort of professional make-up which penetrates skin, tones and gestures

and defies all drapery, to the fact that he had once been Captain

Gaskin, having taken orders and a diphthong but shortly before his

engagement to Miss Armyn. If any one had objected that his preparation

for the clerical function was inadequate, his friends might have asked

who made a better figure in it, who preached better or had more

authority in his parish? He had a native gift for administration, being

tolerant both of opinions and conduct, because he felt himself able to

overrule them, and was free from the irritations of conscious

feebleness. He smiled pleasantly at the foible of a taste which he did

not share--at floriculture or antiquarianism for example, which were

much in vogue among his fellow-clergyman in the diocese: for himself,

he preferred following the history of a campaign, or divining from his

knowledge of Nesselrode's motives what would have been his conduct if

our cabinet had taken a different course. Mr. Gascoigne's tone of

thinking after some long-quieted fluctuations had become ecclesiastical

rather than theological; not the modern Anglican, but what he would

have called sound English, free from nonsense; such as became a man who

looked at a national religion by daylight, and saw it in its relation

to other things. No clerical magistrate had greater weight at sessions,

or less of mischievous impracticableness in relation to worldly

affairs. Indeed, the worst imputation thrown out against him was

worldliness: it could not be proved that he forsook the less fortunate,

but it was not to be denied that the friendships he cultivated were of

a kind likely to be useful to the father of six sons and two daughters;

and bitter observers--for in Wessex, say ten years ago, there were

persons whose bitterness may now seem incredible--remarked that the

color of his opinions had changed in consistency with this principle of

action. But cheerful, successful worldliness has a false air of being

more selfish than the acrid, unsuccessful kind, whose secret history is

summed up in the terrible words, "Sold, but not paid for."

Gwendolen wondered that she had not better remembered how very fine a

man her uncle was; but at the age of sixteen she was a less capable and

more indifferent judge. At present it was a matter of extreme interest

to her that she was to have the near countenance of a dignified male

relative, and that the family life would cease to be entirely,

insipidly feminine. She did not intend that her uncle should control

her, but she saw at once that it would be altogether agreeable to her

that he should be proud of introducing her as his niece. And there was

every sign of his being likely to feel that pride. He certainly looked

at her with admiration as he said--

"You have outgrown Anna, my dear," putting his arm tenderly round his

daughter, whose shy face was a tiny copy of his own, and drawing her

forward. "She is not so old as you by a year, but her growing days are

certainly over. I hope you will be excellent companions."

He did give a comparing glance at his daughter, but if he saw her

inferiority, he might also see that Anna's timid appearance and

miniature figure must appeal to a different taste from that which was

attracted by Gwendolen, and that the girls could hardly be rivals.

Gwendolen at least, was aware of this, and kissed her cousin with real

cordiality as well as grace, saying, "A companion is just what I want.

I am so glad we are come to live here. And mamma will be much happier

now she is near you, aunt."

The aunt trusted indeed that it would be so, and felt it a blessing

that a suitable home had been vacant in their uncle's parish. Then, of

course, notice had to be taken of the four other girls, whom Gwendolen

had always felt to be superfluous: all of a girlish average that made

four units utterly unimportant, and yet from her earliest days an

obtrusive influential fact in her life. She was conscious of having

been much kinder to them than could have been expected. And it was

evident to her that her uncle and aunt also felt it a pity there were

so many girls:--what rational person could feel otherwise, except poor

mamma, who never would see how Alice set up her shoulders and lifted

her eyebrows till she had no forehead left, how Bertha and Fanny

whispered and tittered together about everything, or how Isabel was

always listening and staring and forgetting where she was, and treading

on the toes of her suffering elders?

"You have brothers, Anna," said Gwendolen, while the sisters were being

noticed. "I think you are enviable there."

"Yes," said Anna, simply. "I am very fond of them; but of course their

education is a great anxiety to papa. He used to say they made me a

tomboy. I really was a great romp with Rex. I think you will like Rex.

He will come home before Christmas."

"I remember I used to think you rather wild and shy; but it is

difficult now to imagine you a romp," said Gwendolen, smiling.

"Of course, I am altered now; I am come out, and all that. But in

reality I like to go blackberrying with Edwy and Lotta as well as ever.

I am not very fond of going out; but I dare say I shall like it better

now you will be often with me. I am not at all clever, and I never know

what to say. It seems so useless to say what everybody knows, and I can

think of nothing else, except what papa says."

"I shall like going out with you very much," said Gwendolen, well

disposed toward this \_naÃ¯ve\_ cousin. "Are you fond of riding?"

"Yes, but we have only one Shetland pony amongst us. Papa says he can't

afford more, besides the carriage-horses and his own nag; he has so

many expenses."

"I intend to have a horse and ride a great deal now," said Gwendolen,

in a tone of decision. "Is the society pleasant in this neighborhood?"

"Papa says it is, very. There are the clergymen all about, you know;

and the Quallons, and the Arrowpoints, and Lord Brackenshaw, and Sir

Hugo Mallinger's place, where there is nobody--that's very nice,

because we make picnics there--and two or three families at Wanchester:

oh, and old Mrs. Vulcany, at Nuttingwood, and--"

But Anna was relieved of this tax on her descriptive powers by the

announcement of dinner, and Gwendolen's question was soon indirectly

answered by her uncle, who dwelt much on the advantages he had secured

for them in getting a place like Offendene. Except the rent, it

involved no more expense than an ordinary house at Wanchester would

have done.

"And it is always worth while to make a little sacrifice for a good

style of house," said Mr. Gascoigne, in his easy, pleasantly confident

tone, which made the world in general seem a very manageable place of

residence: "especially where there is only a lady at the head. All the

best people will call upon you; and you need give no expensive dinners.

Of course, I have to spend a good deal in that way; it is a large item.

But then I get my house for nothing. If I had to pay three hundred a

year for my house I could not keep a table. My boys are too great a

drain on me. You are better off than we are, in proportion; there is no

great drain on you now, after your house and carriage."

"I assure you, Fanny, now that the children are growing up, I am

obliged to cut and contrive," said Mrs. Gascoigne. "I am not a good

manager by nature, but Henry has taught me. He is wonderful for making

the best of everything; he allows himself no extras, and gets his

curates for nothing. It is rather hard that he has not been made a

prebendary or something, as others have been, considering the friends

he has made and the need there is for men of moderate opinions in all

respects. If the Church is to keep its position, ability and character

ought to tell."

"Oh, my dear Nancy, you forget the old story--thank Heaven, there are

three hundred as good as I. And ultimately, we shall have no reason to

complain, I am pretty sure. There could hardly be a more thorough

friend than Lord Brackenshaw--your landlord, you know, Fanny. Lady

Brackenshaw will call upon you. And I have spoken for Gwendolen to be a

member of our Archery Club--the Brackenshaw Archery Club--the most

select thing anywhere. That is, if she has no objection," added Mr.

Gascoigne, looking at Gwendolen with pleasant irony.

"I should like it of all things," said Gwendolen. "There is nothing I

enjoy more than taking aim--and hitting," she ended, with a pretty nod

and smile.

"Our Anna, poor child, is too short-sighed for archery. But I consider

myself a first-rate shot, and you shall practice with me. I must make

you an accomplished archer before our great meeting in July. In fact,

as to neighborhood, you could hardly be better placed. There are the

Arrowpoints--they are some of our best people. Miss Arrowpoint is a

delightful girl--she has been presented at Court. They have a

magnificent place--Quetcham Hall--worth seeing in point of art; and

their parties, to which you are sure to be invited, are the best things

of the sort we have. The archdeacon is intimate there, and they have

always a good kind of people staying in the house. Mrs. Arrowpoint is

peculiar, certainly; something of a caricature, in fact; but

well-meaning. And Miss Arrowpoint is as nice as possible. It is not all

young ladies who have mothers as handsome and graceful as yours and

Anna's."

Mrs. Davilow smiled faintly at this little compliment, but the husband

and wife looked affectionately at each other, and Gwendolen thought,

"My uncle and aunt, at least, are happy: they are not dull and dismal."

Altogether, she felt satisfied with her prospects at Offendene, as a

great improvement on anything she had known. Even the cheap curates,

she incidentally learned, were almost always young men of family, and

Mr. Middleton, the actual curate, was said to be quite an acquisition:

it was only a pity he was so soon to leave.

But there was one point which she was so anxious to gain that she could

not allow the evening to pass without taking her measures toward

securing it. Her mamma, she knew, intended to submit entirely to her

uncle's judgment with regard to expenditure; and the submission was not

merely prudential, for Mrs. Davilow, conscious that she had always been

seen under a cloud as poor dear Fanny, who had made a sad blunder with

her second marriage, felt a hearty satisfaction in being frankly and

cordially identified with her sister's family, and in having her

affairs canvassed and managed with an authority which presupposed a

genuine interest. Thus the question of a suitable saddle-horse, which

had been sufficiently discussed with mamma, had to be referred to Mr.

Gascoigne; and after Gwendolen had played on the piano, which had been

provided from Wanchester, had sung to her hearers' admiration, and had

induced her uncle to join her in a duet--what more softening influence

than this on any uncle who would have sung finely if his time had not

been too much taken up by graver matters?--she seized the opportune

moment for saying, "Mamma, you have not spoken to my uncle about my

riding."

"Gwendolen desires above all things to have a horse to ride--a pretty,

light, lady's horse," said Mrs. Davilow, looking at Mr. Gascoigne. "Do

you think we can manage it?"

Mr. Gascoigne projected his lower lip and lifted his handsome eyebrows

sarcastically at Gwendolen, who had seated herself with much grace on

the elbow of her mamma's chair.

"We could lend her the pony sometimes," said Mrs. Gascoigne, watching

her husband's face, and feeling quite ready to disapprove if he did.

"That might be inconveniencing others, aunt, and would be no pleasure

to me. I cannot endure ponies," said Gwendolen. "I would rather give up

some other indulgence and have a horse." (Was there ever a young lady

or gentleman not ready to give up an unspecified indulgence for the

sake of the favorite one specified?)

"She rides so well. She has had lessons, and the riding-master said she

had so good a seat and hand she might be trusted with any mount," said

Mrs. Davilow, who, even if she had not wished her darling to have the

horse, would not have dared to be lukewarm in trying to get it for her.

"There is the price of the horse--a good sixty with the best chance,

and then his keep," said Mr. Gascoigne, in a tone which, though

demurring, betrayed the inward presence of something that favored the

demand. "There are the carriage-horses--already a heavy item. And

remember what you ladies cost in toilet now."

"I really wear nothing but two black dresses," said Mrs. Davilow,

hastily. "And the younger girls, of course, require no toilet at

present. Besides, Gwendolen will save me so much by giving her sisters

lessons." Here Mrs. Davilow's delicate cheek showed a rapid blush. "If

it were not for that, I must really have a more expensive governess,

and masters besides."

Gwendolen felt some anger with her mamma, but carefully concealed it.

"That is good--that is decidedly good," said Mr. Gascoigne, heartily,

looking at his wife. And Gwendolen, who, it must be owned, was a deep

young lady, suddenly moved away to the other end of the long

drawing-room, and busied herself with arranging pieces of music.

"The dear child has had no indulgences, no pleasures," said Mrs.

Davilow, in a pleading undertone. "I feel the expense is rather

imprudent in this first year of our settling. But she really needs the

exercise--she needs cheering. And if you were to see her on horseback,

it is something splendid."

"It is what we could not afford for Anna," said Mrs. Gascoigne. "But

she, dear child, would ride Lotta's donkey and think it good enough."

(Anna was absorbed in a game with Isabel, who had hunted out an old

back-gammon-board, and had begged to sit up an extra hour.)

"Certainly, a fine woman never looks better than on horseback," said

Mr. Gascoigne. "And Gwendolen has the figure for it. I don't say the

thing should not be considered."

"We might try it for a time, at all events. It can be given up, if

necessary," said Mrs. Davilow.

"Well, I will consult Lord Brackenshaw's head groom. He is my \_fidus

Achates\_ in the horsey way."

"Thanks," said Mrs. Davilow, much relieved. "You are very kind."

"That he always is," said Mrs. Gascoigne. And later that night, when

she and her husband were in private, she said--

"I thought you were almost too indulgent about the horse for Gwendolen.

She ought not to claim so much more than your own daughter would think

of. Especially before we see how Fanny manages on her income. And you

really have enough to do without taking all this trouble on yourself."

"My dear Nancy, one must look at things from every point of view. This

girl is really worth some expense: you don't often see her equal. She

ought to make a first-rate marriage, and I should not be doing my duty

if I spared my trouble in helping her forward. You know yourself she

has been under a disadvantage with such a father-in-law, and a second

family, keeping her always in the shade. I feel for the girl, And I

should like your sister and her family now to have the benefit of your

having married rather a better specimen of our kind than she did."

"Rather better! I should think so. However, it is for me to be grateful

that you will take so much on your shoulders for the sake of my sister

and her children. I am sure I would not grudge anything to poor Fanny.

But there is one thing I have been thinking of, though you have never

mentioned it."

"What is that?"

"The boys. I hope they will not be falling in love with Gwendolen."

"Don't presuppose anything of the kind, my dear, and there will be no

danger. Rex will never be at home for long together, and Warham is

going to India. It is the wiser plan to take it for granted that

cousins will not fall in love. If you begin with precautions, the

affair will come in spite of them. One must not undertake to act for

Providence in these matters, which can no more be held under the hand

than a brood of chickens. The boys will have nothing, and Gwendolen

will have nothing. They can't marry. At the worst there would only be a

little crying, and you can't save boys and girls from that."

Mrs. Gascoigne's mind was satisfied: if anything did happen, there was

the comfort of feeling that her husband would know what was to be done,

and would have the energy to do it.

CHAPTER IV.

"\_Gorgibus.\_-- \* \* \* Je te dis que le mariage est une chose sainte

et sacrÃ©e: et que c'est faire en honnÃªtes gens, que de dÃ©buter par lÃ .

"\_Madelon.\_--Mon Dieu! que si tout le monde vous ressemblait, un

roman serait bientÃ´t fini! La belle chose que ce serait, si d'abord

Cyrus Ã©pousait Mandane, et qu'Aronce de plain-pied fÃ»t mariÃ© Ã  ClÃ©lie!

\* \* \* Laissez-nous faire Ã  loisir le tissu de notre roman, et n'en

pressez pas tant la conclusion."

MOLIÃRE. \_Les PrÃ©cieuses Ridicules.\_

It would be a little hard to blame the rector of Pennicote that in the

course of looking at things from every point of view, he looked at

Gwendolen as a girl likely to make a brilliant marriage. Why should he

be expected to differ from his contemporaries in this matter, and wish

his niece a worse end of her charming maidenhood than they would

approve as the best possible? It is rather to be set down to his credit

that his feelings on the subject were entirely good-natured. And in

considering the relation of means to ends, it would have been mere

folly to have been guided by the exceptional and idyllic--to have

recommended that Gwendolen should wear a gown as shabby as Griselda's

in order that a marquis might fall in love with her, or to have

insisted that since a fair maiden was to be sought, she should keep

herself out of the way. Mr. Gascoigne's calculations were of the kind

called rational, and he did not even think of getting a too frisky

horse in order that Gwendolen might be threatened with an accident and

be rescued by a man of property. He wished his niece well, and he meant

her to be seen to advantage in the best society of the neighborhood.

Her uncle's intention fell in perfectly with Gwendolen's own wishes.

But let no one suppose that she also contemplated a brilliant marriage

as the direct end of her witching the world with her grace on

horseback, or with any other accomplishment. That she was to be married

some time or other she would have felt obliged to admit; and that her

marriage would not be of a middling kind, such as most girls were

contented with, she felt quietly, unargumentatively sure. But her

thoughts never dwelt on marriage as the fulfillment of her ambition;

the dramas in which she imagined herself a heroine were not wrought up

to that close. To be very much sued or hopelessly sighed for as a bride

was indeed an indispensable and agreeable guarantee of womanly power;

but to become a wife and wear all the domestic fetters of that

condition, was on the whole a vexatious necessity. Her observation of

matrimony had inclined her to think it rather a dreary state in which a

woman could not do what she liked, had more children than were

desirable, was consequently dull, and became irrevocably immersed in

humdrum. Of course marriage was social promotion; she could not look

forward to a single life; but promotions have sometimes to be taken

with bitter herbs--a peerage will not quite do instead of leadership to

the man who meant to lead; and this delicate-limbed sylph of twenty

meant to lead. For such passions dwell in feminine breasts also. In

Gwendolen's, however, they dwelt among strictly feminine furniture, and

had no disturbing reference to the advancement of learning or the

balance of the constitution; her knowledge being such as with no sort

of standing-room or length of lever could have been expected to move

the world. She meant to do what was pleasant to herself in a striking

manner; or rather, whatever she could do so as to strike others with

admiration and get in that reflected way a more ardent sense of living,

seemed pleasant to her fancy.

"Gwendolen will not rest without having the world at her feet," said

Miss Merry, the meek governess: hyperbolical words which have long come

to carry the most moderate meanings; for who has not heard of private

persons having the world at their feet in the shape of some half-dozen

items of flattering regard generally known in a genteel suburb? And

words could hardly be too wide or vague to indicate the prospect that

made a hazy largeness about poor Gwendolen on the heights of her young

self-exultation. Other people allowed themselves to be made slaves of,

and to have their lives blown hither and thither like empty ships in

which no will was present. It was not to be so with her; she would no

longer be sacrificed to creatures worth less than herself, but would

make the very best of the chances that life offered her, and conquer

circumstances by her exceptional cleverness. Certainly, to be settled

at Offendene, with the notice of Lady Brackenshaw, the archery club,

and invitations to dine with the Arrowpoints, as the highest lights in

her scenery, was not a position that seemed to offer remarkable

chances; but Gwendolen's confidence lay chiefly in herself. She felt

well equipped for the mastery of life. With regard to much in her lot

hitherto, she held herself rather hardly dealt with, but as to her

"education," she would have admitted that it had left her under no

disadvantages. In the school-room her quick mind had taken readily that

strong starch of unexplained rules and disconnected facts which saves

ignorance from any painful sense of limpness; and what remained of all

things knowable, she was conscious of being sufficiently acquainted

with through novels, plays and poems. About her French and music, the

two justifying accomplishments of a young lady, she felt no ground for

uneasiness; and when to all these qualifications, negative and

positive, we add the spontaneous sense of capability some happy persons

are born with, so that any subject they turn their attention to

impresses them with their own power of forming a correct judgment on

it, who can wonder if Gwendolen felt ready to manage her own destiny?

There were many subjects in the world--perhaps the majority--in which

she felt no interest, because they were stupid; for subjects are apt to

appear stupid to the young as light seems dull to the old; but she

would not have felt at all helpless in relation to them if they had

turned up in conversation. It must be remembered that no one had

disputed her power or her general superiority. As on the arrival at

Offendene, so always, the first thought of those about her had been,

what will Gwendolen think?--if the footman trod heavily in creaking

boots, or if the laundress's work was unsatisfactory, the maid said,

"This will never do for Miss Harleth"; if the wood smoked in the

bedroom fireplace, Mrs. Davilow, whose own weak eyes suffered much from

this inconvenience, spoke apologetically of it to Gwendolen. If, when

they were under the stress of traveling, she did not appear at the

breakfast table till every one else had finished, the only question

was, how Gwendolen's coffee and toast should still be of the hottest

and crispest; and when she appeared with her freshly-brushed

light-brown hair streaming backward and awaiting her mamma's hand to

coil it up, her large brown eyes glancing bright as a wave-washed onyx

from under their long lashes, it was always she herself who had to be

tolerant--to beg that Alice who sat waiting on her would not stick up

her shoulders in that frightful manner, and that Isabel, instead of

pushing up to her and asking questions, would go away to Miss Merry.

Always she was the princess in exile, who in time of famine was to have

her breakfast-roll made of the finest-bolted flour from the seven thin

ears of wheat, and in a general decampment was to have her silver fork

kept out of the baggage. How was this to be accounted for? The answer

may seem to lie quite on the surface:--in her beauty, a certain

unusualness about her, a decision of will which made itself felt in her

graceful movements and clear unhesitating tones, so that if she came

into the room on a rainy day when everybody else was flaccid and the

use of things in general was not apparent to them, there seemed to be a

sudden, sufficient reason for keeping up the forms of life; and even

the waiters at hotels showed the more alacrity in doing away with

crumbs and creases and dregs with struggling flies in them. This potent

charm, added to the fact that she was the eldest daughter, toward whom

her mamma had always been in an apologetic state of mind for the evils

brought on her by a step-father, may seem so full a reason for

Gwendolen's domestic empire, that to look for any other would be to ask

the reason of daylight when the sun is shining. But beware of arriving

at conclusions without comparison. I remember having seen the same

assiduous, apologetic attention awarded to persons who were not at all

beautiful or unusual, whose firmness showed itself in no very graceful

or euphonious way, and who were not eldest daughters with a tender,

timid mother, compunctious at having subjected them to inconveniences.

Some of them were a very common sort of men. And the only point of

resemblance among them all was a strong determination to have what was

pleasant, with a total fearlessness in making themselves disagreeable

or dangerous when they did not get it. Who is so much cajoled and

served with trembling by the weak females of a household as the

unscrupulous male--capable, if he has not free way at home, of going

and doing worse elsewhere? Hence I am forced to doubt whether even

without her potent charm and peculiar filial position Gwendolen might

not still have played the queen in exile, if only she had kept her

inborn energy of egoistic desire, and her power of inspiring fear as to

what she might say or do. However, she had the charm, and those who

feared her were also fond of her; the fear and the fondness being

perhaps both heightened by what may be called the iridescence of her

character--the play of various, nay, contrary tendencies. For Macbeth's

rhetoric about the impossibility of being many opposite things in the

same moment, referred to the clumsy necessities of action and not to

the subtler possibilities of feeling. We cannot speak a loyal word and

be meanly silent; we cannot kill and not kill in the same moment; but a

moment is wide enough for the loyal and mean desire, for the outlash of

a murderous thought and the sharp backward stroke of repentance.

CHAPTER V.

"Her wit

Values itself so highly, that to her

All matter else seems weak."

--\_Much Ado About Nothing.\_

Gwendolen's reception in the neighborhood fulfilled her uncle's

expectations. From Brackenshaw Castle to the Firs at Wanchester, where

Mr. Quallon the banker kept a generous house, she was welcomed with

manifest admiration, and even those ladies who did not quite like her,

felt a comfort in having a new, striking girl to invite; for hostesses

who entertain much must make up their parties as ministers make up

their cabinets, on grounds other than personal liking. Then, in order

to have Gwendolen as a guest, it was not necessary to ask any one who

was disagreeable, for Mrs. Davilow always made a quiet, picturesque

figure as a chaperon, and Mr. Gascoigne was everywhere in request for

his own sake.

Among the houses where Gwendolen was not quite liked, and yet invited,

was Quetcham Hall. One of her first invitations was to a large

dinner-party there, which made a sort of general introduction for her

to the society of the neighborhood; for in a select party of thirty and

of well-composed proportions as to age, few visitable families could be

entirely left out. No youthful figure there was comparable to

Gwendolen's as she passed through the long suite of rooms adorned with

light and flowers, and, visible at first as a slim figure floating

along in white drapery, approached through one wide doorway after

another into fuller illumination and definiteness. She had never had

that sort of promenade before, and she felt exultingly that it befitted

her: any one looking at her for the first time might have supposed that

long galleries and lackeys had always been a matter of course in her

life; while her cousin Anna, who was really more familiar with these

things, felt almost as much embarrassed as a rabbit suddenly deposited

in that well-lit-space.

"Who is that with Gascoigne?" said the archdeacon, neglecting a

discussion of military manoeuvres on which, as a clergyman, he was

naturally appealed to. And his son, on the other side of the room--a

hopeful young scholar, who had already suggested some "not less elegant

than ingenious," emendations of Greek texts--said nearly at the same

time, "By George! who is that girl with the awfully well-set head and

jolly figure?"

But to a mind of general benevolence, wishing everybody to look well,

it was rather exasperating to see how Gwendolen eclipsed others: how

even the handsome Miss Lawe, explained to be the daughter of Lady Lawe,

looked suddenly broad, heavy and inanimate; and how Miss Arrowpoint,

unfortunately also dressed in white, immediately resembled a

\_carte-de-visite\_ in which one would fancy the skirt alone to have been

charged for. Since Miss Arrowpoint was generally liked for the amiable

unpretending way in which she wore her fortunes, and made a softening

screen for the oddities of her mother, there seemed to be some

unfitness in Gwendolen's looking so much more like a person of social

importance.

"She is not really so handsome if you come to examine her features,"

said Mrs. Arrowpoint, later in the evening, confidentially to Mrs.

Vulcany. "It is a certain style she has, which produces a great effect

at first, but afterward she is less agreeable."

In fact, Gwendolen, not intending it, but intending the contrary, had

offended her hostess, who, though not a splenetic or vindictive woman,

had her susceptibilities. Several conditions had met in the Lady of

Quetcham which to the reasoners in that neighborhood seemed to have an

essential connection with each other. It was occasionally recalled that

she had been the heiress of a fortune gained by some moist or dry

business in the city, in order fully to account for her having a squat

figure, a harsh parrot-like voice, and a systematically high

head-dress; and since these points made her externally rather

ridiculous, it appeared to many only natural that she should have what

are called literary tendencies. A little comparison would have shown

that all these points are to be found apart; daughters of aldermen

being often well-grown and well-featured, pretty women having sometimes

harsh or husky voices, and the production of feeble literature being

found compatible with the most diverse forms of \_physique\_, masculine

as well as feminine.

Gwendolen, who had a keen sense of absurdity in others, but was kindly

disposed toward any one who could make life agreeable to her, meant to

win Mrs. Arrowpoint by giving her an interest and attention beyond what

others were probably inclined to show. But self-confidence is apt to

address itself to an imaginary dullness in others; as people who are

well off speak in a cajoling tone to the poor, and those who are in the

prime of life raise their voice and talk artificially to seniors,

hastily conceiving them to be deaf and rather imbecile. Gwendolen, with

all her cleverness and purpose to be agreeable, could not escape that

form of stupidity: it followed in her mind, unreflectingly, that

because Mrs. Arrowpoint was ridiculous she was also likely to be

wanting in penetration, and she went through her little scenes without

suspicion that the various shades of her behavior were all noted.

"You are fond of books as well as of music, riding, and archery, I

hear," Mrs. Arrowpoint said, going to her for a \_tete-Ã -tete\_ in the

drawing-room after dinner. "Catherine will be very glad to have so

sympathetic a neighbor." This little speech might have seemed the most

graceful politeness, spoken in a low, melodious tone; but with a twang,

fatally loud, it gave Gwendolen a sense of exercising patronage when

she answered, gracefully:

"It is I who am fortunate. Miss Arrowpoint will teach me what good

music is. I shall be entirely a learner. I hear that she is a thorough

musician."

"Catherine has certainly had every advantage. We have a first-rate

musician in the house now--Herr Klesmer; perhaps you know all his

compositions. You must allow me to introduce him to you. You sing, I

believe. Catherine plays three instruments, but she does not sing. I

hope you will let us hear you. I understand you are an accomplished

singer."

"Oh, no!--'die Kraft ist schwach, allein die Lust ist gross,' as

Mephistopheles says."

"Ah, you are a student of Goethe. Young ladies are so advanced now. I

suppose you have read everything."

"No, really. I shall be so glad if you will tell me what to read. I

have been looking into all the books in the library at Offendene, but

there is nothing readable. The leaves all stick together and smell

musty. I wish I could write books to amuse myself, as you can! How

delightful it must be to write books after one's own taste instead of

reading other people's! Home-made books must be so nice."

For an instant Mrs. Arrowpoint's glance was a little sharper, but the

perilous resemblance to satire in the last sentence took the hue of

girlish simplicity when Gwendolen added--

"I would give anything to write a book!"

"And why should you not?" said Mrs. Arrowpoint, encouragingly. "You

have but to begin as I did. Pen, ink, and paper are at everybody's

command. But I will send you all I have written with pleasure."

"Thanks. I shall be so glad to read your writings. Being acquainted

with authors must give a peculiar understanding of their books: one

would be able to tell then which parts were funny and which serious. I

am sure I often laugh in the wrong place." Here Gwendolen herself

became aware of danger, and added quickly, "In Shakespeare, you know,

and other great writers that we can never see. But I always want to

know more than there is in the books."

"If you are interested in any of my subjects I can lend you many extra

sheets in manuscript," said Mrs. Arrowpoint--while Gwendolen felt

herself painfully in the position of the young lady who professed to

like potted sprats.

"These are things I dare say I shall publish eventually: several

friends have urged me to do so, and one doesn't like to be obstinate.

My Tasso, for example--I could have made it twice the size."

"I dote on Tasso," said Gwendolen.

"Well, you shall have all my papers, if you like. So many, you know,

have written about Tasso; but they are all wrong. As to the particular

nature of his madness, and his feelings for Leonora, and the real cause

of his imprisonment, and the character of Leonora, who, in my opinion,

was a cold-hearted woman, else she would have married him in spite of

her brother--they are all wrong. I differ from everybody."

"How very interesting!" said Gwendolen. "I like to differ from

everybody. I think it is so stupid to agree. That is the worst of

writing your opinions; and make people agree with you." This speech

renewed a slight suspicion in Mrs. Arrowpoint, and again her glance

became for a moment examining. But Gwendolen looked very innocent, and

continued with a docile air:

"I know nothing of Tasso except the \_Gerusalemme Liberata\_, which we

read and learned by heart at school."

"Ah, his life is more interesting than his poetry, I have constructed

the early part of his life as a sort of romance. When one thinks of his

father Bernardo, and so on, there is much that must be true."

"Imagination is often truer than fact," said Gwendolen, decisively,

though she could no more have explained these glib words than if they

had been Coptic or Etruscan. "I shall be so glad to learn all about

Tasso--and his madness especially. I suppose poets are always a little

mad."

"To be sure--'the poet's eye in a fine frenzy rolling'; and somebody

says of Marlowe--

'For that fine madness still he did maintain,

Which always should possess the poet's brain.'"

"But it was not always found out, was it?" said Gwendolen innocently.

"I suppose some of them rolled their eyes in private. Mad people are

often very cunning."

Again a shade flitted over Mrs. Arrowpoint's face; but the entrance of

the gentlemen prevented any immediate mischief between her and this too

quick young lady, who had over-acted her \_naÃ¯vetÃ©\_.

"Ah, here comes Herr Klesmer," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, rising; and

presently bringing him to Gwendolen, she left them to a dialogue which

was agreeable on both sides, Herr Klesmer being a felicitous

combination of the German, the Sclave and the Semite, with grand

features, brown hair floating in artistic fashion, and brown eyes in

spectacles. His English had little foreignness except its fluency; and

his alarming cleverness was made less formidable just then by a certain

softening air of silliness which will sometimes befall even genius in

the desire of being agreeable to beauty.

Music was soon begun. Miss Arrowpoint and Herr Klesmer played a

four-handed piece on two pianos, which convinced the company in general

that it was long, and Gwendolen in particular that the neutral,

placid-faced Miss Arrowpoint had a mastery of the instrument which put

her own execution out of question--though she was not discouraged as to

her often-praised touch and style. After this every one became anxious

to hear Gwendolen sing; especially Mr. Arrowpoint; as was natural in a

host and a perfect gentleman, of whom no one had anything to say but

that he married Miss Cuttler and imported the best cigars; and he led

her to the piano with easy politeness. Herr Klesmer closed the

instrument in readiness for her, and smiled with pleasure at her

approach; then placed himself at a distance of a few feet so that he

could see her as she sang.

Gwendolen was not nervous; what she undertook to do she did without

trembling, and singing was an enjoyment to her. Her voice was a

moderately powerful soprano (some one had told her it was like Jenny

Lind's), her ear good, and she was able to keep in tune, so that her

singing gave pleasure to ordinary hearers, and she had been used to

unmingled applause. She had the rare advantage of looking almost

prettier when she was singing than at other times, and that Herr

Klesmer was in front of her seemed not disagreeable. Her song,

determined on beforehand, was a favorite aria of Belini's, in which she

felt quite sure of herself.

"Charming?" said Mr. Arrowpoint, who had remained near, and the word

was echoed around without more insincerity than we recognize in a

brotherly way as human. But Herr Klesmer stood like a statue--if a

statue can be imagined in spectacles; at least, he was as mute as a

statue. Gwendolen was pressed to keep her seat and double the general

pleasure, and she did not wish to refuse; but before resolving to do

so, she moved a little toward Herr Klesmer, saying with a look of

smiling appeal, "It would be too cruel to a great musician. You cannot

like to hear poor amateur singing."

"No, truly; but that makes nothing," said Herr Klesmer, suddenly

speaking in an odious German fashion with staccato endings, quite

unobservable in him before, and apparently depending on a change of

mood, as Irishmen resume their strongest brogue when they are fervid or

quarrelsome. "That makes nothing. It is always acceptable to see you

sing."

Was there ever so unexpected an assertion of superiority? at least

before the late Teutonic conquest? Gwendolen colored deeply, but, with

her usual presence of mind, did not show an ungraceful resentment by

moving away immediately; and Miss Arrowpoint, who had been near enough

to overhear (and also to observe that Herr Klesmer's mode of looking at

Gwendolen was more conspicuously admiring than was quite consistent

with good taste), now with the utmost tact and kindness came close to

her and said--

"Imagine what I have to go through with this professor! He can hardly

tolerate anything we English do in music. We can only put up with his

severity, and make use of it to find out the worst that can be said of

us. It is a little comfort to know that; and one can bear it when every

one else is admiring."

"I should be very much obliged to him for telling me the worst," said

Gwendolen, recovering herself. "I dare say I have been extremely ill

taught, in addition to having no talent--only liking for music." This

was very well expressed considering that it had never entered her mind

before.

"Yes, it is true: you have not been well taught," said Herr Klesmer,

quietly. Woman was dear to him, but music was dearer. "Still, you are

not quite without gifts. You sing in tune, and you have a pretty fair

organ. But you produce your notes badly; and that music which you sing

is beneath you. It is a form of melody which expresses a puerile state

of culture--a dawdling, canting, see-saw kind of stuff--the passion and

thought of people without any breadth of horizon. There is a sort of

self-satisfied folly about every phrase of such melody; no cries of

deep, mysterious passion--no conflict--no sense of the universal. It

makes men small as they listen to it. Sing now something larger. And I

shall see."

"Oh, not now--by-and-by," said Gwendolen, with a sinking of heart at

the sudden width of horizon opened round her small musical performance.

For a lady desiring to lead, this first encounter in her campaign was

startling. But she was bent on not behaving foolishly, and Miss

Arrowpoint helped her by saying--

"Yes, by-and-by. I always require half an hour to get up my courage

after being criticised by Herr Klesmer. We will ask him to play to us

now: he is bound to show us what is good music."

To be quite safe on this point Herr Klesmer played a composition of his

own, a fantasia called \_Freudvoll, Leidvoll, Gedankenvoll\_--an

extensive commentary on some melodic ideas not too grossly evident; and

he certainly fetched as much variety and depth of passion out of the

piano as that moderately responsive instrument lends itself to, having

an imperious magic in his fingers that seem to send a nerve-thrill

through ivory key and wooden hammer, and compel the strings to make a

quivering lingering speech for him. Gwendolen, in spite of her wounded

egoism, had fullness of nature enough to feel the power of this

playing, and it gradually turned her inward sob of mortification into

an excitement which lifted her for the moment into a desperate

indifference about her own doings, or at least a determination to get a

superiority over them by laughing at them as if they belonged to

somebody else. Her eyes had become brighter, her cheeks slightly

flushed, and her tongue ready for any mischievous remarks.

"I wish you would sing to us again, Miss Harleth," said young Clintock,

the archdeacon's classical son, who had been so fortunate as to take

her to dinner, and came up to renew conversation as soon as Herr

Klesmer's performance was ended, "That is the style of music for me. I

never can make anything of this tip-top playing. It is like a jar of

leeches, where you can never tell either beginnings or endings. I could

listen to your singing all day."

"Yes, we should be glad of something popular now--another song from you

would be a relaxation," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, who had also come near

with polite intentions.

"That must be because you are in a puerile state of culture, and have

no breadth of horizon. I have just learned that. I have been taught how

bad my taste is, and am feeling growing pains. They are never

pleasant," said Gwendolen, not taking any notice of Mrs. Arrowpoint,

and looking up with a bright smile at young Clintock.

Mrs. Arrowpoint was not insensible to this rudeness, but merely said,

"Well, we will not press anything disagreeably," and as there was a

perceptible outburst of imprisoned conversation just then, and a

movement of guests seeking each other, she remained seated where she

was, and looked around her with the relief of a hostess at finding she

is not needed.

"I am glad you like this neighborhood," said young Clintock,

well-pleased with his station in front of Gwendolen.

"Exceedingly. There seems to be a little of everything and not much of

anything."

"That is rather equivocal praise."

"Not with me. I like a little of everything; a little absurdity, for

example, is very amusing. I am thankful for a few queer people; but

much of them is a bore."

(Mrs. Arrowpoint, who was hearing this dialogue, perceived quite a new

tone in Gwendolen's speech, and felt a revival of doubt as to her

interest in Tasso's madness.)

"I think there should be more croquet, for one thing," young Clintock;

"I am usually away, but if I were more here I should go in for a

croquet club. You are one of the archers, I think. But depend upon it

croquet is the game of the future. It wants writing up, though. One of

our best men has written a poem on it, in four cantos;--as good as

Pope. I want him to publish it--You never read anything better."

"I shall study croquet to-morrow. I shall take to it instead of

singing."

"No, no, not that; but do take to croquet. I will send you Jenning's

poem if you like. I have a manuscript copy."

"Is he a great friend of yours?"

"Well, rather."

"Oh, if he is only rather, I think I will decline. Or, if you send it

to me, will you promise not to catechise me upon it and ask me which

part I like best? Because it is not so easy to know a poem without

reading it as to know a sermon without listening."

"Decidedly," Mrs. Arrowpoint thought, "this girl is double and

satirical. I shall be on my guard against her."

But Gwendolen, nevertheless, continued to receive polite attentions

from the family at Quetcham, not merely because invitations have larger

grounds than those of personal liking, but because the trying little

scene at the piano had awakened a kindly solicitude toward her in the

gentle mind of Miss Arrowpoint, who managed all the invitations and

visits, her mother being otherwise occupied.

CHAPTER VI.

"Croyez-vous m'avoir humiliÃ©e pour m'avoir appris que la terre tourne

autour du soleil? Je vous jure que je ne m'en estime pas moins."

--FONTENELLE: \_PluralitÃ© des Mondes\_.

That lofty criticism had caused Gwendolen a new sort of pain. She would

not have chosen to confess how unfortunate she thought herself in not

having had Miss Arrowpoint's musical advantages, so as to be able to

question Herr Klesmer's taste with the confidence of thorough

knowledge; still less, to admit even to herself that Miss Arrowpoint

each time they met raised an unwonted feeling of jealousy in her: not

in the least because she was an heiress, but because it was really

provoking that a girl whose appearance you could not characterize

except by saying that her figure was slight and of middle stature, her

features small, her eyes tolerable, and her complexion sallow, had

nevertheless a certain mental superiority which could not be explained

away--an exasperating thoroughness in her musical accomplishment, a

fastidious discrimination in her general tastes, which made it

impossible to force her admiration and kept you in awe of her standard.

This insignificant-looking young lady of four-and-twenty, whom any

one's eyes would have passed over negligently if she had not been Miss

Arrowpoint, might be suspected of a secret opinion that Miss Harleth's

acquirements were rather of a common order, and such an opinion was not

made agreeable to think of by being always veiled under a perfect

kindness of manner.

But Gwendolen did not like to dwell on facts which threw an unfavorable

light on itself. The musical Magus who had so suddenly widened her

horizon was not always on the scene; and his being constantly backward

and forward between London and Quetcham soon began to be thought of as

offering opportunities for converting him to a more admiring state of

mind. Meanwhile, in the manifest pleasure her singing gave at

Brackenshaw Castle, the Firs, and elsewhere, she recovered her

equanimity, being disposed to think approval more trustworthy than

objection, and not being one of the exceptional persons who have a

parching thirst for a perfection undemanded by their neighbors. Perhaps

it would have been rash to say then that she was at all exceptional

inwardly, or that the unusual in her was more than her rare grace of

movement and bearing, and a certain daring which gave piquancy to a

very common egoistic ambition, such as exists under many clumsy

exteriors and is taken no notice of. For I suppose that the set of the

head does not really determine the hunger of the inner self for

supremacy: it only makes a difference sometimes as to the way in which

the supremacy is held attainable, and a little also to the degree in

which it can be attained; especially when the hungry one is a girl,

whose passion for doing what is remarkable has an ideal limit in

consistency with the highest breeding and perfect freedom from the

sordid need of income. Gwendolen was as inwardly rebellious against the

restraints of family conditions, and as ready to look through

obligations into her own fundamental want of feeling for them, as if

she had been sustained by the boldest speculations; but she really had

no such speculations, and would at once have marked herself off from

any sort of theoretical or practically reforming women by satirizing

them. She rejoiced to feel herself exceptional; but her horizon was

that of the genteel romance where the heroine's soul poured out in her

journal is full of vague power, originality, and general rebellion,

while her life moves strictly in the sphere of fashion; and if she

wanders into a swamp, the pathos lies partly, so to speak, in her

having on her satin shoes. Here is a restraint which nature and society

have provided on the pursuit of striking adventure; so that a soul

burning with a sense of what the universe is not, and ready to take all

existence as fuel, is nevertheless held captive by the ordinary

wirework of social forms and does nothing particular.

This commonplace result was what Gwendolen found herself threatened

with even in the novelty of the first winter at Offendene. What she was

clear upon was, that she did not wish to lead the same sort of life as

ordinary young ladies did; but what she was not clear upon was, how she

should set about leading any other, and what were the particular acts

which she would assert her freedom by doing. Offendene remained a good

background, if anything would happen there; but on the whole the

neighborhood was in fault.

Beyond the effect of her beauty on a first presentation, there was not

much excitement to be got out of her earliest invitations, and she came

home after little sallies of satire and knowingness, such as had

offended Mrs. Arrowpoint, to fill the intervening days with the most

girlish devices. The strongest assertion she was able to make of her

individual claims was to leave out Alice's lessons (on the principle

that Alice was more likely to excel in ignorance), and to employ her

with Miss Merry, and the maid who was understood to wait on all the

ladies, in helping to arrange various dramatic costumes which Gwendolen

pleased herself with having in readiness for some future occasions of

acting in charades or theatrical pieces, occasions which she meant to

bring about by force of will or contrivance. She had never acted--only

made a figure in \_tableaux vivans\_ at school; but she felt assured that

she could act well, and having been once or twice to the ThÃ©Ã¢tre

FranÃ§ais, and also heard her mamma speak of Rachel, her waking dreams

and cogitations as to how she would manage her destiny sometimes turned

on the question whether she would become an actress like Rachel, since

she was more beautiful than that thin Jewess. Meanwhile the wet days

before Christmas were passed pleasantly in the preparation of costumes,

Greek, Oriental, and Composite, in which Gwendolen attitudinized and

speechified before a domestic audience, including even the housekeeper,

who was once pressed into it that she might swell the notes of

applause; but having shown herself unworthy by observing that Miss

Harleth looked far more like a queen in her own dress than in that

baggy thing with her arms all bare, she was not invited a second time.

"Do I look as well as Rachel, mamma?" said Gwendolen, one day when she

had been showing herself in her Greek dress to Anna, and going through

scraps of scenes with much tragic intention.

"You have better arms than Rachel," said Mrs. Davilow, "your arms would

do for anything, Gwen. But your voice is not so tragic as hers; it is

not so deep."

"I can make it deeper, if I like," said Gwendolen, provisionally; then

she added, with decision, "I think a higher voice is more tragic: it is

more feminine; and the more feminine a woman is, the more tragic it

seems when she does desperate actions."

"There may be something in that," said Mrs. Davilow, languidly. "But I

don't know what good there is in making one's blood creep. And if there

is anything horrible to be done, I should like it to be left to the

men."

"Oh, mamma, you are so dreadfully prosaic! As if all the great poetic

criminals were not women! I think the men are poor cautious creatures."

"Well, dear, and you--who are afraid to be alone in the night--I don't

think you would be very bold in crime, thank God."

"I am not talking about reality, mamma," said Gwendolen, impatiently.

Then her mamma being called out of the room, she turned quickly to her

cousin, as if taking an opportunity, and said, "Anna, do ask my uncle

to let us get up some charades at the rectory. Mr. Middleton and Warham

could act with us--just for practice. Mamma says it will not do to have

Mr. Middleton consulting and rehearsing here. He is a stick, but we

could give him suitable parts. Do ask, or else I will."

"Oh, not till Rex comes. He is so clever, and such a dear old thing,

and he will act Napoleon looking over the sea. He looks just like

Napoleon. Rex can do anything."

"I don't in the least believe in your Rex, Anna," said Gwendolen,

laughing at her. "He will turn out to be like those wretched blue and

yellow water-colors of his which you hang up in your bedroom and

worship."

"Very well, you will see," said Anna. "It is not that I know what is

clever, but he has got a scholarship already, and papa says he will get

a fellowship, and nobody is better at games. He is cleverer than Mr.

Middleton, and everybody but you call Mr. Middleton clever."

"So he may be in a dark-lantern sort of way. But he \_is\_ a stick. If he

had to say, 'Perdition catch my soul, but I do love her,' he would say

it in just the same tone as, 'Here endeth the second lesson.'"

"Oh, Gwendolen!" said Anna, shocked at these promiscuous allusions.

"And it is very unkind of you to speak so of him, for he admires you

very much. I heard Warham say one day to mamma, 'Middleton is regularly

spooney upon Gwendolen.' She was very angry with him; but I know what

it means. It is what they say at college for being in love."

"How can I help it?" said Gwendolen, rather contemptuously. "Perdition

catch my soul if I love \_him\_."

"No, of course; papa, I think, would not wish it. And he is to go away

soon. But it makes me sorry when you ridicule him."

"What shall you do to me when I ridicule Rex?" said Gwendolen, wickedly.

"Now, Gwendolen, dear, you \_will not\_?" said Anna, her eyes filling

with tears. "I could not bear it. But there really is nothing in him to

ridicule. Only you may find out things. For no one ever thought of

laughing at Mr. Middleton before you. Every one said he was

nice-looking, and his manners perfect. I am sure I have always been

frightened at him because of his learning and his square-cut coat, and

his being a nephew of the bishop's, and all that. But you will not

ridicule Rex--promise me." Anna ended with a beseeching look which

touched Gwendolen.

"You are a dear little coz," she said, just touching the tip of Anna's

chin with her thumb and forefinger. "I don't ever want to do anything

that will vex you. Especially if Rex is to make everything come

off--charades and everything."

And when at last Rex was there, the animation he brought into the life

of Offendene and the rectory, and his ready partnership in Gwendolen's

plans, left her no inclination for any ridicule that was not of an open

and flattering kind, such as he himself enjoyed. He was a fine

open-hearted youth, with a handsome face strongly resembling his

father's and Anna's, but softer in expression than the one, and larger

in scale than the other: a bright, healthy, loving nature, enjoying

ordinary innocent things so much that vice had no temptation for him,

and what he knew of it lay too entirely in the outer courts and

little-visited chambers of his mind for him to think of it with great

repulsion. Vicious habits were with him "what some fellows

did"--"stupid stuff" which he liked to keep aloof from. He returned

Anna's affection as fully as could be expected of a brother whose

pleasures apart from her were more than the sum total of hers; and he

had never known a stronger love.

The cousins were continually together at the one house or the

other--chiefly at Offendene, where there was more freedom, or rather

where there was a more complete sway for Gwendolen; and whatever she

wished became a ruling purpose for Rex. The charades came off according

to her plans; and also some other little scenes not contemplated by her

in which her acting was more impromptu. It was at Offendene that the

charades and \_tableaux\_ were rehearsed and presented, Mrs. Davilow

seeing no objection even to Mr. Middleton's being invited to share in

them, now that Rex too was there--especially as his services were

indispensable: Warham, who was studying for India with a Wanchester

"coach," having no time to spare, and being generally dismal under a

cram of everything except the answers needed at the forthcoming

examination, which might disclose the welfare of our Indian Empire to

be somehow connected with a quotable knowledge of Browne's Pastorals.

Mr. Middleton was persuaded to play various grave parts, Gwendolen

having flattered him on his enviable immobility of countenance; and at

first a little pained and jealous at her comradeship with Rex, he

presently drew encouragement from the thought that this sort of

cousinly familiarity excluded any serious passion. Indeed, he

occasionally felt that her more formal treatment of himself was such a

sign of favor as to warrant his making advances before he left

Pennicote, though he had intended to keep his feelings in reserve until

his position should be more assured. Miss Gwendolen, quite aware that

she was adored by this unexceptionable young clergyman with pale

whiskers and square-cut collar, felt nothing more on the subject than

that she had no objection to being adored: she turned her eyes on him

with calm mercilessness and caused him many mildly agitating hopes by

seeming always to avoid dramatic contact with him--for all meanings, we

know, depend on the key of interpretation.

Some persons might have thought beforehand that a young man of Anglican

leanings, having a sense of sacredness much exercised on small things

as well as great, rarely laughing save from politeness, and in general

regarding the mention of spades by their naked names as rather coarse,

would not have seen a fitting bride for himself in a girl who was

daring in ridicule, and showed none of the special grace required in

the clergyman's wife; or, that a young man informed by theological

reading would have reflected that he was not likely to meet the taste

of a lively, restless young lady like Miss Harleth. But are we always

obliged to explain why the facts are not what some persons thought

beforehand? The apology lies on their side, who had that erroneous way

of thinking.

As for Rex, who would possibly have been sorry for poor Middleton if he

had been aware of the excellent curate's inward conflict, he was too

completely absorbed in a first passion to have observation for any

person or thing. He did not observe Gwendolen; he only felt what she

said or did, and the back of his head seemed to be a good organ of

information as to whether she was in the room or out. Before the end of

the first fortnight he was so deeply in love that it was impossible for

him to think of his life except as bound up with Gwendolen's. He could

see no obstacles, poor boy; his own love seemed a guarantee of hers,

since it was one with the unperturbed delight in her image, so that he

could no more dream of her giving him pain than an Egyptian could dream

of snow. She sang and played to him whenever he liked, was always glad

of his companionship in riding, though his borrowed steeds were often

comic, was ready to join in any fun of his, and showed a right

appreciation of Anna. No mark of sympathy seemed absent. That because

Gwendolen was the most perfect creature in the world she was to make a

grand match, had not occurred to him. He had no conceit--at least not

more than goes to make up the necessary gum and consistence of a

substantial personality: it was only that in the young bliss of loving

he took Gwendolen's perfection as part of that good which had seemed

one with life to him, being the outcome of a happy, well-embodied

nature.

One incident which happened in the course of their dramatic attempts

impressed Rex as a sign of her unusual sensibility. It showed an aspect

of her nature which could not have been preconceived by any one who,

like him, had only seen her habitual fearlessness in active exercises

and her high spirits in society.

After a good deal of rehearsing it was resolved that a select party

should be invited to Offendene to witness the performances which went

with so much satisfaction to the actors. Anna had caused a pleasant

surprise; nothing could be neater than the way in which she played her

little parts; one would even have suspected her of hiding much sly

observation under her simplicity. And Mr. Middleton answered very well

by not trying to be comic. The main source of doubt and retardation had

been Gwendolen's desire to appear in her Greek dress. No word for a

charade would occur to her either waking or dreaming that suited her

purpose of getting a statuesque pose in this favorite costume. To

choose a motive from Racine was of no use, since Rex and the others

could not declaim French verse, and improvised speeches would turn the

scene into burlesque. Besides, Mr. Gascoigne prohibited the acting of

scenes from plays: he usually protested against the notion that an

amusement which was fitting for every one else was unfitting for a

clergyman; but he would not in this matter overstep the line of decorum

as drawn in that part of Wessex, which did not exclude his sanction of

the young people's acting charades in his sister-in-law's house--a very

different affair from private theatricals in the full sense of the word.

Everybody of course was concerned to satisfy this wish of Gwendolen's,

and Rex proposed that they should wind up with a tableau in which the

effect of her majesty would not be marred by any one's speech. This

pleased her thoroughly, and the only question was the choice of the

tableau.

"Something pleasant, children, I beseech you," said Mrs. Davilow; "I

can't have any Greek wickedness."

"It is no worse than Christian wickedness, mamma," said Gwendolen,

whose mention of Rachelesque heroines had called forth that remark.

"And less scandalous," said Rex. "Besides, one thinks of it as all gone

by and done with. What do you say to Briseis being led away? I would be

Achilles, and you would be looking round at me--after the print we have

at the rectory."

"That would be a good attitude for me," said Gwendolen, in a tone of

acceptance. But afterward she said with decision, "No. It will not do.

There must be three men in proper costume, else it will be ridiculous."

"I have it," said Rex, after a little reflection. "Hermione as the

statue in Winter's Tale? I will be Leontes, and Miss Merry, Paulina,

one on each side. Our dress won't signify," he went on laughingly; "it

will be more Shakespearian and romantic if Leontes looks like Napoleon,

and Paulina like a modern spinster."

And Hermione was chosen; all agreeing that age was of no consequence,

but Gwendolen urged that instead of the mere tableau there should be

just enough acting of the scene to introduce the striking up of the

music as a signal for her to step down and advance; when Leontes,

instead of embracing her, was to kneel and kiss the hem of her garment,

and so the curtain was to fall. The antechamber with folding doors lent

itself admirably to the purpose of a stage, and the whole of the

establishment, with the addition of Jarrett the village carpenter, was

absorbed in the preparations for an entertainment, which, considering

that it was an imitation of acting, was likely to be successful, since

we know from ancient fable that an imitation may have more chance of

success than the original.

Gwendolen was not without a special exultation in the prospect of this

occasion, for she knew that Herr Klesmer was again at Quetcham, and she

had taken care to include him among the invited.

Klesmer came. He was in one of his placid, silent moods, and sat in

serene contemplation, replying to all appeals in benignant-sounding

syllables more or less articulate--as taking up his cross meekly in a

world overgrown with amateurs, or as careful how he moved his lion paws

lest he should crush a rampant and vociferous mouse.

Everything indeed went off smoothly and according to expectation--all

that was improvised and accidental being of a probable sort--until the

incident occurred which showed Gwendolen in an unforeseen phase of

emotion. How it came about was at first a mystery.

The tableau of Hermione was doubly striking from its dissimilarity with

what had gone before: it was answering perfectly, and a murmur of

applause had been gradually suppressed while Leontes gave his

permission that Paulina should exercise her utmost art and make the

statue move.

Hermione, her arm resting on a pillar, was elevated by about six

inches, which she counted on as a means of showing her pretty foot and

instep, when at the given signal she should advance and descend.

"Music, awake her, strike!" said Paulina (Mrs. Davilow, who, by special

entreaty, had consented to take the part in a white burnous and hood).

Herr Klesmer, who had been good-natured enough to seat himself at the

piano, struck a thunderous chord--but in the same instant, and before

Hermione had put forth her foot, the movable panel, which was on a line

with the piano, flew open on the right opposite the stage and disclosed

the picture of the dead face and the fleeing figure, brought out in

pale definiteness by the position of the wax-lights. Everyone was

startled, but all eyes in the act of turning toward the open panel were

recalled by a piercing cry from Gwendolen, who stood without change of

attitude, but with a change of expression that was terrifying in its

terror. She looked like a statue into which a soul of Fear had entered:

her pallid lips were parted; her eyes, usually narrowed under their

long lashes, were dilated and fixed. Her mother, less surprised than

alarmed, rushed toward her, and Rex, too, could not help going to her

side. But the touch of her mother's arm had the effect of an electric

charge; Gwendolen fell on her knees and put her hands before her face.

She was still trembling, but mute, and it seemed that she had

self-consciousness enough to aim at controlling her signs of terror,

for she presently allowed herself to be raised from her kneeling

posture and led away, while the company were relieving their minds by

explanation.

"A magnificent bit of \_plastik\_ that!" said Klesmer to Miss Arrowpoint.

And a quick fire of undertoned question and answer went round.

"Was it part of the play?"

"Oh, no, surely not. Miss Harleth was too much affected. A sensitive

creature!"

"Dear me! I was not aware that there was a painting behind that panel;

were you?"

"No; how should I? Some eccentricity in one of the Earl's family long

ago, I suppose."

"How very painful! Pray shut it up."

"Was the door locked? It is very mysterious. It must be the spirits."

"But there is no medium present."

"How do you know that? We must conclude that there is, when such things

happen."

"Oh, the door was not locked; it was probably the sudden vibration from

the piano that sent it open."

This conclusion came from Mr. Gascoigne, who begged Miss Merry if

possible to get the key. But this readiness to explain the mystery was

thought by Mrs. Vulcany unbecoming in a clergyman, and she observed in

an undertone that Mr. Gascoigne was always a little too worldly for her

taste. However, the key was produced, and the rector turned it in the

lock with an emphasis rather offensively rationalizing--as who should

say, "it will not start open again"--putting the key in his pocket as a

security.

However, Gwendolen soon reappeared, showing her usual spirits, and

evidently determined to ignore as far as she could the striking change

she had made in the part of Hermione.

But when Klesmer said to her, "We have to thank you for devising a

perfect climax: you could not have chosen a finer bit of \_plastik\_,"

there was a flush of pleasure in her face. She liked to accept as a

belief what was really no more than delicate feigning. He divined that

the betrayal into a passion of fear had been mortifying to her, and

wished her to understand that he took it for good acting. Gwendolen

cherished the idea that now he was struck with her talent as well as

her beauty, and her uneasiness about his opinion was half turned to

complacency.

But too many were in the secret of what had been included in the

rehearsals, and what had not, and no one besides Klesmer took the

trouble to soothe Gwendolen's imagined mortification. The general

sentiment was that the incident should be let drop.

There had really been a medium concerned in the starting open of the

panel: one who had quitted the room in haste and crept to bed in much

alarm of conscience. It was the small Isabel, whose intense curiosity,

unsatisfied by the brief glimpse she had had of the strange picture on

the day of arrival at Offendene, had kept her on the watch for an

opportunity of finding out where Gwendolen had put the key, of stealing

it from the discovered drawer when the rest of the family were out, and

getting on a stool to unlock the panel. While she was indulging her

thirst for knowledge in this way, a noise which she feared was an

approaching footstep alarmed her: she closed the door and attempted

hurriedly to lock it, but failing and not daring to linger, she

withdrew the key and trusted that the panel would stick, as it seemed

well inclined to do. In this confidence she had returned the key to its

former place, stilling any anxiety by the thought that if the door were

discovered to be unlocked nobody would know how the unlocking came

about. The inconvenient Isabel, like other offenders, did not foresee

her own impulse to confession, a fatality which came upon her the

morning after the party, when Gwendolen said at the breakfast-table, "I

know the door was locked before the housekeeper gave me the key, for I

tried it myself afterward. Some one must have been to my drawer and

taken the key."

It seemed to Isabel that Gwendolen's awful eyes had rested on her more

than on the other sisters, and without any time for resolve, she said,

with a trembling lip:

"Please forgive me, Gwendolen."

The forgiveness was sooner bestowed than it would have been if

Gwendolen had not desired to dismiss from her own and every one else's

memory any case in which she had shown her susceptibility to terror.

She wondered at herself in these occasional experiences, which seemed

like a brief remembered madness, an unexplained exception from her

normal life; and in this instance she felt a peculiar vexation that her

helpless fear had shown itself, not, as usual, in solitude, but in

well-lit company. Her ideal was to be daring in speech and reckless in

braving dangers, both moral and physical; and though her practice fell

far behind her ideal, this shortcoming seemed to be due to the

pettiness of circumstances, the narrow theatre which life offers to a

girl of twenty, who cannot conceive herself as anything else than a

lady, or as in any position which would lack the tribute of respect.

She had no permanent consciousness of other fetters, or of more

spiritual restraints, having always disliked whatever was presented to

her under the name of religion, in the same way that some people

dislike arithmetic and accounts: it had raised no other emotion in her,

no alarm, no longing; so that the question whether she believed it had

not occurred to her any more than it had occurred to her to inquire

into the conditions of colonial property and banking, on which, as she

had had many opportunities of knowing, the family fortune was

dependent. All these facts about herself she would have been ready to

admit, and even, more or less indirectly, to state. What she

unwillingly recognized, and would have been glad for others to be

unaware of, was that liability of hers to fits of spiritual dread,

though this fountain of awe within her had not found its way into

connection with the religion taught her or with any human relations.

She was ashamed and frightened, as at what might happen again, in

remembering her tremor on suddenly feeling herself alone, when, for

example, she was walking without companionship and there came some

rapid change in the light. Solitude in any wide scene impressed her

with an undefined feeling of immeasurable existence aloof from her, in

the midst of which she was helplessly incapable of asserting herself.

The little astronomy taught her at school used sometimes to set her

imagination at work in a way that made her tremble: but always when

some one joined her she recovered her indifference to the vastness in

which she seemed an exile; she found again her usual world in which her

will was of some avail, and the religious nomenclature belonging to

this world was no more identified for her with those uneasy impressions

of awe than her uncle's surplices seen out of use at the rectory. With

human ears and eyes about her, she had always hitherto recovered her

confidence, and felt the possibility of winning empire.

To her mamma and others her fits of timidity or terror were

sufficiently accounted for by her "sensitiveness" or the "excitability

of her nature"; but these explanatory phrases required conciliation

with much that seemed to be blank indifference or rare self-mastery.

Heat is a great agent and a useful word, but considered as a means of

explaining the universe it requires an extensive knowledge of

differences; and as a means of explaining character "sensitiveness" is

in much the same predicament. But who, loving a creature like

Gwendolen, would not be inclined to regard every peculiarity in her as

a mark of preeminence? That was what Rex did. After the Hermione scene

he was more persuaded than ever that she must be instinct with all

feeling, and not only readier to respond to a worshipful love, but able

to love better than other girls. Rex felt the summer on his young wings

and soared happily.

CHAPTER VII.

"\_Perigot\_. As the bonny lasse passed by,

\_Willie\_. Hey, ho, bonnilasse!

\_P\_. She roode at me with glauncing eye,

\_W\_. As clear as the crystal glasse.

\_P\_. All as the sunny beame so bright,

\_W\_. Hey, ho, the sunnebeame!

\_P\_. Glaunceth from Phoebus' face forthright,

\_W\_. So love into thy heart did streame."

--SPENSER: \_Shepard's Calendar\_.

"The kindliest symptom, yet the most alarming crisis in the ticklish

state of youth; the nourisher and destroyer of hopeful wits; \* \* \* the

servitude above freedom; the gentle mind's religion; the liberal

superstition."--CHARLES LAMB.

The first sign of the unimagined snow-storm was like the transparent

white cloud that seems to set off the blue. Anna was in the secret of

Rex's feeling; though for the first time in their lives he had said

nothing to her about what he most thought of, and he only took it for

granted that she knew it. For the first time, too, Anna could not say

to Rex what was continually in her mind. Perhaps it might have been a

pain which she would have had to conceal, that he should so soon care

for some one else more than for herself, if such a feeling had not been

thoroughly neutralized by doubt and anxiety on his behalf. Anna admired

her cousin--would have said with simple sincerity, "Gwendolen is always

very good to me," and held it in the order of things for herself to be

entirely subject to this cousin; but she looked at her with mingled

fear and distrust, with a puzzled contemplation as of some wondrous and

beautiful animal whose nature was a mystery, and who, for anything Anna

knew, might have an appetite for devouring all the small creatures that

were her own particular pets. And now Anna's heart was sinking under

the heavy conviction which she dared not utter, that Gwendolen would

never care for Rex. What she herself held in tenderness and reverence

had constantly seemed indifferent to Gwendolen, and it was easier to

imagine her scorning Rex than returning any tenderness of his. Besides,

she was always thinking of being something extraordinary. And poor Rex!

Papa would be angry with him if he knew. And of course he was too young

to be in love in that way; and she, Anna had thought that it would be

years and years before any thing of that sort came, and that she would

be Rex's housekeeper ever so long. But what a heart must that be which

did not return his love! Anna, in the prospect of his suffering, was

beginning to dislike her too fascinating cousin.

It seemed to her, as it did to Rex, that the weeks had been filled with

a tumultuous life evident to all observers: if he had been questioned

on the subject he would have said that he had no wish to conceal what

he hoped would be an engagement which he should immediately tell his

father of: and yet for the first time in his life he was reserved not

only about his feelings but--which was more remarkable to Anna--about

certain actions. She, on her side, was nervous each time her father or

mother began to speak to her in private lest they should say anything

about Rex and Gwendolen. But the elders were not in the least alive to

this agitating drama, which went forward chiefly in a sort of pantomime

extremely lucid in the minds thus expressing themselves, but easily

missed by spectators who were running their eyes over the \_Guardian\_ or

the \_Clerical Gazette\_, and regarded the trivialities of the young ones

with scarcely more interpretation than they gave to the action of

lively ants.

"Where are you going, Rex?" said Anna one gray morning when her father

had set off in his carriage to the sessions, Mrs. Gascoigne with him,

and she had observed that her brother had on his antigropelos, the

utmost approach he possessed to a hunting equipment.

"Going to see the hounds throw off at the Three Barns."

"Are you going to take Gwendolen?" said Anna, timidly.

"She told you, did she?"

"No, but I thought--Does papa know you are going?"

"Not that I am aware of. I don't suppose he would trouble himself about

the matter."

"You are going to use his horse?"

"He knows I do that whenever I can."

"Don't let Gwendolen ride after the hounds, Rex," said Anna, whose

fears gifted her with second-sight.

"Why not?" said Rex, smiling rather provokingly.

"Papa and mamma and aunt Davilow all wish her not to. They think it is

not right for her."

"Why should you suppose she is going to do what is not right?"

"Gwendolen minds nobody sometimes," said Anna getting bolder by dint of

a little anger.

"Then she would not mind me," said Rex, perversely making a joke of

poor Anna's anxiety.

"Oh Rex, I cannot bear it. You will make yourself very unhappy." Here

Anna burst into tears.

"Nannie, Nannie, what on earth is the matter with you?" said Rex, a

little impatient at being kept in this way, hat on and whip in hand.

"She will not care for you one bit--I know she never will!" said the

poor child in a sobbing whisper. She had lost all control of herself.

Rex reddened and hurried away from her out of the hall door, leaving

her to the miserable consciousness of having made herself disagreeable

in vain.

He did think of her words as he rode along; they had the unwelcomeness

which all unfavorable fortune-telling has, even when laughed at; but he

quickly explained them as springing from little Anna's tenderness, and

began to be sorry that he was obliged to come away without soothing

her. Every other feeling on the subject, however, was quickly merged in

a resistant belief to the contrary of hers, accompanied with a new

determination to prove that he was right. This sort of certainty had

just enough kinship to doubt and uneasiness to hurry on a confession

which an untouched security might have delayed.

Gwendolen was already mounted and riding up and down the avenue when

Rex appeared at the gate. She had provided herself against

disappointment in case he did not appear in time by having the groom

ready behind her, for she would not have waited beyond a reasonable

time. But now the groom was dismissed, and the two rode away in

delightful freedom. Gwendolen was in her highest spirits, and Rex

thought that she had never looked so lovely before; her figure, her

long white throat, and the curves of her cheek and chin were always set

off to perfection by the compact simplicity of her riding dress. He

could not conceive a more perfect girl; and to a youthful lover like

Rex it seems that the fundamental identity of the good, the true and

the beautiful, is already extant and manifest in the object of his

love. Most observers would have held it more than equally accountable

that a girl should have like impressions about Rex, for in his handsome

face there was nothing corresponding to the undefinable stinging

quality--as it were a trace of demon ancestry--which made some

beholders hesitate in their admiration of Gwendolen.

It was an exquisite January morning in which there was no threat of

rain, but a gray sky making the calmest background for the charms of a

mild winter scene--the grassy borders of the lanes, the hedgerows

sprinkled with red berries and haunted with low twitterings, the purple

bareness of the elms, the rich brown of the furrows. The horses' hoofs

made a musical chime, accompanying their young voices. She was laughing

at his equipment, for he was the reverse of a dandy, and he was

enjoying her laughter; the freshness of the morning mingled with the

freshness of their youth; and every sound that came from their clear

throats, every glance they gave each other, was the bubbling outflow

from a spring of joy. It was all morning to them, within and without.

And thinking of them in these moments one is tempted to that futile

sort of wishing--if only things could have been a little otherwise

then, so as to have been greatly otherwise after--if only these two

beautiful young creatures could have pledged themselves to each other

then and there, and never through life have swerved from that pledge!

For some of the goodness which Rex believed in was there. Goodness is a

large, often a prospective word; like harvest, which at one stage when

we talk of it lies all underground, with an indeterminate future; is

the germ prospering in the darkness? at another, it has put forth

delicate green blades, and by-and-by the trembling blossoms are ready

to be dashed off by an hour of rough wind or rain. Each stage has its

peculiar blight, and may have the healthy life choked out of it by a

particular action of the foul land which rears or neighbors it, or by

damage brought from foulness afar.

"Anna had got it into her head that you would want to ride after the

hounds this morning," said Rex, whose secret associations with Anna's

words made this speech seem quite perilously near the most momentous of

subjects.

"Did she?" said Gwendolen, laughingly. "What a little clairvoyant she

is!"

"Shall you?" said Rex, who had not believed in her intending to do it

if the elders objected, but confided in her having good reasons.

"I don't know. I can't tell what I shall do till I get there.

Clairvoyants are often wrong: they foresee what is likely. I am not

fond of what is likely: it is always dull. I do what is unlikely."

"Ah, there you tell me a secret. When once I knew what people in

general would be likely to do, I should know you would do the opposite.

So you would have come round to a likelihood of your own sort. I shall

be able to calculate on you. You couldn't surprise me."

"Yes, I could. I should turn round and do what was likely for people in

general," said Gwendolen, with a musical laugh.

"You see you can't escape some sort of likelihood. And

contradictoriness makes the strongest likelihood of all. You must give

up a plan."

"No, I shall not. My plan is to do what pleases me." (Here should any

young lady incline to imitate Gwendolen, let her consider the set of

her head and neck: if the angle there had been different, the chin

protrusive, and the cervical vertebrae a trifle more curved in their

position, ten to one Gwendolen's words would have had a jar in them for

the sweet-natured Rex. But everything odd in her speech was humor and

pretty banter, which he was only anxious to turn toward one point.)

"Can you manage to feel only what pleases you?" said he.

"Of course not; that comes from what other people do. But if the world

were pleasanter, one would only feel what was pleasant. Girls' lives

are so stupid: they never do what they like."

"I thought that was more the case of the men. They are forced to do

hard things, and are often dreadfully bored, and knocked to pieces too.

And then, if we love a girl very dearly we want to do as she likes, so

after all you have your own way."

"I don't believe it. I never saw a married woman who had her own way."

"What should you like to do?" said Rex, quite guilelessly, and in real

anxiety.

"Oh, I don't know!--go to the North Pole, or ride steeple-chases, or go

to be a queen in the East like Lady Hester Stanhope," said Gwendolen,

flightily. Her words were born on her lips, but she would have been at

a loss to give an answer of deeper origin.

"You don't mean you would never be married?"

"No; I didn't say that. Only when I married, I should not do as other

women do."

"You might do just as you liked if you married a man who loved you more

dearly than anything else in the world," said Rex, who, poor youth, was

moving in themes outside the curriculum in which he had promised to win

distinction. "I know one who does."

"Don't talk of Mr. Middleton, for heaven's sake," said Gwendolen,

hastily, a quick blush spreading over her face and neck; "that is

Anna's chant. I hear the hounds. Let us go on."

She put her chestnut to a canter, and Rex had no choice but to follow

her. Still he felt encouraged. Gwendolen was perfectly aware that her

cousin was in love with her; but she had no idea that the matter was of

any consequence, having never had the slightest visitation of painful

love herself. She wished the small romance of Rex's devotion to fill up

the time of his stay at Pennicote, and to avoid explanations which

would bring it to an untimely end. Besides, she objected, with a sort

of physical repulsion, to being directly made love to. With all her

imaginative delight in being adored, there was a certain fierceness of

maidenhood in her.

But all other thoughts were soon lost for her in the excitement of the

scene at the Three Barns. Several gentlemen of the hunt knew her, and

she exchanged pleasant greetings. Rex could not get another word with

her. The color, the stir of the field had taken possession of Gwendolen

with a strength which was not due to habitual associations, for she had

never yet ridden after the hounds--only said she should like to do it,

and so drawn forth a prohibition; her mamma dreading the danger, and

her uncle declaring that for his part he held that kind of violent

exercise unseemly in a woman, and that whatever might be done in other

parts of the country, no lady of good position followed the Wessex

hunt: no one but Mrs. Gadsby, the yeomanry captain's wife, who had been

a kitchenmaid and still spoke like one. This last argument had some

effect on Gwendolen, and had kept her halting between her desire to

assert her freedom and her horror of being classed with Mrs. Gadsby.

Some of the most unexceptionable women in the neighborhood occasionally

went to see the hounds throw off; but it happened that none of them

were present this morning to abstain from following, while Mrs. Gadsby,

with her doubtful antecedents, grammatical and otherwise, was not

visible to make following seem unbecoming. Thus Gwendolen felt no check

on the animal stimulus that came from the stir and tongue of the

hounds, the pawing of the horses, the varying voices of men, the

movement hither and thither of vivid color on the background of green

and gray stillness:--that utmost excitement of the coming chase which

consists in feeling something like a combination of dog and horse, with

the superadded thrill of social vanities and consciousness of

centaur-power which belongs to humankind.

Rex would have felt more of the same enjoyment if he could have kept

nearer to Gwendolen, and not seen her constantly occupied with

acquaintances, or looked at by would-be acquaintances, all on lively

horses which veered about and swept the surrounding space as

effectually as a revolving lever.

"Glad to see you here this fine morning, Miss Harleth," said Lord

Brackenshaw, a middle-aged peer of aristocratic seediness in stained

pink, with easy-going manners which would have made the threatened

deluge seem of no consequence. "We shall have a first-rate run. A pity

you didn't go with us. Have you ever tried your little chestnut at a

ditch? you wouldn't be afraid, eh?"

"Not the least in the world," said Gwendolen. And that was true: she

was never fearful in action and companionship. "I have often taken him

at some rails and a ditch too, near--"

"Ah, by Jove!" said his lordship, quietly, in notation that something

was happening which must break off the dialogue: and as he reined off

his horse, Rex was bringing his sober hackney up to Gwendolen's side

when--the hounds gave tongue, and the whole field was in motion as if

the whirl of the earth were carrying it; Gwendolen along with

everything else; no word of notice to Rex, who without a second thought

followed too. Could he let Gwendolen go alone? under other

circumstances he would have enjoyed the run, but he was just now

perturbed by the check which had been put on the impetus to utter his

love, and get utterance in return, an impetus which could not at once

resolve itself into a totally different sort of chase, at least with

the consciousness of being on his father's gray nag, a good horse

enough in his way, but of sober years and ecclesiastical habits.

Gwendolen on her spirited little chestnut was up with the best, and

felt as secure as an immortal goddess, having, if she had thought of

risk, a core of confidence that no ill luck would happen to her. But

she thought of no such thing, and certainly not of any risk there might

be for her cousin. If she had thought of him, it would have struck her

as a droll picture that he should be gradually falling behind, and

looking round in search of gates: a fine lithe youth, whose heart must

be panting with all the spirit of a beagle, stuck as if under a

wizard's spell on a stiff clerical hackney, would have made her laugh

with a sense of fun much too strong for her to reflect on his

mortification. But Gwendolen was apt to think rather of those who saw

her than of those whom she could not see; and Rex was soon so far

behind that if she had looked she would not have seen him. For I grieve

to say that in the search for a gate, along a lane lately mended,

Primrose fell, broke his knees, and undesignedly threw Rex over his

head.

Fortunately a blacksmith's son who also followed the hounds under

disadvantages, namely, on foot (a loose way of hunting which had struck

some even frivolous minds as immoral), was naturally also in the rear,

and happened to be within sight of Rex's misfortune. He ran to give

help which was greatly needed, for Rex was a great deal stunned, and

the complete recovery of sensation came in the form of pain. Joel Dagge

on this occasion showed himself that most useful of personages, whose

knowledge is of a kind suited to the immediate occasion: he not only

knew perfectly well what was the matter with the horse, how far they

were both from the nearest public-house and from Pennicote Rectory, and

could certify to Rex that his shoulder was only a bit out of joint, but

also offered experienced surgical aid.

"Lord, sir, let me shove it in again for you! I's seen Nash, the

bone-setter, do it, and done it myself for our little Sally twice over.

It's all one and the same, shoulders is. If you'll trusten to me and

tighten your mind up a bit, I'll do it for you in no time."

"Come then, old fellow," said Rex, who could tighten his mind better

than his seat in the saddle. And Joel managed the operation, though not

without considerable expense of pain to his patient, who turned so

pitiably pale while tightening his mind, that Joel remarked, "Ah, sir,

you aren't used to it, that's how it is. I's see lots and lots o'

joints out. I see a man with his eye pushed out once--that was a rum go

as ever I see. You can't have a bit o' fun wi'out such sort o' things.

But it went in again. I's swallowed three teeth mysen, as sure as I'm

alive. Now, sirrey" (this was addressed to Primrose), "come alonk--you

musn't make believe as you can't."

Joel being clearly a low character, it is, happily, not necessary to

say more of him to the refined reader, than that he helped Rex to get

home with as little delay as possible. There was no alternative but to

get home, though all the while he was in anxiety about Gwendolen, and

more miserable in the thought that she, too, might have had an

accident, than in the pain of his own bruises and the annoyance he was

about to cause his father. He comforted himself about her by reflecting

that every one would be anxious to take care of her, and that some

acquaintance would be sure to conduct her home.

Mr. Gascoigne was already at home, and was writing letters in his

study, when he was interrupted by seeing poor Rex come in with a face

which was not the less handsome and ingratiating for being pale and a

little distressed. He was secretly the favorite son, and a young

portrait of the father; who, however, never treated him with any

partiality--rather, with an extra rigor. Mr. Gascoigne having inquired

of Anna, knew that Rex had gone with Gwendolen to the meet at the Three

Barns.

"What is the matter?" he said hastily, not laying down his pen.

"I'm very sorry, sir; Primrose has fallen down and broken his knees."

"Where have you been with him?" said Mr. Gascoigne, with a touch of

severity. He rarely gave way to temper.

"To the Three Barns to see the hounds throw off."

"And you were fool enough to follow?"

"Yes, sir. I didn't go at any fences, but the horse got his leg into a

hole."

"And you got hurt yourself, I hope, eh!"

"I got my shoulder put out, but a young blacksmith put it in again for

me. I'm just a little battered, that's all."

"Well, sit down."

"I'm very sorry about the horse, sir; I knew it would be a vexation to

you."

"And what has become of Gwendolen?" said Mr. Gascoigne, abruptly. Rex,

who did not imagine that his father had made any inquiries about him,

answered at first with a blush, which was the more remarkable for his

previous paleness. Then he said, nervously--

"I am anxious to know--I should like to go or send at once to

Offendene--but she rides so well, and I think she would keep up--there

would most likely be many round her."

"I suppose it was she who led you on, eh?" said Mr. Gascoigne, laying

down his pen, leaning back in his chair, and looking at Rex with more

marked examination.

"It was natural for her to want to go: she didn't intend it

beforehand--she was led away by the spirit of the thing. And, of

course, I went when she went."

Mr. Gascoigne left a brief interval of silence, and then said, with

quiet irony,--"But now you observe, young gentleman, that you are not

furnished with a horse which will enable you to play the squire to your

cousin. You must give up that amusement. You have spoiled my nag for

me, and that is enough mischief for one vacation. I shall beg you to

get ready to start for Southampton to-morrow and join Stilfox, till you

go up to Oxford with him. That will be good for your bruises as well as

your studies."

Poor Rex felt his heart swelling and comporting itself as if it had

been no better than a girl's.

"I hope you will not insist on my going immediately, sir."

"Do you feel too ill?"

"No, not that--but--" here Rex bit his lips and felt the tears

starting, to his great vexation; then he rallied and tried to say more

firmly, "I want to go to Offendene, but I can go this evening."

"I am going there myself. I can bring word about Gwendolen, if that is

what you want."

Rex broke down. He thought he discerned an intention fatal to his

happiness, nay, his life. He was accustomed to believe in his father's

penetration, and to expect firmness. "Father, I can't go away without

telling her that I love her, and knowing that she loves me."

Mr. Gascoigne was inwardly going through some self-rebuke for not being

more wary, and was now really sorry for the lad; but every

consideration was subordinate to that of using the wisest tactics in

the case. He had quickly made up his mind and to answer the more

quietly--

"My dear boy, you are too young to be taking momentous, decisive steps

of that sort. This is a fancy which you have got into your head during

an idle week or two: you must set to work at something and dismiss it.

There is every reason against it. An engagement at your age would be

totally rash and unjustifiable; and moreover, alliances between first

cousins are undesirable. Make up your mind to a brief disappointment.

Life is full of them. We have all got to be broken in; and this is a

mild beginning for you."

"No, not mild. I can't bear it. I shall be good for nothing. I

shouldn't mind anything, if it were settled between us. I could do

anything then," said Rex, impetuously. "But it's of no use to pretend

that I will obey you. I can't do it. If I said I would, I should be

sure to break my word. I should see Gwendolen again."

"Well, wait till to-morrow morning, that we may talk of the matter

again--you will promise me that," said Mr. Gascoigne, quietly; and Rex

did not, could not refuse.

The rector did not even tell his wife that he had any other reason for

going to Offendene that evening than his desire to ascertain that

Gwendolen had got home safely. He found her more than safe--elated. Mr.

Quallon, who had won the brush, had delivered the trophy to her, and

she had brought it before her, fastened on the saddle; more than that,

Lord Brackenshaw had conducted her home, and had shown himself

delighted with her spirited riding. All this was told at once to her

uncle, that he might see how well justified she had been in acting

against his advice; and the prudential rector did feel himself in a

slight difficulty, for at that moment he was particularly sensible that

it was his niece's serious interest to be well regarded by the

Brackenshaws, and their opinion as to her following the hounds really

touched the essence of his objection. However, he was not obliged to

say anything immediately, for Mrs. Davilow followed up Gwendolen's

brief triumphant phrases with--

"Still, I do hope you will not do it again, Gwendolen. I should never

have a moment's quiet. Her father died by an accident, you know."

Here Mrs. Davilow had turned away from Gwendolen, and looked at Mr.

Gascoigne.

"Mamma, dear," said Gwendolen, kissing her merrily, and passing over

the question of the fears which Mrs. Davilow had meant to account for,

"children don't take after their parents in broken legs."

Not one word had yet been said about Rex. In fact there had been no

anxiety about him at Offendene. Gwendolen had observed to her mamma,

"Oh, he must have been left far behind, and gone home in despair," and

it could not be denied that this was fortunate so far as it made way

for Lord Brackenshaw's bringing her home. But now Mr. Gascoigne said,

with some emphasis, looking at Gwendolen--

"Well, the exploit has ended better for you than for Rex."

"Yes, I dare say he had to make a terrible round. You have not taught

Primrose to take the fences, uncle," said Gwendolen, without the

faintest shade of alarm in her looks and tone.

"Rex has had a fall," said Mr. Gascoigne, curtly, throwing himself into

an arm-chair resting his elbows and fitting his palms and fingers

together, while he closed his lips and looked at Gwendolen, who said--

"Oh, poor fellow! he is not hurt, I hope?" with a correct look of

anxiety such as elated mortals try to super-induce when their pulses

are all the while quick with triumph; and Mrs. Davilow, in the same

moment, uttered a low "Good heavens! There!"

Mr. Gascoigne went on: "He put his shoulder out, and got some bruises,

I believe." Here he made another little pause of observation; but

Gwendolen, instead of any such symptoms as pallor and silence, had only

deepened the compassionateness of her brow and eyes, and said again,

"Oh, poor fellow! it is nothing serious, then?" and Mr. Gascoigne held

his diagnosis complete. But he wished to make assurance doubly sure,

and went on still with a purpose.

"He got his arm set again rather oddly. Some blacksmith--not a

parishioner of mine--was on the field--a loose fish, I suppose, but

handy, and set the arm for him immediately. So after all, I believe, I

and Primrose come off worst. The horse's knees are cut to pieces. He

came down in a hole, it seems, and pitched Rex over his head."

Gwendolen's face had allowably become contented again, since Rex's arm

had been reset; and now, at the descriptive suggestions in the latter

part of her uncle's speech, her elated spirits made her features less

unmanageable than usual; the smiles broke forth, and finally a

descending scale of laughter.

"You are a pretty young lady--to laugh at other people's calamities,"

said Mr. Gascoigne, with a milder sense of disapprobation than if he

had not had counteracting reasons to be glad that Gwendolen showed no

deep feeling on the occasion.

"Pray forgive me, uncle. Now Rex is safe, it is so droll to fancy the

figure he and Primrose would cut--in a lane all by themselves--only a

blacksmith running up. It would make a capital caricature of 'Following

the Hounds.'"

Gwendolen rather valued herself on her superior freedom in laughing

where others might only see matter for seriousness. Indeed, the

laughter became her person so well that her opinion of its gracefulness

was often shared by others; and it even entered into her uncle's course

of thought at this moment, that it was no wonder a boy should be

fascinated by this young witch--who, however, was more mischievous than

could be desired.

"How can you laugh at broken bones, child?" said Mrs. Davilow, still

under her dominant anxiety. "I wish we had never allowed you to have

the horse. You will see that we were wrong," she added, looking with a

grave nod at Mr. Gascoigne--"at least I was, to encourage her in asking

for it."

"Yes, seriously, Gwendolen," said Mr. Gascoigne, in a judicious tone of

rational advice to a person understood to be altogether rational, "I

strongly recommend you--I shall ask you to oblige me so far--not to

repeat your adventure of to-day. Lord Brackenshaw is very kind, but I

feel sure that he would concur with me in what I say. To be spoken of

as 'the young lady who hunts' by way of exception, would give a tone to

the language about you which I am sure you would not like. Depend upon

it, his lordship would not choose that Lady Beatrice or Lady Maria

should hunt in this part of the country, if they were old enough to do

so. When you are married, it will be different: you may do whatever

your husband sanctions. But if you intend to hunt, you must marry a man

who can keep horses."

"I don't know why I should do anything so horrible as to marry without

\_that\_ prospect, at least," said Gwendolen, pettishly. Her uncle's

speech had given her annoyance, which she could not show more directly;

but she felt that she was committing herself, and after moving

carelessly to another part of the room, went out.

"She always speaks in that way about marriage," said Mrs. Davilow; "but

it will be different when she has seen the right person."

"Her heart has never been in the least touched, that you know of?" said

Mr. Gascoigne.

Mrs. Davilow shook her head silently. "It was only last night she said

to me, 'Mamma, I wonder how girls manage to fall in love. It is easy to

make them do it in books. But men are too ridiculous.'"

Mr. Gascoigne laughed a little, and made no further remark on the

subject. The next morning at breakfast he said--

"How are your bruises, Rex?"

"Oh, not very mellow yet, sir; only beginning to turn a little."

"You don't feel quite ready for a journey to Southampton?"

"Not quite," answered Rex, with his heart metaphorically in his mouth.

"Well, you can wait till to-morrow, and go to say goodbye to them at

Offendene."

Mrs. Gascoigne, who now knew the whole affair, looked steadily at her

coffee lest she also should begin to cry, as Anna was doing already.

Mr. Gascoigne felt that he was applying a sharp remedy to poor Rex's

acute attack, but he believed it to be in the end the kindest. To let

him know the hopelessness of his love from Gwendolen's own lips might

be curative in more ways than one.

"I can only be thankful that she doesn't care about him," said Mrs.

Gascoigne, when she joined her husband in his study. "There are things

in Gwendolen I cannot reconcile myself to. My Anna is worth two of her,

with all her beauty and talent. It looks very ill in her that she will

not help in the schools with Anna--not even in the Sunday-school. What

you or I advise is of no consequence to her: and poor Fannie is

completely under her thumb. But I know you think better of her," Mrs.

Gascoigne ended with a deferential hesitation.

"Oh, my dear, there is no harm in the girl. It is only that she has a

high spirit, and it will not do to hold the reins too tight. The point

is, to get her well married. She has a little too much fire in her for

her present life with her mother and sisters. It is natural and right

that she should be married soon--not to a poor man, but one who can

give her a fitting position."

Presently Rex, with his arm in a sling, was on his two miles' walk to

Offendene. He was rather puzzled by the unconditional permission to see

Gwendolen, but his father's real ground of action could not enter into

his conjectures. If it had, he would first have thought it horribly

cold-blooded, and then have disbelieved in his father's conclusions.

When he got to the house, everybody was there but Gwendolen. The four

girls, hearing him speak in the hall, rushed out of the library, which

was their school-room, and hung round him with compassionate inquiries

about his arm. Mrs. Davilow wanted to know exactly what had happened,

and where the blacksmith lived, that she might make him a present;

while Miss Merry, who took a subdued and melancholy part in all family

affairs, doubted whether it would not be giving too much encouragement

to that kind of character. Rex had never found the family troublesome

before, but just now he wished them all away and Gwendolen there, and

he was too uneasy for good-natured feigning. When at last he had said,

"Where is Gwendolen?" and Mrs. Davilow had told Alice to go and see if

her sister were come down, adding, "I sent up her breakfast this

morning. She needed a long rest." Rex took the shortest way out of his

endurance by saying, almost impatiently, "Aunt, I want to speak to

Gwendolen--I want to see her alone."

"Very well, dear; go into the drawing-room. I will send her there,"

said Mrs. Davilow, who had observed that he was fond of being with

Gwendolen, as was natural, but had not thought of this as having any

bearing on the realities of life: it seemed merely part of the

Christmas holidays which were spinning themselves out.

Rex for his part thought that the realities of life were all hanging on

this interview. He had to walk up and down the drawing-room in

expectation for nearly ten minutes--ample space for all imaginative

fluctuations; yet, strange to say, he was unvaryingly occupied in

thinking what and how much he could do, when Gwendolen had accepted

him, to satisfy his father that the engagement was the most prudent

thing in the world, since it inspired him with double energy for work.

He was to be a lawyer, and what reason was there why he should not rise

as high as Eldon did? He was forced to look at life in the light of his

father's mind.

But when the door opened and she whose presence he was longing for

entered, there came over him suddenly and mysteriously a state of

tremor and distrust which he had never felt before. Miss Gwendolen,

simple as she stood there, in her black silk, cut square about the

round white pillar of her throat, a black band fastening her hair which

streamed backward in smooth silky abundance, seemed more queenly than

usual. Perhaps it was that there was none of the latent fun and

tricksiness which had always pierced in her greeting of Rex. How much

of this was due to her presentiment from what he had said yesterday

that he was going to talk of love? How much from her desire to show

regret about his accident? Something of both. But the wisdom of ages

has hinted that there is a side of the bed which has a malign influence

if you happen to get out on it; and this accident befalls some charming

persons rather frequently. Perhaps it had befallen Gwendolen this

morning. The hastening of her toilet, the way in which Bugle used the

brush, the quality of the shilling serial mistakenly written for her

amusement, the probabilities of the coming day, and, in short, social

institutions generally, were all objectionable to her. It was not that

she was out of temper, but that the world was not equal to the demands

of her fine organism.

However it might be, Rex saw an awful majesty about her as she entered

and put out her hand to him, without the least approach to a smile in

eyes or mouth. The fun which had moved her in the evening had quite

evaporated from the image of his accident, and the whole affair seemed

stupid to her. But she said with perfect propriety, "I hope you are not

much hurt, Rex; I deserve that you should reproach me for your

accident."

"Not at all," said Rex, feeling the soul within him spreading itself

like an attack of illness. "There is hardly any thing the matter with

me. I am so glad you had the pleasure: I would willingly pay for it by

a tumble, only I was sorry to break the horse's knees."

Gwendolen walked to the hearth and stood looking at the fire in the

most inconvenient way for conversation, so that he could only get a

side view of her face.

"My father wants me to go to Southampton for the rest of the vacation,"

said Rex, his baritone trembling a little.

"Southampton! That's a stupid place to go to, isn't it?" said

Gwendolen, chilly.

"It would be to me, because you would not be there." Silence.

"Should you mind about me going away, Gwendolen?"

"Of course. Every one is of consequence in this dreary country," said

Gwendolen, curtly. The perception that poor Rex wanted to be tender

made her curl up and harden like a sea-anemone at the touch of a finger.

"Are you angry with me, Gwendolen? Why do you treat me in this way all

at once?" said Rex, flushing, and with more spirit in his voice, as if

he too were capable of being angry.

Gwendolen looked round at him and smiled. "Treat you? Nonsense! I am

only rather cross. Why did you come so very early? You must expect to

find tempers in dishabille."

"Be as cross with me as you like--only don't treat me with

indifference," said Rex, imploringly. "All the happiness of my life

depends on your loving me--if only a little--better than any one else."

He tried to take her hand, but she hastily eluded his grasp and moved

to the other end of the hearth, facing him.

"Pray don't make love to me! I hate it!" she looked at him fiercely.

Rex turned pale and was silent, but could not take his eyes off her,

and the impetus was not yet exhausted that made hers dart death at him.

Gwendolen herself could not have foreseen that she should feel in this

way. It was all a sudden, new experience to her. The day before she had

been quite aware that her cousin was in love with her; she did not mind

how much, so that he said nothing about it; and if any one had asked

her why she objected to love-making speeches, she would have said,

laughingly, "Oh I am tired of them all in the books." But now the life

of passion had begun negatively in her. She felt passionately averse to

this volunteered love.

To Rex at twenty the joy of life seemed at an end more absolutely than

it can do to a man at forty. But before they had ceased to look at each

other, he did speak again.

"Is that last word you have to say to me, Gwendolen? Will it always be

so?"

She could not help seeing his wretchedness and feeling a little regret

for the old Rex who had not offended her. Decisively, but yet with some

return of kindness, she said--

"About making love? Yes. But I don't dislike you for anything else."

There was just a perceptible pause before he said a low "good-bye." and

passed out of the room. Almost immediately after, she heard the heavy

hall door bang behind him.

Mrs. Davilow, too, had heard Rex's hasty departure, and presently came

into the drawing-room, where she found Gwendolen seated on the low

couch, her face buried, and her hair falling over her figure like a

garment. She was sobbing bitterly. "My child, my child, what is it?"

cried the mother, who had never before seen her darling struck down in

this way, and felt something of the alarmed anguish that women, feel at

the sight of overpowering sorrow in a strong man; for this child had

been her ruler. Sitting down by her with circling arms, she pressed her

cheek against Gwendolen's head, and then tried to draw it upward.

Gwendolen gave way, and letting her head rest against her mother, cried

out sobbingly, "Oh, mamma, what can become of my life? there is nothing

worth living for!"

"Why, dear?" said Mrs. Davilow. Usually she herself had been rebuked by

her daughter for involuntary signs of despair.

"I shall never love anybody. I can't love people. I hate them."

"The time will come, dear, the time will come."

Gwendolen was more and more convulsed with sobbing; but putting her

arms round her mother's neck with an almost painful clinging, she said

brokenly, "I can't bear any one to be very near me but you."

Then the mother began to sob, for this spoiled child had never shown

such dependence on her before: and so they clung to each other.

CHAPTER VIII.

What name doth Joy most borrow

When life is fair?

"To-morrow."

What name doth best fit Sorrow

In young despair?

"To-morrow."

There was a much more lasting trouble at the rectory. Rex arrived there

only to throw himself on his bed in a state of apparent apathy,

unbroken till the next day, when it began to be interrupted by more

positive signs of illness. Nothing could be said about his going to

Southampton: instead of that, the chief thought of his mother and Anna

was how to tend this patient who did not want to be well, and from

being the brightest, most grateful spirit in the household, was

metamorphosed into an irresponsive, dull-eyed creature who met all

affectionate attempts with a murmur of "Let me alone." His father

looked beyond the crisis, and believed it to be the shortest way out of

an unlucky affair; but he was sorry for the inevitable suffering, and

went now and then to sit by him in silence for a few minutes, parting

with a gentle pressure of his hand on Rex's blank brow, and a "God

bless you, my boy." Warham and the younger children used to peep round

the edge of the door to see this incredible thing of their lively

brother being laid low; but fingers were immediately shaken at them to

drive them back. The guardian who was always there was Anna, and her

little hand was allowed to rest within her brother's, though he never

gave it a welcoming pressure. Her soul was divided between anguish for

Rex and reproach of Gwendolen.

"Perhaps it is wicked of me, but I think I never \_can\_ love her again,"

came as the recurrent burden of poor little Anna's inward monody. And

even Mrs. Gascoigne had an angry feeling toward her niece which she

could not refrain from expressing (apologetically) to her husband.

"I know of course it is better, and we ought to be thankful that she is

not in love with the poor boy; but really. Henry, I think she is hard;

she has the heart of a coquette. I can not help thinking that she must

have made him believe something, or the disappointment would not have

taken hold of him in that way. And some blame attaches to poor Fanny;

she is quite blind about that girl."

Mr. Gascoigne answered imperatively: "The less said on that point the

better, Nancy. I ought to have been more awake myself. As to the boy,

be thankful if nothing worse ever happens to him. Let the thing die out

as quickly as possible; and especially with regard to Gwendolen--let it

be as if it had never been."

The rector's dominant feeling was that there had been a great escape.

Gwendolen in love with Rex in return would have made a much harder

problem, the solution of which might have been taken out of his hands.

But he had to go through some further difficulty.

One fine morning Rex asked for his bath, and made his toilet as usual.

Anna, full of excitement at this change, could do nothing but listen

for his coming down, and at last hearing his step, ran to the foot of

the stairs to meet him. For the first time he gave her a faint smile,

but it looked so melancholy on his pale face that she could hardly help

crying.

"Nannie!" he said gently, taking her hand and leading her slowly along

with him to the drawing-room. His mother was there, and when she came

to kiss him, he said: "What a plague I am!"

Then he sat still and looked out of the bow-window on the lawn and

shrubs covered with hoar-frost, across which the sun was sending faint

occasional gleams:--something like that sad smile on Rex's face, Anna

thought. He felt as if he had had a resurrection into a new world, and

did not know what to do with himself there, the old interests being

left behind. Anna sat near him, pretending to work, but really watching

him with yearning looks. Beyond the garden hedge there was a road where

wagons and carts sometimes went on field-work: a railed opening was

made in the hedge, because the upland with its bordering wood and clump

of ash-trees against the sky was a pretty sight. Presently there came

along a wagon laden with timber; the horses were straining their grand

muscles, and the driver having cracked his whip, ran along anxiously to

guide the leader's head, fearing a swerve. Rex seemed to be shaken into

attention, rose and looked till the last quivering trunk of the timber

had disappeared, and then walked once or twice along the room. Mrs.

Gascoigne was no longer there, and when he came to sit down again,

Anna, seeing a return of speech in her brother's eyes, could not resist

the impulse to bring a little stool and seat herself against his knee,

looking up at him with an expression which seemed to say, "Do speak to

me." And he spoke.

"I'll tell you what I'm thinking of, Nannie. I will go to Canada, or

somewhere of that sort." (Rex had not studied the character of our

colonial possessions.)

"Oh, Rex, not for always!"

"Yes, to get my bread there. I should like to build a hut, and work

hard at clearing, and have everything wild about me, and a great wide

quiet."

"And not take me with you?" said Anna, the big tears coming fast.

"How could I?"

"I should like it better than anything; and settlers go with their

families. I would sooner go there than stay here in England. I could

make the fires, and mend the clothes, and cook the food; and I could

learn how to make the bread before we went. It would be nicer than

anything--like playing at life over again, as we used to do when we

made our tent with the drugget, and had our little plates and dishes."

"Father and mother would not let you go."

"Yes, I think they would, when I explained everything. It would save

money; and papa would have more to bring up the boys with."

There was further talk of the same practical kind at intervals, and it

ended in Rex's being obliged to consent that Anna should go with him

when he spoke to his father on the subject.

Of course it was when the rector was alone in his study. Their mother

would become reconciled to whatever he decided on, but mentioned to her

first, the question would have distressed her.

"Well, my children!" said Mr. Gascoigne, cheerfully, as they entered.

It was a comfort to see Rex about again.

"May we sit down with you a little, papa?" said Anna. "Rex has

something to say."

"With all my heart."

It was a noticeable group that these three creatures made, each of them

with a face of the same structural type--the straight brow, the nose

suddenly straightened from an intention of being aquiline, the short

upper lip, the short but strong and well-hung chin: there was even the

same tone of complexion and set of the eye. The gray-haired father was

at once massive and keen-looking; there was a perpendicular line in his

brow which when he spoke with any force of interest deepened; and the

habit of ruling gave him an air of reserved authoritativeness. Rex

would have seemed a vision of his father's youth, if it had been

possible to imagine Mr. Gascoigne without distinct plans and without

command, smitten with a heart sorrow, and having no more notion of

concealment than a sick animal; and Anna was a tiny copy of Rex, with

hair drawn back and knotted, her face following his in its changes of

expression, as if they had one soul between them.

"You know all about what has upset me, father," Rex began, and Mr.

Gascoigne nodded.

"I am quite done up for life in this part of the world. I am sure it

will be no use my going back to Oxford. I couldn't do any reading. I

should fail, and cause you expense for nothing. I want to have your

consent to take another course, sir."

Mr. Gascoigne nodded more slowly, the perpendicular line on his brow

deepened, and Anna's trembling increased.

"If you would allow me a small outfit, I should like to go to the

colonies and work on the land there." Rex thought the vagueness of the

phrase prudential; "the colonies" necessarily embracing more

advantages, and being less capable of being rebutted on a single ground

than any particular settlement.

"Oh, and with me, papa," said Anna, not bearing to be left out from the

proposal even temporarily. "Rex would want some one to take care of

him, you know--some one to keep house. And we shall never, either of

us, be married. And I should cost nothing, and I should be so happy. I

know it would be hard to leave you and mamma; but there are all the

others to bring up, and we two should be no trouble to you any more."

Anna had risen from her seat, and used the feminine argument of going

closer to her papa as she spoke. He did not smile, but he drew her on

his knee and held her there, as if to put her gently out of the

question while he spoke to Rex.

"You will admit that my experience gives me some power of judging for

you, and that I can probably guide you in practical matters better than

you can guide yourself?"

Rex was obliged to say, "Yes, sir."

"And perhaps you will admit--though I don't wish to press that

point--that you are bound in duty to consider my judgment and wishes?"

"I have never yet placed myself in opposition to you, sir." Rex in his

secret soul could not feel that he was bound not to go to the colonies,

but to go to Oxford again--which was the point in question.

"But you will do so if you persist in setting your mind toward a rash

and foolish procedure, and deafening yourself to considerations which

my experience of life assures me of. You think, I suppose, that you

have had a shock which has changed all your inclinations, stupefied

your brains, unfitted you for anything but manual labor, and given you

a dislike to society? Is that what you believe?"

"Something like that. I shall never be up to the sort of work I must do

to live in this part of the world. I have not the spirit for it. I

shall never be the same again. And without any disrespect to you,

father, I think a young fellow should be allowed to choose his way of

life, if he does nobody any harm. There are plenty to stay at home, and

those who like might be allowed to go where there are empty places."

"But suppose I am convinced on good evidence--as I am--that this state

of mind of yours is transient, and that if you went off as you propose,

you would by-and-by repent, and feel that you had let yourself slip

back from the point you have been gaining by your education till now?

Have you not strength of mind enough to see that you had better act on

my assurance for a time, and test it? In my opinion, so far from

agreeing with you that you should be free to turn yourself into a

colonist and work in your shirt-sleeves with spade and hatchet--in my

opinion you have no right whatever to expatriate yourself until you

have honestly endeavored to turn to account the education you have

received here. I say nothing of the grief to your mother and me."

"I'm very sorry; but what can I do? I can't study--that's certain,"

said Rex.

"Not just now, perhaps. You will have to miss a term. I have made

arrangements for you--how you are to spend the next two months. But I

confess I am disappointed in you, Rex. I thought you had more sense

than to take up such ideas--to suppose that because you have fallen

into a very common trouble, such as most men have to go through, you

are loosened from all bonds of duty--just as if your brain had softened

and you were no longer a responsible being."

What could Rex say? Inwardly he was in a state of rebellion, but he had

no arguments to meet his father's; and while he was feeling, in spite

of any thing that might be said, that he should like to go off to "the

colonies" to-morrow, it lay in a deep fold of his consciousness that he

ought to feel--if he had been a better fellow he would have felt--more

about his old ties. This is the sort of faith we live by in our soul

sicknesses.

Rex got up from his seat, as if he held the conference to be at an end.

"You assent to my arrangement, then?" said Mr. Gascoigne, with that

distinct resolution of tone which seems to hold one in a vise.

There was a little pause before Rex answered, "I'll try what I can do,

sir. I can't promise." His thought was, that trying would be of no use.

Her father kept Anna, holding her fast, though she wanted to follow

Rex. "Oh, papa," she said, the tears coming with her words when the

door had closed; "it is very hard for him. Doesn't he look ill?"

"Yes, but he will soon be better; it will all blow over. And now, Anna,

be as quiet as a mouse about it all. Never let it be mentioned when he

is gone."

"No, papa. But I would not be like Gwendolen for any thing--to have

people fall in love with me so. It is very dreadful."

Anna dared not say that she was disappointed at not being allowed to go

to the colonies with Rex; but that was her secret feeling, and she

often afterward went inwardly over the whole affair, saying to herself,

"I should have done with going out, and gloves, and crinoline, and

having to talk when I am taken to dinner--and all that!"

I like to mark the time, and connect the course of individual lives

with the historic stream, for all classes of thinkers. This was the

period when the broadening of gauge in crinolines seemed to demand an

agitation for the general enlargement of churches, ball-rooms, and

vehicles. But Anna Gascoigne's figure would only allow the size of

skirt manufactured for young ladies of fourteen.

CHAPTER IX.

I'll tell thee, Berthold, what men's hopes are like:

A silly child that, quivering with joy,

Would cast its little mimic fishing-line

Baited with loadstone for a bowl of toys

In the salt ocean.

Eight months after the arrival of the family at Offendene, that is to

say in the end of the following June, a rumor was spread in the

neighborhood which to many persons was matter of exciting interest. It

had no reference to the results of the American war, but it was one

which touched all classes within a certain circuit round Wanchester:

the corn-factors, the brewers, the horse-dealers, and saddlers, all

held it a laudable thing, and one which was to be rejoiced in on

abstract grounds, as showing the value of an aristocracy in a free

country like England; the blacksmith in the hamlet of Diplow felt that

a good time had come round; the wives of laboring men hoped their

nimble boys of ten or twelve would be taken into employ by the

gentlemen in livery; and the farmers about Diplow admitted, with a

tincture of bitterness and reserve that a man might now again perhaps

have an easier market or exchange for a rick of old hay or a wagon-load

of straw. If such were the hopes of low persons not in society, it may

be easily inferred that their betters had better reasons for

satisfaction, probably connected with the pleasures of life rather than

its business. Marriage, however, must be considered as coming under

both heads; and just as when a visit of majesty is announced, the dream

of knighthood or a baronetcy is to be found under various municipal

nightcaps, so the news in question raised a floating indeterminate

vision of marriage in several well-bred imaginations.

The news was that Diplow Hall, Sir Hugo Mallinger's place, which had

for a couple of years turned its white window-shutters in a painfully

wall-eyed manner on its fine elms and beeches, its lilied pool and

grassy acres specked with deer, was being prepared for a tenant, and

was for the rest of the summer and through the hunting season to be

inhabited in a fitting style both as to house and stable. But not by

Sir Hugo himself: by his nephew, Mr. Mallinger Grandcourt, who was

presumptive heir to the baronetcy, his uncle's marriage having produced

nothing but girls. Nor was this the only contingency with which fortune

flattered young Grandcourt, as he was pleasantly called; for while the

chance of the baronetcy came through his father, his mother had given a

baronial streak to his blood, so that if certain intervening persons

slightly painted in the middle distance died, he would become a baron

and peer of this realm.

It is the uneven allotment of nature that the male bird alone has the

tuft, but we have not yet followed the advice of hasty philosophers who

would have us copy nature entirely in these matters; and if Mr.

Mallinger Grandcourt became a baronet or a peer, his wife would share

the title--which in addition to his actual fortune was certainly a

reason why that wife, being at present unchosen, should be thought of

by more than one person with a sympathetic interest as a woman sure to

be well provided for.

Some readers of this history will doubtless regard it as incredible

that people should construct matrimonial prospects on the mere report

that a bachelor of good fortune and possibilities was coming within

reach, and will reject the statement as a mere outflow of gall: they

will aver that neither they nor their first cousins have minds so

unbridled; and that in fact this is not human nature, which would know

that such speculations might turn out to be fallacious, and would

therefore not entertain them. But, let it be observed, nothing is here

narrated of human nature generally: the history in its present stage

concerns only a few people in a corner of Wessex--whose reputation,

however, was unimpeached, and who, I am in the proud position of being

able to state, were all on visiting terms with persons of rank.

There were the Arrowpoints, for example, in their beautiful place at

Quetcham: no one could attribute sordid views in relation to their

daughter's marriage to parents who could leave her at least half a

million; but having affectionate anxieties about their Catherine's

position (she having resolutely refused Lord Slogan, an unexceptionable

Irish peer, whose estate wanted nothing but drainage and population),

they wondered, perhaps from something more than a charitable impulse,

whether Mr. Grandcourt was good-looking, of sound constitution,

virtuous, or at least reformed, and if liberal-conservative, not too

liberal-conservative; and without wishing anybody to die, thought his

succession to the title an event to be desired.

If the Arrowpoints had such ruminations, it is the less surprising that

they were stimulated in Mr. Gascoigne, who for being a clergyman was

not the less subject to the anxieties of a parent and guardian; and we

have seen how both he and Mrs. Gascoigne might by this time have come

to feel that he was overcharged with the management of young creatures

who were hardly to be held in with bit or bridle, or any sort of

metaphor that would stand for judicious advice.

Naturally, people did not tell each other all they felt and thought

about young Grandcourt's advent: on no subject is this openness found

prudently practicable--not even on the generation of acids, or the

destination of the fixed stars: for either your contemporary with a

mind turned toward the same subjects may find your ideas ingenious and

forestall you in applying them, or he may have other views on acids and

fixed stars, and think ill of you in consequence. Mr. Gascoigne did not

ask Mr. Arrowpoint if he had any trustworthy source of information

about Grandcourt considered as a husband for a charming girl; nor did

Mrs. Arrowpoint observe to Mrs. Davilow that if the possible peer

sought a wife in the neighborhood of Diplow, the only reasonable

expectation was that he would offer his hand to Catherine, who,

however, would not accept him unless he were in all respects fitted to

secure her happiness. Indeed, even to his wife the rector was silent as

to the contemplation of any matrimonial result, from the probability

that Mr. Grandcourt would see Gwendolen at the next Archery Meeting;

though Mrs. Gascoigne's mind was very likely still more active in the

same direction. She had said interjectionally to her sister, "It would

be a mercy, Fanny, if that girl were well married!" to which Mrs.

Davilow discerning some criticism of her darling in the fervor of that

wish, had not chosen to make any audible reply, though she had said

inwardly, "You will not get her to marry for your pleasure"; the mild

mother becoming rather saucy when she identified herself with her

daughter.

To her husband Mrs. Gascoigne said, "I hear Mr. Grandcourt has got two

places of his own, but he comes to Diplow for the hunting. It is to be

hoped he will set a good example in the neighborhood. Have you heard

what sort of a young man he is, Henry?"

Mr. Gascoigne had not heard; at least, if his male acquaintances had

gossiped in his hearing, he was not disposed to repeat their gossip, or

to give it any emphasis in his own mind. He held it futile, even if it

had been becoming, to show any curiosity as to the past of a young man

whose birth, wealth, and consequent leisure made many habits venial

which under other circumstances would have been inexcusable. Whatever

Grandcourt had done, he had not ruined himself; and it is well-known

that in gambling, for example, whether of the business or holiday sort,

a man who has the strength of mind to leave off when he has only ruined

others, is a reformed character. This is an illustration merely: Mr.

Gascoigne had not heard that Grandcourt had been a gambler; and we can

hardly pronounce him singular in feeling that a landed proprietor with

a mixture of noble blood in his veins was not to be an object of

suspicious inquiry like a reformed character who offers himself as your

butler or footman. Reformation, where a man can afford to do without

it, can hardly be other than genuine. Moreover, it was not certain on

any other showing hitherto, that Mr. Grandcourt had needed reformation

more than other young men in the ripe youth of five-and-thirty; and, at

any rate, the significance of what he had been must be determined by

what he actually was.

Mrs. Davilow, too, although she would not respond to her sister's

pregnant remark, could not be inwardly indifferent to an advent that

might promise a brilliant lot for Gwendolen. A little speculation on

"what may be" comes naturally, without encouragement--comes inevitably

in the form of images, when unknown persons are mentioned; and Mr.

Grandcourt's name raised in Mrs. Davilow's mind first of all the

picture of a handsome, accomplished, excellent young man whom she would

be satisfied with as a husband for her daughter; but then came the

further speculation--would Gwendolen be satisfied with him? There was

no knowing what would meet that girl's taste or touch her

affections--it might be something else than excellence; and thus the

image of the perfect suitor gave way before a fluctuating combination

of qualities that might be imagined to win Gwendolen's heart. In the

difficulty of arriving at the particular combination which would insure

that result, the mother even said to herself, "It would not signify

about her being in love, if she would only accept the right person."

For whatever marriage had been for herself, how could she the less

desire it for her daughter? The difference her own misfortunes made

was, that she never dared to dwell much to Gwendolen on the

desirableness of marriage, dreading an answer something like that of

the future Madame Roland, when her gentle mother urging the acceptance

of a suitor, said, "Tu seras heureuse, ma chÃ¨re." "Oui, maman, comme

toi."

In relation to the problematic Mr. Grandcourt least of all would Mrs.

Davilow have willingly let fall a hint of the aerial castle-building

which she had the good taste to be ashamed of; for such a hint was

likely enough to give an adverse poise to Gwendolen's own thought, and

make her detest the desirable husband beforehand. Since that scene

after poor Rex's farewell visit, the mother had felt a new sense of

peril in touching the mystery of her child's feeling, and in rashly

determining what was her welfare: only she could think of welfare in no

other shape than marriage.

The discussion of the dress that Gwendolen was to wear at the Archery

Meeting was a relevant topic, however; and when it had been decided

that as a touch of color on her white cashmere, nothing, for her

complexion, was comparable to pale green--a feather which she was

trying in her hat before the looking-glass having settled the

question--Mrs. Davilow felt her ears tingle when Gwendolen, suddenly

throwing herself into the attitude of drawing her bow, said with a look

of comic enjoyment--

"How I pity all the other girls at the Archery Meeting--all thinking of

Mr. Grandcourt! And they have not a shadow of a chance."

Mrs. Davilow had not the presence of mind to answer immediately, and

Gwendolen turned round quickly toward her, saying, wickedly--

"Now you know they have not, mamma. You and my uncle and aunt--you all

intend him to fall in love with me."

Mrs. Davilow, piqued into a little stratagem, said, "Oh, my, dear, that

is not so certain. Miss Arrowpoint has charms which you have not."

"I know, but they demand thought. My arrow will pierce him before he

has time for thought. He will declare himself my slave--I shall send

him round the world to bring me back the wedding ring of a happy

woman--in the meantime all the men who are between him and the title

will die of different diseases--he will come back Lord Grandcourt--but

without the ring--and fall at my feet. I shall laugh at him--he will

rise in resentment--I shall laugh more--he will call for his steed and

ride to Quetcham, where he will find Miss Arrowpoint just married to a

needy musician, Mrs. Arrowpoint tearing her cap off, and Mr. Arrowpoint

standing by. Exit Lord Grandcourt, who returns to Diplow, and, like M.

Jabot, \_change de linge\_."

Was ever any young witch like this? You thought of hiding things from

her--sat upon your secret and looked innocent, and all the while she

knew by the corner of your eye that it was exactly five pounds ten you

were sitting on! As well turn the key to keep out the damp! It was

probable that by dint of divination she already knew more than any one

else did of Mr. Grandcourt. That idea in Mrs. Davilow's mind prompted

the sort of question which often comes without any other apparent

reason than the faculty of speech and the not knowing what to do with

it.

"Why, what kind of a man do you imagine him to be, Gwendolen?"

"Let me see!" said the witch, putting her forefinger to her lips, with

a little frown, and then stretching out the finger with decision.

"Short--just above my shoulder--crying to make himself tall by turning

up his mustache and keeping his beard long--a glass in his right eye to

give him an air of distinction--a strong opinion about his waistcoat,

but uncertain and trimming about the weather, on which he will try to

draw me out. He will stare at me all the while, and the glass in his

eye will cause him to make horrible faces, especially when he smiles in

a flattering way. I shall cast down my eyes in consequence, and he will

perceive that I am not indifferent to his attentions. I shall dream

that night that I am looking at the extraordinary face of a magnified

insect--and the next morning he will make an offer of his hand; the

sequel as before."

"That is a portrait of some one you have seen already, Gwen. Mr.

Grandcourt may be a delightful young man for what you know."

"Oh, yes," said Gwendolen, with a high note of careless admission,

taking off her best hat and turning it round on her hand

contemplatively. "I wonder what sort of behavior a delightful young man

would have? I know he would have hunters and racers, and a London house

and two country-houses--one with battlements and another with a

veranda. And I feel sure that with a little murdering he might get a

title."

The irony of this speech was of the doubtful sort that has some genuine

belief mixed up with it. Poor Mrs. Davilow felt uncomfortable under it.

Her own meanings being usually literal and in intention innocent; and

she said with a distressed brow:

"Don't talk in that way, child, for heaven's sake! you do read such

books--they give you such ideas of everything. I declare when your aunt

and I were your age we knew nothing about wickedness. I think it was

better so."

"Why did you not bring me up in that way, mamma?" said Gwendolen. But

immediately perceiving in the crushed look and rising sob that she had

given a deep wound, she tossed down her hat and knelt at her mother's

feet crying--

"Mamma, mamma! I was only speaking in fun. I meant nothing."

"How could I, Gwendolen?" said poor Mrs. Davilow, unable to hear the

retraction, and sobbing violently while she made the effort to speak.

"Your will was always too strong for me--if everything else had been

different."

This disjoined logic was intelligible enough to the daughter. "Dear

mamma, I don't find fault with you--I love you," said Gwendolen, really

compunctious. "How can you help what I am? Besides, I am very charming.

Come, now." Here Gwendolen with her handkerchief gently rubbed away her

mother's tears. "Really--I am contented with myself. I like myself

better than I should have liked my aunt and you. How dreadfully dull

you must have been!"

Such tender cajolery served to quiet the mother, as it had often done

before after like collisions. Not that the collisions had often been

repeated at the same point; for in the memory of both they left an

association of dread with the particular topics which had occasioned

them: Gwendolen dreaded the unpleasant sense of compunction toward her

mother, which was the nearest approach to self-condemnation and

self-distrust that she had known; and Mrs. Davilow's timid maternal

conscience dreaded whatever had brought on the slightest hint of

reproach. Hence, after this little scene, the two concurred in

excluding Mr. Grandcourt from their conversation.

When Mr. Gascoigne once or twice referred to him, Mrs. Davilow feared

least Gwendolen should betray some of her alarming keen-sightedness

about what was probably in her uncle's mind; but the fear was not

justified. Gwendolen knew certain differences in the characters with

which she was concerned as birds know climate and weather; and for the

very reason that she was determined to evade her uncle's control, she

was determined not to clash with him. The good understanding between

them was much fostered by their enjoyment of archery together: Mr.

Gascoigne, as one of the best bowmen in Wessex, was gratified to find

the elements of like skill in his niece; and Gwendolen was the more

careful not to lose the shelter of his fatherly indulgence, because

since the trouble with Rex both Mrs. Gascoigne and Anna had been unable

to hide what she felt to be a very unreasonable alienation from her.

Toward Anna she took some pains to behave with a regretful

affectionateness; but neither of them dared to mention Rex's name, and

Anna, to whom the thought of him was part of the air she breathed, was

ill at ease with the lively cousin who had ruined his happiness. She

tried dutifully to repress any sign of her changed feeling; but who in

pain can imitate the glance and hand-touch of pleasure.

This unfair resentment had rather a hardening effect on Gwendolen, and

threw her into a more defiant temper. Her uncle too might be offended

if she refused the next person who fell in love with her; and one day

when that idea was in her mind she said--

"Mamma, I see now why girls are glad to be married--to escape being

expected to please everybody but themselves."

Happily, Mr. Middleton was gone without having made any avowal; and

notwithstanding the admiration for the handsome Miss Harleth, extending

perhaps over thirty square miles in a part of Wessex well studded with

families whose numbers included several disengaged young men, each glad

to seat himself by the lively girl with whom it was so easy to get on

in conversation,--notwithstanding these grounds for arguing that

Gwendolen was likely to have other suitors more explicit than the

cautious curate, the fact was not so.

Care has been taken not only that the trees should not sweep the stars

down, but also that every man who admires a fair girl should not be

enamored of her, and even that every man who is enamored should not

necessarily declare himself. There are various refined shapes in which

the price of corn, known to be potent cause in their relation, might,

if inquired into, show why a young lady, perfect in person,

accomplishments, and costume, has not the trouble of rejecting many

offers; and nature's order is certainly benignant in not obliging us

one and all to be desperately in love with the most admirable mortal we

have ever seen. Gwendolen, we know, was far from holding that supremacy

in the minds of all observers. Besides, it was but a poor eight months

since she had come to Offendene, and some inclinations become manifest

slowly, like the sunward creeping of plants.

In face of this fact that not one of the eligible young men already in

the neighborhood had made Gwendolen an offer, why should Mr. Grandcourt

be thought of as likely to do what they had left undone?

Perhaps because he was thought of as still more eligible; since a great

deal of what passes for likelihood in the world is simply the reflex of

a wish. Mr. and Mrs. Arrowpoint, for example, having no anxiety that

Miss Harleth should make a brilliant marriage, had quite a different

likelihood in their minds.

CHAPTER X.

\_1st Gent.\_ What woman should be? Sir, consult the taste

Of marriageable men. This planet's store

In iron, cotton, wool, or chemicals--

All matter rendered to our plastic skill,

Is wrought in shapes responsive to demand;

The market's pulse makes index high or low,

By rule sublime. Our daughters must be wives,

And to the wives must be what men will choose;

Men's taste is woman's test. You mark the phrase?

'Tis good, I think?--the sense well-winged and poised

With t's and s's.

\_2nd Gent.\_ Nay, but turn it round;

Give us the test of taste. A fine \_menu\_--

Is it to-day what Roman epicures

Insisted that a gentleman must eat

To earn the dignity of dining well?

Brackenshaw Park, where the Archery Meeting was held, looked out from

its gentle heights far over the neighboring valley to the outlying

eastern downs and the broad, slow rise of cultivated country, hanging

like a vast curtain toward the west. The castle which stood on the

highest platform of the clustered hills, was built of rough-hewn

limestone, full of lights and shadows made by the dark dust of lichens

and the washings of the rain. Masses of beech and fir sheltered it on

the north, and spread down here and there along the green slopes like

flocks seeking the water which gleamed below. The archery-ground was a

carefully-kept enclosure on a bit of table-land at the farthest end of

the park, protected toward the southwest by tall elms and a thick

screen of hollies, which kept the gravel walk and the bit of newly-mown

turf where the targets were placed in agreeable afternoon shade. The

Archery Hall with an arcade in front showed like a white temple against

the greenery on the north side.

What could make a better background for the flower-groups of ladies,

moving and bowing and turning their necks as it would become the

leisurely lilies to do if they took to locomotion. The sounds too were

very pleasant to hear, even when the military band from Wanchester

ceased to play: musical laughs in all the registers and a harmony of

happy, friendly speeches, now rising toward mild excitement, now

sinking to an agreeable murmur.

No open-air amusement could be much freer from those noisy, crowding

conditions which spoil most modern pleasures; no Archery Meeting could

be more select, the number of friends accompanying the members being

restricted by an award of tickets, so as to keep the maximum within the

limits of convenience for the dinner and ball to be held in the castle.

Within the enclosure no plebeian spectators were admitted except Lord

Brackenshaw's tenants and their families, and of these it was chiefly

the feminine members who used the privilege, bringing their little boys

and girls or younger brothers and sisters. The males among them

relieved the insipidity of the entertainment by imaginative betting, in

which the stake was "anything you like," on their favorite archers; but

the young maidens, having a different principle of discrimination, were

considering which of those sweetly-dressed ladies they would choose to

be, if the choice were allowed them. Probably the form these rural

souls would most have striven for as a tabernacle, was some other than

Gwendolen's--one with more pink in her cheeks and hair of the most

fashionable yellow; but among the male judges in the ranks immediately

surrounding her there was unusual unanimity in pronouncing her the

finest girl present.

No wonder she enjoyed her existence on that July day. Pre-eminence is

sweet to those who love it, even under mediocre circumstances. Perhaps

it was not quite mythical that a slave has been proud to be bought

first; and probably a barn-door fowl on sale, though he may not have

understood himself to be called the best of a bad lot, may have a

self-informed consciousness of his relative importance, and strut

consoled. But for complete enjoyment the outward and the inward must

concur. And that concurrence was happening to Gwendolen.

Who can deny that bows and arrows are among the prettiest weapons in

the world for feminine forms to play with? They prompt attitudes full

of grace and power, where that fine concentration of energy seen in all

markmanship, is freed from associations of bloodshed. The time-honored

British resource of "killing something" is no longer carried on with

bow and quiver; bands defending their passes against an invading nation

fight under another sort of shade than a cloud of arrows; and poisoned

darts are harmless survivals either in rhetoric or in regions

comfortably remote. Archery has no ugly smell of brimstone; breaks

nobody's shins, breeds no athletic monsters; its only danger is that of

failing, which for generous blood is enough to mould skilful action.

And among the Brackenshaw archers the prizes were all of the nobler

symbolic kind; not properly to be carried off in a parcel, degrading

honor into gain; but the gold arrow and the silver, the gold star and

the silver, to be worn for a long time in sign of achievement and then

transferred to the next who did excellently. These signs of

pre-eminence had the virtue of wreaths without their inconveniences,

which might have produced a melancholy effect in the heat of the

ball-room. Altogether the Brackenshaw Archery Club was an institution

framed with good taste, so as not to have by necessity any ridiculous

incidents.

And to-day all incalculable elements were in its favor. There was mild

warmth, and no wind to disturb either hair or drapery or the course of

the arrow; all skillful preparation had fair play, and when there was a

general march to extract the arrows, the promenade of joyous young

creatures in light speech and laughter, the graceful movement in common

toward a common object, was a show worth looking at. Here Gwendolen

seemed a Calypso among her nymphs. It was in her attitudes and

movements that every one was obliged to admit her surpassing charm.

"That girl is like a high-mettled racer," said Lord Brackenshaw to

young Clintock, one of the invited spectators.

"First chop! tremendously pretty too," said the elegant Grecian, who

had been paying her assiduous attention; "I never saw her look better."

Perhaps she had never looked so well. Her face was beaming with young

pleasure in which there was no malign rays of discontent; for being

satisfied with her own chances, she felt kindly toward everybody and

was satisfied with the universe. Not to have the highest distinction in

rank, not to be marked out as an heiress, like Miss Arrowpoint, gave an

added triumph in eclipsing those advantages. For personal

recommendation she would not have cared to change the family group

accompanying her for any other: her mamma's appearance would have

suited an amiable duchess; her uncle and aunt Gascoigne with Anna made

equally gratifying figures in their way; and Gwendolen was too full of

joyous belief in herself to feel in the least jealous though Miss

Arrowpoint was one of the best archeresses.

Even the reappearance of the formidable Herr Klesmer, which caused some

surprise in the rest of the company, seemed only to fall in with

Gwendolen's inclination to be amused. Short of Apollo himself, what

great musical \_maestro\_ could make a good figure at an archery meeting?

There was a very satirical light in Gwendolen's eyes as she looked

toward the Arrowpoint party on their first entrance, when the contrast

between Klesmer and the average group of English country people seemed

at its utmost intensity in the close neighborhood of his hosts--or

patrons, as Mrs. Arrowpoint would have liked to hear them called, that

she might deny the possibility of any longer patronizing genius, its

royalty being universally acknowledged. The contrast might have amused

a graver personage than Gwendolen. We English are a miscellaneous

people, and any chance fifty of us will present many varieties of

animal architecture or facial ornament; but it must be admitted that

our prevailing expression is not that of a lively, impassioned race,

preoccupied with the ideal and carrying the real as a mere make-weight.

The strong point of the English gentleman pure is the easy style of his

figure and clothing; he objects to marked ins and outs in his costume,

and he also objects to looking inspired.

Fancy an assemblage where the men had all that ordinary stamp of the

well-bred Englishman, watching the entrance of Herr Klesmer--his mane

of hair floating backward in massive inconsistency with the chimney-pot

hat, which had the look of having been put on for a joke above his

pronounced but well-modeled features and powerful clear-shaven mouth

and chin; his tall, thin figure clad in a way which, not being strictly

English, was all the worse for its apparent emphasis of intention.

Draped in a loose garment with a Florentine \_berretta\_ on his head, he

would have been fit to stand by the side of Leonardo de Vinci; but how

when he presented himself in trousers which were not what English

feeling demanded about the knees?--and when the fire that showed itself

in his glances and the movements of his head, as he looked round him

with curiosity, was turned into comedy by a hat which ruled that

mankind should have well-cropped hair and a staid demeanor, such, for

example, as Mr. Arrowsmith's, whose nullity of face and perfect

tailoring might pass everywhere without ridicule? One feels why it is

often better for greatness to be dead, and to have got rid of the

outward man.

Many present knew Klesmer, or knew of him; but they had only seen him

on candle-light occasions when he appeared simply as a musician, and he

had not yet that supreme, world-wide celebrity which makes an artist

great to the most ordinary people by their knowledge of his great

expensiveness. It was literally a new light for them to see him

in--presented unexpectedly on this July afternoon in an exclusive

society: some were inclined to laugh, others felt a little disgust at

the want of judgment shown by the Arrowpoints in this use of an

introductory card.

"What extreme guys those artistic fellows usually are?" said young

Clintock to Gwendolen. "Do look at the figure he cuts, bowing with his

hand on his heart to Lady Brackenshaw--and Mrs. Arrowpoint's feather

just reaching his shoulder."

"You are one of the profane," said Gwendolen. "You are blind to the

majesty of genius. Herr Klesmer smites me with awe; I feel crushed in

his presence; my courage all oozes from me."

"Ah, you understand all about his music."

"No, indeed," said Gwendolen, with a light laugh; "it is he who

understands all about mine and thinks it pitiable." Klesmer's verdict

on her singing had been an easier joke to her since he had been struck

by her \_plastik\_.

"It is not addressed to the ears of the future, I suppose. I'm glad of

that: it suits mine."

"Oh, you are very kind. But how remarkably well Miss Arrowpoint looks

to-day! She would make quite a fine picture in that gold-colored dress."

"Too splendid, don't you think?"

"Well, perhaps a little too symbolical--too much like the figure of

Wealth in an allegory."

This speech of Gwendolen's had rather a malicious sound, but it was not

really more than a bubble of fun. She did not wish Miss Arrowpoint or

any one else to be out of the way, believing in her own good fortune

even more than in her skill. The belief in both naturally grew stronger

as the shooting went on, for she promised to achieve one of the best

scores--a success which astonished every one in a new member; and to

Gwendolen's temperament one success determined another. She trod on

air, and all things pleasant seemed possible. The hour was enough for

her, and she was not obliged to think what she should do next to keep

her life at the due pitch.

"How does the scoring stand, I wonder?" said Lady Brackenshaw, a

gracious personage who, adorned with two little girls and a boy of

stout make, sat as lady paramount. Her lord had come up to her in one

of the intervals of shooting. "It seems to me that Miss Harleth is

likely to win the gold arrow."

"Gad, I think she will, if she carries it on! she is running Juliet

Fenn hard. It is wonderful for one in her first year. Catherine is not

up to her usual mark," continued his lordship, turning to the heiress's

mother who sat near. "But she got the gold arrow last time. And there's

a luck even in these games of skill. That's better. It gives the hinder

ones a chance."

"Catherine will be very glad for others to win," said Mrs. Arrowpoint,

"she is so magnanimous. It was entirely her considerateness that made

us bring Herr Klesmer instead of Canon Stopley, who had expressed a

wish to come. For her own pleasure, I am sure she would rather have

brought the Canon; but she is always thinking of others. I told her it

was not quite \_en rÃ¨gle\_ to bring one so far out of our own set; but

she said, 'Genius itself is not \_en rÃ¨gle\_; it comes into the world to

make new rules.' And one must admit that."

"Ay, to be sure," said Lord Brackenshaw, in a tone of careless

dismissal, adding quickly, "For my part, I am not magnanimous; I should

like to win. But, confound it! I never have the chance now. I'm getting

old and idle. The young ones beat me. As old Nestor says--the gods

don't give us everything at one time: I was a young fellow once, and

now I am getting an old and wise one. Old, at any rate; which is a gift

that comes to everybody if they live long enough, so it raises no

jealousy." The Earl smiled comfortably at his wife.

"Oh, my lord, people who have been neighbors twenty years must not talk

to each other about age," said Mrs. Arrowpoint. "Years, as the Tuscans

say, are made for the letting of houses. But where is our new neighbor?

I thought Mr. Grandcourt was to be here to-day."

"Ah, by the way, so he was. The time's getting on too," said his

lordship, looking at his watch. "But he only got to Diplow the other

day. He came to us on Tuesday and said he had been a little bothered.

He may have been pulled in another direction. Why, Gascoigne!"--the

rector was just then crossing at a little distance with Gwendolen on

his arm, and turned in compliance with the call--"this is a little too

bad; you not only beat us yourself, but you bring up your niece to beat

all the archeresses."

"It \_is\_ rather scandalous in her to get the better of elder members,"

said Mr. Gascoigne, with much inward satisfaction curling his short

upper lip. "But it is not my doing, my lord. I only meant her to make a

tolerable figure, without surpassing any one."

"It is not my fault, either," said Gwendolen, with pretty archness. "If

I am to aim, I can't help hitting."

"Ay, ay, that may be a fatal business for some people," said Lord

Brackenshaw, good-humoredly; then taking out his watch and looking at

Mrs. Arrowpoint again--"The time's getting on, as you say. But

Grandcourt is always late. I notice in town he's always late, and he's

no bowman--understands nothing about it. But I told him he must come;

he would see the flower of the neighborhood here. He asked about

you--had seen Arrowpoint's card. I think you had not made his

acquaintance in town. He has been a good deal abroad. People don't know

him much."

"No; we are strangers," said Mrs. Arrowpoint. "But that is not what

might have been expected. For his uncle Sir Hugo Mallinger and I are

great friends when we meet."

"I don't know; uncles and nephews are not so likely to be seen together

as uncles and nieces," said his lordship, smiling toward the rector.

"But just come with me one instant, Gascoigne, will you? I want to

speak a word about the clout-shooting."

Gwendolen chose to go too and be deposited in the same group with her

mamma and aunt until she had to shoot again. That Mr. Grandcourt might

after all not appear on the archery-ground, had begun to enter into

Gwendolen's thought as a possible deduction from the completeness of

her pleasure. Under all her saucy satire, provoked chiefly by her

divination that her friends thought of him as a desirable match for

her, she felt something very far from indifference as to the impression

she would make on him. True, he was not to have the slightest power

over her (for Gwendolen had not considered that the desire to conquer

is itself a sort of subjection); she had made up her mind that he was

to be one of those complimentary and assiduously admiring men of whom

even her narrow experience had shown her several with various-colored

beards and various styles of bearing; and the sense that her friends

would want her to think him delightful, gave her a resistant

inclination to presuppose him ridiculous. But that was no reason why

she could spare his presence: and even a passing prevision of trouble

in case she despised and refused him, raised not the shadow of a wish

that he should save her that trouble by showing no disposition to make

her an offer. Mr. Grandcourt taking hardly any notice of her, and

becoming shortly engaged to Miss Arrowpoint, was not a picture which

flattered her imagination.

Hence Gwendolen had been all ear to Lord Brackenshaw's mode of

accounting for Grandcourt's non-appearance; and when he did arrive, no

consciousness--not even Mrs. Arrowpoint's or Mr. Gascoigne's--was more

awake to the fact than hers, although she steadily avoided looking

toward any point where he was likely to be. There should be no

slightest shifting of angles to betray that it was of any consequence

to her whether the much-talked-of Mr. Mallinger Grandcourt presented

himself or not. She became again absorbed in the shooting, and so

resolutely abstained from looking round observantly that, even

supposing him to have taken a conspicuous place among the spectators,

it might be clear she was not aware of him. And all the while the

certainty that he was there made a distinct thread in her

consciousness. Perhaps her shooting was the better for it: at any rate,

it gained in precision, and she at last raised a delightful storm of

clapping and applause by three hits running in the gold--a feat which

among the Brackenshaw archers had not the vulgar reward of a shilling

poll-tax, but that of a special gold star to be worn on the breast.

That moment was not only a happy one to herself--it was just what her

mamma and her uncle would have chosen for her. There was a general

falling into ranks to give her space that she might advance

conspicuously to receive the gold star from the hands of Lady

Brackenshaw; and the perfect movement of her fine form was certainly a

pleasant thing to behold in the clear afternoon light when the shadows

were long and still. She was the central object of that pretty picture,

and every one present must gaze at her. That was enough: she herself

was determined to see nobody in particular, or to turn her eyes any way

except toward Lady Brackenshaw, but her thoughts undeniably turned in

other ways. It entered a little into her pleasure that Herr Klesmer

must be observing her at a moment when music was out of the question,

and his superiority very far in the back-ground; for vanity is as ill

at ease under indifference as tenderness is under a love which it

cannot return; and the unconquered Klesmer threw a trace of his malign

power even across her pleasant consciousness that Mr. Grandcourt was

seeing her to the utmost advantage, and was probably giving her an

admiration unmixed with criticism. She did not expect to admire \_him\_,

but that was not necessary to her peace of mind.

Gwendolen met Lady Brackenshaw's gracious smile without blushing (which

only came to her when she was taken by surprise), but with a charming

gladness of expression, and then bent with easy grace to have the star

fixed near her shoulder. That little ceremony had been over long enough

for her to have exchanged playful speeches and received congratulations

as she moved among the groups who were now interesting themselves in

the results of the scoring; but it happened that she stood outside

examining the point of an arrow with rather an absent air when Lord

Brackenshaw came up to her and said:

"Miss Harleth, here is a gentleman who is not willing to wait any

longer for an introduction. He has been getting Mrs. Davilow to send me

with him. Will you allow me to introduce Mr. Mallinger Grandcourt?"

BOOK II--MEETING STREAMS.

CHAPTER XI.

The beginning of an acquaintance whether with persons or things is to

get a definite outline for our ignorance.

Mr. Grandcourt's wish to be introduced had no suddenness for Gwendolen;

but when Lord Brackenshaw moved aside a little for the prefigured

stranger to come forward and she felt herself face to face with the

real man, there was a little shock which flushed her cheeks and

vexatiously deepened with her consciousness of it. The shock came from

the reversal of her expectations: Grandcourt could hardly have been

more unlike all her imaginary portraits of him. He was slightly taller

than herself, and their eyes seemed to be on a level; there was not the

faintest smile on his face as he looked at her, not a trace of

self-consciousness or anxiety in his bearing: when he raised his hat he

showed an extensive baldness surrounded with a mere fringe of

reddish-blonde hair, but he also showed a perfect hand; the line of

feature from brow to chin undisguised by beard was decidedly handsome,

with only moderate departures from the perpendicular, and the slight

whisker too was perpendicular. It was not possible for a human aspect

to be freer from grimace or solicitous wrigglings: also it was perhaps

not possible for a breathing man wide awake to look less animated. The

correct Englishman, drawing himself up from his bow into rigidity,

assenting severely, and seemed to be in a state of internal drill,

suggests a suppressed vivacity, and may be suspected of letting go with

some violence when he is released from parade; but Grandcourt's bearing

had no rigidity, it inclined rather to the flaccid. His complexion had

a faded fairness resembling that of an actress when bare of the

artificial white and red; his long narrow gray eyes expressed nothing

but indifference. Attempts at description are stupid: who can all at

once describe a human being? even when he is presented to us we only

begin that knowledge of his appearance which must be completed by

innumerable impressions under differing circumstances. We recognize the

alphabet; we are not sure of the language. I am only mentioning the

point that Gwendolen saw by the light of a prepared contrast in the

first minutes of her meeting with Grandcourt: they were summed up in

the words, "He is not ridiculous." But forthwith Lord Brackenshaw was

gone, and what is called conversation had begun, the first and constant

element in it being that Grandcourt looked at Gwendolen persistently

with a slightly exploring gaze, but without change of expression, while

she only occasionally looked at him with a flash of observation a

little softened by coquetry. Also, after her answers there was a longer

or shorter pause before he spoke again.

"I used to think archery was a great bore," Grandcourt began. He spoke

with a fine accent, but with a certain broken drawl, as of a

distinguished personage with a distinguished cold on his chest.

"Are you converted to-day?" said Gwendolen.

(Pause, during which she imagined various degrees and modes of opinion

about herself that might be entertained by Grandcourt.)

"Yes, since I saw you shooting. In things of this sort one generally

sees people missing and simpering."

"I suppose you are a first-rate shot with a rifle."

(Pause, during which Gwendolen, having taken a rapid observation of

Grandcourt, made a brief graphic description of him to an indefinite

hearer.)

"I have left off shooting."

"Oh then you are a formidable person. People who have done things once

and left them off make one feel very contemptible, as if one were using

cast-off fashions. I hope you have not left off all follies, because I

practice a great many."

(Pause, during which Gwendolen made several interpretations of her own

speech.)

"What do you call follies?"

"Well, in general I think, whatever is agreeable is called a folly. But

you have not left off hunting, I hear."

(Pause, wherein Gwendolen recalled what she had heard about

Grandcourt's position, and decided that he was the most

aristocratic-looking man she had ever seen.)

"One must do something."

"And do you care about the turf?--or is that among the things you have

left off?"

(Pause, during which Gwendolen thought that a man of extremely calm,

cold manners might be less disagreeable as a husband than other men,

and not likely to interfere with his wife's preferences.)

"I run a horse now and then; but I don't go in for the thing as some

men do. Are you fond of horses?"

"Yes, indeed: I never like my life so well as when I am on horseback,

having a great gallop. I think of nothing. I only feel myself strong

and happy."

(Pause, wherein Gwendolen wondered whether Grandcourt would like what

she said, but assured herself that she was not going to disguise her

tastes.)

"Do you like danger?"

"I don't know. When I am on horseback I never think of danger. It seems

to me that if I broke my bones I should not feel it. I should go at

anything that came in my way."

(Pause during which Gwendolen had run through a whole hunting season

with two chosen hunters to ride at will.)

"You would perhaps like tiger-hunting or pig-sticking. I saw some of

that for a season or two in the East. Everything here is poor stuff

after that."

"\_You\_ are fond of danger, then?"

(Pause, wherein Gwendolen speculated on the probability that the men of

coldest manners were the most adventurous, and felt the strength of her

own insight, supposing the question had to be decided.)

"One must have something or other. But one gets used to it."

"I begin to think I am very fortunate, because everything is new to me:

it is only that I can't get enough of it. I am not used to anything

except being dull, which I should like to leave off as you have left

off shooting."

(Pause, during which it occurred to Gwendolen that a man of cold and

distinguished manners might possibly be a dull companion; but on the

other hand she thought that most persons were dull, that she had not

observed husbands to be companions--and that after all she was not

going to accept Grandcourt.)

"Why are you dull?"

"This is a dreadful neighborhood. There is nothing to be done in it.

That is why I practiced my archery."

(Pause, during which Gwendolen reflected that the life of an unmarried

woman who could not go about and had no command of anything must

necessarily be dull through all degrees of comparison as time went on.)

"You have made yourself queen of it. I imagine you will carry the first

prize."

"I don't know that. I have great rivals. Did you not observe how well

Miss Arrowpoint shot?"

(Pause, wherein Gwendolen was thinking that men had been known to

choose some one else than the woman they most admired, and recalled

several experiences of that kind in novels.)

"Miss Arrowpoint. No--that is, yes."

"Shall we go now and hear what the scoring says? Every one is going to

the other end now--shall we join them? I think my uncle is looking

toward me. He perhaps wants me."

Gwendolen found a relief for herself by thus changing the situation:

not that the \_tete-Ã -tete\_ was quite disagreeable to her; but while it

lasted she apparently could not get rid of the unwonted flush in her

cheeks and the sense of surprise which made her feel less mistress of

herself than usual. And this Mr. Grandcourt, who seemed to feel his own

importance more than he did hers--a sort of unreasonableness few of us

can tolerate--must not take for granted that he was of great moment to

her, or that because others speculated on him as a desirable match she

held herself altogether at his beck. How Grandcourt had filled up the

pauses will be more evident hereafter.

"You have just missed the gold arrow, Gwendolen," said Mr. Gascoigne.

"Miss Juliet Fenn scores eight above you."

"I am very glad to hear it. I should have felt that I was making myself

too disagreeable--taking the best of everything," said Gwendolen, quite

easily.

It was impossible to be jealous of Juliet Fenn, a girl as middling as

mid-day market in everything but her archery and plainness, in which

last she was noticeable like her father: underhung and with receding

brow resembling that of the more intelligent fishes. (Surely,

considering the importance which is given to such an accident in female

offspring, marriageable men, or what the new English calls "intending

bridegrooms," should look at themselves dispassionately in the glass,

since their natural selection of a mate prettier than themselves is not

certain to bar the effect of their own ugliness.)

There was now a lively movement in the mingling groups, which carried

the talk along with it. Every one spoke to every one else by turns, and

Gwendolen, who chose to see what was going on around her now, observed

that Grandcourt was having Klesmer presented to him by some one unknown

to her--a middle-aged man, with dark, full face and fat hands, who

seemed to be on the easiest terms with both, and presently led the way

in joining the Arrowpoints, whose acquaintance had already been made by

both him and Grandcourt. Who this stranger was she did not care much to

know; but she wished to observe what was Grandcourt's manner toward

others than herself. Precisely the same: except that he did not look

much at Miss Arrowpoint, but rather at Klesmer, who was speaking with

animation--now stretching out his long fingers horizontally, now

pointing downward with his fore-finger, now folding his arms and

tossing his mane, while he addressed himself first to one and then to

the other, including Grandcourt, who listened with an impassive face

and narrow eyes, his left fore-finger in his waistcoat-pocket, and his

right slightly touching his thin whisker.

"I wonder which style Miss Arrowpoint admires most," was a thought that

glanced through Gwendolen's mind, while her eyes and lips gathered

rather a mocking expression. But she would not indulge her sense of

amusement by watching, as if she were curious, and she gave all her

animation to those immediately around her, determined not to care

whether Mr. Grandcourt came near her again or not.

He did not come, however, and at a moment when he could propose to

conduct Mrs. Davilow to her carriage, "Shall we meet again in the

ball-room?" she said as he raised his hat at parting. The "yes" in

reply had the usual slight drawl and perfect gravity.

"You were wrong for once Gwendolen," said Mrs. Davilow, during their

few minutes' drive to the castle.

"In what, mamma?"

"About Mr. Grandcourt's appearance and manners. You can't find anything

ridiculous in him."

"I suppose I could if I tried, but I don't want to do it," said

Gwendolen, rather pettishly; and her mother was afraid to say more.

It was the rule on these occasions for the ladies and gentlemen to dine

apart, so that the dinner might make a time of comparative ease and

rest for both. Indeed, the gentlemen had a set of archery stories about

the epicurism of the ladies, who had somehow been reported to show a

revolting masculine judgment in venison, even asking for the fat--a

proof of the frightful rate at which corruption might go on in women,

but for severe social restraint, and every year the amiable Lord

Brackenshaw, who was something of a \_gourmet\_, mentioned Byron's

opinion that a woman should never be seen eating,--introducing it with

a confidential--"The fact is" as if he were for the first time

admitting his concurrence in that sentiment of the refined poet.

In the ladies' dining-room it was evident that Gwendolen was not a

general favorite with her own sex: there were no beginnings of intimacy

between her and other girls, and in conversation they rather noticed

what she said than spoke to her in free exchange. Perhaps it was that

she was not much interested in them, and when left alone in their

company had a sense of empty benches. Mrs. Vulcany once remarked that

Miss Harleth was too fond of the gentlemen; but we know that she was

not in the least fond of them--she was only fond of their homage--and

women did not give her homage. The exception to this willing aloofness

from her was Miss Arrowpoint, who often managed unostentatiously to be

by her side, and talked to her with quiet friendliness.

"She knows, as I do, that our friends are ready to quarrel over a

husband for us," thought Gwendolen, "and she is determined not to enter

into the quarrel."

"I think Miss Arrowpoint has the best manners I ever saw," said Mrs.

Davilow, when she and Gwendolen were in a dressing-room with Mrs.

Gascoigne and Anna, but at a distance where they could have their talk

apart.

"I wish I were like her," said Gwendolen.

"Why? Are you getting discontented with yourself, Gwen?"

"No; but I am discontented with things. She seems contented."

"I am sure you ought to be satisfied to-day. You must have enjoyed the

shooting. I saw you did."

"Oh, that is over now, and I don't know what will come next," said

Gwendolen, stretching herself with a sort of moan and throwing up her

arms. They were bare now; it was the fashion to dance in the archery

dress, throwing off the jacket; and the simplicity of her white

cashmere with its border of pale green set off her form to the utmost.

A thin line of gold round her neck, and the gold star on her breast,

were her only ornaments. Her smooth soft hair piled up into a grand

crown made a clear line about her brow. Sir Joshua would have been glad

to take her portrait; and he would have had an easier task than the

historian at least in this, that he would not have had to represent the

truth of change--only to give stability to one beautiful moment.

"The dancing will come next," said Mrs. Davilow "You are sure to enjoy

that."

"I shall only dance in the quadrille. I told Mr. Clintock so. I shall

not waltz or polk with any one."

"Why in the world do you say that all on a sudden?"

"I can't bear having ugly people so near me."

"Whom do you mean by ugly people?"

"Oh, plenty."

"Mr. Clintock, for example, is not ugly." Mrs. Davilow dared not

mention Grandcourt.

"Well, I hate woolen cloth touching me."

"Fancy!" said Mrs. Davilow to her sister who now came up from the other

end of the room. "Gwendolen says she will not waltz or polk."

"She is rather given to whims, I think," said Mrs. Gascoigne, gravely.

"It would be more becoming in her to behave as other young ladies do on

such an occasion as this; especially when she has had the advantage of

first-rate dancing lessons."

"Why should I dance if I don't like it, aunt? It is not in the

catechism."

"My \_dear\_!" said Mrs. Gascoigne, in a tone of severe check, and Anna

looked frightened at Gwendolen's daring. But they all passed on without

saying any more.

Apparently something had changed Gwendolen's mood since the hour of

exulting enjoyment in the archery-ground. But she did not look the

worse under the chandeliers in the ball-room, where the soft splendor

of the scene and the pleasant odors from the conservatory could not but

be soothing to the temper, when accompanied with the consciousness of

being preeminently sought for. Hardly a dancing man but was anxious to

have her for a partner, and each whom she accepted was in a state of

melancholy remonstrance that she would not waltz or polk.

"Are you under a vow, Miss Harleth?"--"Why are you so cruel to us

all?"--"You waltzed with me in February."--"And you who waltz so

perfectly!" were exclamations not without piquancy for her. The ladies

who waltzed naturally thought that Miss Harleth only wanted to make

herself particular; but her uncle when he overheard her refusal

supported her by saying--

"Gwendolen has usually good reasons." He thought she was certainly more

distinguished in not waltzing, and he wished her to be distinguished.

The archery ball was intended to be kept at the subdued pitch that

suited all dignities clerical and secular; it was not an escapement for

youthful high spirits, and he himself was of opinion that the

fashionable dances were too much of a romp.

Among the remonstrant dancing men, however, Mr. Grandcourt was not

numbered. After standing up for a quadrille with Miss Arrowpoint, it

seemed that he meant to ask for no other partner. Gwendolen observed

him frequently with the Arrowpoints, but he never took an opportunity

of approaching her. Mr. Gascoigne was sometimes speaking to him; but

Mr. Gascoigne was everywhere. It was in her mind now that she would

probably after all not have the least trouble about him: perhaps he had

looked at her without any particular admiration, and was too much used

to everything in the world to think of her as more than one of the

girls who were invited in that part of the country. Of course! It was

ridiculous of elders to entertain notions about what a man would do,

without having seen him even through a telescope. Probably he meant to

marry Miss Arrowpoint. Whatever might come, she, Gwendolen, was not

going to be disappointed: the affair was a joke whichever way it

turned, for she had never committed herself even by a silent confidence

in anything Mr. Grandcourt would do. Still, she noticed that he did

sometimes quietly and gradually change his position according to hers,

so that he could see her whenever she was dancing, and if he did not

admire her--so much the worse for him.

This movement for the sake of being in sight of her was more direct

than usual rather late in the evening, when Gwendolen had accepted

Klesmer as a partner; and that wide-glancing personage, who saw

everything and nothing by turns, said to her when they were walking,

"Mr. Grandcourt is a man of taste. He likes to see you dancing."

"Perhaps he likes to look at what is against his taste," said

Gwendolen, with a light laugh; she was quite courageous with Klesmer

now. "He may be so tired of admiring that he likes disgust for variety."

"Those words are not suitable to your lips," said Klesmer, quickly,

with one of his grand frowns, while he shook his hand as if to banish

the discordant sounds.

"Are you as critical of words as of music?"

"Certainly I am. I should require your words to be what your face and

form are--always among the meanings of a noble music."

"That is a compliment as well as a correction. I am obliged for both.

But do you know I am bold enough to wish to correct \_you\_, and require

you to understand a joke?"

"One may understand jokes without liking them," said the terrible

Klesmer. "I have had opera books sent me full of jokes; it was just

because I understood them that I did not like them. The comic people

are ready to challenge a man because he looks grave. 'You don't see the

witticism, sir?' 'No, sir, but I see what you meant.' Then I am what we

call ticketed as a fellow without \_esprit\_. But, in fact," said

Klesmer, suddenly dropping from his quick narrative to a reflective

tone, with an impressive frown, "I am very sensible to wit and humor."

"I am glad you tell me that," said Gwendolen, not without some

wickedness of intention. But Klesmer's thoughts had flown off on the

wings of his own statement, as their habit was, and she had the

wickedness all to herself. "Pray, who is that standing near the

card-room door?" she went on, seeing there the same stranger with whom

Klesmer had been in animated talk on the archery ground. "He is a

friend of yours, I think."

"No, no; an amateur I have seen in town; Lush, a Mr. Lush--too fond of

Meyerbeer and Scribe--too fond of the mechanical-dramatic."

"Thanks. I wanted to know whether you thought his face and form

required that his words should be among the meanings of noble music?"

Klesmer was conquered, and flashed at her a delightful smile which made

them quite friendly until she begged to be deposited by the side of her

mamma.

Three minutes afterward her preparations for Grandcourt's indifference

were all canceled. Turning her head after some remark to her mother,

she found that he had made his way up to her.

"May I ask if you are tired of dancing, Miss Harleth?" he began,

looking down with his former unperturbed expression.

"Not in the least."

"Will you do me the honor--the next--or another quadrille?"

"I should have been very happy," said Gwendolen looking at her card,

"but I am engaged for the next to Mr. Clintock--and indeed I perceive

that I am doomed for every quadrille; I have not one to dispose of."

She was not sorry to punish Mr. Grandcourt's tardiness, yet at the same

time she would have liked to dance with him. She gave him a charming

smile as she looked up to deliver her answer, and he stood still

looking down at her with no smile at all.

"I am unfortunate in being too late," he said, after a moment's pause.

"It seemed to me that you did not care for dancing," said Gwendolen. "I

thought it might be one of the things you had left off."

"Yes, but I have not begun to dance with you," said Grandcourt. Always

there was the same pause before he took up his cue. "You make dancing a

new thing, as you make archery."

"Is novelty always agreeable?"

"No, no--not always."

"Then I don't know whether to feel flattered or not. When you had once

danced with me there would be no more novelty in it."

"On the contrary, there would probably be much more."

"That is deep. I don't understand."

"It is difficult to make Miss Harleth understand her power?" Here

Grandcourt had turned to Mrs. Davilow, who, smiling gently at her

daughter, said--

"I think she does not generally strike people as slow to understand."

"Mamma," said Gwendolen, in a deprecating tone, "I am adorably stupid,

and want everything explained to me--when the meaning is pleasant."

"If you are stupid, I admit that stupidity is adorable," returned

Grandcourt, after the usual pause, and without change of tone. But

clearly he knew what to say.

"I begin to think that my cavalier has forgotten me," Gwendolen

observed after a little while. "I see the quadrille is being formed."

"He deserves to be renounced," said Grandcourt.

"I think he is very pardonable," said Gwendolen.

"There must have been some misunderstanding," said Mrs. Davilow. "Mr.

Clintock was too anxious about the engagement to have forgotten it."

But now Lady Brackenshaw came up and said, "Miss Harleth, Mr. Clintock

has charged me to express to you his deep regret that he was obliged to

leave without having the pleasure of dancing with you again. An express

came from his father, the archdeacon; something important; he was to

go. He was \_au dÃ©sespoir\_."

"Oh, he was very good to remember the engagement under the

circumstances," said Gwendolen. "I am sorry he was called away." It was

easy to be politely sorrowful on so felicitous an occasion.

"Then I can profit by Mr. Clintock's misfortune?" said Grandcourt. "May

I hope that you will let me take his place?"

"I shall be very happy to dance the next quadrille with you."

The appropriateness of the event seemed an augury, and as Gwendolen

stood up for the quadrille with Grandcourt, there was a revival in her

of the exultation--the sense of carrying everything before her, which

she had felt earlier in the day. No man could have walked through the

quadrille with more irreproachable ease than Grandcourt; and the

absence of all eagerness in his attention to her suited his partner's

taste. She was now convinced that he meant to distinguish her, to mark

his admiration of her in a noticeable way; and it began to appear

probable that she would have it in her power to reject him, whence

there was a pleasure in reckoning up the advantages which would make

her rejection splendid, and in giving Mr. Grandcourt his utmost value.

It was also agreeable to divine that this exclusive selection of her to

dance with, from among all the unmarried ladies present, would attract

observation; though she studiously avoided seeing this, and at the end

of the quadrille walked away on Grandcourt's arm as if she had been one

of the shortest sighted instead of the longest and widest sighted of

mortals. They encountered Miss Arrowpoint, who was standing with Lady

Brackenshaw and a group of gentlemen. The heiress looked at Gwendolen

invitingly and said, "I hope you will vote with us, Miss Harleth, and

Mr. Grandcourt too, though he is not an archer." Gwendolen and

Grandcourt paused to join the group, and found that the voting turned

on the project of a picnic archery meeting to be held in Cardell Chase,

where the evening entertainment would be more poetic than a ball under,

chandeliers--a feast of sunset lights along the glades and through the

branches and over the solemn tree-tops.

Gwendolen thought the scheme delightful--equal to playing Robin Hood

and Maid Marian: and Mr. Grandcourt, when appealed to a second time,

said it was a thing to be done; whereupon Mr. Lush, who stood behind

Lady Brackenshaw's elbow, drew Gwendolen's notice by saying with a

familiar look and tone to Grandcourt, "Diplow would be a good place for

the meeting, and more convenient: there's a fine bit between the oaks

toward the north gate."

Impossible to look more unconscious of being addressed than Grandcourt;

but Gwendolen took a new survey of the speaker, deciding, first, that

he must be on terms of intimacy with the tenant of Diplow, and,

secondly, that she would never, if she could help it, let him come

within a yard of her. She was subject to physical antipathies, and Mr.

Lush's prominent eyes, fat though not clumsy figure, and strong black

gray-besprinkled hair of frizzy thickness, which, with the rest of his

prosperous person, was enviable to many, created one of the strongest

of her antipathies. To be safe from his looking at her, she murmured to

Grandcourt, "I should like to continue walking."

He obeyed immediately; but when they were thus away from any audience,

he spoke no word for several minutes, and she, out of a half-amused,

half-serious inclination for experiment, would not speak first. They

turned into the large conservatory, beautifully lit up with Chinese

lamps. The other couples there were at a distance which would not have

interfered with any dialogue, but still they walked in silence until

they had reached the farther end where there was a flush of pink light,

and the second wide opening into the ball-room. Grandcourt, when they

had half turned round, paused and said languidly--

"Do you like this kind of thing?"

If the situation had been described to Gwendolen half an hour before,

she would have laughed heartily at it, and could only have imagined

herself returning a playful, satirical answer. But for some mysterious

reason--it was a mystery of which she had a faint wondering

consciousness--she dared not be satirical: she had begun to feel a wand

over her that made her afraid of offending Grandcourt.

"Yes," she said, quietly, without considering what "kind of thing" was

meant--whether the flowers, the scents, the ball in general, or this

episode of walking with Mr. Grandcourt in particular. And they returned

along the conservatory without farther interpretation. She then

proposed to go and sit down in her old place, and they walked among

scattered couples preparing for the waltz to the spot where Mrs.

Davilow had been seated all the evening. As they approached it her seat

was vacant, but she was coming toward it again, and, to Gwendolen's

shuddering annoyance, with Mr. Lush at her elbow. There was no avoiding

the confrontation: her mamma came close to her before they had reached

the seats, and, after a quiet greeting smile, said innocently,

"Gwendolen, dear, let me present Mr. Lush to you." Having just made the

acquaintance of this personage, as an intimate and constant companion

of Mr. Grandcourt's, Mrs. Davilow imagined it altogether desirable that

her daughter also should make the acquaintance.

It was hardly a bow that Gwendolen gave--rather, it was the slightest

forward sweep of the head away from the physiognomy that inclined

itself toward her, and she immediately moved toward her seat, saying,

"I want to put on my burnous." No sooner had she reached it, than Mr.

Lush was there, and had the burnous in his hand: to annoy this

supercilious young lady, he would incur the offense of forestalling

Grandcourt; and, holding up the garment close to Gwendolen, he said,

"Pray, permit me?" But she, wheeling away from him as if he had been a

muddy hound, glided on to the ottoman, saying, "No, thank you."

A man who forgave this would have much Christian feeling, supposing he

had intended to be agreeable to the young lady; but before he seized

the burnous Mr. Lush had ceased to have that intention. Grandcourt

quietly took the drapery from him, and Mr. Lush, with a slight bow,

moved away. "You had perhaps better put it on," said Mr. Grandcourt,

looking down on her without change of expression.

"Thanks; perhaps it would be wise," said Gwendolen, rising, and

submitting very gracefully to take the burnous on her shoulders.

After that, Mr. Grandcourt exchanged a few polite speeches with Mrs.

Davilow, and, in taking leave, asked permission to call at Offendene

the next day. He was evidently not offended by the insult directed

toward his friend. Certainly Gwendolen's refusal of the burnous from

Mr. Lush was open to the interpretation that she wished to receive it

from Mr. Grandcourt. But she, poor child, had no design in this action,

and was simply following her antipathy and inclination, confiding in

them as she did in the more reflective judgments into which they

entered as sap into leafage. Gwendolen had no sense that these men were

dark enigmas to her, or that she needed any help in drawing conclusions

about them--Mr. Grandcourt at least. The chief question was, how far

his character and ways might answer her wishes; and unless she were

satisfied about that, she had said to herself that she would not accept

his offer.

Could there be a slenderer, more insignificant thread in human history

than this consciousness of a girl, busy with her small inferences of

the way in which she could make her life pleasant?--in a time, too,

when ideas were with fresh vigor making armies of themselves, and the

universal kinship was declaring itself fiercely; when women on the

other side of the world would not mourn for the husbands and sons who

died bravely in a common cause, and men stinted of bread on our side of

the world heard of that willing loss and were patient: a time when the

soul of man was walking to pulses which had for centuries been beating

in him unfelt, until their full sum made a new life of terror or of joy.

What in the midst of that mighty drama are girls and their blind

visions? They are the Yea or Nay of that good for which men are

enduring and fighting. In these delicate vessels is borne onward

through the ages the treasure of human affections.

CHAPTER XII.

"O gentlemen, the time of life is short;

To spend that shortness basely were too long,

If life did ride upon a dial's point,

Still ending at the arrival of an hour."

--SHAKESPEARE: \_Henry IV\_.

On the second day after the Archery Meeting, Mr. Henleigh Mallinger

Grandcourt was at his breakfast-table with Mr. Lush. Everything around

them was agreeable: the summer air through the open windows, at which

the dogs could walk in from the old green turf on the lawn; the soft,

purplish coloring of the park beyond, stretching toward a mass of

bordering wood; the still life in the room, which seemed the stiller

for its sober antiquated elegance, as if it kept a conscious, well-bred

silence, unlike the restlessness of vulgar furniture.

Whether the gentlemen were agreeable to each other was less evident.

Mr. Grandcourt had drawn his chair aside so as to face the lawn, and

with his left leg over another chair, and his right elbow on the table,

was smoking a large cigar, while his companion was still eating. The

dogs--half-a-dozen of various kinds were moving lazily in and out,

taking attitudes of brief attention--gave a vacillating preference

first to one gentleman, then to the other; being dogs in such good

circumstances that they could play at hunger, and liked to be served

with delicacies which they declined to put in their mouths; all except

Fetch, the beautiful liver-colored water-spaniel, which sat with its

forepaws firmly planted and its expressive brown face turned upward,

watching Grandcourt with unshaken constancy. He held in his lap a tiny

Maltese dog with a tiny silver collar and bell, and when he had a hand

unused by cigar or coffee-cup, it rested on this small parcel of animal

warmth. I fear that Fetch was jealous, and wounded that her master gave

her no word or look; at last it seemed that she could bear this neglect

no longer, and she gently put her large silky paw on her master's leg.

Grandcourt looked at her with unchanged face for half a minute, and

then took the trouble to lay down his cigar while he lifted the

unimpassioned Fluff close to his chin and gave it caressing pats, all

the while gravely watching Fetch, who, poor thing, whimpered

interruptedly, as if trying to repress that sign of discontent, and at

last rested her head beside the appealing paw, looking up with piteous

beseeching. So, at least, a lover of dogs must have interpreted Fetch,

and Grandcourt kept so many dogs that he was reputed to love them; at

any rate, his impulse to act just in that way started from such an

interpretation. But when the amusing anguish burst forth in a howling

bark, Grandcourt pushed Fetch down without speaking, and, depositing

Fluff carelessly on the table (where his black nose predominated over a

salt-cellar), began to look to his cigar, and found, with some

annoyance against Fetch as the cause, that the brute of a cigar

required relighting. Fetch, having begun to wail, found, like others of

her sex, that it was not easy to leave off; indeed, the second howl was

a louder one, and the third was like unto it.

"Turn out that brute, will you?" said Grandcourt to Lush, without

raising his voice or looking at him--as if he counted on attention to

the smallest sign.

And Lush immediately rose, lifted Fetch, though she was rather heavy,

and he was not fond of stooping, and carried her out, disposing of her

in some way that took him a couple of minutes before he returned. He

then lit a cigar, placed himself at an angle where he could see

Grandcourt's face without turning, and presently said--

"Shall you ride or drive to Quetcham to-day?"

"I am not going to Quetcham."

"You did not go yesterday."

Grandcourt smoked in silence for half a minute, and then said--

"I suppose you sent my card and inquiries."

"I went myself at four, and said you were sure to be there shortly.

They would suppose some accident prevented you from fulfilling the

intention. Especially if you go to-day."

Silence for a couple of minutes. Then Grandcourt said, "What men are

invited here with their wives?"

Lush drew out a note-book. "The Captain and Mrs. Torrington come next

week. Then there are Mr. Hollis and Lady Flora, and the Cushats and the

Gogoffs."

"Rather a ragged lot," remarked Grandcourt, after a while. "Why did you

ask the Gogoffs? When you write invitations in my name, be good enough

to give me a list, instead of bringing down a giantess on me without my

knowledge. She spoils the look of the room."

"You invited the Gogoffs yourself when you met them in Paris."

"What has my meeting them in Paris to do with it? I told you to give me

a list."

Grandcourt, like many others, had two remarkably different voices.

Hitherto we have heard him speaking in a superficial interrupted drawl

suggestive chiefly of languor and \_ennui\_. But this last brief speech

was uttered in subdued inward, yet distinct, tones, which Lush had long

been used to recognize as the expression of a peremptory will.

"Are there any other couples you would like to invite?"

"Yes; think of some decent people, with a daughter or two. And one of

your damned musicians. But not a comic fellow."

"I wonder if Klesmer would consent to come to us when he leaves

Quetcham. Nothing but first-class music will go down with Miss

Arrowpoint."

Lush spoke carelessly, but he was really seizing an opportunity and

fixing an observant look on Grandcourt, who now for the first time,

turned his eyes toward his companion, but slowly and without speaking

until he had given two long luxuriant puffs, when he said, perhaps in a

lower tone than ever, but with a perceptible edge of contempt--

"What in the name of nonsense have I to do with Miss Arrowpoint and her

music?"

"Well, something," said Lush, jocosely. "You need not give yourself

much trouble, perhaps. But some forms must be gone through before a man

can marry a million."

"Very likely. But I am not going to marry a million."

"That's a pity--to fling away an opportunity of this sort, and knock

down your own plans."

"\_Your\_ plans, I suppose you mean."

"You have some debts, you know, and things may turn out inconveniently

after all. The heirship is not \_absolutely\_ certain."

Grandcourt did not answer, and Lush went on.

"It really is a fine opportunity. The father and mother ask for nothing

better, I can see, and the daughter's looks and manners require no

allowances, any more than if she hadn't a sixpence. She is not

beautiful; but equal to carrying any rank. And she is not likely to

refuse such prospects as you can offer her."

"Perhaps not."

"The father and mother would let you do anything you like with them."

"But I should not like to do anything with them."

Here it was Lush who made a little pause before speaking again, and

then he said in a deep voice of remonstrance, "Good God, Grandcourt!

after your experience, will you let a whim interfere with your

comfortable settlement in life?"

"Spare your oratory. I know what I am going to do."

"What?" Lush put down his cigar and thrust his hands into his side

pockets, as if he had to face something exasperating, but meant to keep

his temper.

"I am going to marry the other girl."

"Have you fallen in love?" This question carried a strong sneer.

"I am going to marry her."

"You have made her an offer already, then?"

"No."

"She is a young lady with a will of her own, I fancy. Extremely well

fitted to make a rumpus. She would know what she liked."

"She doesn't like you," said Grandcourt, with the ghost of a smile.

"Perfectly true," said Lush, adding again in a markedly sneering tone.

"However, if you and she are devoted to each other, that will be

enough."

Grandcourt took no notice of this speech, but sipped his coffee, rose,

and strolled out on the lawn, all the dogs following him.

Lush glanced after him a moment, then resumed his cigar and lit it, but

smoked slowly, consulting his beard with inspecting eyes and fingers,

till he finally stroked it with an air of having arrived at some

conclusion, and said in a subdued voice--

"Check, old boy!"

Lush, being a man of some ability, had not known Grandcourt for fifteen

years without learning what sort of measures were useless with him,

though what sort might be useful remained often dubious. In the

beginning of his career he held a fellowship, and was near taking

orders for the sake of a college living, but not being fond of that

prospect accepted instead the office of traveling companion to a

marquess, and afterward to young Grandcourt, who had lost his father

early, and who found Lush so convenient that he had allowed him to

become prime minister in all his more personal affairs. The habit of

fifteen years had made Grandcourt more and more in need of Lush's

handiness, and Lush more and more in need of the lazy luxury to which

his transactions on behalf of Grandcourt made no interruption worth

reckoning. I cannot say that the same lengthened habit had intensified

Grandcourt's want of respect for his companion since that want had been

absolute from the beginning, but it had confirmed his sense that he

might kick Lush if he chose--only he never did choose to kick any

animal, because the act of kicking is a compromising attitude, and a

gentleman's dogs should be kicked for him. He only said things which

might have exposed himself to be kicked if his confidant had been a man

of independent spirit. But what son of a vicar who has stinted his wife

and daughters of calico in order to send his male offspring to Oxford,

can keep an independent spirit when he is bent on dining with high

discrimination, riding good horses, living generally in the most

luxuriant honey-blossomed clover--and all without working? Mr. Lush had

passed for a scholar once, and had still a sense of scholarship when he

was not trying to remember much of it; but the bachelor's and other

arts which soften manners are a time-honored preparation for sinecures;

and Lush's present comfortable provision was as good a sinecure in not

requiring more than the odor of departed learning. He was not

unconscious of being held kickable, but he preferred counting that

estimate among the peculiarities of Grandcourt's character, which made

one of his incalculable moods or judgments as good as another. Since in

his own opinion he had never done a bad action, it did not seem

necessary to consider whether he should be likely to commit one if his

love of ease required it. Lush's love of ease was well-satisfied at

present, and if his puddings were rolled toward him in the dust, he

took the inside bits and found them relishing.

This morning, for example, though he had encountered more annoyance

than usual, he went to his private sitting-room and played a good hour

on the violoncello.

CHAPTER XIII.

"Philistia, be thou glad of me!"

Grandcourt having made up his mind to marry Miss Harleth, showed a

power of adapting means to ends. During the next fortnight there was

hardly a day on which by some arrangement or other he did not see her,

or prove by emphatic attentions that she occupied his thoughts. His

cousin, Mrs. Torrington, was now doing the honors of his house, so that

Mrs. Davilow and Gwendolen could be invited to a large party at Diplow

in which there were many witnesses how the host distinguished the

dowerless beauty, and showed no solicitude about the heiress. The

world--I mean Mr. Gascoigne and all the families worth speaking of

within visiting distance of Pennicote--felt an assurance on the subject

which in the rector's mind converted itself into a resolution to do his

duty by his niece and see that the settlements were adequate. Indeed

the wonder to him and Mrs. Davilow was that the offer for which so many

suitable occasions presented themselves had not been already made; and

in this wonder Grandcourt himself was not without a share. When he had

told his resolution to Lush he had thought that the affair would be

concluded more quickly, and to his own surprise he had repeatedly

promised himself in a morning that he would to-day give Gwendolen the

opportunity of accepting him, and had found in the evening that the

necessary formality was still unaccomplished. This remarkable fact

served to heighten his determination on another day. He had never

admitted to himself that Gwendolen might refuse him, but--heaven help

us all!--we are often unable to act on our certainties; our objection

to a contrary issue (were it possible) is so strong that it rises like

a spectral illusion between us and our certainty; we are rationally

sure that the blind worm can not bite us mortally, but it would be so

intolerable to be bitten, and the creature has a biting look--we

decline to handle it.

He had asked leave to have a beautiful horse of his brought for

Gwendolen to ride. Mrs. Davilow was to accompany her in the carriage,

and they were to go to Diplow to lunch, Grandcourt conducting them. It

was a fine mid-harvest time, not too warm for a noonday ride of five

miles to be delightful; the poppies glowed on the borders of the

fields, there was enough breeze to move gently like a social spirit

among the ears of uncut corn, and to wing the shadow of a cloud across

the soft gray downs; here the sheaves were standing, there the horses

were straining their muscles under the last load from a wide space of

stubble, but everywhere the green pasture made a broader setting for

the corn-fields, and the cattle took their rest under wide branches.

The road lay through a bit of country where the dairy-farms looked much

as they did in the days of our forefathers--where peace and permanence

seemed to find a home away from the busy change that sent the railway

train flying in the distance.

But the spirit of peace and permanence did not penetrate poor Mrs.

Davilow's mind so as to overcome her habit of uneasy foreboding.

Gwendolen and Grandcourt cantering in front of her, and then slackening

their pace to a conversational walk till the carriage came up with them

again, made a gratifying sight; but it served chiefly to keep up the

conflict of hopes and fears about her daughter's lot. Here was an

irresistible opportunity for a lover to speak and put an end to all

uncertainties, and Mrs. Davilow could only hope with trembling that

Gwendolen's decision would be favorable. Certainly if Rex's love had

been repugnant to her, Mr. Grandcourt had the advantage of being in

complete contrast with Rex; and that he had produced some quite novel

impression on her seemed evident in her marked abstinence from

satirical observations, nay, her total silence about his

characteristics, a silence which Mrs. Davilow did not dare to break.

"Is he a man she would be happy with?"--was a question that inevitably

arose in the mother's mind. "Well, perhaps as happy as she would be

with any one else--or as most other women are"--was the answer with

which she tried to quiet herself; for she could not imagine Gwendolen

under the influence of any feeling which would make her satisfied in

what we traditionally call "mean circumstances."

Grandcourt's own thought was looking in the same direction: he wanted

to have done with the uncertainty that belonged to his not having

spoken. As to any further uncertainty--well, it was something without

any reasonable basis, some quality in the air which acted as an

irritant to his wishes.

Gwendolen enjoyed the riding, but her pleasure did not break forth in

girlish unpremeditated chat and laughter as it did on that morning with

Rex. She spoke a little, and even laughed, but with a lightness as of a

far-off echo: for her too there was some peculiar quality in the

air--not, she was sure, any subjugation of her will by Mr. Grandcourt,

and the splendid prospects he meant to offer her; for Gwendolen desired

every one, that dignified gentleman himself included, to understand

that she was going to do just as she liked, and that they had better

not calculate on her pleasing them. If she chose to take this husband,

she would have him know that she was not going to renounce her freedom,

or according to her favorite formula, "not going to do as other women

did."

Grandcourt's speeches this morning were, as usual, all of that brief

sort which never fails to make a conversational figure when the speaker

is held important in his circle. Stopping so soon, they give signs of a

suppressed and formidable ability so say more, and have also the

meritorious quality of allowing lengthiness to others.

"How do you like Criterion's paces?" he said, after they had entered

the park and were slacking from a canter to a walk.

"He is delightful to ride. I should like to have a leap with him, if it

would not frighten mamma. There was a good wide channel we passed five

minutes ago. I should like to have a gallop back and take it."

"Pray do. We can take it together."

"No, thanks. Mamma is so timid--if she saw me it might make her ill."

"Let me go and explain. Criterion would take it without fail."

"No--indeed--you are very kind--but it would alarm her too much. I dare

take any leap when she is not by; but I do it and don't tell her about

it."

"We can let the carriage pass and then set off."

"No, no, pray don't think of it any more: I spoke quite randomly," said

Gwendolen; she began to feel a new objection to carrying out her own

proposition.

"But Mrs. Davilow knows I shall take care of you."

"Yes, but she would think of you as having to take care of my broken

neck."

There was a considerable pause before Grandcourt said, looking toward

her, "I should like to have the right always to take care of you."

Gwendolen did not turn her eyes on him; it seemed to her a long while

that she was first blushing, and then turning pale, but to Grandcourt's

rate of judgment she answered soon enough, with the lightest flute-tone

and a careless movement of the head, "Oh, I am not sure that I want to

be taken care of: if I chose to risk breaking my neck, I should like to

be at liberty to do it."

She checked her horse as she spoke, and turned in her saddle, looking

toward the advancing carriage. Her eyes swept across Grandcourt as she

made this movement, but there was no language in them to correct the

carelessness of her reply. At that very moment she was aware that she

was risking something--not her neck, but the possibility of finally

checking Grandcourt's advances, and she did not feel contented with the

possibility.

"Damn her!" thought Grandcourt, as he too checked his horse. He was not

a wordy thinker, and this explosive phrase stood for mixed impressions

which eloquent interpreters might have expanded into some sentences

full of an irritated sense that he was being mystified, and a

determination that this girl should not make a fool of him. Did she

want him to throw himself at her feet and declare that he was dying for

her? It was not by that gate that she could enter on the privileges he

could give her. Or did she expect him to write his proposals? Equally a

delusion. He would not make his offer in any way that could place him

definitely in the position of being rejected. But as to her accepting

him, she had done it already in accepting his marked attentions: and

anything which happened to break them off would be understood to her

disadvantage. She was merely coquetting, then?

However, the carriage came up, and no further \_tete-Ã -tete\_ could well

occur before their arrival at the house, where there was abundant

company, to whom Gwendolen, clad in riding-dress, with her hat laid

aside, clad also in the repute of being chosen by Mr. Grandcourt, was

naturally a centre of observation; and since the objectionable Mr. Lush

was not there to look at her, this stimulus of admiring attention

heightened her spirits, and dispersed, for the time, the uneasy

consciousness of divided impulses which threatened her with repentance

of her own acts. Whether Grandcourt had been offended or not there was

no judging: his manners were unchanged, but Gwendolen's acuteness had

not gone deeper than to discern that his manners were no clue for her,

and because these were unchanged she was not the less afraid of him.

She had not been at Diplow before except to dine; and since certain

points of view from the windows and the garden were worth showing, Lady

Flora Hollis proposed after luncheon, when some of the guests had

dispersed, and the sun was sloping toward four o'clock, that the

remaining party should make a little exploration. Here came frequent

opportunities when Grandcourt might have retained Gwendolen apart, and

have spoken to her unheard. But no! He indeed spoke to no one else, but

what he said was nothing more eager or intimate than it had been in

their first interview. He looked at her not less than usual; and some

of her defiant spirit having come back, she looked full at him in

return, not caring--rather preferring--that his eyes had no expression

in them.

But at last it seemed as if he entertained some contrivance. After they

had nearly made the tour of the grounds, the whole party stopped by the

pool to be amused with Fetch's accomplishment of bringing a water lily

to the bank like Cowper's spaniel Beau, and having been disappointed in

his first attempt insisted on his trying again.

Here Grandcourt, who stood with Gwendolen outside the group, turned

deliberately, and fixing his eyes on a knoll planted with American

shrubs, and having a winding path up it, said languidly--

"This is a bore. Shall we go up there?"

"Oh, certainly--since we are exploring," said Gwendolen. She was rather

pleased, and yet afraid.

The path was too narrow for him to offer his arm, and they walked up in

silence. When they were on the bit of platform at the summit,

Grandcourt said--

"There is nothing to be seen here: the thing was not worth climbing."

How was it that Gwendolen did not laugh? She was perfectly silent,

holding up the folds of her robe like a statue, and giving a harder

grasp to the handle of her whip, which she had snatched up

automatically with her hat when they had first set off.

"What sort of a place do you prefer?" said Grandcourt.

"Different places are agreeable in their way. On the whole, I think, I

prefer places that are open and cheerful. I am not fond of anything

sombre."

"Your place of Offendene is too sombre."

"It is, rather."

"You will not remain there long, I hope."

"Oh, yes, I think so. Mamma likes to be near her sister."

Silence for a short space.

"It is not to be supposed that \_you\_ will always live there, though

Mrs. Davilow may."

"I don't know. We women can't go in search of adventures--to find out

the North-West Passage or the source of the Nile, or to hunt tigers in

the East. We must stay where we grow, or where the gardeners like to

transplant us. We are brought up like the flowers, to look as pretty as

we can, and be dull without complaining. That is my notion about the

plants; they are often bored, and that is the reason why some of them

have got poisonous. What do you think?" Gwendolen had run on rather

nervously, lightly whipping the rhododendron bush in front of her.

"I quite agree. Most things are bores," said Grandcourt, his mind

having been pushed into an easy current, away from its intended track.

But, after a moment's pause, he continued in his broken, refined drawl--

"But a woman can be married."

"Some women can."

"You, certainly, unless you are obstinately cruel."

"I am not sure that I am not both cruel and obstinate." Here Gwendolen

suddenly turned her head and looked full at Grandcourt, whose eyes she

had felt to be upon her throughout their conversation. She was

wondering what the effect of looking at him would be on herself rather

than on him.

He stood perfectly still, half a yard or more away from her; and it

flashed through her mind what a sort of lotus-eater's stupor had begun

in him and was taking possession of her. Then he said--

"Are you as uncertain about yourself as you make others about you?"

"I am quite uncertain about myself; I don't know how uncertain others

may be."

"And you wish them to understand that you don't care?" said Grandcourt,

with a touch of new hardness in his tone.

"I did not say that," Gwendolen replied, hesitatingly, and turning her

eyes away whipped the rhododendron bush again. She wished she were on

horseback that she might set off on a canter. It was impossible to set

off running down the knoll.

"You do care, then," said Grandcourt, not more quickly, but with a

softened drawl.

"Ha! my whip!" said Gwendolen, in a little scream of distress. She had

let it go--what could be more natural in a slight agitation?--and--but

this seemed less natural in a gold-handled whip which had been left

altogether to itself--it had gone with some force over the immediate

shrubs, and had lodged itself in the branches of an azalea half-way

down the knoll. She could run down now, laughing prettily, and

Grandcourt was obliged to follow; but she was beforehand with him in

rescuing the whip, and continued on her way to the level ground, when

she paused and looked at Grandcourt with an exasperating brightness in

her glance and a heightened color, as if she had carried a triumph, and

these indications were still noticeable to Mrs. Davilow when Gwendolen

and Grandcourt joined the rest of the party.

"It is all coquetting," thought Grandcourt; "the next time I beckon she

will come down."

It seemed to him likely that this final beckoning might happen the very

next day, when there was to be a picnic archery meeting in Cardell

Chase, according to the plan projected on the evening of the ball.

Even in Gwendolen's mind that result was one of two likelihoods that

presented themselves alternately, one of two decisions toward which she

was being precipitated, as if they were two sides of a boundary-line,

and she did not know on which she should fall. This subjection to a

possible self, a self not to be absolutely predicted about, caused her

some astonishment and terror; her favorite key of life--doing as she

liked--seemed to fail her, and she could not foresee what at a given

moment she might like to do. The prospect of marrying Grandcourt really

seemed more attractive to her than she had believed beforehand that any

marriage could be: the dignities, the luxuries, the power of doing a

great deal of what she liked to do, which had now come close to her,

and within her choice to secure or to lose, took hold of her nature as

if it had been the strong odor of what she had only imagined and longed

for before. And Grandcourt himself? He seemed as little of a flaw in

his fortunes as a lover and husband could possibly be. Gwendolen wished

to mount the chariot and drive the plunging horses herself, with a

spouse by her side who would fold his arms and give her his countenance

without looking ridiculous. Certainly, with all her perspicacity, and

all the reading which seemed to her mamma dangerously instructive, her

judgment was consciously a little at fault before Grandcourt. He was

adorably quiet and free from absurdities--he would be a husband to suit

with the best appearance a woman could make. But what else was he? He

had been everywhere, and seen everything. \_That\_ was desirable, and

especially gratifying as a preamble to his supreme preference for

Gwendolen Harleth. He did not appear to enjoy anything much. That was

not necessary: and the less he had of particular tastes, or desires,

the more freedom his wife was likely to have in following hers.

Gwendolen conceived that after marriage she would most probably be able

to manage him thoroughly.

How was it that he caused her unusual constraint now?--that she was

less daring and playful in her talk with him than with any other

admirer she had known? That absence of demonstrativeness which she was

glad of, acted as a charm in more senses than one, and was slightly

benumbing. Grandcourt after all was formidable--a handsome lizard of a

hitherto unknown species, not of the lively, darting kind. But

Gwendolen knew hardly anything about lizards, and ignorance gives one a

large range of probabilities. This splendid specimen was probably

gentle, suitable as a boudoir pet: what may not a lizard be, if you

know nothing to the contrary? Her acquaintance with Grandcourt was such

that no accomplishment suddenly revealed in him would have surprised

her. And he was so little suggestive of drama, that it hardly occurred

to her to think with any detail how his life of thirty-six years had

been passed: in general, she imagined him always cold and dignified,

not likely ever to have committed himself. He had hunted the tiger--had

he ever been in love or made love? The one experience and the other

seemed alike remote in Gwendolen's fancy from the Mr. Grandcourt who

had come to Diplow in order apparently to make a chief epoch in her

destiny--perhaps by introducing her to that state of marriage which she

had resolved to make a state of greater freedom than her girlhood. And

on the whole she wished to marry him; he suited her purpose; her

prevailing, deliberate intention was, to accept him.

But was she going to fulfill her deliberate intention? She began to be

afraid of herself, and to find out a certain difficulty in doing as she

liked. Already her assertion of independence in evading his advances

had been carried farther than was necessary, and she was thinking with

some anxiety what she might do on the next occasion.

Seated according to her habit with her back to the horses on their

drive homeward, she was completely under the observation of her mamma,

who took the excitement and changefulness in the expression of her

eyes, her unwonted absence of mind and total silence, as unmistakable

signs that something unprecedented had occurred between her and

Grandcourt. Mrs. Davilow's uneasiness determined her to risk some

speech on the subject: the Gascoignes were to dine at Offendene, and in

what had occurred this morning there might be some reason for

consulting the rector; not that she expected him anymore than herself

to influence Gwendolen, but that her anxious mind wanted to be

disburdened.

"Something has happened, dear?" she began, in a tender tone of question.

Gwendolen looked round, and seeming to be roused to the consciousness

of her physical self, took off her gloves and then her hat, that the

soft breeze might blow on her head. They were in a retired bit of the

road, where the long afternoon shadows from the bordering trees fell

across it and no observers were within sight. Her eyes continued to

meet her mother's, but she did not speak.

"Mr. Grandcourt has been saying something?--Tell me, dear." The last

words were uttered beseechingly.

"What am I to tell you, mamma?" was the perverse answer.

"I am sure something has agitated you. You ought to confide in me,

Gwen. You ought not to leave me in doubt and anxiety." Mrs. Davilow's

eyes filled with tears.

"Mamma, dear, please don't be miserable," said Gwendolen, with pettish

remonstrance. "It only makes me more so. I am in doubt myself."

"About Mr. Grandcourt's intentions?" said Mrs. Davilow, gathering

determination from her alarms.

"No; not at all," said Gwendolen, with some curtness, and a pretty

little toss of the head as she put on her hat again.

"About whether you will accept him, then?"

"Precisely."

"Have you given him a doubtful answer?"

"I have given him no answer at all."

"He \_has\_ spoken so that you could not misunderstand him?"

"As far as I would let him speak."

"You expect him to persevere?" Mrs. Davilow put this question rather

anxiously, and receiving no answer, asked another: "You don't consider

that you have discouraged him?"

"I dare say not."

"I thought you liked him, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, timidly.

"So I do, mamma, as liking goes. There is less to dislike about him

than about most men. He is quiet and \_distinguÃ©\_." Gwendolen so far

spoke with a pouting sort of gravity; but suddenly she recovered some

of her mischievousness, and her face broke into a smile as she

added--"Indeed he has all the qualities that would make a husband

tolerable--battlement, veranda, stable, etc., no grins and no glass in

his eye."

"Do be serious with me for a moment, dear. Am I to understand that you

mean to accept him?"

"Oh, pray, mamma, leave me to myself," said Gwendolen, with a pettish

distress in her voice.

And Mrs. Davilow said no more.

When they got home Gwendolen declared that she would not dine. She was

tired, and would come down in the evening after she had taken some

rest. The probability that her uncle would hear what had passed did not

trouble her. She was convinced that whatever he might say would be on

the side of her accepting Grandcourt, and she wished to accept him if

she could. At this moment she would willingly have had weights hung on

her own caprice.

Mr. Gascoigne did hear--not Gwendolen's answers repeated verbatim, but

a softened generalized account of them. The mother conveyed as vaguely

as the keen rector's questions would let her the impression that

Gwendolen was in some uncertainty about her own mind, but inclined on

the whole to acceptance. The result was that the uncle felt himself

called on to interfere; he did not conceive that he should do his duty

in witholding direction from his niece in a momentous crisis of this

kind. Mrs. Davilow ventured a hesitating opinion that perhaps it would

be safer to say nothing--Gwendolen was so sensitive (she did not like

to say willful). But the rector's was a firm mind, grasping its first

judgments tenaciously and acting on them promptly, whence

counter-judgments were no more for him than shadows fleeting across the

solid ground to which he adjusted himself.

This match with Grandcourt presented itself to him as a sort of public

affair; perhaps there were ways in which it might even strengthen the

establishment. To the rector, whose father (nobody would have suspected

it, and nobody was told) had risen to be a provincial corn-dealer,

aristocratic heirship resembled regal heirship in excepting its

possessor from the ordinary standard of moral judgments, Grandcourt,

the almost certain baronet, the probable peer, was to be ranged with

public personages, and was a match to be accepted on broad general

grounds national and ecclesiastical. Such public personages, it is

true, are often in the nature of giants which an ancient community may

have felt pride and safety in possessing, though, regarded privately,

these born eminences must often have been inconvenient and even

noisome. But of the future husband personally Mr. Gascoigne was

disposed to think the best. Gossip is a sort of smoke that comes from

the dirty tobacco-pipes of of those who diffuse it: it proves nothing

but the bad taste of the smoker. But if Grandcourt had really made any

deeper or more unfortunate experiments in folly than were common in

young men of high prospects, he was of an age to have finished them.

All accounts can be suitably wound up when a man has not ruined

himself, and the expense may be taken as an insurance against future

error. This was the view of practical wisdom; with reference to higher

views, repentance had a supreme moral and religious value. There was

every reason to believe that a woman of well-regulated mind would be

happy with Grandcourt.

It was no surprise to Gwendolen on coming down to tea to be told that

her uncle wished to see her in the dining-room. He threw aside the

paper as she entered and greeted her with his usual kindness. As his

wife had remarked, he always "made much" of Gwendolen, and her

importance had risen of late. "My dear," he said, in a fatherly way,

moving a chair for her as he held her hand, "I want to speak to you on

a subject which is more momentous than any other with regard to your

welfare. You will guess what I mean. But I shall speak to you with

perfect directness: in such matters I consider myself bound to act as

your father. You have no objection, I hope?"

"Oh dear, no, uncle. You have always been very kind to me," said

Gwendolen, frankly. This evening she was willing, if it were possible,

to be a little fortified against her troublesome self, and her

resistant temper was in abeyance. The rector's mode of speech always

conveyed a thrill of authority, as of a word of command: it seemed to

take for granted that there could be no wavering in the audience, and

that every one was going to be rationally obedient.

"It is naturally a satisfaction to me that the prospect of a marriage

for you--advantageous in the highest degree--has presented itself so

early. I do not know exactly what has passed between you and Mr.

Grandcourt, but I presume there can be little doubt, from the way in

which he has distinguished you, that he desires to make you his wife."

Gwendolen did not speak immediately, and her uncle said with more

emphasis--

"Have you any doubt of that yourself, my dear?"

"I suppose that is what he has been thinking of. But he may have

changed his mind to-morrow," said Gwendolen.

"Why to-morrow? Has he made advances which you have discouraged?"

"I think he meant--he began to make advances--but I did not encourage

them. I turned the conversation."

"Will you confide in me so far as to tell me your reasons?"

"I am not sure that I had any reasons, uncle." Gwendolen laughed rather

artificially.

"You are quite capable of reflecting, Gwendolen. You are aware that

this is not a trivial occasion, and it concerns your establishment for

life under circumstances which may not occur again. You have a duty

here both to yourself and your family. I wish to understand whether you

have any ground for hesitating as to your acceptance of Mr. Grandcourt."

"I suppose I hesitate without grounds." Gwendolen spoke rather

poutingly, and her uncle grew suspicious.

"Is he disagreeable to you personally?"

"No."

"Have you heard anything of him which has affected you disagreeably?"

The rector thought it impossible that Gwendolen could have heard the

gossip he had heard, but in any case he must endeavor to put all things

in the right light for her.

"I have heard nothing about him except that he is a great match," said

Gwendolen, with some sauciness; "and that affects me very agreeably."

"Then, my dear Gwendolen, I have nothing further to say than this: you

hold your fortune in your own hands--a fortune such as rarely happens

to a girl in your circumstances--a fortune in fact which almost takes

the question out of the range of mere personal feeling, and makes your

acceptance of it a duty. If Providence offers you power and

position--especially when unclogged by any conditions that are

repugnant to you--your course is one of responsibility, into which

caprice must not enter. A man does not like to have his attachment

trifled with: he may not be at once repelled--these things are matters

of individual disposition. But the trifling may be carried too far. And

I must point out to you that in case Mr. Grandcourt were repelled

without your having refused him--without your having intended

ultimately to refuse him, your situation would be a humiliating and

painful one. I, for my part, should regard you with severe

disapprobation, as the victim of nothing else than your own coquetry

and folly."

Gwendolen became pallid as she listened to this admonitory speech. The

ideas it raised had the force of sensations. Her resistant courage

would not help her here, because her uncle was not urging her against

her own resolve; he was pressing upon her the motives of dread which

she already felt; he was making her more conscious of the risks that

lay within herself. She was silent, and the rector observed that he had

produced some strong effect.

"I mean this in kindness, my dear." His tone had softened.

"I am aware of that, uncle," said Gwendolen, rising and shaking her

head back, as if to rouse herself out of painful passivity. "I am not

foolish. I know that I must be married some time--before it is too

late. And I don't see how I could do better than marry Mr. Grandcourt.

I mean to accept him, if possible." She felt as if she were reinforcing

herself by speaking with this decisiveness to her uncle.

But the rector was a little startled by so bare a version of his own

meaning from those young lips. He wished that in her mind his advice

should be taken in an infusion of sentiments proper to a girl, and such

as are presupposed in the advice of a clergyman, although he may not

consider them always appropriate to be put forward. He wished his niece

parks, carriages, a title--everything that would make this world a

pleasant abode; but he wished her not to be cynical--to be, on the

contrary, religiously dutiful, and have warm domestic affections.

"My dear Gwendolen," he said, rising also, and speaking with benignant

gravity, "I trust that you will find in marriage a new fountain of duty

and affection. Marriage is the only true and satisfactory sphere of a

woman, and if your marriage with Mr. Grandcourt should be happily

decided upon, you will have, probably, an increasing power, both of

rank and wealth, which may be used for the benefit of others. These

considerations are something higher than romance! You are fitted by

natural gifts for a position which, considering your birth and early

prospects, could hardly be looked forward to as in the ordinary course

of things; and I trust that you will grace it, not only by those

personal gifts, but by a good and consistent life."

"I hope mamma will be the happier," said Gwendolen, in a more cheerful

way, lifting her hands backward to her neck and moving toward the door.

She wanted to waive those higher considerations.

Mr. Gascoigne felt that he had come to a satisfactory understanding

with his niece, and had furthered her happy settlement in life by

furthering her engagement to Grandcourt. Meanwhile there was another

person to whom the contemplation of that issue had been a motive for

some activity, and who believed that he, too, on this particular day

had done something toward bringing about a favorable decision in \_his\_

sense--which happened to be the reverse of the rector's.

Mr. Lush's absence from Diplow during Gwendolen's visit had been due,

not to any fear on his part of meeting that supercilious young lady, or

of being abashed by her frank dislike, but to an engagement from which

he expected important consequences. He was gone, in fact, to the

Wanchester station to meet a lady, accompanied by a maid and two

children, whom he put into a fly, and afterward followed to the hotel

of the Golden Keys, in that town. An impressive woman, whom many would

turn to look at again in passing; her figure was slim and sufficiently

tall, her face rather emaciated, so that its sculpturesque beauty was

the more pronounced, her crisp hair perfectly black, and her large,

anxious eyes what we call black. Her dress was soberly correct, her

age, perhaps, physically more advanced than the number of years would

imply, but hardly less than seven-and-thirty. An uneasy-looking woman:

her glance seemed to presuppose that the people and things were going

to be unfavorable to her, while she was, nevertheless, ready to meet

them with resolution. The children were lovely--a dark-haired girl of

six or more, a fairer boy of five. When Lush incautiously expressed

some surprise at her having brought the children, she said, with a

sharp-toned intonation--

"Did you suppose I should come wandering about here by myself? Why

should I not bring all four if I liked?"

"Oh, certainly," said Lush, with his usual fluent \_nonchalance\_.

He stayed an hour or so in conference with her, and rode back to Diplow

in a state of mind that was at once hopeful and busily anxious as to

the execution of the little plan on which his hopefulness was based.

Grandcourt's marriage to Gwendolen Harleth would not, he believed, be

much of a good to either of them, and it would plainly be fraught with

disagreeables to himself. But now he felt confident enough to say

inwardly, "I will take, nay, I will lay odds that the marriage will

never happen."

CHAPTER XIV.

I will not clothe myself in wreck--wear gems

Sawed from cramped finger-bones of women drowned;

Feel chilly vaporous hands of ireful ghosts

Clutching my necklace: trick my maiden breast

With orphans' heritage. Let your dead love

Marry it's dead.

Gwendolen looked lovely and vigorous as a tall, newly-opened lily the

next morning: there was a reaction of young energy in her, and

yesterday's self-distrust seemed no more than the transient shiver on

the surface of a full stream. The roving archery match in Cardell Chase

was a delightful prospect for the sport's sake: she felt herself

beforehand moving about like a wood-nymph under the beeches (in

appreciative company), and the imagined scene lent a charm to further

advances on the part of Grandcourt--not an impassioned lyrical Daphnis

for the wood-nymph, certainly: but so much the better. To-day Gwendolen

foresaw him making slow conversational approaches to a declaration, and

foresaw herself awaiting and encouraging it according to the rational

conclusion which she had expressed to her uncle.

When she came down to breakfast (after every one had left the table

except Mrs. Davilow) there were letters on her plate. One of them she

read with a gathering smile, and then handed it to her mamma, who, on

returning it, smiled also, finding new cheerfulness in the good spirits

her daughter had shown ever since waking, and said--

"You don't feel inclined to go a thousand miles away?"

"Not exactly so far."

"It was a sad omission not to have written again before this. Can't you

write how--before we set out this morning?"

"It is not so pressing. To-morrow will do. You see they leave town

to-day. I must write to Dover. They will be there till Monday."

"Shall I write for you, dear--if it teases you?"

Gwendolen did not speak immediately, but after sipping her coffee,

answered brusquely, "Oh no, let it be; I will write to-morrow." Then,

feeling a touch of compunction, she looked up and said with playful

tenderness, "Dear, old, beautiful mamma!"

"Old, child, truly."

"Please don't, mamma! I meant old for darling. You are hardly

twenty-five years older than I am. When you talk in that way my life

shrivels up before me."

"One can have a great deal of happiness in twenty-five years, my dear."

"I must lose no time in beginning," said Gwendolen, merrily. "The

sooner I get my palaces and coaches the better."

"And a good husband who adores you, Gwen," said Mrs. Davilow,

encouragingly.

Gwendolen put out her lips saucily and said nothing.

It was a slight drawback on her pleasure in starting that the rector

was detained by magistrate's business, and would probably not be able

to get to Cardell Chase at all that day. She cared little that Mrs.

Gascoigne and Anna chose not to go without him, but her uncle's

presence would have seemed to make it a matter of course that the

decision taken would be acted on. For decision in itself began to be

formidable. Having come close to accepting Grandcourt, Gwendolen felt

this lot of unhoped-for fullness rounding itself too definitely. When

we take to wishing a great deal for ourselves, whatever we get soon

turns into mere limitation and exclusion. Still there was the

reassuring thought that marriage would be the gate into a larger

freedom.

The place of meeting was a grassy spot called Green Arbor, where a bit

of hanging wood made a sheltering amphitheatre. It was here that the

coachful of servants with provisions had to prepare the picnic meal;

and the warden of the Chase was to guide the roving archers so as to

keep them within the due distance from this centre, and hinder them

from wandering beyond the limit which had been fixed on--a curve that

might be drawn through certain well-known points, such as the double

Oak, the Whispering Stones, and the High Cross. The plan was to take

only a preliminary stroll before luncheon, keeping the main roving

expedition for the more exquisite lights of the afternoon. The muster

was rapid enough to save every one from dull moments of waiting, and

when the groups began to scatter themselves through the light and

shadow made here by closely neighboring beeches and there by rarer

oaks, one may suppose that a painter would have been glad to look on.

This roving archery was far prettier than the stationary game, but

success in shooting at variable marks were less favored by practice,

and the hits were distributed among the volunteer archers otherwise

than they would have been in target-shooting. From this cause, perhaps,

as well as from the twofold distraction of being preoccupied and

wishing not to betray her preoccupation, Gwendolen did not greatly

distinguish herself in these first experiments, unless it were by the

lively grace with which she took her comparative failure. She was in

white and green as on the day of the former meeting, when it made an

epoch for her that she was introduced to Grandcourt; he was continually

by her side now, yet it would have been hard to tell from mere looks

and manners that their relation to each other had at all changed since

their first conversation. Still there were other grounds that made most

persons conclude them to be, if not engaged already, on the eve of

being so. And she believed this herself. As they were all returning

toward Green Arbor in divergent groups, not thinking at all of taking

aim but merely chattering, words passed which seemed really the

beginning of that end--the beginning of her acceptance. Grandcourt

said, "Do you know how long it is since I first saw you in this dress?"

"The archery meeting was on the 25th, and this is the 13th," said

Gwendolen, laughingly. "I am not good at calculating, but I will

venture to say that it must be nearly three weeks."

A little pause, and then he said, "That is a great loss of time."

"That your knowing me has caused you? Pray don't be uncomplimentary; I

don't like it."

Pause again. "It is because of the gain that I feel the loss."

Here Gwendolen herself let a pause. She was thinking, "He is really

very ingenious. He never speaks stupidly." Her silence was so unusual

that it seemed the strongest of favorable answers, and he continued:

"The gain of knowing you makes me feel the time I lose in uncertainty.

Do \_you\_ like uncertainty?"

"I think I do, rather," said Gwendolen, suddenly beaming on him with a

playful smile. "There is more in it."

Grandcourt met her laughing eyes with a slow, steady look right into

them, which seemed like vision in the abstract, and then said, "Do you

mean more torment for me?"

There was something so strange to Gwendolen in this moment that she was

quite shaken out of her usual self-consciousness. Blushing and turning

away her eyes, she said, "No, that would make me sorry."

Grandcourt would have followed up this answer, which the change in her

manner made apparently decisive of her favorable intention; but he was

not in any way overcome so as to be unaware that they were now, within

sight of everybody, descending the space into Green Arbor, and

descending it at an ill-chosen point where it began to be

inconveniently steep. This was a reason for offering his hand in the

literal sense to help her; she took it, and they came down in silence,

much observed by those already on the level--among others by Mrs.

Arrowpoint, who happened to be standing with Mrs. Davilow. That lady

had now made up her mind that Grandcourt's merits were not such as

would have induced Catherine to accept him, Catherine having so high a

standard as to have refused Lord Slogan. Hence she looked at the tenant

of Diplow with dispassionate eyes.

"Mr. Grandcourt is not equal as a man to his uncle, Sir Hugo

Mallinger--too languid. To be sure, Mr. Grandcourt is a much younger

man, but I shouldn't wonder if Sir Hugo were to outlive him,

notwithstanding the difference of years. It is ill calculating on

successions," concluded Mrs. Arrowpoint, rather too loudly.

"It is indeed," said Mrs. Davilow, able to assent with quiet

cheerfulness, for she was so well satisfied with the actual situation

of affairs that her habitual melancholy in their general

unsatisfactoriness was altogether in abeyance.

I am not concerned to tell of the food that was eaten in that green

refectory, or even to dwell on the stories of the forest scenery that

spread themselves out beyond the level front of the hollow; being just

now bound to tell a story of life at a stage when the blissful beauty

of earth and sky entered only by narrow and oblique inlets into the

consciousness, which was busy with a small social drama almost as

little penetrated by a feeling of wider relations as if it had been a

puppet-show. It will be understood that the food and champagne were of

the best--the talk and laughter too, in the sense of belonging to the

best society, where no one makes an invidious display of anything in

particular, and the advantages of the world are taken with that

high-bred depreciation which follows from being accustomed to them.

Some of the gentlemen strolled a little and indulged in a cigar, there

being a sufficient interval before, four o'clock--the time for

beginning to rove again. Among these, strange to say, was Grandcourt;

but not Mr. Lush, who seemed to be taking his pleasure quite generously

to-day by making himself particularly serviceable, ordering everything

for everybody, and by this activity becoming more than ever a blot on

the scene to Gwendolen, though he kept himself amiably aloof from her,

and never even looked at her obviously. When there was a general move

to prepare for starting, it appeared that the bows had all been put

under the charge of Lord Brackenshaw's valet, and Mr. Lush was

concerned to save ladies the trouble of fetching theirs from the

carriage where they were propped. He did not intend to bring

Gwendolen's, but she, fearful lest he should do so, hurried to fetch it

herself. The valet, seeing her approach, met her with it, and in giving

it into her hand gave also a letter addressed to her. She asked no

question about it, perceived at a glance that the address was in a

lady's handwriting (of the delicate kind which used to be esteemed

feminine before the present uncial period), and moving away with her

bow in her hand, saw Mr. Lush coming to fetch other bows. To avoid

meeting him she turned aside and walked with her back toward the stand

of carriages, opening the letter. It contained these words--

If Miss Harleth is in doubt whether she should accept Mr. Grandcourt,

let her break from her party after they have passed the Whispering

Stones and return to that spot. She will then hear something to decide

her; but she can only hear it by keeping this letter a strict secret

from every one. If she does not act according to this letter, she will

repent, as the woman who writes it has repented. The secrecy Miss

Harleth will feel herself bound in honor to guard.

Gwendolen felt an inward shock, but her immediate thought was, "It is

come in time." It lay in her youthfulness that she was absorbed by the

idea of the revelation to be made, and had not even a momentary

suspicion of contrivance that could justify her in showing the letter.

Her mind gathered itself up at once into the resolution, that she would

manage to go unobserved to the Whispering Stones; and thrusting the

letter into her pocket she turned back to rejoin the company, with that

sense of having something to conceal which to her nature had a bracing

quality and helped her to be mistress of herself.

It was a surprise to every one that Grandcourt was not, like the other

smokers, on the spot in time to set out roving with the rest. "We shall

alight on him by-and-by," said Lord Brackenshaw; "he can't be gone

far." At any rate, no man could be waited for. This apparent

forgetfulness might be taken for the distraction of a lover so absorbed

in thinking of the beloved object as to forget an appointment which

would bring him into her actual presence. And the good-natured Earl

gave Gwendolen a distant jocose hint to that effect, which she took

with suitable quietude. But the thought in her mind was "Can he too be

starting away from a decision?" It was not exactly a pleasant thought

to her; but it was near the truth. "Starting away," however, was not

the right expression for the languor of intention that came over

Grandcourt, like a fit of diseased numbness, when an end seemed within

easy reach: to desist then, when all expectation was to the contrary,

became another gratification of mere will, sublimely independent of

definite motive. At that moment he had begun a second large cigar in a

vague, hazy obstinacy which, if Lush or any other mortal who might be

insulted with impunity had interrupted by overtaking him with a request

for his return, would have expressed itself by a slow removal of his

cigar, to say in an undertone, "You'll be kind enough to go to the

devil, will you?"

But he was not interrupted, and the rovers set off without any visible

depression of spirits, leaving behind only a few of the less vigorous

ladies, including Mrs. Davilow, who preferred a quiet stroll free from

obligation to keep up with others. The enjoyment of the day was soon at

its highest pitch, the archery getting more spirited and the changing

scenes of the forest from roofed grove to open glade growing lovelier

with the lengthening shadows, and the deeply-felt but undefinable

gradations of the mellowing afternoon. It was agreed that they were

playing an extemporized "As you like it;" and when a pretty compliment

had been turned to Gwendolen about her having the part of Rosalind, she

felt the more compelled to be surpassing in loveliness. This was not

very difficult to her, for the effect of what had happened to-day was

an excitement which needed a vent--a sense of adventure rather than

alarm, and a straining toward the management of her retreat, so as not

to be impeded.

The roving had been lasting nearly an hour before the arrival at the

Whispering Stones, two tall conical blocks that leaned toward each

other like gigantic gray-mantled figures. They were soon surveyed and

passed by with the remark that they would be good ghosts on a starlit

night. But a soft sunlight was on them now, and Gwendolen felt daring.

The stones were near a fine grove of beeches, where the archers found

plenty of marks.

"How far are we from Green Arbor now?" said Gwendolen, having got in

front by the side of the warden.

"Oh, not more than half a mile, taking along the avenue we're going to

cross up there: but I shall take round a Couple of miles, by the High

Cross."

She was falling back among the rest, when suddenly they seemed all to

be hurrying obliquely forward under the guidance of Mr. Lush, and

lingering a little where she was, she perceived her opportunity of

slipping away. Soon she was out of sight, and without running she

seemed to herself to fly along the ground and count the moments nothing

till she found herself back again at the Whispering Stones. They turned

their blank gray sides to her: what was there on the other side? If

there were nothing after all? That was her only dread now--to have to

turn back again in mystification; and walking round the right-hand

stone without pause, she found herself in front of some one whose large

dark eyes met hers at a foot's distance. In spite of expectation, she

was startled and shrank bank, but in doing so she could take in the

whole figure of this stranger and perceive that she was unmistakably a

lady, and one who must have been exceedingly handsome. She perceived,

also, that a few yards from her were two children seated on the grass.

"Miss Harleth?" said the lady.

"Yes." All Gwendolen's consciousness was wonder.

"Have you accepted Mr. Grandcourt?"

"No."

"I have promised to tell you something. And you will promise to keep my

secret. However you may decide you will not tell Mr. Grandcourt, or any

one else, that you have seen me?"

"I promise."

"My name is Lydia Glasher. Mr. Grandcourt ought not to marry any one

but me. I left my husband and child for him nine years ago. Those two

children are his, and we have two others--girls--who are older. My

husband is dead now, and Mr. Grandcourt ought to marry me. He ought to

make that boy his heir."

She looked at the boy as she spoke, and Gwendolen's eyes followed hers.

The handsome little fellow was puffing out his cheeks in trying to blow

a tiny trumpet which remained dumb. His hat hung backward by a string,

and his brown curls caught the sun-rays. He was a cherub.

The two women's eyes met again, and Gwendolen said proudly, "I will not

interfere with your wishes." She looked as if she were shivering, and

her lips were pale.

"You are very attractive, Miss Harleth. But when he first knew me, I

too was young. Since then my life has been broken up and embittered. It

is not fair that he should be happy and I miserable, and my boy thrust

out of sight for another."

These words were uttered with a biting accent, but with a determined

abstinence from anything violent in tone or manner. Gwendolen, watching

Mrs. Glasher's face while she spoke, felt a sort of terror: it was as

if some ghastly vision had come to her in a dream and said, "I am a

woman's life."

"Have you anything more to say to me?" she asked in a low tone, but

still proud and coldly. The revulsion within her was not tending to

soften her. Everyone seemed hateful.

"Nothing. You know what I wished you to know. You can inquire about me

if you like. My husband was Colonel Glasher."

"Then I will go," said Gwendolen, moving away with a ceremonious

inclination, which was returned with equal grace.

In a few minutes Gwendolen was in the beech grove again but her party

had gone out of sight and apparently had not sent in search of her, for

all was solitude till she had reached the avenue pointed out by the

warden. She determined to take this way back to Green Arbor, which she

reached quickly; rapid movements seeming to her just now a means of

suspending the thoughts which might prevent her from behaving with due

calm. She had already made up her mind what step she would take.

Mrs. Davilow was of course astonished to see Gwendolen returning alone,

and was not without some uneasiness which the presence of other ladies

hindered her from showing. In answer to her words of surprise Gwendolen

said--

"Oh, I have been rather silly. I lingered behind to look at the

Whispering Stones, and the rest hurried on after something, so I lost

sight of them. I thought it best to come home by the short way--the

avenue that the warden had told me of. I'm not sorry after all. I had

had enough walking."

"Your party did not meet Mr. Grandcourt, I presume," said Mrs.

Arrowpoint, not without intention.

"No," said Gwendolen, with a little flash of defiance, and a light

laugh. "And we didn't see any carvings on the trees, either. Where can

he be? I should think he has fallen into the pool or had an apoplectic

fit."

With all Gwendolen's resolve not to betray any agitation, she could not

help it that her tone was unusually high and hard, and her mother felt

sure that something unpropitious had happened.

Mrs. Arrowpoint thought that the self-confident young lady was much

piqued, and that Mr. Grandcourt was probably seeing reason to change

his mind.

"If you have no objection, mamma, I will order the carriage," said

Gwendolen. "I am tired. And every one will be going soon."

Mrs. Davilow assented; but by the time the carriage was announced as,

ready--the horses having to be fetched from the stables on the warden's

premises--the roving party reappeared, and with them Mr. Grandcourt.

"Ah, there you are!" said Lord Brackenshaw, going up to Gwendolen, who

was arranging her mamma's shawl for the drive. "We thought at first you

had alighted on Grandcourt and he had taken you home. Lush said so. But

after that we met Grandcourt. However, we didn't suppose you could be

in any danger. The warden said he had told you a near way back."

"You are going?" said Grandcourt, coming up with his usual air, as if

he did not conceive that there had been any omission on his part. Lord

Brackenshaw gave place to him and moved away.

"Yes, we are going," said Gwendolen, looking busily at her scarf, which

she was arranging across her shoulders Scotch fashion.

"May I call at Offendene to-morrow?"

"Oh yes, if you like," said Gwendolen, sweeping him from a distance

with her eyelashes. Her voice was light and sharp as the first touch of

frost.

Mrs. Davilow accepted his arm to lead her to the carriage; but while

that was happening, Gwendolen with incredible swiftness had got in

advance of them, and had sprung into the carriage.

"I got in, mamma, because I wished to be on this side," she said,

apologetically. But she had avoided Grandcourt's touch: he only lifted

his hat and walked away--with the not unsatisfactory impression that

she meant to show herself offended by his neglect.

The mother and daughter drove for five minutes in silence. Then

Gwendolen said, "I intend to join the Langens at Dover, mamma. I shall

pack up immediately on getting home, and set off by the early train. I

shall be at Dover almost as soon as they are; we can let them know by

telegraph."

"Good heavens, child! what can be your reason for saying so?"

"My reason for saying it, mamma, is that I mean to do it."

"But why do you mean to do it?"

"I wish to go away."

"Is it because you are offended with Mr. Grandcourt's odd behavior in

walking off to-day?"

"It is useless to enter into such questions. I am not going in any case

to marry Mr. Grandcourt. Don't interest yourself further about it."

"What can I say to your uncle, Gwendolen? Consider the position you

place me in. You led him to believe only last night that you had made

up your mind in favor of Mr. Grandcourt."

"I am very sorry to cause you annoyance, mamma, dear, but I can't help

it," said Gwendolen, with still harder resistance in her tone.

"Whatever you or my uncle may think or do, I shall not alter my

resolve, and I shall not tell my reason. I don't care what comes of it.

I don't care if I never marry any one. There is nothing worth caring

for. I believe all men are bad, and I hate them."

"But need you set off in this way, Gwendolen," said Mrs. Davilow,

miserable and helpless.

"Now mamma, don't interfere with me. If you have ever had any trouble

in your own life, remember it and don't interfere with me. If I am to

be miserable, let it be by my own choice."

The mother was reduced to trembling silence. She began to see that the

difficulty would be lessened if Gwendolen went away.

And she did go. The packing was all carefully done that evening, and

not long after dawn the next day Mrs. Davilow accompanied her daughter

to the railway station. The sweet dews of morning, the cows and horses

looking over the hedges without any particular reason, the early

travelers on foot with their bundles, seemed all very melancholy and

purposeless to them both. The dingy torpor of the railway station,

before the ticket could be taken, was still worse. Gwendolen had

certainly hardened in the last twenty-four hours: her mother's trouble

evidently counted for little in her present state of mind, which did

not essentially differ from the mood that makes men take to worse

conduct when their belief in persons or things is upset. Gwendolen's

uncontrolled reading, though consisting chiefly in what are called

pictures of life, had somehow not prepared her for this encounter with

reality. Is that surprising? It is to be believed that attendance at

the \_opÃ©ra bouffe\_ in the present day would not leave men's minds

entirely without shock, if the manners observed there with some

applause were suddenly to start up in their own families. Perspective,

as its inventor remarked, is a beautiful thing. What horrors of damp

huts, where human beings languish, may not become picturesque through

aerial distance! What hymning of cancerous vices may we not languish

over as sublimest art in the safe remoteness of a strange language and

artificial phrase! Yet we keep a repugnance to rheumatism and other

painful effects when presented incur personal experience.

Mrs. Davilow felt Gwendolen's new phase of indifference keenly, and as

she drove back alone, the brightening morning was sadder to her than

before.

Mr. Grandcourt called that day at Offendene, but nobody was at home.

CHAPTER XV.

"\_Festina lente\_--celerity should be contempered with

cunctation."--SIR THOMAS BROWNE.

Gwendolen, we have seen, passed her time abroad in the new excitement

of gambling, and in imagining herself an empress of luck, having

brought from her late experience a vague impression that in this

confused world it signified nothing what any one did, so that they

amused themselves. We have seen, too, that certain persons,

mysteriously symbolized as Grapnell & Co., having also thought of

reigning in the realm of luck, and being also bent on amusing

themselves, no matter how, had brought about a painful change in her

family circumstances; whence she had returned home--carrying with her,

against her inclination, a necklace which she had pawned and some one

else had redeemed.

While she was going back to England, Grandcourt was coming to find her;

coming, that is, after his own manner--not in haste by express straight

from Diplow to Leubronn, where she was understood to be; but so

entirely without hurry that he was induced by the presence of some

Russian acquaintances to linger at Baden-Baden and make various

appointments with them, which, however, his desire to be at Leubronn

ultimately caused him to break. Grandcourt's passions were of the

intermittent, flickering kind: never flaming out strongly. But a great

deal of life goes on without strong passion: myriads of cravats are

carefully tied, dinners attended, even speeches made proposing the

health of august personages without the zest arising from a strong

desire. And a man may make a good appearance in high social

positions--may be supposed to know the classics, to have his reserves

on science, a strong though repressed opinion on politics, and all the

sentiments of the English gentleman, at a small expense of vital

energy. Also, he may be obstinate or persistent at the same low rate,

and may even show sudden impulses which have a false air of daemonic

strength because they seem inexplicable, though perhaps their secret

lies merely in the want of regulated channels for the soul to move

in--good and sufficient ducts of habit without which our nature easily

turns to mere ooze and mud, and at any pressure yields nothing but a

spurt or a puddle.

Grandcourt had not been altogether displeased by Gwendolen's running

away from the splendid chance he was holding out to her. The act had

some piquancy for him. He liked to think that it was due to resentment

of his careless behavior in Cardell Chase, which, when he came to

consider it, did appear rather cool. To have brought her so near a

tender admission, and then to have walked headlong away from further

opportunities of winning the consent which he had made her understand

him to be asking for, was enough to provoke a girl of spirit; and to be

worth his mastering it was proper that she should have some spirit.

Doubtless she meant him to follow her, and it was what he meant too.

But for a whole week he took no measures toward starting, and did not

even inquire where Miss Harleth was gone. Mr. Lush felt a triumph that

was mingled with much distrust; for Grandcourt had said no word to him

about her, and looked as neutral as an alligator; there was no telling

what might turn up in the slowly-churning chances of his mind. Still,

to have put off a decision was to have made room for the waste of

Grandcourt's energy.

The guests at Diplow felt more curiosity than their host. How was it

that nothing more was heard of Miss Harleth? Was it credible that she

had refused Mr. Grandcourt? Lady Flora Hollis, a lively middle-aged

woman, well endowed with curiosity, felt a sudden interest in making a

round of calls with Mrs. Torrington, including the rectory, Offendene,

and Quetcham, and thus not only got twice over, but also discussed with

the Arrowpoints, the information that Miss Harleth was gone to

Leubronn, with some old friends, the Baron and Baroness von Langen; for

the immediate agitation and disappointment of Mrs. Davilow and the

Gascoignes had resolved itself into a wish that Gwendolen's

disappearance should not be interpreted as anything eccentric or

needful to be kept secret. The rector's mind, indeed, entertained the

possibility that the marriage was only a little deferred, for Mrs.

Davilow had not dared to tell him of the bitter determination with

which Gwendolen had spoken. And in spite of his practical ability, some

of his experience had petrified into maxims and quotations. Amaryllis

fleeing desired that her hiding-place should be known; and that love

will find out the way "over the mountain and over the wave" may be said

without hyperbole in this age of steam. Gwendolen, he conceived, was an

Amaryllis of excellent sense but coquettish daring; the question was

whether she had dared too much.

Lady Flora, coming back charged with news about Miss Harleth, saw no

good reason why she should not try whether she could electrify Mr.

Grandcourt by mentioning it to him at the table; and in doing so shot a

few hints of a notion having got abroad that he was a disappointed

adorer. Grandcourt heard with quietude, but with attention; and the

next day he ordered Lush to bring about a decent reason for breaking up

the party at Diplow by the end of another week, as he meant to go

yachting to the Baltic or somewhere--it being impossible to stay at

Diplow as if he were a prisoner on parole, with a set of people whom he

had never wanted. Lush needed no clearer announcement that Grandcourt

was going to Leubronn; but he might go after the manner of a creeping

billiard-ball and stick on the way. What Mr. Lush intended was to make

himself indispensable so that he might go too, and he succeeded;

Gwendolen's repulsion for him being a fact that only amused his patron,

and made him none the less willing to have Lush always at hand.

This was how it happened that Grandcourt arrived at the \_Czarina\_ on

the fifth day after Gwendolen had left Leubronn, and found there his

uncle, Sir Hugo Mallinger, with his family, including Deronda. It is

not necessarily a pleasure either to the reigning power or the heir

presumptive when their separate affairs--a--touch of gout, say, in the

one, and a touch of willfulness in the other--happen to bring them to

the same spot. Sir Hugo was an easy-tempered man, tolerant both of

differences and defects; but a point of view different from his own

concerning the settlement of the family estates fretted him rather more

than if it had concerned Church discipline or the ballot, and faults

were the less venial for belonging to a person whose existence was

inconvenient to him. In no case could Grandcourt have been a nephew

after his own heart; but as the presumptive heir to the Mallinger

estates he was the sign and embodiment of a chief grievance in the

baronet's life--the want of a son to inherit the lands, in no portion

of which had he himself more than a life-interest. For in the

ill-advised settlement which his father, Sir Francis, had chosen to

make by will, even Diplow with its modicum of land had been left under

the same conditions as the ancient and wide inheritance of the two

Toppings--Diplow, where Sir Hugo had lived and hunted through many a

season in his younger years, and where his wife and daughters ought to

have been able to retire after his death.

This grievance had naturally gathered emphasis as the years advanced,

and Lady Mallinger, after having had three daughters in quick

succession, had remained for eight years till now that she was over

forty without producing so much as another girl; while Sir Hugo, almost

twenty years older, was at a time of life when, notwithstanding the

fashionable retardation of most things from dinners to marriages, a

man's hopefulness is apt to show signs of wear, until restored by

second childhood.

In fact, he had begun to despair of a son, and this confirmation of

Grandcourt's interest in the estates certainly tended to make his image

and presence the more unwelcome; but, on the other hand, it carried

circumstances which disposed Sir Hugo to take care that the relation

between them should be kept as friendly as possible. It led him to

dwell on a plan which had grown up side by side with his disappointment

of an heir; namely, to try and secure Diplow as a future residence for

Lady Mallinger and her daughters, and keep this pretty bit of the

family inheritance for his own offspring in spite of that

disappointment. Such knowledge as he had of his nephew's disposition

and affairs encouraged the belief that Grandcourt might consent to a

transaction by which he would get a good sum of ready money, as an

equivalent for his prospective interest in the domain of Diplow and the

moderate amount of land attached to it. If, after all, the unhoped-for

son should be born, the money would have been thrown away, and

Grandcourt would have been paid for giving up interests that had turned

out good for nothing; but Sir Hugo set down this risk as \_nil\_, and of

late years he had husbanded his fortune so well by the working of mines

and the sale of leases that he was prepared for an outlay.

Here was an object that made him careful to avoid any quarrel with

Grandcourt. Some years before, when he was making improvements at the

Abbey, and needed Grandcourt's concurrence in his felling an

obstructive mass of timber on the demesne, he had congratulated himself

on finding that there was no active spite against him in his nephew's

peculiar mind; and nothing had since occurred to make them hate each

other more than was compatible with perfect politeness, or with any

accommodation that could be strictly mutual.

Grandcourt, on his side, thought his uncle a superfluity and a bore,

and felt that the list of things in general would be improved whenever

Sir Hugo came to be expunged. But he had been made aware through Lush,

always a useful medium, of the baronet's inclinations concerning

Diplow, and he was gratified to have the alternative of the money in

his mind: even if he had not thought it in the least likely that he

would choose to accept it, his sense of power would have been flattered

by his being able to refuse what Sir Hugo desired. The hinted

transaction had told for something among the motives which had made him

ask for a year's tenancy of Diplow, which it had rather annoyed Sir

Hugo to grant, because the excellent hunting in the neighborhood might

decide Grandcourt not to part with his chance of future possession;--a

man who has two places, in one of which the hunting is less good,

naturally desiring a third where it is better. Also, Lush had thrown

out to Sir Hugo the probability that Grandcourt would woo and win Miss

Arrowpoint, and in that case ready money might be less of a temptation

to him. Hence, on this unexpected meeting at Leubronn, the baronet felt

much curiosity to know how things had been going on at Diplow, was bent

on being as civil as possible to his nephew, and looked forward to some

private chat with Lush.

Between Deronda and Grandcourt there was a more faintly-marked but

peculiar relation, depending on circumstances which have yet to be made

known. But on no side was there any sign of suppressed chagrin on the

first meeting at the \_table d'hÃ´te\_, an hour after Grandcourt's

arrival; and when the quartette of gentlemen afterward met on the

terrace, without Lady Mallinger, they moved off together to saunter

through the rooms, Sir Hugo saying as they entered the large \_saal\_--

"Did you play much at Baden, Grandcourt?"

"No; I looked on and betted a little with some Russians there."

"Had you luck?"

"What did I win, Lush?"

"You brought away about two hundred," said Lush.

"You are not here for the sake of the play, then?" said Sir Hugo.

"No; I don't care about play now. It's a confounded strain," said

Grandcourt, whose diamond ring and demeanor, as he moved along playing

slightly with his whisker, were being a good deal stared at by rouged

foreigners interested in a new milord.

"The fact is, somebody should invent a mill to do amusements for you,

my dear fellow," said Sir Hugo, "as the Tartars get their praying done.

But I agree with you; I never cared for play. It's monotonous--knits

the brain up into meshes. And it knocks me up to watch it now. I

suppose one gets poisoned with the bad air. I never stay here more than

ten minutes. But where's your gambling beauty, Deronda? Have you seen

her lately?"

"She's gone," said Deronda, curtly.

"An uncommonly fine girl, a perfect Diana," said Sir Hugo, turning to

Grandcourt again. "Really worth a little straining to look at her. I

saw her winning, and she took it as coolly as if she had known it all

beforehand. The same day Deronda happened to see her losing like

wildfire, and she bore it with immense pluck. I suppose she was cleaned

out, or was wise enough to stop in time. How do you know she's gone?"

"Oh, by the Visitor-list," said Deronda, with a scarcely perceptible

shrug. "Vandernoodt told me her name was Harleth, and she was with the

Baron and Baroness von Langen. I saw by the list that Miss Harleth was

no longer there."

This held no further information for Lush than that Gwendolen had been

gambling. He had already looked at the list, and ascertained that

Gwendolen had gone, but he had no intention of thrusting this knowledge

on Grandcourt before he asked for it; and he had not asked, finding it

enough to believe that the object of search would turn up somewhere or

other.

But now Grandcourt had heard what was rather piquant, and not a word

about Miss Harleth had been missed by him. After a moment's pause he

said to Deronda--

"Do you know those people--the Langens?"

"I have talked with them a little since Miss Harleth went away. I knew

nothing of them before."

"Where is she gone--do you know?"

"She is gone home," said Deronda, coldly, as if he wished to say no

more. But then, from a fresh impulse, he turned to look markedly at

Grandcourt, and added, "But it is possible you know her. Her home is

not far from Diplow: Offendene, near Winchester."

Deronda, turning to look straight at Grandcourt, who was on his left

hand, might have been a subject for those old painters who liked

contrasts of temperament. There was a calm intensity of life and

richness of tint in his face that on a sudden gaze from him was rather

startling, and often made him seem to have spoken, so that servants and

officials asked him automatically, "What did you say, sir?" when he had

been quite silent. Grandcourt himself felt an irritation, which he did

not show except by a slight movement of the eyelids, at Deronda's

turning round on him when he was not asked to do more than speak. But

he answered, with his usual drawl, "Yes, I know her," and paused with

his shoulder toward Deronda, to look at the gambling.

"What of her, eh?" asked Sir Hugo of Lush, as the three moved on a

little way. "She must be a new-comer at Offendene. Old Blenny lived

there after the dowager died."

"A little too much of her," said Lush, in a low, significant tone; not

sorry to let Sir Hugo know the state of affairs.

"Why? how?" said the baronet. They all moved out of the \_salon\_ into an

airy promenade.

"He has been on the brink of marrying her," Lush went on. "But I hope

it's off now. She's a niece of the clergyman--Gascoigne--at Pennicote.

Her mother is a widow with a brood of daughters. This girl will have

nothing, and is as dangerous as gunpowder. It would be a foolish

marriage. But she has taken a freak against him, for she ran off here

without notice, when he had agreed to call the next day. The fact is,

he's here after her; but he was in no great hurry, and between his

caprice and hers they are likely enough not to get together again. But

of course he has lost his chance with the heiress."

Grandcourt joining them said, "What a beastly den this is!--a worse

hole than Baden. I shall go back to the hotel."

When Sir Hugo and Deronda were alone, the baronet began--

"Rather a pretty story. That girl has something in her. She must be

worth running after--has \_de l'imprÃ©vu\_. I think her appearance on the

scene has bettered my chance of getting Diplow, whether the marriage

comes off or not."

"I should hope a marriage like that would not come off," said Deronda,

in a tone of disgust.

"What! are you a little touched with the sublime lash?" said Sir Hugo,

putting up his glasses to help his short sight in looking at his

companion. "Are you inclined to run after her?"

"On the contrary," said Deronda, "I should rather be inclined to run

away from her."

"Why, you would easily cut out Grandcourt. A girl with her spirit would

think you the finer match of the two," said Sir Hugo, who often tried

Deronda's patience by finding a joke in impossible advice. (A

difference of taste in jokes is a great strain on the affections.)

"I suppose pedigree and land belong to a fine match," said Deronda,

coldly.

"The best horse will win in spite of pedigree, my boy. You remember

Napoleon's \_mot--Je suis un ancÃªtre\_" said Sir Hugo, who habitually

undervalued birth, as men after dining well often agree that the good

of life is distributed with wonderful equality.

"I am not sure that I want to be an ancestor," said Deronda. "It

doesn't seem to me the rarest sort of origination."

"You won't run after the pretty gambler, then?" said Sir Hugo, putting

down his glasses.

"Decidedly not."

This answer was perfectly truthful; nevertheless it had passed through

Deronda's mind that under other circumstances he should have given way

to the interest this girl had raised in him, and tried to know more of

her. But his history had given him a stronger bias in another

direction. He felt himself in no sense free.

CHAPTER XVI.

Men, like planets, have both a visible and an invisible history. The

astronomer threads the darkness with strict deduction, accounting so

for every visible arc in the wanderer's orbit; and the narrator of

human actions, if he did his work with the same completeness, would

have to thread the hidden pathways of feeling and thought which lead

up to every moment of action, and to those moments of intense

suffering which take the quality of action--like the cry of

Prometheus, whose chained anguish seems a greater energy than the sea

and sky he invokes and the deity he defies.

Deronda's circumstances, indeed, had been exceptional. One moment had

been burned into his life as its chief epoch--a moment full of July

sunshine and large pink roses shedding their last petals on a grassy

court enclosed on three sides by a gothic cloister. Imagine him in such

a scene: a boy of thirteen, stretched prone on the grass where it was

in shadow, his curly head propped on his arms over a book, while his

tutor, also reading, sat on a camp-stool under shelter. Deronda's book

was Sismondi's "History of the Italian Republics";--the lad had a

passion for history, eager to know how time had been filled up since

the flood, and how things were carried on in the dull periods. Suddenly

he let down his left arm and looked at his tutor, saying in purest

boyish tones--

"Mr. Fraser, how was it that the popes and cardinals always had so many

nephews?"

The tutor, an able young Scotchman, who acted as Sir Hugo Mallinger's

secretary, roused rather unwillingly from his political economy,

answered with the clear-cut emphatic chant which makes a truth doubly

telling in Scotch utterance--

"Their own children were called nephews."

"Why?" said Deronda.

"It was just for the propriety of the thing; because, as you know very

well, priests don't marry, and the children were illegitimate."

Mr. Fraser, thrusting out his lower lip and making his chant of the

last word the more emphatic for a little impatience at being

interrupted, had already turned his eyes on his book again, while

Deronda, as if something had stung him, started up in a sitting

attitude with his back to the tutor.

He had always called Sir Hugo Mallinger his uncle, and when it once

occurred to him to ask about his father and mother, the baronet had

answered, "You lost your father and mother when you were quite a little

one; that is why I take care of you." Daniel then straining to discern

something in that early twilight, had a dim sense of having been kissed

very much, and surrounded by thin, cloudy, scented drapery, till his

fingers caught in something hard, which hurt him, and he began to cry.

Every other memory he had was of the little world in which he still

lived. And at that time he did not mind about learning more, for he was

too fond of Sir Hugo to be sorry for the loss of unknown parents. Life

was very delightful to the lad, with an uncle who was always indulgent

and cheerful--a fine man in the bright noon of life, whom Daniel

thought absolutely perfect, and whose place was one of the finest in

England, at once historical; romantic, and home-like: a picturesque

architectural outgrowth from an abbey, which had still remnants of the

old monastic trunk. Diplow lay in another county, and was a

comparatively landless place which had come into the family from a rich

lawyer on the female side who wore the perruque of the restoration;

whereas the Mallingers had the grant of Monk's Topping under Henry the

Eighth, and ages before had held the neighboring lands of King's

Topping, tracing indeed their origin to a certain Hugues le Malingre,

who came in with the Conqueror--and also apparently with a sickly

complexion which had been happily corrected in his descendants. Two

rows of these descendants, direct and collateral, females of the male

line, and males of the female, looked down in the gallery over the

cloisters on the nephew Daniel as he walked there: men in armor with

pointed beards and arched eyebrows, pinched ladies in hoops and ruffs

with no face to speak of; grave-looking men in black velvet and stuffed

hips, and fair, frightened women holding little boys by the hand;

smiling politicians in magnificent perruques, and ladies of the

prize-animal kind, with rosebud mouths and full eyelids, according to

Lely; then a generation whose faces were revised and embellished in the

taste of Kneller; and so on through refined editions of the family

types in the time of Reynolds and Romney, till the line ended with Sir

Hugo and his younger brother Henleigh. This last had married Miss

Grandcourt, and taken her name along with her estates, thus making a

junction between two equally old families, impaling the three Saracens'

heads proper and three bezants of the one with the tower and falcons

\_argent\_ of the other, and, as it happened, uniting their highest

advantages in the prospects of that Henleigh Mallinger Grandcourt who

is at present more of an acquaintance to us than either Sir Hugo or his

nephew Daniel Deronda.

In Sir Hugo's youthful portrait with rolled collar and high cravat, Sir

Thomas Lawrence had done justice to the agreeable alacrity of

expression and sanguine temperament still to be seen in the original,

but had done something more than justice in slightly lengthening the

nose, which was in reality shorter than might have been expected in a

Mallinger. Happily the appropriate nose of the family reappeared in his

younger brother, and was to be seen in all its refined regularity in

his nephew Mallinger Grandcourt. But in the nephew Daniel Deronda the

family faces of various types, seen on the walls of the gallery; found

no reflex. Still he was handsomer than any of them, and when he was

thirteen might have served as model for any painter who wanted to image

the most memorable of boys: you could hardly have seen his face

thoroughly meeting yours without believing that human creatures had

done nobly in times past, and might do more nobly in time to come. The

finest childlike faces have this consecrating power, and make us

shudder anew at all the grossness and basely-wrought griefs of the

world, lest they should enter here and defile.

But at this moment on the grass among the rose-petals, Daniel Deronda

was making a first acquaintance with those griefs. A new idea had

entered his mind, and was beginning to change the aspect of his

habitual feelings as happy careless voyagers are changed with the sky

suddenly threatened and the thought of danger arises. He sat perfectly

still with his back to the tutor, while his face expressed rapid inward

transition. The deep blush, which had come when he first started up,

gradually subsided; but his features kept that indescribable look of

subdued activity which often accompanies a new mental survey of

familiar facts. He had not lived with other boys, and his mind showed

the same blending of child's ignorance with surprising knowledge which

is oftener seen in bright girls. Having read Shakespeare as well as a

great deal of history, he could have talked with the wisdom of a

bookish child about men who were born out of wedlock and were held

unfortunate in consequence, being under disadvantages which required

them to be a sort of heroes if they were to work themselves up to an

equal standing with their legally born brothers. But he had never

brought such knowledge into any association with his own lot, which had

been too easy for him ever to think about it--until this moment when

there had darted into his mind with the magic of quick comparison, the

possibility that here was the secret of his own birth, and that the man

whom he called uncle was really his father. Some children, even younger

than Daniel, have known the first arrival of care, like an ominous

irremovable guest in their tender lives, on the discovery that their

parents, whom they had imagined able to buy everything, were poor and

in hard money troubles. Daniel felt the presence of a new guest who

seemed to come with an enigmatic veiled face, and to carry

dimly-conjectured, dreaded revelations. The ardor which he had given to

the imaginary world in his books suddenly rushed toward his own history

and spent its pictorial energy there, explaining what he knew,

representing the unknown. The uncle whom he loved very dearly took the

aspect of a father who held secrets about him--who had done him a

wrong--yes, a wrong: and what had become of his mother, for whom he

must have been taken away?--Secrets about which he, Daniel, could never

inquire; for to speak or to be spoken to about these new thoughts

seemed like falling flakes of fire to his imagination. Those who have

known an impassioned childhood will understand this dread of utterance

about any shame connected with their parents. The impetuous advent of

new images took possession of him with the force of fact for the first

time told, and left him no immediate power for the reflection that he

might be trembling at a fiction of his own. The terrible sense of

collision between a strong rush of feeling and the dread of its

betrayal, found relief at length in big slow tears, which fell without

restraint until the voice of Mr. Fraser was heard saying:

"Daniel, do you see that you are sitting on the bent pages of your

book?"

Daniel immediately moved the book without turning round, and after

holding it before him for an instant, rose with it and walked away into

the open grounds, where he could dry his tears unobserved. The first

shock of suggestion past, he could remember that he had no certainty

how things really had been, and that he had been making conjectures

about his own history, as he had often made stories about Pericles or

Columbus, just to fill up the blanks before they became famous. Only

there came back certain facts which had an obstinate reality,--almost

like the fragments of a bridge, telling you unmistakably how the arches

lay. And again there came a mood in which his conjectures seemed like a

doubt of religion, to be banished as an offense, and a mean prying

after what he was not meant to know; for there was hardly a delicacy of

feeling this lad was not capable of. But the summing-up of all his

fluctuating experience at this epoch was, that a secret impression had

come to him which had given him something like a new sense in relation

to all the elements of his life. And the idea that others probably knew

things concerning which they did not choose to mention, set up in him a

premature reserve which helped to intensify his inward experience. His

ears open now to words which before that July day would have passed by

him unnoted; and round every trivial incident which imagination could

connect with his suspicions, a newly-roused set of feelings were ready

to cluster themselves.

One such incident a month later wrought itself deeply into his life.

Daniel had not only one of those thrilling boy voices which seem to

bring an idyllic heaven and earth before our eyes, but a fine musical

instinct, and had early made out accompaniments for himself on the

piano, while he sang from memory. Since then he had had some teaching,

and Sir Hugo, who delighted in the boy, used to ask for his music in

the presence of guests. One morning after he had been singing "Sweet

Echo" before a small party of gentlemen whom the rain had kept in the

house, the baronet, passing from a smiling remark to his next neighbor

said:

"Come here, Dan!"

The boy came forward with unusual reluctance. He wore an embroidered

holland blouse which set off the rich coloring of his head and throat,

and the resistant gravity about his mouth and eyes as he was being

smiled upon, made their beauty the more impressive. Every one was

admiring him.

"What do you say to being a great singer? Should you like to be adored

by the world and take the house by storm; like Mario and Tamberlik?"

Daniel reddened instantaneously, but there was a just perceptible

interval before he answered with angry decision--

"No; I should hate it!"

"Well, well, well!" said Sir Hugo, with surprised kindliness intended

to be soothing. But Daniel turned away quickly, left the room, and

going to his own chamber threw himself on the broad window-sill, which

was a favorite retreat of his when he had nothing particular to do.

Here he could see the rain gradually subsiding with gleams through the

parting clouds which lit up a great reach of the park, where the old

oaks stood apart from each other, and the bordering wood was pierced

with a green glade which met the eastern sky. This was a scene which

had always been part of his home--part of the dignified ease which had

been a matter of course in his life. And his ardent clinging nature had

appropriated it all with affection. He knew a great deal of what it was

to be a gentleman by inheritance, and without thinking much about

himself--for he was a boy of active perceptions and easily forgot his

own existence in that of Robert Bruce--he had never supposed that he

could be shut out from such a lot, or have a very different part in the

world from that of the uncle who petted him. It is possible (though not

greatly believed in at present) to be fond of poverty and take it for a

bride, to prefer scoured deal, red quarries and whitewash for one's

private surroundings, to delight in no splendor but what has open doors

for the whole nation, and to glory in having no privileges except such

as nature insists on; and noblemen have been known to run away from

elaborate ease and the option of idleness, that they might bind

themselves for small pay to hard-handed labor. But Daniel's tastes were

altogether in keeping with his nurture: his disposition was one in

which everyday scenes and habits beget not \_ennui\_ or rebellion, but

delight, affection, aptitudes; and now the lad had been stung to the

quick by the idea that his uncle--perhaps his father--thought of a

career for him which was totally unlike his own, and which he knew very

well was not thought of among possible destinations for the sons of

English gentlemen. He had often stayed in London with Sir Hugo, who to

indulge the boy's ear had carried him to the opera to hear the great

tenors, so that the image of a singer taking the house by storm was

very vivid to him; but now, spite of his musical gift, he set himself

bitterly against the notion of being dressed up to sing before all

those fine people, who would not care about him except as a wonderful

toy. That Sir Hugo should have thought of him in that position for a

moment, seemed to Daniel an unmistakable proof that there was something

about his birth which threw him out from the class of gentlemen to

which the baronet belonged. Would it ever be mentioned to him? Would

the time come when his uncle would tell him everything? He shrank from

the prospect: in his imagination he preferred ignorance. If his father

had been wicked--Daniel inwardly used strong words, for he was feeling

the injury done him as a maimed boy feels the crushed limb which for

others is merely reckoned in an average of accidents--if his father had

done any wrong, he wished it might never be spoken of to him: it was

already a cutting thought that such knowledge might be in other minds.

Was it in Mr. Fraser's? probably not, else he would not have spoken in

that way about the pope's nephews. Daniel fancied, as older people do,

that every one else's consciousness was as active as his own on a

matter which was vital to him. Did Turvey the valet know?--and old Mrs.

French the housekeeper?--and Banks the bailiff, with whom he had ridden

about the farms on his pony?--And now there came back the recollection

of a day some years before when he was drinking Mrs. Banks's whey, and

Banks said to his wife with a wink and a cunning laugh, "He features

the mother, eh?" At that time little Daniel had merely thought that

Banks made a silly face, as the common farming men often did, laughing

at what was not laughable; and he rather resented being winked at and

talked of as if he did not understand everything. But now that small

incident became information: it was to be reasoned on. How could he be

like his mother and not like his father? His mother must have been a

Mallinger, if Sir Hugo were his uncle. But no! His father might have

been Sir Hugo's brother and have changed his name, as Mr. Henleigh

Mallinger did when he married Miss Grandcourt. But then, why had he

never heard Sir Hugo speak of his brother Deronda, as he spoke of his

brother Grandcourt? Daniel had never before cared about the family

tree--only about that ancestor who had killed three Saracens in one

encounter. But now his mind turned to a cabinet of estate-maps in the

library, where he had once seen an illuminated parchment hanging out,

that Sir Hugo said was the family tree. The phrase was new and odd to

him--he was a little fellow then--hardly more than half his present

age--and he gave it no precise meaning. He knew more now and wished

that he could examine that parchment. He imagined that the cabinet was

always locked, and longed to try it. But here he checked himself. He

might be seen: and he would never bring himself near even a silent

admission of the sore that had opened in him.

It is in such experiences of a boy or girlhood, while elders are

debating whether most education lies in science or literature, that the

main lines of character are often laid down. If Daniel had been of a

less ardently affectionate nature, the reserve about himself and the

supposition that others had something to his disadvantage in their

minds, might have turned into a hard, proud antagonism. But inborn

lovingness was strong enough to keep itself level with resentment.

There was hardly any creature in his habitual world that he was not

fond of; teasing them occasionally, of course--all except his uncle, or

"Nunc," as Sir Hugo had taught him to say; for the baronet was the

reverse of a strait-laced man, and left his dignity to take care of

itself. Him Daniel loved in that deep-rooted filial way which makes

children always the happier for being in the same room with father or

mother, though their occupations may be quite apart. Sir Hugo's

watch-chain and seals, his handwriting, his mode of smoking and of

talking to his dogs and horses, had all a rightness and charm about

them to the boy which went along with the happiness of morning and

breakfast time. That Sir Hugo had always been a Whig, made Tories and

Radicals equally opponents of the truest and best; and the books he had

written were all seen under the same consecration of loving belief

which differenced what was his from what was not his, in spite of

general resemblance. Those writings were various, from volumes of

travel in the brilliant style, to articles on things in general, and

pamphlets on political crises; but to Daniel they were alike in having

an unquestionable rightness by which other people's information could

be tested.

Who cannot imagine the bitterness of a first suspicion that something

in this object of complete love was \_not\_ quite right? Children demand

that their heroes should be fleckless, and easily believe them so:

perhaps a first discovery to the contrary is hardly a less

revolutionary shock to a passionate child than the threatened downfall

of habitual beliefs which makes the world seem to totter for us in

maturer life.

But some time after this renewal of Daniel's agitation it appeared that

Sir Hugo must have been making a merely playful experiment in his

question about the singing. He sent for Daniel into the library, and

looking up from his writing as the boy entered threw himself sideways

in his armchair. "Ah, Dan!" he said kindly, drawing one of the old

embroidered stools close to him. "Come and sit down here."

Daniel obeyed, and Sir Hugo put a gentle hand on his shoulder, looking

at him affectionately.

"What is it, my boy? Have you heard anything that has put you out of

spirits lately?"

Daniel was determined not to let the tears come, but he could not speak.

"All changes are painful when people have been happy, you know," said

Sir Hugo, lifting his hand from the boy's shoulder to his dark curls

and rubbing them gently. "You can't be educated exactly as I wish you

to be without our parting. And I think you will find a great deal to

like at school."

This was not what Daniel expected, and was so far a relief, which gave

him spirit to answer--

"Am I to go to school?"

"Yes, I mean you to go to Eton. I wish you to have the education of an

English gentleman; and for that it is necessary that you should go to a

public school in preparation for the university: Cambridge I mean you

to go to; it was my own university."

Daniel's color came and went.

"What do you say, sirrah?" said Sir Hugo, smiling.

"I should like to be a gentleman," said Daniel, with firm distinctness,

"and go to school, if that is what a gentleman's son must do."

Sir Hugo watched him silently for a few moments, thinking he understood

now why the lad had seemed angry at the notion of becoming a singer.

Then he said tenderly--

"And so you won't mind about leaving your old Nunc?"

"Yes, I shall," said Daniel, clasping Sir Hugo's caressing arm with

both his hands. "But shan't I come home and be with you in the

holidays?"

"Oh yes, generally," said Sir Hugo. "But now I mean you to go at once

to a new tutor, to break the change for you before you go to Eton."

After this interview Daniel's spirit rose again. He was meant to be a

gentleman, and in some unaccountable way it might be that his

conjectures were all wrong. The very keenness of the lad taught him to

find comfort in his ignorance. While he was busying his mind in the

construction of possibilities, it became plain to him that there must

be possibilities of which he knew nothing. He left off brooding, young

joy and the spirit of adventure not being easily quenched within him,

and in the interval before his going away he sang about the house,

danced among the old servants, making them parting gifts, and insisted

many times to the groom on the care that was to be taken of the black

pony.

"Do you think I shall know much less than the other boys, Mr. Fraser?"

said Daniel. It was his bent to think that every stranger would be

surprised at his ignorance.

"There are dunces to be found everywhere," said the judicious Fraser.

"You'll not be the biggest; but you've not the makings of a Porson in

you, or a Leibnitz either."

"I don't want to be a Porson or a Leibnitz," said Daniel. "I would

rather be a greater leader, like Pericles or Washington."

"Ay, ay; you've a notion they did with little parsing, and less

algebra," said Fraser. But in reality he thought his pupil a remarkable

lad, to whom one thing was as easy as another, if he had only a mind to

it.

Things went on very well with Daniel in his new world, except that a

boy with whom he was at once inclined to strike up a close friendship

talked to him a great deal about his home and parents, and seemed to

expect a like expansiveness in return. Daniel immediately shrank into

reserve, and this experience remained a check on his naturally strong

bent toward the formation of intimate friendship. Every one, his tutor

included, set him down as a reserved boy, though he was so good-humored

and unassuming, as well as quick, both at study and sport, that nobody

called his reserve disagreeable. Certainly his face had a great deal to

do with that favorable interpretation; but in this instance the beauty

of the closed lips told no falsehood.

A surprise that came to him before his first vacation strengthened the

silent consciousness of a grief within, which might be compared in some

ways with Byron's susceptibility about his deformed foot. Sir Hugo

wrote word that he was married to Miss Raymond, a sweet lady, whom

Daniel must remember having seen. The event would make no difference

about his spending the vacation at the Abbey; he would find Lady

Mallinger a new friend whom he would be sure to love--and much more to

the usual effect when a man, having done something agreeable to

himself, is disposed to congratulate others on his own good fortune,

and the deducible satisfactoriness of events in general.

Let Sir Hugo be partly excused until the grounds of his action can be

more fully known. The mistakes in his behavior to Deronda were due to

that dullness toward what may be going on in other minds, especially

the minds of children, which is among the commonest deficiencies, even

in good-natured men like him, when life has been generally easy to

themselves, and their energies have been quietly spent in feeling

gratified. No one was better aware than he that Daniel was generally

suspected to be his own son. But he was pleased with that suspicion;

and his imagination had never once been troubled with the way in which

the boy himself might be affected, either then or in the future, by the

enigmatic aspect of his circumstances. He was as fond of him as could

be, and meant the best by him. And, considering the lightness with

which the preparation of young lives seem to lie on respectable

consciences, Sir Hugo Mallinger can hardly be held open to exceptional

reproach. He had been a bachelor till he was five-and-forty, had always

been regarded as a fascinating man of elegant tastes; what could be

more natural, even according to the index of language, than that he

should have a beautiful boy like the little Deronda to take care of?

The mother might even, perhaps, be in the great world--met with in Sir

Hugo's residence abroad. The only person to feel any objection was the

boy himself, who could not have been consulted. And the boy's

objections had never been dreamed of by anybody but himself.

By the time Deronda was ready to go to Cambridge, Lady Mallinger had

already three daughters--charming babies, all three, but whose sex was

announced as a melancholy alternative, the offspring desired being a

son; if Sir Hugo had no son the succession must go to his nephew,

Mallinger Grandcourt. Daniel no longer held a wavering opinion about

his own birth. His fuller knowledge had tended to convince him that Sir

Hugo was his father, and he conceived that the baronet, since he never

approached a communication on the subject, wished him to have a tacit

understanding of the fact, and to accept in silence what would be

generally considered more than the due love and nurture. Sir Hugo's

marriage might certainly have been felt as a new ground of resentment

by some youths in Deronda's position, and the timid Lady Mallinger with

her fast-coming little ones might have been images to scowl at, as

likely to divert much that was disposable in the feelings and

possessions of the baronet from one who felt his own claim to be prior.

But hatred of innocent human obstacles was a form of moral stupidity

not in Deronda's grain; even the indignation which had long mingled

itself with his affection for Sir Hugo took the quality of pain rather

than of temper; and as his mind ripened to the idea of tolerance toward

error, he habitually liked the idea with his own silent grievances.

The sense of an entailed disadvantage--the deformed foot doubtfully

hidden by the shoe, makes a restlessly active spiritual yeast, and

easily turns a self-centered, unloving nature into an Ishmaelite. But

in the rarer sort, who presently see their own frustrated claim as one

among a myriad, the inexorable sorrow takes the form of fellowship and

makes the imagination tender. Deronda's early-weakened susceptibility,

charged at first with ready indignation and resistant pride, had raised

in him a premature reflection on certain questions of life; it had

given a bias to his conscience, a sympathy with certain ills, and a

tension of resolve in certain directions, who marked him off from other

youths much more than any talents he possessed.

One day near the end of the long vacation, when he had been making a

tour in the Rhineland with his Eton tutor, and was come for a farewell

stay at the Abbey before going to Cambridge, he said to Sir Hugo--

"What do you intend me to be, sir?" They were in the library, and it

was the fresh morning. Sir Hugo had called him in to read a letter from

a Cambridge Don who was to be interested in him; and since the baronet

wore an air at once business-like and leisurely, the moment seemed

propitious for entering on a grave subject which had never yet been

thoroughly discussed.

"Whatever your inclination leads you to, my boy. I thought it right to

give you the option of the army, but you shut the door on that, and I

was glad. I don't expect you to choose just yet--by-and-by, when you

have looked about you a little more and tried your mettle among older

men. The university has a good wide opening into the forum. There are

prizes to be won, and a bit of good fortune often gives the turn to a

man's taste. From what I see and hear, I should think you can take up

anything you like. You are in the deeper water with your classics than

I ever got into, and if you are rather sick of that swimming, Cambridge

is the place where you can go into mathematics with a will, and disport

yourself on the dry sand as much as you like. I floundered along like a

carp."

"I suppose money will make some difference, sir," said Daniel blushing.

"I shall have to keep myself by-and-by."

"Not exactly. I recommend you not to be extravagant--yes, yes, I

know--you are not inclined to that;--but you need not take up anything

against the grain. You will have a bachelor's income--enough for you to

look about with. Perhaps I had better tell you that you may consider

yourself secure of seven hundred a year. You might make yourself a

barrister--be a writer--take up politics. I confess that is what would

please me best. I should like to have you at my elbow and pulling with

me."

Deronda looked embarrassed. He felt that he ought to make some sign of

gratitude, but other feelings clogged his tongue. A moment was passing

by in which a question about his birth was throbbing within him, and

yet it seemed more impossible than ever that the question should find

vent--more impossible than ever that he could hear certain things from

Sir Hugo's lips. The liberal way in which he was dealt with was the

more striking because the baronet had of late cared particularly for

money, and for making the utmost of his life-interest in the estate by

way of providing for his daughters; and as all this flashed through

Daniel's mind it was momentarily within his imagination that the

provision for him might come in some way from his mother. But such

vaporous conjecture passed away as quickly as it came.

Sir Hugo appeared not to notice anything peculiar in Daniel's manner,

and presently went on with his usual chatty liveliness.

"I am glad you have done some good reading outside your classics, and

have got a grip of French and German. The truth is, unless a man can

get the prestige and income of a Don and write donnish books, it's

hardly worth while for him to make a Greek and Latin machine of himself

and be able to spin you out pages of the Greek dramatists at any verse

you'll give him as a cue. That's all very fine, but in practical life

nobody does give you the cue for pages of Greek. In fact, it's a nicety

of conversation which I would have you attend to--much quotation of any

sort, even in English is bad. It tends to choke ordinary remark. One

couldn't carry on life comfortably without a little blindness to the

fact that everything had been said better than we can put it ourselves.

But talking of Dons, I have seen Dons make a capital figure in society;

and occasionally he can shoot you down a cart-load of learning in the

right place, which will tell in politics. Such men are wanted; and if

you have any turn for being a Don, I say nothing against it."

"I think there's not much chance of that. Quicksett and Puller are both

stronger than I am. I hope you will not be much disappointed if I don't

come out with high honors."

"No, no. I should like you to do yourself credit, but for God's sake

don't come out as a superior expensive kind of idiot, like young

Brecon, who got a Double First, and has been learning to knit braces

ever since. What I wish you to get is a passport in life. I don't go

against our university system: we want a little disinterested culture

to make head against cotton and capital, especially in the House. My

Greek has all evaporated; if I had to construe a verse on a sudden, I

should get an apoplectic fit. But it formed my taste. I dare say my

English is the better for it."

On this point Daniel kept a respectful silence. The enthusiastic belief

in Sir Hugo's writings as a standard, and in the Whigs as the chosen

race among politicians, had gradually vanished along with the seraphic

boy's face. He had not been the hardest of workers at Eton. Though some

kinds of study and reading came as easily as boating to him, he was not

of the material that usually makes the first-rate Eton scholar. There

had sprung up in him a meditative yearning after wide knowledge which

is likely always to abate ardor in the fight for prize acquirement in

narrow tracks. Happily he was modest, and took any second-rate-\*ness in

himself simply as a fact, not as a marvel necessarily to be accounted

for by a superiority. Still Mr. Eraser's high opinion of the lad had

not been altogether belied by the youth: Daniel had the stamp of rarity

in a subdued fervor of sympathy, an activity of imagination on behalf

of others which did not show itself effusively, but was continually

seen in acts of considerateness that struck his companions as moral

eccentricity. "Deronda would have been first-rate if he had had more

ambition," was a frequent remark about him. But how could a fellow push

his way properly when he objected to swop for his own advantage,

knocked under by choice when he was within an inch of victory, and,

unlike the great Clive, would rather be the calf than the butcher? It

was a mistake, however, to suppose that Deronda had not his share of

ambition. We know he had suffered keenly from the belief that there was

a tinge of dishonor in his lot; but there are some cases, and his was

one of them, in which the sense of injury breeds--not the will to

inflict injuries and climb over them as a ladder, but a hatred of all

injury. He had his flashes of fierceness and could hit out upon

occasion, but the occasions were not always what might have been

expected. For in what related to himself his resentful impulses had

been early checked by a mastering affectionateness. Love has a habit of

saying "Never mind" to angry self, who, sitting down for the nonce in

the lower place, by-and-by gets used to it. So it was that as Deronda

approached manhood his feeling for Sir Hugo, while it was getting more

and more mixed with criticism, was gaining in that sort of allowance

which reconciles criticism with tenderness. The dear old beautiful home

and everything within it, Lady Mallinger and her little ones included,

were consecrated for the youth as they had been for the boy--only with

a certain difference of light on the objects. The altarpiece was no

longer miraculously perfect, painted under infallible guidance, but the

human hand discerned in the work was appealing to a reverent tenderness

safer from the gusts of discovery. Certainly Deronda's ambition, even

in his spring-time, lay exceptionally aloof from conspicuous, vulgar

triumph, and from other ugly forms of boyish energy; perhaps because he

was early impassioned by ideas, and burned his fire on those heights.

One may spend a good deal of energy in disliking and resisting what

others pursue, and a boy who is fond of somebody else's pencil-case may

not be more energetic than another who is fond of giving his own

pencil-case away. Still it was not Deronda's disposition to escape from

ugly scenes; he was more inclined to sit through them and take care of

the fellow least able to take care of himself. It had helped to make

him popular that he was sometimes a little compromised by this apparent

comradeship. For a meditative interest in learning how human miseries

are wrought--as precocious in him as another sort of genius in the poet

who writes a Queen Mab at nineteen--was so infused with kindliness that

it easily passed for comradeship. Enough. In many of our neighbors'

lives there is much not only of error and lapse, but of a certain

exquisite goodness which can never be written or even spoken--only

divined by each of us, according to the inward instruction of our own

privacy.

The impression he made at Cambridge corresponded to his position at

Eton. Every one interested in him agreed that he might have taken a

high place if his motives had been of a more pushing sort, and if he

had not, instead of regarding studies as instruments of success,

hampered himself with the notion that they were to feed motive and

opinion--a notion which set him criticising methods and arguing against

his freight and harness when he should have been using all his might to

pull. In the beginning his work at the university had a new zest for

him: indifferent to the continuation of Eton classical drill, he

applied himself vigorously to mathematics, for which he had shown an

early aptitude under Mr. Fraser, and he had the delight of feeling his

strength in a comparatively fresh exercise of thought. That delight,

and the favorable opinion of his tutor, determined him to try for a

mathematical scholarship in the Easter of his second year: he wished to

gratify Sir Hugo by some achievement, and the study of the higher

mathematics, having the growing fascination inherent in all thinking

which demands intensity, was making him a more exclusive worker than he

had been before.

But here came the old check which had been growing with his growth. He

found the inward bent toward comprehension and thoroughness diverging

more and more from the track marked out by the standards of

examination: he felt a heightening discontent with the wearing futility

and enfeebling strain of a demand for excessive retention and dexterity

without any insight into the principles which form the vital

connections of knowledge. (Deronda's undergraduateship occurred fifteen

years ago, when the perfection of our university methods was not yet

indisputable.) In hours when his dissatisfaction was strong upon him he

reproached himself for having been attracted by the conventional

advantage of belonging to an English university, and was tempted toward

the project of asking Sir Hugo to let him quit Cambridge and pursue a

more independent line of study abroad. The germs of this inclination

had been already stirring in his boyish love of universal history,

which made him want to be at home in foreign countries, and follow in

imagination the traveling students of the middle ages. He longed now to

have the sort of apprenticeship to life which would not shape him too

definitely, and rob him of the choice that might come from a free

growth. One sees that Deronda's demerits were likely to be on the side

of reflective hesitation, and this tendency was encouraged by his

position; there was no need for him to get an immediate income, or to

fit himself in haste for a profession; and his sensibility to the

half-known facts of his parentage made him an excuse for lingering

longer than others in a state of social neutrality. Other men, he

inwardly said, had a more definite place and duties. But the project

which flattered his inclination might not have gone beyond the stage of

ineffective brooding, if certain circumstances had not quickened it

into action.

The circumstances arose out of an enthusiastic friendship which

extended into his after-life. Of the same year with himself, and

occupying small rooms close to his, was a youth who had come as an

exhibitioner from Christ's Hospital, and had eccentricities enough for

a Charles Lamb. Only to look at his pinched features and blonde hair

hanging over his collar reminded one of pale quaint heads by early

German painters; and when this faint coloring was lit up by a joke,

there came sudden creases about the mouth and eyes which might have

been moulded by the soul of an aged humorist. His father, an engraver

of some distinction, had been dead eleven years, and his mother had

three girls to educate and maintain on a meagre annuity. Hans

Meyrick--he had been daringly christened after Holbein--felt himself

the pillar, or rather the knotted and twisted trunk, round which these

feeble climbing plants must cling. There was no want of ability or of

honest well-meaning affection to make the prop trustworthy: the ease

and quickness with which he studied might serve him to win prizes at

Cambridge, as he had done among the Blue Coats, in spite of

irregularities. The only danger was, that the incalculable tendencies

in him might be fatally timed, and that his good intentions might be

frustrated by some act which was not due to habit but to capricious,

scattered impulses. He could not be said to have any one bad habit; yet

at longer or shorter intervals he had fits of impish recklessness, and

did things that would have made the worst habits.

Hans in his right mind, however, was a lovable creature, and in Deronda

he had happened to find a friend who was likely to stand by him with

the more constancy, from compassion for these brief aberrations that

might bring a long repentance. Hans, indeed, shared Deronda's rooms

nearly as much as he used his own: to Deronda he poured himself out on

his studies, his affairs, his hopes; the poverty of his home, and his

love for the creatures there; the itching of his fingers to draw, and

his determination to fight it away for the sake of getting some sort of

a plum that he might divide with his mother and the girls. He wanted no

confidence in return, but seemed to take Deronda as an Olympian who

needed nothing--an egotism in friendship which is common enough with

mercurial, expansive natures. Deronda was content, and gave Meyrick all

the interest he claimed, getting at last a brotherly anxiety about him,

looking after him in his erratic moments, and contriving by adroitly

delicate devices not only to make up for his friend's lack of pence,

but to save him from threatening chances. Such friendship easily

becomes tender: the one spreads strong sheltering wings that delight in

spreading, the other gets the warm protection which is also a delight.

Meyrick was going in for a classical scholarship, and his success, in

various ways momentous, was the more probable from the steadying

influence of Deronda's friendship.

But an imprudence of Meyrick's, committed at the beginning of the

autumn term, threatened to disappoint his hopes. With his usual

alternation between unnecessary expense and self-privation, he had

given too much money for an old engraving which fascinated him, and to

make up for it, had come from London in a third-class carriage with his

eyes exposed to a bitter wind and any irritating particles the wind

might drive before it. The consequence was a severe inflammation of the

eyes, which for some time hung over him the threat of a lasting injury.

This crushing trouble called out all Deronda's readiness to devote

himself, and he made every other occupation secondary to that of being

companion and eyes to Hans, working with him and for him at his

classics, that if possible his chance of the classical scholarship

might be saved. Hans, to keep the knowledge of his suffering from his

mother and sisters, alleged his work as a reason for passing the

Christmas at Cambridge, and his friend stayed up with him.

Meanwhile Deronda relaxed his hold on his mathematics, and Hans,

reflecting on this, at length said: "Old fellow, while you are hoisting

me you are risking yourself. With your mathematical cram one may be

like Moses or Mahomet or somebody of that sort who had to cram, and

forgot in one day what it had taken him forty to learn."

Deronda would not admit that he cared about the risk, and he had really

been beguiled into a little indifference by double sympathy: he was

very anxious that Hans should not miss the much-needed scholarship, and

he felt a revival of interest in the old studies. Still, when Hans,

rather late in the day, got able to use his own eyes, Deronda had

tenacity enough to try hard and recover his lost ground. He failed,

however; but he had the satisfaction of seeing Meyrick win.

Success, as a sort of beginning that urged completion, might have

reconciled Deronda to his university course; but the emptiness of all

things, from politics to pastimes, is never so striking to us as when

we fail in them. The loss of the personal triumph had no severity for

him, but the sense of having spent his time ineffectively in a mode of

working which had been against the grain, gave him a distaste for any

renewal of the process, which turned his imagined project of quitting

Cambridge into a serious intention. In speaking of his intention to

Meyrick he made it appear that he was glad of the turn events had

taken--glad to have the balance dip decidedly, and feel freed from his

hesitations; but he observed that he must of course submit to any

strong objection on the part of Sir Hugo.

Meyrick's joy and gratitude were disturbed by much uneasiness. He

believed in Deronda's alleged preference, but he felt keenly that in

serving him Daniel had placed himself at a disadvantage in Sir Hugo's

opinion, and he said mournfully, "If you had got the scholarship, Sir

Hugo would have thought that you asked to leave us with a better grace.

You have spoiled your luck for my sake, and I can do nothing to amend

it."

"Yes, you can; you are to be a first-rate fellow. I call that a

first-rate investment of my luck."

"Oh, confound it! You save an ugly mongrel from drowning, and expect

him to cut a fine figure. The poets have made tragedies enough about

signing one's self over to wickedness for the sake of getting something

plummy; I shall write a tragedy of a fellow who signed himself over to

be good, and was uncomfortable ever after."

But Hans lost no time in secretly writing the history of the affair to

Sir Hugo, making it plain that but for Deronda's generous devotion he

could hardly have failed to win the prize he had been working for.

The two friends went up to town together: Meyrick to rejoice with his

mother and the girls in their little home at Chelsea; Deronda to carry

out the less easy task of opening his mind to Sir Hugo. He relied a

little on the baronet's general tolerance of eccentricities, but he

expected more opposition than he met with. He was received with even

warmer kindness than usual, the failure was passed over lightly, and

when he detailed his reasons for wishing to quit the university and go

to study abroad. Sir Hugo sat for some time in a silence which was

rather meditative than surprised. At last he said, looking at Daniel

with examination, "So you don't want to be an Englishman to the

backbone after all?"

"I want to be an Englishman, but I want to understand other points of

view. And I want to get rid of a merely English attitude in studies."

"I see; you don't want to be turned out in the same mould as every

other youngster. And I have nothing to say against your doffing some of

our national prejudices. I feel the better myself for having spent a

good deal of my time abroad. But, for God's sake, keep an English cut,

and don't become indifferent to bad tobacco! And, my dear boy, it is

good to be unselfish and generous; but don't carry that too far. It

will not do to give yourself to be melted down for the benefit of the

tallow-trade; you must know where to find yourself. However, I shall

put no vote on your going. Wait until I can get off Committee, and I'll

run over with you."

So Deronda went according to his will. But not before he had spent some

hours with Hans Meyrick, and been introduced to the mother and sisters

in the Chelsea home. The shy girls watched and registered every look of

their brother's friend, declared by Hans to have been the salvation of

him, a fellow like nobody else, and, in fine, a brick. They so

thoroughly accepted Deronda as an ideal, that when he was gone the

youngest set to work, under the criticism of the two elder girls, to

paint him as Prince Camaralzaman.

CHAPTER XVII.

"This is truth the poet sings,

That a sorrow's crown of sorrow is remembering happier things."

--TENNYSON: \_Locksley Hall\_.

On a fine evening near the end of July, Deronda was rowing himself on

the Thames. It was already a year or more since he had come back to

England, with the understanding that his education was finished, and

that he was somehow to take his place in English society; but though,

in deference to Sir Hugo's wish, and to fence off idleness, he had

began to read law, this apparent decision had been without other result

than to deepen the roots of indecision. His old love of boating had

revived with the more force now that he was in town with the

Mallingers, because he could nowhere else get the same still seclusion

which the river gave him. He had a boat of his own at Putney, and

whenever Sir Hugo did not want him, it was his chief holiday to row

till past sunset and come in again with the stars. Not that he was in a

sentimental stage; but he was in another sort of contemplative mood

perhaps more common in the young men of our day--that of questioning

whether it were worth while to take part in the battle of the world: I

mean, of course, the young men in whom the unproductive labor of

questioning is sustained by three or five per cent, on capital which

somebody else has battled for. It puzzled Sir Hugo that one who made a

splendid contrast with all that was sickly and puling should be

hampered with ideas which, since they left an accomplished Whig like

himself unobstructed, could be no better than spectral illusions;

especially as Deronda set himself against authorship--a vocation which

is understood to turn foolish thinking into funds.

Rowing in his dark-blue shirt and skull-cap, his curls closely clipped,

his mouth beset with abundant soft waves of beard, he bore only

disguised traces of the seraphic boy "trailing clouds of glory." Still,

even one who had never seen him since his boyhood might have looked at

him with slow recognition, due perhaps to the peculiarity of the gaze

which Gwendolen chose to call "dreadful," though it had really a very

mild sort of scrutiny. The voice, sometimes audible in subdued snatches

of song, had turned out merely a high baritone; indeed, only to look at

his lithe, powerful frame and the firm gravity of his face would have

been enough for an experienced guess that he had no rare and ravishing

tenor such as nature reluctantly makes at some sacrifice. Look at his

hands: they are not small and dimpled, with tapering fingers that seem

to have only a deprecating touch: they are long, flexible,

firmly-grasping hands, such as Titian has painted in a picture where he

wanted to show the combination of refinement with force. And there is

something of a likeness, too, between the faces belonging to the

hands--in both the uniform pale-brown skin, the perpendicular brow, the

calmly penetrating eyes. Not seraphic any longer: thoroughly

terrestrial and manly; but still of a kind to raise belief in a human

dignity which can afford to recognize poor relations.

Such types meet us here and there among average conditions; in a

workman, for example, whistling over a bit of measurement and lifting

his eyes to answer our question about the road. And often the grand

meanings of faces as well as of written words may lie chiefly in the

impressions that happen just now to be of importance in relation to

Deronda, rowing on the Thames in a very ordinary equipment for a young

Englishman at leisure, and passing under Kew Bridge with no thought of

an adventure in which his appearance was likely to play any part. In

fact, he objected very strongly to the notion, which others had not

allowed him to escape, that his appearance was of a kind to draw

attention; and hints of this, intended to be complimentary, found an

angry resonance in him, coming from mingled experiences, to which a

clue has already been given. His own face in the glass had during many

years associated for him with thoughts of some one whom he must be

like--one about whose character and lot he continually wondered, and

never dared to ask.

In the neighborhood of Kew Bridge, between six and seven o'clock, the

river was no solitude. Several persons were sauntering on the

towing-path, and here and there a boat was plying. Deronda had been

rowing fast to get over this spot, when, becoming aware of a great

barge advancing toward him, he guided his boat aside, and rested on his

oar within a couple of yards of the river-brink. He was all the while

unconsciously continuing the low-toned chant which had haunted his

throat all the way up the river--the gondolier's song in the "Otello,"

where Rossini has worthily set to music the immortal words of Dante--

"Nessun maggior dolore

Che ricordarsi del tempo felice

Nella miseria":

[Footnote: Dante's words are best rendered by our own poet in the lines

at the head of the chapter.]

and, as he rested on his oar, the pianissimo fall of the melodic wail

"nella miseria" was distinctly audible on the brink of the water. Three

or four persons had paused at various spots to watch the barge passing

the bridge, and doubtless included in their notice the young gentleman

in the boat; but probably it was only to one ear that the low vocal

sounds came with more significance than if they had been an

insect-murmur amidst the sum of current noises. Deronda, awaiting the

barge, now turning his head to the river-side, and saw at a few yards'

distant from him a figure which might have been an impersonation of the

misery he was unconsciously giving voice to: a girl hardly more than

eighteen, of low slim figure, with most delicate little face, her dark

curls pushed behind her ears under a large black hat, a long woolen

cloak over her shoulders. Her hands were hanging down clasped before

her, and her eyes were fixed on the river with a look of immovable,

statue-like despair. This strong arrest of his attention made him cease

singing: apparently his voice had entered her inner world without her

taking any note of whence it came, for when it suddenly ceased she

changed her attitude slightly, and, looking round with a frightened

glance, met Deronda's face. It was but a couple of moments, but that

seemed a long while for two people to look straight at each other. Her

look was something like that of a fawn or other gentle animal before it

turns to run away: no blush, no special alarm, but only some timidity

which yet could not hinder her from a long look before she turned. In

fact, it seemed to Deronda that she was only half conscious of her

surroundings: was she hungry, or was there some other cause of

bewilderment? He felt an outleap of interest and compassion toward her;

but the next instant she had turned and walked away to a neighboring

bench under a tree. He had no right to linger and watch her:

poorly-dressed, melancholy women are common sights; it was only the

delicate beauty, picturesque lines and color of the image that was

exceptional, and these conditions made it more markedly impossible that

he should obtrude his interest upon her. He began to row away and was

soon far up the river; but no other thoughts were busy enough quite to

expel that pale image of unhappy girlhood. He fell again and again to

speculating on the probable romance that lay behind that loneliness and

look of desolation; then to smile at his own share in the prejudice

that interesting faces must have interesting adventures; then to

justify himself for feeling that sorrow was the more tragic when it

befell delicate, childlike beauty.

"I should not have forgotten the look of misery if she had been ugly

and vulgar," he said to himself. But there was no denying that the

attractiveness of the image made it likelier to last. It was clear to

him as an onyx cameo; the brown-black drapery, the white face with

small, small features and dark, long-lashed eyes. His mind glanced over

the girl-tragedies that are going on in the world, hidden, unheeded, as

if they were but tragedies of the copse or hedgerow, where the helpless

drag wounded wings forsakenly, and streak the shadowed moss with the

red moment-hand of their own death. Deronda of late, in his solitary

excursions, had been occupied chiefly with uncertainties about his own

course; but those uncertainties, being much at their leisure, were wont

to have such wide-sweeping connections with all life and history that

the new image of helpless sorrow easily blent itself with what seemed

to him the strong array of reasons why he should shrink from getting

into that routine of the world which makes men apologize for all its

wrong-doing, and take opinions as mere professional equipment--why he

should not draw strongly at any thread in the hopelessly-entangled

scheme of things.

He used his oars little, satisfied to go with the tide and be taken

back by it. It was his habit to indulge himself in that solemn

passivity which easily comes with the lengthening shadows and mellow

light, when thinking and desiring melt together imperceptibly, and what

in other hours may have seemed argument takes the quality of passionate

vision. By the time he had come back again with the tide past Richmond

Bridge the sun was near setting: and the approach of his favorite

hour--with its deepening stillness and darkening masses of tree and

building between the double glow of the sky and the river--disposed him

to linger as if they had been an unfinished strain of music. He looked

out for a perfectly solitary spot where he could lodge his boat against

the bank, and, throwing himself on his back with his head propped on

the cushions, could watch out the light of sunset and the opening of

that bead-roll which some oriental poet describes as God's call to the

little stars, who each answer, "Here am I." He chose a spot in the bend

of the river just opposite Kew Gardens, where he had a great breadth of

water before him reflecting the glory of the sky, while he himself was

in shadow. He lay with his hands behind his head, propped on a level

with the boat's edge, so that he could see all round him, but could not

be seen by any one at a few yards' distance; and for a long while he

never turned his eyes from the view right in front of him. He was

forgetting everything else in a half-speculative, half-involuntary

identification of himself with the objects he was looking at, thinking

how far it might be possible habitually to shift his centre till his

own personality would be no less outside him than the landscape--when

the sense of something moving on the bank opposite him where it was

bordered by a line of willow bushes, made him turn his glance

thitherward. In the first moment he had a darting presentiment about

the moving figure; and now he could see the small face with the strange

dying sunlight upon it. He feared to frighten her by a sudden movement,

and watched her with motionless attention. She looked round, but seemed

only to gather security from the apparent solitude, hid her hat among

the willows, and immediately took off her woolen cloak. Presently she

seated herself and deliberately dipped the cloak in the water, holding

it there a little while, then taking it out with effort, rising from

her seat as she did so. By this time Deronda felt sure that she meant

to wrap the wet cloak round her as a drowning shroud; there was no

longer time to hesitate about frightening her. He rose and seized his

oar to ply across; happily her position lay a little below him. The

poor thing, overcome with terror at this sign of discovery from the

opposite bank, sank down on the brink again, holding her cloak half out

of the water. She crouched and covered her face as if she kept a faint

hope that she had not been seen, and that the boatman was accidentally

coming toward her. But soon he was within brief space of her, steadying

his boat against the bank, and speaking, but very gently--

"Don't be afraid. You are unhappy. Pray, trust me. Tell me what I can

do to help you."

She raised her head and looked up at him. His face now was toward the

light, and she knew it again. But she did not speak for a few moments

which were a renewal of their former gaze at each other. At last she

said in a low sweet voice, with an accent so distinct that it suggested

foreignness and yet was not foreign, "I saw you before," and then added

dreamily, after a like pause, "nella miseria."

Deronda, not understanding the connection of her thoughts, supposed

that her mind was weakened by distress and hunger.

"It was you, singing?" she went on, hesitatingly--"Nessun maggior

dolore." The mere words themselves uttered in her sweet undertones

seemed to give the melody to Deronda's ear.

"Ah, yes," he said, understanding now, "I am often singing them. But I

fear you will injure yourself staying here. Pray let me take you in my

boat to some place of safety. And that wet cloak--let me take it."

He would not attempt to take it without her leave, dreading lest he

should scare her. Even at his words, he fancied that she shrank and

clutched the cloak more tenaciously. But her eyes were fixed on him

with a question in them as she said, "You look good. Perhaps it is

God's command."

"Do trust me. Let me help you. I will die before I will let any harm

come to you."

She rose from her sitting posture, first dragging the saturated cloak

and then letting it fall on the ground--it was too heavy for her tired

arms. Her little woman's figure as she laid her delicate chilled hands

together one over the other against her waist, and went a step backward

while she leaned her head forward as if not to lose sight of his face,

was unspeakably touching.

"Great God!" the words escaped Deronda in a tone so low and solemn that

they seemed like a prayer become unconsciously vocal. The agitating

impression this forsaken girl was making on him stirred a fibre that

lay close to his deepest interest in the fates of women--"perhaps my

mother was like this one." The old thought had come now with a new

impetus of mingled feeling, and urged that exclamation in which both

East and West have for ages concentrated their awe in the presence of

inexorable calamity.

The low-toned words seemed to have some reassurance in them for the

hearer: she stepped forward close to the boat's side, and Deronda put

out his hand, hoping now that she would let him help her in. She had

already put her tiny hand into his which closed around it, when some

new thought struck her, and drawing back she said--

"I have nowhere to go--nobody belonging to me in all this land."

"I will take you to a lady who has daughters," said Deronda,

immediately. He felt a sort of relief in gathering that the wretched

home and cruel friends he imagined her to be fleeing from were not in

the near background. Still she hesitated, and said more timidly than

ever--

"Do you belong to the theatre?"

"No; I have nothing to do with the theatre," said Deronda, in a decided

tone. Then beseechingly, "I will put you in perfect safety at once;

with a lady, a good woman; I am sure she will be kind. Let us lose no

time: you will make yourself ill. Life may still become sweet to you.

There are good people--there are good women who will take care of you."

She drew backward no more, but stepped in easily, as if she were used

to such action, and sat down on the cushions.

"You had a covering for your head," said Deronda.

"My hat?" (She lifted up her hands to her head.) "It is quite hidden in

the bush."

"I will find it," said Deronda, putting out his hand deprecatingly as

she attempted to rise. "The boat is fixed."

He jumped out, found the hat, and lifted up the saturated cloak,

wringing it and throwing it into the bottom of the boat.

"We must carry the cloak away, to prevent any one who may have noticed

you from thinking you have been drowned," he said, cheerfully, as he

got in again and presented the old hat to her. "I wish I had any other

garment than my coat to offer you. But shall you mind throwing it over

your shoulders while we are on the water? It is quite an ordinary thing

to do, when people return late and are not enough provided with wraps."

He held out the coat toward her with a smile, and there came a faint

melancholy smile in answer, as she took it and put it on very cleverly.

"I have some biscuits--should you like them?" said Deronda.

"No; I cannot eat. I had still some money left to buy bread."

He began to ply his oar without further remark, and they went along

swiftly for many minutes without speaking. She did not look at him, but

was watching the oar, leaning forward in an attitude of repose, as if

she were beginning to feel the comfort of returning warmth and the

prospect of life instead of death. The twilight was deepening; the red

flush was all gone and the little stars were giving their answer one

after another. The moon was rising, but was still entangled among the

trees and buildings. The light was not such that he could distinctly

discern the expression of her features or her glance, but they were

distinctly before him nevertheless--features and a glance which seemed

to have given a fuller meaning for him to the human face. Among his

anxieties one was dominant: his first impression about her, that her

mind might be disordered, had not been quite dissipated: the project of

suicide was unmistakable, and given a deeper color to every other

suspicious sign. He longed to begin a conversation, but abstained,

wishing to encourage the confidence that might induce her to speak

first. At last she did speak.

"I like to listen to the oar."

"So do I."

"If you had not come, I should have been dead now."

"I cannot bear you to speak of that. I hope you will never be sorry

that I came."

"I cannot see how I shall be glad to live. The \_maggior dolore\_ and the

\_miseria\_ have lasted longer than the \_tempo felice\_." She paused and

then went on dreamily,--"\_Dolore--miseria\_--I think those words are

alive."

Deronda was mute: to question her seemed an unwarrantable freedom; he

shrank from appearing to claim the authority of a benefactor, or to

treat her with the less reverence because she was in distress. She went

on musingly--

"I thought it was not wicked. Death and life are one before the

Eternal. I know our fathers slew their children and then slew

themselves, to keep their souls pure. I meant it so. But now I am

commanded to live. I cannot see how I shall live."

"You will find friends. I will find them for you."

She shook her head and said mournfully, "Not my mother and brother. I

cannot find them."

"You are English? You must be--speaking English so perfectly."

She did not answer immediately, but looked at Deronda again, straining

to see him in the double light. Until now she had been watching the

oar. It seemed as if she were half roused, and wondered which part of

her impression was dreaming and which waking. Sorrowful isolation had

benumbed her sense of reality, and the power of distinguishing outward

and inward was continually slipping away from her. Her look was full of

wondering timidity such as the forsaken one in the desert might have

lifted to the angelic vision before she knew whether his message was in

anger or in pity.

"You want to know if I am English?" she said at last, while Deronda was

reddening nervously under a gaze which he felt more fully than he saw.

"I want to know nothing except what you like to tell me," he said,

still uneasy in the fear that her mind was wandering. "Perhaps it is

not good for you to talk."

"Yes, I will tell you. I am English-born. But I am a Jewess."

Deronda was silent, inwardly wondering that he had not said this to

himself before, though any one who had seen delicate-faced Spanish

girls might simply have guessed her to be Spanish.

"Do you despise me for it?" she said presently in low tones, which had

a sadness that pierced like a cry from a small dumb creature in fear.

"Why should I?" said Deronda. "I am not so foolish."

"I know many Jews are bad."

"So are many Christians. But I should not think it fair for you to

despise me because of that."

"My mother and brother were good. But I shall never find them. I am

come a long way--from abroad. I ran away; but I cannot tell you--I

cannot speak of it. I thought I might find my mother again--God would

guide me. But then I despaired. This morning when the light came, I

felt as if one word kept sounding within me--Never! never! But now--I

begin--to think--" her words were broken by rising sobs--"I am

commanded to live--perhaps we are going to her."

With an outburst of weeping she buried her head on her knees. He hoped

that this passionate weeping might relieve her excitement. Meanwhile he

was inwardly picturing in much embarrassment how he should present

himself with her in Park Lane--the course which he had at first

unreflectingly determined on. No one kinder and more gentle than Lady

Mallinger; but it was hardly probable that she would be at home; and he

had a shuddering sense of a lackey staring at this delicate, sorrowful

image of womanhood--of glaring lights and fine staircases, and perhaps

chilling suspicious manners from lady's maid and housekeeper, that

might scare the mind already in a state of dangerous susceptibility.

But to take her to any other shelter than a home already known to him

was not to be contemplated: he was full of fears about the issue of the

adventure which had brought on him a responsibility all the heavier for

the strong and agitating impression this childlike creature had made on

him. But another resource came to mind: he could venture to take her to

Mrs. Meyrick's--to the small house at Chelsea--where he had been often

enough since his return from abroad to feel sure that he could appeal

there to generous hearts, which had a romantic readiness to believe in

innocent need and to help it. Hans Meyrick was safe away in Italy, and

Deronda felt the comfort of presenting himself with his charge at a

house where he would be met by a motherly figure of quakerish neatness,

and three girls who hardly knew of any evil closer to them than what

lay in history-books, and dramas, and would at once associate a lovely

Jewess with Rebecca in "Ivanhoe," besides thinking that everything they

did at Deronda's request would be done for their idol, Hans. The vision

of the Chelsea home once raised, Deronda no longer hesitated.

The rumbling thither in the cab after the stillness of the water seemed

long. Happily his charge had been quiet since her fit of weeping, and

submitted like a tired child. When they were in the cab, she laid down

her hat and tried to rest her head, but the jolting movement would not

let it rest. Still she dozed, and her sweet head hung helpless, first

on one side, then on the other.

"They are too good to have any fear about taking her in," thought

Deronda. Her person, her voice, her exquisite utterance, were one

strong appeal to belief and tenderness. Yet what had been the history

which had brought her to this desolation? He was going on a strange

errand--to ask shelter for this waif. Then there occurred to him the

beautiful story Plutarch somewhere tells of the Delphic women: how when

the Maenads, outworn with their torch-lit wanderings, lay down to sleep

in the market-place, the matrons came and stood silently round them to

keep guard over their slumbers; then, when they waked, ministered to

them tenderly and saw them safely to their own borders. He could trust

the women he was going to for having hearts as good.

Deronda felt himself growing older this evening and entering on a new

phase in finding a life to which his own had come--perhaps as a rescue;

but how to make sure that snatching from death was rescue? The moment

of finding a fellow-creature is often as full of mingled doubt and

exultation as the moment of finding an idea.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Life is a various mother: now she dons

Her plumes and brilliants, climbs the marble stairs

With head aloft, nor ever turns her eyes

On lackeys who attend her; now she dwells

Grim-clad, up darksome allyes, breathes hot gin,

And screams in pauper riot.

But to these

She came a frugal matron, neat and deft,

With cheerful morning thoughts and quick device

To find the much in little.

Mrs. Meyrick's house was not noisy: the front parlor looked on the

river, and the back on gardens, so that though she was reading aloud to

her daughters, the window could be left open to freshen the air of the

small double room where a lamp and two candles were burning. The

candles were on a table apart for Kate, who was drawing illustrations

for a publisher; the lamp was not only for the reader but for Amy and

Mab, who were embroidering satin cushions for "the great world."

Outside, the house looked very narrow and shabby, the bright light

through the holland blind showing the heavy old-fashioned window-frame;

but it is pleasant to know that many such grim-walled slices of space

in our foggy London have been and still are the homes of a culture the

more spotlessly free from vulgarity, because poverty has rendered

everything like display an impersonal question, and all the grand shows

of the world simply a spectacle which rouses petty rivalry or vain

effort after possession.

The Meyricks' was a home of that kind: and they all clung to this

particular house in a row because its interior was filled with objects

always in the same places, which, for the mother held memories of her

marriage time, and for the young ones seemed as necessary and

uncriticised a part of their world as the stars of the Great Bear seen

from the back windows. Mrs. Meyrick had borne much stint of other

matters that she might be able to keep some engravings specially

cherished by her husband; and the narrow spaces of wall held a world

history in scenes and heads which the children had early learned by

heart. The chairs and tables were also old friends preferred to new.

But in these two little parlors with no furniture that a broker would

have cared to cheapen except the prints and piano, there was space and

apparatus for a wide-glancing, nicely-select life, opened to the

highest things in music, painting and poetry. I am not sure that in the

times of greatest scarcity, before Kate could get paid-work, these

ladies had always had a servant to light their fires and sweep their

rooms; yet they were fastidious in some points, and could not believe

that the manners of ladies in the fashionable world were so full of

coarse selfishness, petty quarreling, and slang as they are represented

to be in what are called literary photographs. The Meyricks had their

little oddities, streaks of eccentricity from the mother's blood as

well as the father's, their minds being like mediÃ¦val houses with

unexpected recesses and openings from this into that, flights of steps

and sudden outlooks.

But mother and daughters were all united by a triple bond--family love;

admiration for the finest work, the best action; and habitual industry.

Hans' desire to spend some of his money in making their lives more

luxurious had been resisted by all of them, and both they and he had

been thus saved from regrets at the threatened triumphs of his yearning

for art over the attractions of secured income--a triumph that would

by-and-by oblige him to give up his fellowship. They could all afford

to laugh at his Gavarni-caricatures and to hold him blameless in

following a natural bent which their unselfishness and independence had

left without obstacle. It was enough for them to go on in their old

way, only having a grand treat of opera-going (to the gallery) when

Hans came home on a visit.

Seeing the group they made this evening, one could hardly wish them to

change their way of life. They were all alike small, and so in due

proportion to their miniature rooms. Mrs. Meyrick was reading aloud

from a French book; she was a lively little woman, half French, half

Scotch, with a pretty articulateness of speech that seemed to make

daylight in her hearer's understanding. Though she was not yet fifty,

her rippling hair, covered by a quakerish net cap, was chiefly gray,

but her eyebrows were brown as the bright eyes below them; her black

dress, almost like a priest's cassock with its rows of buttons, suited

a neat figure hardly five feet high. The daughters were to match the

mother, except that Mab had Hans' light hair and complexion, with a

bossy, irregular brow, and other quaintnesses that reminded one of him.

Everything about them was compact, from the firm coils of their hair,

fastened back \_Ã  la Chinoise\_, to their gray skirts in Puritan

nonconformity with the fashion, which at that time would have demanded

that four feminine circumferences should fill all the free space in the

front parlor. All four, if they had been wax-work, might have been

packed easily in a fashionable lady's traveling trunk. Their faces

seemed full of speech, as if their minds had been shelled, after the

manner of horse-chestnuts, and become brightly visible. The only large

thing of its kind in the room was Hafiz, the Persian cat, comfortably

poised on the brown leather back of a chair, and opening his large eyes

now and then to see that the lower animals were not in any mischief.

The book Mrs. Meyrick had before her was Erckmann-Chatrian's \_Historie

d'un Conscrit\_. She had just finished reading it aloud, and Mab, who

had let her work fall on the ground while she stretched her head

forward and fixed her eyes on the reader, exclaimed--

"I think that is the finest story in the world."

"Of course, Mab!" said Amy, "it is the last you have heard. Everything

that pleases you is the best in its turn."

"It is hardly to be called a story," said Kate. "It is a bit of history

brought near us with a strong telescope. We can see the soldiers'

faces: no, it is more than that--we can hear everything--we can almost

hear their hearts beat."

"I don't care what you call it," said Mab, flirting away her thimble.

"Call it a chapter in Revelations. It makes me want to do something

good, something grand. It makes me so sorry for everybody. It makes me

like Schiller--I want to take the world in my arms and kiss it. I must

kiss you instead, little mother?" She threw her arms round her mother's

neck.

"Whenever you are in that mood, Mab, down goes your work," said Amy.

"It would be doing something good to finish your cushion without

soiling it."

"Oh--oh--oh!" groaned Mab, as she stooped to pick up her work and

thimble. "I wish I had three wounded conscripts to take care of."

"You would spill their beef-tea while you were talking," said Amy.

"Poor Mab! don't be hard on her," said the mother. "Give me the

embroidery now, child. You go on with your enthusiasm, and I will go on

with the pink and white poppy."

"Well, ma, I think you are more caustic than Amy," said Kate, while she

drew her head back to look at her drawing.

"Oh--oh--oh!" cried Mab again, rising and stretching her arms. "I wish

something wonderful would happen. I feel like the deluge. The waters of

the great deep are broken up, and the windows of heaven are opened. I

must sit down and play the scales."

Mab was opening the piano while the others were laughing at this

climax, when a cab stopped before the house, and there forthwith came a

quick rap of the knocker.

"Dear me!" said Mrs. Meyrick, starting up, "it is after ten, and Phoebe

is gone to bed." She hastened out, leaving the parlor door open.

"Mr. Deronda!" The girls could hear this exclamation from their mamma.

Mab clasped her hands, saying in a loud whisper, "There now! something

\_is\_ going to happen." Kate and Amy gave up their work in amazement.

But Deronda's tone in reply was so low that they could not hear his

words, and Mrs. Meyrick immediately closed the parlor door.

"I know I am trusting to your goodness in a most extraordinary way,"

Deronda went on, after giving his brief narrative; "but you can imagine

how helpless I feel with a young creature like this on my hands. I

could not go with her among strangers, and in her nervous state I

should dread taking her into a house full of servants. I have trusted

to your mercy. I hope you will not think my act unwarrantable."

"On the contrary. You have honored me by trusting me. I see your

difficulty. Pray bring her in. I will go and prepare the girls."

While Deronda went back to the cab, Mrs. Meyrick turned into the parlor

again and said: "Here is somebody to take care of instead of your

wounded conscripts, Mab: a poor girl who was going to drown herself in

despair. Mr. Deronda found her only just in time to save her. He

brought her along in his boat, and did not know what else it would be

safe to do with her, so he has trusted us and brought her here. It

seems she is a Jewess, but quite refined, he says--knowing Italian and

music."

The three girls, wondering and expectant, came forward and stood near

each other in mute confidence that they were all feeling alike under

this appeal to their compassion. Mab looked rather awe-stricken, as if

this answer to her wish were something preternatural.

Meanwhile Deronda going to the door of the cab where the pale face was

now gazing out with roused observation, said, "I have brought you to

some of the kindest people in the world: there are daughters like you.

It is a happy home. Will you let me take you to them?"

She stepped out obediently, putting her hand in his and forgetting her

hat; and when Deronda led her into the full light of the parlor where

the four little women stood awaiting her, she made a picture that would

have stirred much duller sensibilities than theirs. At first she was a

little dazed by the sudden light, and before she had concentrated her

glance he had put her hand into the mother's. He was inwardly rejoicing

that the Meyricks were so small: the dark-curled head was the highest

among them. The poor wanderer could not be afraid of these gentle faces

so near hers: and now she was looking at each of them in turn while the

mother said, "You must be weary, poor child."

"We will take care of you--we will comfort you--we will love you,"

cried Mab, no longer able to restrain herself, and taking the small

right hand caressingly between both her own. This gentle welcoming

warmth was penetrating the bewildered one: she hung back just enough to

see better the four faces in front of her, whose good will was being

reflected in hers, not in any smile, but in that undefinable change

which tells us that anxiety is passing in contentment. For an instant

she looked up at Deronda, as if she were referring all this mercy to

him, and then again turning to Mrs. Meyrick, said with more

collectedness in her sweet tones than he had heard before--

"I am a stranger. I am a Jewess. You might have thought I was wicked."

"No, we are sure you are good," burst out Mab.

"We think no evil of you, poor child. You shall be safe with us," said

Mrs. Meyrick. "Come now and sit down. You must have some food, and then

you must go to rest."

The stranger looked up again at Deronda, who said--

"You will have no more fears with these friends? You will rest

to-night?"

"Oh, I should not fear. I should rest. I think these are the

ministering angels."

Mrs. Meyrick wanted to lead her to seat, but again hanging back gently,

the poor weary thing spoke as if with a scruple at being received

without a further account of herself.

"My name is Mirah Lapidoth. I am come a long way, all the way from

Prague by myself. I made my escape. I ran away from dreadful things. I

came to find my mother and brother in London. I had been taken from my

mother when I was little, but I thought I could find her again. I had

trouble--the houses were all gone--I could not find her. It has been a

long while, and I had not much money. That is why I am in distress."

"Our mother will be good to you," cried Mab. "See what a nice little

mother she is!"

"Do sit down now," said Kate, moving a chair forward, while Amy ran to

get some tea.

Mirah resisted no longer, but seated herself with perfect grace,

crossing her little feet, laying her hands one over the other on her

lap, and looking at her friends with placid reverence; whereupon Hafiz,

who had been watching the scene restlessly came forward with tail erect

and rubbed himself against her ankles. Deronda felt it time to go.

"Will you allow me to come again and inquire--perhaps at five

to-morrow?" he said to Mrs. Meyrick.

"Yes, pray; we shall have had time to make acquaintance then."

"Good-bye," said Deronda, looking down at Mirah, and putting out his

hand. She rose as she took it, and the moment brought back to them both

strongly the other moment when she had first taken that outstretched

hand. She lifted her eyes to his and said with reverential fervor, "The

God of our fathers bless you and deliver you from all evil as you have

delivered me. I did not believe there was any man so good. None before

have thought me worthy of the best. You found me poor and miserable,

yet you have given me the best."

Deronda could not speak, but with silent adieux to the Meyricks,

hurried away.

BOOK III--MAIDENS CHOOSING.

CHAPTER XIX.

"I pity the man who can travel from Dan to Beersheba, and say, 'Tis

all barren': and so it is: and so is all the world to him who will not

cultivate the fruits it offers."--STERNE: \_Sentimental Journey\_.

To say that Deronda was romantic would be to misrepresent him; but

under his calm and somewhat self-repressed exterior there was a fervor

which made him easily find poetry and romance among the events of

every-day life. And perhaps poetry and romance are as plentiful as ever

in the world except for those phlegmatic natures who I suspect would in

any age have regarded them as a dull form of erroneous thinking. They

exist very easily in the same room with the microscope and even in

railway carriages: what banishes them in the vacuum in gentlemen and

lady passengers. How should all the apparatus of heaven and earth, from

the farthest firmament to the tender bosom of the mother who nourished

us, make poetry for a mind that had no movements of awe and tenderness,

no sense of fellowship which thrills from the near to the distant, and

back again from the distant to the near?

To Deronda this event of finding Mirah was as heart-stirring as

anything that befell Orestes or Rinaldo. He sat up half the night,

living again through the moments since he had first discerned Mirah on

the river-brink, with the fresh and fresh vividness which belongs to

emotive memory. When he took up a book to try and dull this urgency of

inward vision, the printed words were no more than a network through

which he saw and heard everything as clearly as before--saw not only

the actual events of two hours, but possibilities of what had been and

what might be which those events were enough to feed with the warm

blood of passionate hope and fear. Something in his own experience

caused Mirah's search after her mother to lay hold with peculiar force

on his imagination. The first prompting of sympathy was to aid her in

her search: if given persons were extant in London there were ways of

finding them, as subtle as scientific experiment, the right machinery

being set at work. But here the mixed feelings which belonged to

Deronda's kindred experience naturally transfused themselves into his

anxiety on behalf of Mirah.

The desire to know his own mother, or to know about her, was constantly

haunted with dread; and in imagining what might befall Mirah it quickly

occurred to him that finding the mother and brother from whom she had

been parted when she was a little one might turn out to be a calamity.

When she was in the boat she said that her mother and brother were

good; but the goodness might have been chiefly in her own ignorant

innocence and yearning memory, and the ten or twelve years since the

parting had been time enough for much worsening. Spite of his strong

tendency to side with the objects of prejudice, and in general with

those who got the worst of it, his interest had never been practically

drawn toward existing Jews, and the facts he knew about them, whether

they walked conspicuous in fine apparel or lurked in by-streets, were

chiefly of a sort most repugnant to him. Of learned and accomplished

Jews he took it for granted that they had dropped their religion, and

wished to be merged in the people of their native lands. Scorn flung at

a Jew as such would have roused all his sympathy in griefs of

inheritance; but the indiscriminate scorn of a race will often strike a

specimen who has well earned it on his own account, and might fairly be

gibbeted as a rascally son of Adam. It appears that the Caribs, who

know little of theology, regard thieving as a practice peculiarly

connected with Christian tenets, and probably they could allege

experimental grounds for this opinion. Deronda could not escape (who

can?) knowing ugly stories of Jewish characteristics and occupations;

and though one of his favorite protests was against the severance of

past and present history, he was like others who shared his protest, in

never having cared to reach any more special conclusions about actual

Jews than that they retained the virtues and vices of a long-oppressed

race. But now that Mirah's longing roused his mind to a closer survey

of details, very disagreeable images urged themselves of what it might

be to find out this middle-aged Jewess and her son. To be sure, there

was the exquisite refinement and charm of the creature herself to make

a presumption in favor of her immediate kindred, but--he must wait to

know more: perhaps through Mrs. Meyrick he might gather some guiding

hints from Mirah's own lips. Her voice, her accent, her looks--all the

sweet purity that clothed her as with a consecrating garment made him

shrink the more from giving her, either ideally or practically, an

association with what was hateful or contaminating. But these fine

words with which we fumigate and becloud unpleasant facts are not the

language in which we think. Deronda's thinking went on in rapid images

of what might be: he saw himself guided by some official scout into a

dingy street; he entered through a dim doorway, and saw a hawk-eyed

woman, rough-headed, and unwashed, cheapening a hungry girl's last bit

of finery; or in some quarter only the more hideous for being smarter,

he found himself under the breath of a young Jew talkative and

familiar, willing to show his acquaintance with gentlemen's tastes, and

not fastidious in any transactions with which they would favor him--and

so on through the brief chapter of his experience in this kind. Excuse

him: his mind was not apt to run spontaneously into insulting ideas, or

to practice a form of wit which identifies Moses with the advertisement

sheet; but he was just now governed by dread, and if Mirah's parents

had been Christian, the chief difference would have been that his

forebodings would have been fed with wider knowledge. It was the habit

of his mind to connect dread with unknown parentage, and in this case

as well as his own there was enough to make the connection reasonable.

But what was to be done with Mirah? She needed shelter and protection

in the fullest sense, and all his chivalrous sentiment roused itself to

insist that the sooner and the more fully he could engage for her the

interest of others besides himself, the better he should fulfill her

claims on him. He had no right to provide for her entirely, though he

might be able to do so; the very depth of the impression she had

produced made him desire that she should understand herself to be

entirely independent of him; and vague visions of the future which he

tried to dispel as fantastic left their influence in an anxiety

stronger than any motive he could give for it, that those who saw his

actions closely should be acquainted from the first with the history of

his relation to Mirah. He had learned to hate secrecy about the grand

ties and obligations of his life--to hate it the more because a strong

spell of interwoven sensibilities hindered him from breaking such

secrecy. Deronda had made a vow to himself that--since the truths which

disgrace mortals are not all of their own making--the truth should

never be made a disgrace to another by his act. He was not without

terror lest he should break this vow, and fall into the apologetic

philosophy which explains the world into containing nothing better than

one's own conduct.

At one moment he resolved to tell the whole of his adventure to Sir

Hugo and Lady Mallinger the next morning at breakfast, but the

possibility that something quite new might reveal itself on his next

visit to Mrs. Meyrick's checked this impulse, and he finally went to

sleep on the conclusion that he would wait until that visit had been

made.

CHAPTER XX.

"It will hardly be denied that even in this frail and corrupted world,

we sometimes meet persons who, in their very mien and aspect, as well

as in the whole habit of life, manifest such a signature and stamp of

virtue, as to make our judgment of them a matter of intuition rather

than the result of continued examination."--ALEXANDER KNOX: quoted in

Southey's Life of Wesley.

Mirah said that she had slept well that night; and when she came down

in Mab's black dress, her dark hair curling in fresh fibrils as it

gradually dried from its plenteous bath, she looked like one who was

beginning to take comfort after the long sorrow and watching which had

paled her cheek and made blue semicircles under her eyes. It was Mab

who carried her breakfast and ushered her down--with some pride in the

effect produced by a pair of tiny felt slippers which she had rushed

out to buy because there were no shoes in the house small enough for

Mirah, whose borrowed dress ceased about her ankles and displayed the

cheap clothing that, moulding itself on her feet, seemed an adornment

as choice as the sheaths of buds. The farthing buckles were bijoux.

"Oh, if you please, mamma?" cried Mab, clasping her hands and stooping

toward Mirah's feet, as she entered the parlor; "look at the slippers,

how beautiful they fit! I declare she is like the Queen Budoor--' two

delicate feet, the work of the protecting and all-recompensing Creator,

support her; and I wonder how they can sustain what is above them.'"

Mirah looked down at her own feet in a childlike way and then smiled at

Mrs. Meyrick, who was saying inwardly, "One could hardly imagine this

creature having an evil thought. But wise people would tell me to be

cautious." She returned Mirah's smile and said, "I fear the feet have

had to sustain their burden a little too often lately. But to-day she

will rest and be my companion."

"And she will tell you so many things and I shall not hear them,"

grumbled Mab, who felt herself in the first volume of a delightful

romance and obliged to miss some chapters because she had to go to

pupils.

Kate was already gone to make sketches along the river, and Amy was

away on business errands. It was what the mother wished, to be alone

with this stranger, whose story must be a sorrowful one, yet was

needful to be told.

The small front parlor was as good as a temple that morning. The

sunlight was on the river and soft air came in through the open window;

the walls showed a glorious silent cloud of witnesses--the Virgin

soaring amid her cherubic escort; grand Melancholia with her solemn

universe; the Prophets and Sibyls; the School of Athens; the Last

Supper; mystic groups where far-off ages made one moment; grave Holbein

and Rembrandt heads; the Tragic Muse; last-century children at their

musings or their play; Italian poets--all were there through the medium

of a little black and white. The neat mother who had weathered her

troubles, and come out of them with a face still cheerful, was sorting

colored wools for her embroidery. Hafiz purred on the window-ledge, the

clock on the mantle-piece ticked without hurry, and the occasional

sound of wheels seemed to lie outside the more massive central quiet.

Mrs. Meyrick thought that this quiet might be the best invitation to

speech on the part of her companion, and chose not to disturb it by

remark. Mirah sat opposite in her former attitude, her hands clasped on

her lap, her ankles crossed, her eyes at first traveling slowly over

the objects around her, but finally resting with a sort of placid

reverence on Mrs. Meyrick. At length she began to speak softly.

"I remember my mother's face better than anything; yet I was not seven

when I was taken away, and I am nineteen now."

"I can understand that," said Mrs. Meyrick. "There are some earliest

things that last the longest."

"Oh, yes, it was the earliest. I think my life began with waking up and

loving my mother's face: it was so near to me, and her arms were round

me, and she sang to me. One hymn she sang so often, so often: and then

she taught me to sing it with her: it was the first I ever sang. They

were always Hebrew hymns she sang; and because I never knew the meaning

of the words they seemed full of nothing but our love and happiness.

When I lay in my little bed and it was all white above me, she used to

bend over me, between me and the white, and sing in a sweet, low voice.

I can dream myself back into that time when I am awake, and it often

comes back to me in my sleep--my hand is very little, I put it up to

her face and she kisses it. Sometimes in my dreams I begin to tremble

and think that we are both dead; but then I wake up and my hand lies

like this, and for a moment I hardly know myself. But if I could see my

mother again I should know her."

"You must expect some change after twelve years," said Mrs. Meyrick,

gently. "See my grey hair: ten years ago it was bright brown. The days

and months pace over us like restless little birds, and leave the marks

of their feet backward and forward; especially when they are like birds

with heavy hearts-then they tread heavily."

"Ah, I am sure her heart has been heavy for want of me. But to feel her

joy if we could meet again, and I could make her know I love her and

give her deep comfort after all her mourning! If that could be, I

should mind nothing; I should be glad that I have lived through my

trouble. I did despair. The world seemed miserable and wicked; none

helped me so that I could bear their looks and words; I felt that my

mother was dead, and death was the only way to her. But then in the

last moment--yesterday, when I longed for the water to close over

me--and I thought that death was the best image of mercy--then goodness

came to me living, and I felt trust in the living. And--it is

strange--but I began to hope that she was living too. And now I with

you--here--this morning, peace and hope have come into me like a flood.

I want nothing; I can wait; because I hope and believe and am

grateful--oh, so grateful! You have not thought evil of me--you have

not despised me."

Mirah spoke with low-toned fervor, and sat as still as a picture all

the while.

"Many others would have felt as we do, my dear," said Mrs. Meyrick,

feeling a mist come over her eyes as she looked at her work.

"But I did not meet them--they did not come to me."

"How was it that you were taken from your mother?"

"Ah, I am a long while coming to that. It is dreadful to speak of, yet

I must tell you--I must tell you everything. My father--it was he that

took me away. I thought we were only going on a little journey; and I

was pleased. There was a box with all my little things in. But we went

on board a ship, and got farther and farther away from the land. Then I

was ill; and I thought it would never end--it was the first misery, and

it seemed endless. But at last we landed. I knew nothing then, and

believed what my father said. He comforted me, and told me I should go

back to my mother. But it was America we had reached, and it was long

years before we came back to Europe. At first I often asked my father

when we were going back; and I tried to learn writing fast, because I

wanted to write to my mother; but one day when he found me trying to

write a letter, he took me on his knee and told me that my mother and

brother were dead; that was why we did not go back. I remember my

brother a little; he carried me once; but he was not always at home. I

believed my father when he said that they were dead. I saw them under

the earth when he said they were there, with their eyes forever closed.

I never thought of its not being true; and I used to cry every night in

my bed for a long while. Then when she came so often to me, in my

sleep, I thought she must be living about me though I could not always

see her, and that comforted me. I was never afraid in the dark, because

of that; and very often in the day I used to shut my eyes and bury my

face and try to see her and to hear her singing. I came to do that at

last without shutting my eyes."

Mirah paused with a sweet content in her face, as if she were having

her happy vision, while she looked out toward the river.

"Still your father was not unkind to you, I hope," said Mrs. Meyrick,

after a minute, anxious to recall her.

"No; he petted me, and took pains to teach me. He was an actor; and I

found out, after, that the 'Coburg' I used to hear of his going to at

home was a theatre. But he had more to do with the theatre than acting.

He had not always been an actor; he had been a teacher, and knew many

languages. His acting was not very good; I think, but he managed the

stage, and wrote and translated plays. An Italian lady, a singer, lived

with us a long time. They both taught me, and I had a master besides,

who made me learn by heart and recite. I worked quite hard, though I

was so little; and I was not nine when I first went on the stage. I

could easily learn things, and I was not afraid. But then and ever

since I hated our way of life. My father had money, and we had finery

about us in a disorderly way; always there were men and women coming

and going; there was loud laughing and disputing, strutting, snapping

of fingers, jeering, faces I did not like to look at--though many

petted and caressed me. But then I remembered my mother. Even at first

when I understood nothing, I shrank away from all those things outside

me into companionship with thoughts that were not like them; and I

gathered thoughts very fast, because I read many things--plays and

poetry, Shakespeare and Schiller, and learned evil and good. My father

began to believe that I might be a great singer: my voice was

considered wonderful for a child; and he had the best teaching for me.

But it was painful that he boasted of me, and set me to sing for show

at any minute, as if I had been a musical box. Once when I was nine

years old, I played the part of a little girl who had been forsaken and

did not know it, and sat singing to herself while she played with

flowers. I did it without any trouble; but the clapping and all the

sounds of the theatre were hateful to me; and I never liked the praise

I had, because it all seemed very hard and unloving: I missed the love

and trust I had been born into. I made a life in my own thoughts quite

different from everything about me: I chose what seemed to me beautiful

out of the plays and everything, and made my world out of it; and it

was like a sharp knife always grazing me that we had two sorts of life

which jarred so with each other--women looking good and gentle on the

stage, and saying good things as if they felt them, and directly after

I saw them with coarse, ugly manners. My father sometimes noticed my

shrinking ways; and Signora said one day, when I had been rehearsing,

'She will never be an artist: she has no notion of being anybody but

herself. That does very well now, but by-and-by you will see--she will

have no more face and action than a singing-bird.' My father was angry,

and they quarreled. I sat alone and cried, because what she had said

was like a long unhappy future unrolled before me. I did not want to be

an artist; but this was what my father expected of me. After a while

Signora left us, and a governess used to come and give me lessons in

different things, because my father began to be afraid of my singing

too much; but I still acted from time to time. Rebellious feelings grew

stronger in me, and I wished to get away from this life; but I could

not tell where to go, and I dreaded the world. Besides, I felt it would

be wrong to leave my father: I dreaded doing wrong, for I thought I

might get wicked and hateful to myself, in the same way that many

others seemed hateful to me. For so long, so long I had never felt my

outside world happy; and if I got wicked I should lose my world of

happy thoughts where my mother lived with me. That was my childish

notion all through those years. Oh how long they were!"

Mirah fell to musing again.

"Had you no teaching about what was your duty?" said Mrs. Meyrick. She

did not like to say "religion"--finding herself on inspection rather

dim as to what the Hebrew religion might have turned into at this date.

"No--only that I ought to do what my father wished. He did not follow

our religion at New York, and I think he wanted me not to know much

about it. But because my mother used to take me to the synagogue, and I

remembered sitting on her knee and looking through the railing and

hearing the chanting and singing, I longed to go. One day when I was

quite small I slipped out and tried to find the synagogue, but I lost

myself a long while till a peddler questioned me and took me home. My

father, missing me, had been much in fear, and was very angry. I too

had been so frightened at losing myself that it was long before I

thought of venturing out again. But after Signora left us we went to

rooms where our landlady was a Jewess and observed her religion. I

asked her to take me with her to the synagogue; and I read in her

prayer-books and Bible, and when I had money enough I asked her to buy

me books of my own, for these books seemed a closer companionship with

my mother: I knew that she must have looked at the very words and said

them. In that way I have come to know a little of our religion, and the

history of our people, besides piecing together what I read in plays

and other books about Jews and Jewesses; because I was sure my mother

obeyed her religion. I had left off asking my father about her. It is

very dreadful to say it, but I began to disbelieve him. I had found

that he did not always tell the truth, and made promises without

meaning to keep them; and that raised my suspicion that my mother and

brother were still alive though he had told me they were dead. For in

going over the past again as I got older and knew more, I felt sure

that my mother had been deceived, and had expected to see us back again

after a very little while; and my father taking me on his knee and

telling me that my mother and brother were both dead seemed to me now

but a bit of acting, to set my mind at rest. The cruelty of that

falsehood sank into me, and I hated all untruth because of it. I wrote

to my mother secretly: I knew the street, Colman Street, where we

lived, and that it was not Blackfriars Bridge and the Coburg, and that

our name was Cohen then, though my father called us Lapidoth, because,

he said, it was a name of his forefathers in Poland. I sent my letter

secretly; but no answer came, and I thought there was no hope for me.

Our life in America did not last much longer. My father suddenly told

me we were to pack up and go to Hamburg, and I was rather glad. I hoped

we might get among a different sort of people, and I knew German quite

well--some German plays almost all by heart. My father spoke it better

than he spoke English. I was thirteen then, and I seemed to myself

quite old--I knew so much, and yet so little. I think other children

cannot feel as I did. I had often wished that I had been drowned when I

was going away from my mother. But I set myself to obey and suffer:

what else could I do? One day when we were on our voyage, a new thought

came into my mind. I was not very ill that time, and I kept on deck a

good deal. My father acted and sang and joked to amuse people on board,

and I used often to hear remarks about him. One day, when I was looking

at the sea and nobody took notice of me, I overheard a gentleman say,

'Oh, he is one of those clever Jews--a rascal, I shouldn't wonder.

There's no race like them for cunning in the men and beauty in the

women. I wonder what market he means that daughter for.' When I heard

this it darted into my mind that the unhappiness in my life came from

my being a Jewess, and that always to the end the world would think

slightly of me and that I must bear it, for I should be judged by that

name; and it comforted me to believe that my suffering was part of the

affliction of my people, my part in the long song of mourning that has

been going on through ages and ages. For if many of our race were

wicked and made merry in their wickedness--what was that but part of

the affliction borne by the just among them, who were despised for the

sins of their brethren?--But you have not rejected me."

Mirah had changed her tone in this last sentence, having suddenly

reflected that at this moment she had reason not for complaint but for

gratitude.

"And we will try to save you from being judged unjustly by others, my

poor child," said Mrs. Meyrick, who had now given up all attempt at

going on with her work, and sat listening with folded hands and a face

hardly less eager than Mab's would have been. "Go on, go on: tell me

all."

"After that we lived in different towns--Hamburg and Vienna, the

longest. I began to study singing again: and my father always got money

about the theatres. I think he brought a good deal of money from

America, I never knew why we left. For some time he was in great

spirits about my singing, and he made me rehearse parts and act

continually. He looked forward to my coming out in the opera. But

by-and-by it seemed that my voice would never be strong enough--it did

not fulfill its promise. My master at Vienna said, 'Don't strain it

further: it will never do for the public:--it is gold, but a thread of

gold dust.' My father was bitterly disappointed: we were not so well

off at that time. I think I have not quite told you what I felt about

my father. I knew he was fond of me and meant to indulge me, and that

made me afraid of hurting him; but he always mistook what would please

me and give me happiness. It was his nature to take everything lightly;

and I soon left off asking him any questions about things that I cared

for much, because he always turned them off with a joke. He would even

ridicule our own people; and once when he had been imitating their

movements and their tones in praying, only to make others laugh, I

could not restrain myself--for I always had an anger in my heart about

my mother--and when we were alone, I said, 'Father, you ought not to

mimic our own people before Christians who mock them: would it not be

bad if I mimicked you, that they might mock you?' But he only shrugged

his shoulders and laughed and pinched my chin, and said, 'You couldn't

do it, my dear." It was this way of turning off everything, that made a

great wall between me and my father, and whatever I felt most I took

the most care to hide from him. For there were some things--when they

were laughed at I could not bear it: the world seemed like a hell to

me. Is this world and all the life upon it only like a farce or a

vaudeville, where you find no great meanings? Why then are there

tragedies and grand operas, where men do difficult things and choose to

suffer? I think it is silly to speak of all things as a joke. And I saw

that his wishing me to sing the greatest music, and parts in grand

operas, was only wishing for what would fetch the greatest price. That

hemmed in my gratitude for his affectionateness, and the tenderest

feeling I had toward him was pity. Yes, I did sometimes pity him. He

had aged and changed. Now he was no longer so lively. I thought he

seemed worse--less good to others than to me. Every now and then in the

latter years his gaiety went away suddenly, and he would sit at home

silent and gloomy; or he would come in and fling himself down and sob,

just as I have done myself when I have been in trouble. If I put my

hand on his knee and say, 'What is the matter, father?' he would make

no answer, but would draw my arm round his neck and put his arm round

me and go on crying. There never came any confidence between us; but

oh, I was sorry for him. At those moments I knew he must feel his life

bitter, and I pressed my cheek against his head and prayed. Those

moments were what most bound me to him; and I used to think how much my

mother once loved him, else she would not have married him.

"But soon there came the dreadful time. We had been at Pesth and we

came back to Vienna. In spite of what my master Leo had said, my father

got me an engagement, not at the opera, but to take singing parts at a

suburb theatre in Vienna. He had nothing to do with the theatre then; I

did not understand what he did, but I think he was continually at a

gambling house, though he was careful always about taking me to the

theatre. I was very miserable. The plays I acted in were detestable to

me. Men came about us and wanted to talk to me: women and men seemed to

look at me with a sneering smile; it was no better than a fiery

furnace. Perhaps I make it worse than it was--you don't know that life:

but the glare and the faces, and my having to go on and act and sing

what I hated, and then see people who came to stare at me behind the

scenes--it was all so much worse than when I was a little girl. I went

through with it; I did it; I had set my mind to obey my father and

work, for I saw nothing better that I could do. But I felt that my

voice was getting weaker, and I knew that my acting was not good except

when it was not really acting, but the part was one that I could be

myself in, and some feeling within me carried me along. That was seldom.

"Then, in the midst of all this, the news came to me one morning that

my father had been taken to prison, and he had sent for me. He did not

tell me the reason why he was there, but he ordered me to go to an

address he gave me, to see a Count who would be able to get him

released. The address was to some public rooms where I was to ask for

the Count, and beg him to come to my father. I found him, and

recognized him as a gentleman whom I had seen the other night for the

first time behind the scenes. That agitated me, for I remembered his

way of looking at me and kissing my hand--I thought it was in mockery.

But I delivered my errand, and he promised to go immediately to my

father, who came home again that very evening, bringing the Count with

him. I now began to feel a horrible dread of this man, for he worried

me with his attentions, his eyes were always on me: I felt sure that

whatever else there might be in his mind toward me, below it all there

was scorn for the Jewess and the actress. And when he came to me the

next day in the theatre and would put my shawl around me, a terror took

hold of me; I saw that my father wanted me to look pleased. The Count

was neither very young nor very old; his hair and eyes were pale; he

was tall and walked heavily, and his face was heavy and grave except

when he looked at me. He smiled at me, and his smile went through me

with horror: I could not tell why he was so much worse to me than other

men. Some feelings are like our hearing: they come as sounds do, before

we know their reason. My father talked to me about him when we were

alone, and praised him--said what a good friend he had been. I said

nothing, because I supposed he had got my father out of prison. When

the Count came again, my father left the room. He asked me if I liked

being on the stage. I said No, I only acted in obedience to my father.

He always spoke French, and called me 'petite ange' and such things,

which I felt insulting. I knew he meant to make love to me, and I had

it firmly in my mind that a nobleman and one who was not a Jew could

have no love for me that was not half contempt. But then he told me

that I need not act any longer; he wished me to visit him at his

beautiful place, where I might be queen of everything. It was difficult

to me to speak, I felt so shaken with anger: I could only say, 'I would

rather stay on the stage forever,' and I left him there. Hurrying out

of the room I saw my father sauntering in the passage. My heart was

crushed. I went past him and locked myself up. It had sunk into me that

my father was in a conspiracy with that man against me. But the next

day he persuaded me to come out: he said that I had mistaken

everything, and he would explain: if I did not come out and act and

fulfill my engagement, we should be ruined and he must starve. So I

went on acting, and for a week or more the Count never came near me. My

father changed our lodgings, and kept at home except when he went to

the theatre with me. He began one day to speak discouragingly of my

acting, and say, I could never go on singing in public--I should lose

my voice--I ought to think of my future, and not put my nonsensical

feelings between me and my fortune. He said, 'What will you do? You

will be brought down to sing and beg at people's doors. You have had a

splendid offer and ought to accept it.' I could not speak: a horror

took possession of me when I thought of my mother and of him. I felt

for the first time that I should not do wrong to leave him. But the

next day he told me that he had put an end to my engagement at the

theatre, and that we were to go to Prague. I was getting suspicious of

everything, and my will was hardening to act against him. It took us

two days to pack and get ready; and I had it in my mind that I might be

obliged to run away from my father, and then I would come to London and

try if it were possible to find my mother. I had a little money, and I

sold some things to get more. I packed a few clothes in a little bag

that I could carry with me, and I kept my mind on the watch. My

father's silence--his letting drop that subject of the Count's

offer--made me feel sure that there was a plan against me. I felt as if

it had been a plan to take me to a madhouse. I once saw a picture of a

madhouse, that I could never forget; it seemed to me very much like

some of the life I had seen--the people strutting, quarreling,

leering--the faces with cunning and malice in them. It was my will to

keep myself from wickedness; and I prayed for help. I had seen what

despised women were: and my heart turned against my father, for I saw

always behind him that man who made me shudder. You will think I had

not enough reason for my suspicions, and perhaps I had not, outside my

own feeling; but it seemed to me that my mind had been lit up, and all

that might be stood out clear and sharp. If I slept, it was only to see

the same sort of things, and I could hardly sleep at all. Through our

journey I was everywhere on the watch. I don't know why, but it came

before me like a real event, that my father would suddenly leave me and

I should find myself with the Count where I could not get away from

him. I thought God was warning me: my mother's voice was in my soul. It

was dark when we reached Prague, and though the strange bunches of

lamps were lit it was difficult to distinguish faces as we drove along

the street. My father chose to sit outside--he was always smoking

now--and I watched everything in spite of the darkness. I do believe I

could see better then than I ever did before: the strange clearness

within seemed to have got outside me. It was not my habit to notice

faces and figures much in the street; but this night I saw every one;

and when we passed before a great hotel I caught sight only of a back

that was passing in--the light of the great bunch of lamps a good way

off fell on it. I knew it--before the face was turned, as it fell into

shadow, I knew who it was. Help came to me. I feel sure help came. I

did not sleep that night. I put on my plainest things--the cloak and

hat I have worn ever since; and I sat watching for the light and the

sound of the doors being unbarred. Some one rose early--at four

o'clock, to go to the railway. That gave me courage. I slipped out,

with my little bag under my cloak, and none noticed me. I had been a

long while attending to the railway guide that I might learn the way to

England; and before the sun had risen I was in the train for Dresden.

Then I cried for joy. I did not know whether my money would last out,

but I trusted. I could sell the things in my bag, and the little rings

in my ears, and I could live on bread only. My only terror was lest my

father should follow me. But I never paused. I came on, and on, and on,

only eating bread now and then. When I got to Brussels I saw that I

should not have enough money, and I sold all that I could sell; but

here a strange thing happened. Putting my hand into the pocket of my

cloak, I found a half-napoleon. Wondering and wondering how it came

there, I remembered that on the way from Cologne there was a young

workman sitting against me. I was frightened at every one, and did not

like to be spoken to. At first he tried to talk, but when he saw that I

did not like it, he left off. It was a long journey; I ate nothing but

a bit of bread, and he once offered me some of the food he brought in,

but I refused it. I do believe it was he who put that bit of gold in my

pocket. Without it I could hardly have got to Dover, and I did walk a

good deal of the way from Dover to London. I knew I should look like a

miserable beggar-girl. I wanted not to look very miserable, because if

I found my mother it would grieve her to see me so. But oh, how vain my

hope was that she would be there to see me come! As soon as I set foot

in London, I began to ask for Lambeth and Blackfriars Bridge, but they

were a long way off, and I went wrong. At last I got to Blackfriars

Bridge and asked for Colman Street. People shook their heads. None knew

it. I saw it in my mind--our doorsteps, and the white tiles hung in the

windows, and the large brick building opposite with wide doors. But

there was nothing like it. At last when I asked a tradesman where the

Coburg Theatre and Colman Street were, he said, 'Oh, my little woman,

that's all done away with. The old streets have been pulled down;

everything is new.' I turned away and felt as if death had laid a hand

on me. He said: 'Stop, stop! young woman; what is it you're wanting

with Colman Street, eh?' meaning well, perhaps. But his tone was what I

could not bear; and how could I tell him what I wanted? I felt blinded

and bewildered with a sudden shock. I suddenly felt that I was very

weak and weary, and yet where could I go? for I looked so poor and

dusty, and had nothing with me--I looked like a street-beggar. And I

was afraid of all places where I could enter. I lost my trust. I

thought I was forsaken. It seemed that I had been in a fever of

hope--delirious--all the way from Prague: I thought that I was helped,

and I did nothing but strain my mind forward and think of finding my

mother; and now--there I stood in a strange world. All who saw me would

think ill of me, and I must herd with beggars. I stood on the bridge

and looked along the river. People were going on to a steamboat. Many

of them seemed poor, and I felt as if it would be a refuge to get away

from the streets; perhaps the boat would take me where I could soon get

into a solitude. I had still some pence left, and I bought a loaf when

I went on the boat. I wanted to have a little time and strength to

think of life and death. How could I live? And now again it seemed that

if ever I were to find my mother again, death was the way to her. I

ate, that I might have strength to think. The boat set me down at a

place along the river--I don't know where--and it was late in the

evening. I found some large trees apart from the road, and I sat down

under them that I might rest through the night. Sleep must have soon

come to me, and when I awoke it was morning. The birds were singing,

and the dew was white about me, I felt chill and oh, so lonely! I got

up and walked and followed the river a long way and then turned back

again. There was no reason why I should go anywhere. The world about me

seemed like a vision that was hurrying by while I stood still with my

pain. My thoughts were stronger than I was; they rushed in and forced

me to see all my life from the beginning; ever since I was carried away

from my mother I had felt myself a lost child taken up and used by

strangers, who did not care what my life was to me, but only what I

could do for them. It seemed all a weary wandering and

heart-loneliness--as if I had been forced to go to merrymakings without

the expectation of joy. And now it was worse. I was lost again, and I

dreaded lest any stranger should notice me and speak to me. I had a

terror of the world. None knew me; all would mistake me. I had seen so

many in my life who made themselves glad with scorning, and laughed at

another's shame. What could I do? This life seemed to be closing in

upon me with a wall of fire--everywhere there was scorching that made

me shrink. The high sunlight made me shrink. And I began to think that

my despair was the voice of God telling me to die. But it would take me

long to die of hunger. Then I thought of my people, how they had been

driven from land to land and been afflicted, and multitudes had died of

misery in their wandering--was I the first? And in the wars and

troubles when Christians were cruelest, our fathers had sometimes slain

their children and afterward themselves: it was to save them from being

false apostates. That seemed to make it right for me to put an end to

my life; for calamity had closed me in too, and I saw no pathway but to

evil. But my mind got into war with itself, for there were contrary

things in it. I knew that some had held it wrong to hasten their own

death, though they were in the midst of flames; and while I had some

strength left it was a longing to bear if I ought to bear--else where

was the good of all my life? It had not been happy since the first

years: when the light came every morning I used to think, 'I will bear

it.' But always before I had some hope; now it was gone. With these

thoughts I wandered and wandered, inwardly crying to the Most High,

from whom I should not flee in death more than in life--though I had no

strong faith that He cared for me. The strength seemed departing from

my soul; deep below all my cries was the feeling that I was alone and

forsaken. The more I thought the wearier I got, till it seemed I was

not thinking at all, but only the sky and the river and the Eternal God

were in my soul. And what was it whether I died or lived? If I lay down

to die in the river, was it more than lying down to sleep?--for there

too I committed my soul--I gave myself up. I could not bear memories

any more; I could only feel what was present in me--it was all one

longing to cease from my weary life, which seemed only a pain outside

the great peace that I might enter into. That was how it was. When the

evening came and the sun was gone, it seemed as if that was all I had

to wait for. And a new strength came into me to will what I would do.

You know what I did. I was going to die. You know what happened--did he

not tell you? Faith came to me again; I was not forsaken. He told you

how he found me?"

Mrs. Meyrick gave no audible answer, but pressed her lips against

Mirah's forehead.

\* \* \* \* \*

"She's just a pearl; the mud has only washed her," was the fervid

little woman's closing commentary when, \_tete-Ã -tete\_ with Deronda in

the back parlor that evening, she had conveyed Mirah's story to him

with much vividness.

"What is your feeling about a search for this mother?" said Deronda.

"Have you no fears? I have, I confess."

"Oh, I believe the mother's good," said Mrs. Meyrick, with rapid

decisiveness; "or \_was\_ good. She may be dead--that's my fear. A good

woman, you may depend: you may know it by the scoundrel the father is.

Where did the child get her goodness from? Wheaten flour has to be

accounted for."

Deronda was rather disappointed at this answer; he had wanted a

confirmation of his own judgment, and he began to put in demurrers. The

argument about the mother would not apply to the brother; and Mrs.

Meyrick admitted that the brother might be an ugly likeness of the

father. Then, as to advertising, if the name was Cohen, you might as

well advertise for two undescribed terriers; and here Mrs. Meyrick

helped him, for the idea of an advertisement, already mentioned to

Mirah, had roused the poor child's terror; she was convinced that her

father would see it--he saw everything in the papers. Certainly there

were safer means than advertising; men might be set to work whose

business it was to find missing persons; but Deronda wished Mrs.

Meyrick to feel with him that it would be wiser to wait, before seeking

a dubious--perhaps a deplorable result; especially as he was engaged to

go abroad the next week for a couple of months. If a search were made,

he would like to be at hand, so that Mrs. Meyrick might not be unaided

in meeting any consequences--supposing that she would generously

continue to watch over Mirah.

"We should be very jealous of any one who took the task from us," said

Mrs. Meyrick. "She will stay under my roof; there is Hans's old room

for her."

"Will she be content to wait?" said Deronda, anxiously.

"No trouble there. It is not her nature to run into planning and

devising: only to submit. See how she submitted to that father! It was

a wonder to herself how she found the will and contrivance to run away

from him. About finding her mother, her only notion now is to trust;

since you were sent to save her and we are good to her, she trusts that

her mother will be found in the same unsought way. And when she is

talking I catch her feeling like a child."

Mrs. Meyrick hoped that the sum Deronda put into her hands as a

provision for Mirah's wants was more than would be needed; after a

little while Mirah would perhaps like to occupy herself as the other

girls did, and make herself independent. Deronda pleaded that she must

need a long rest. "Oh, yes; we will hurry nothing," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"Rely upon it, she shall be taken tender care of. If you like to give

me your address abroad, I will write to let you know how we get on. It

is not fair that we should have all the pleasure of her salvation to

ourselves. And besides, I want to make believe that I am doing

something for you as well as for Mirah."

"That is no make-believe. What should I have done without you last

night? Everything would have gone wrong. I shall tell Hans that the

best of having him for a friend is, knowing his mother."

After that they joined the girls in the other room, where Mirah was

seated placidly, while the others were telling her what they knew about

Mr. Deronda--his goodness to Hans, and all the virtues that Hans had

reported of him.

"Kate burns a pastille before his portrait every day," said Mab. "And I

carry his signature in a little black-silk bag round my neck to keep

off the cramp. And Amy says the multiplication-table in his name. We

must all do something extra in honor of him, now he has brought you to

us."

"I suppose he is too great a person to want anything," said Mirah,

smiling at Mab, and appealing to the graver Amy. "He is perhaps very

high in the world?"

"He is very much above us in rank," said Amy. "He is related to grand

people. I dare say he leans on some of the satin cushions we prick our

fingers over."

"I am glad he is of high rank," said Mirah, with her usual quietness.

"Now, why are you glad of that?" said Amy, rather suspicious of this

sentiment, and on the watch for Jewish peculiarities which had not

appeared.

"Because I have always disliked men of high rank before."

"Oh, Mr. Deronda is not so very high," said Kate, "He need not hinder

us from thinking ill of the whole peerage and baronetage if we like."

When he entered, Mirah rose with the same look of grateful reverence

that she had lifted to him the evening before: impossible to see a

creature freer at once from embarrassment and boldness. Her theatrical

training had left no recognizable trace; probably her manners had not

much changed since she played the forsaken child at nine years of age;

and she had grown up in her simplicity and truthfulness like a little

flower-seed that absorbs the chance confusion of its surrounding into

its own definite mould of beauty. Deronda felt that he was making

acquaintance with something quite new to him in the form of womanhood.

For Mirah was not childlike from ignorance: her experience of evil and

trouble was deeper and stranger than his own. He felt inclined to watch

her and listen to her as if she had come from a far off shore inhabited

by a race different from our own.

But for that very reason he made his visit brief with his usual

activity of imagination as to how his conduct might affect others, he

shrank from what might seem like curiosity or the assumption of a right

to know as much as he pleased of one to whom he had done a service. For

example, he would have liked to hear her sing, but he would have felt

the expression of such a wish to be rudeness in him--since she could

not refuse, and he would all the while have a sense that she was being

treated like one whose accomplishments were to be ready on demand. And

whatever reverence could be shown to woman, he was bent on showing to

this girl. Why? He gave himself several good reasons; but whatever one

does with a strong unhesitating outflow of will has a store of motive

that it would be hard to put into words. Some deeds seem little more

than interjections which give vent to the long passion of a life.

So Deronda soon took his farewell for the two months during which he

expected to be absent from London, and in a few days he was on his way

with Sir Hugo and Lady Mallinger to Leubronn.

He had fulfilled his intention of telling them about Mirah. The baronet

was decidedly of opinion that the search for the mother and brother had

better be let alone. Lady Mallinger was much interested in the poor

girl, observing that there was a society for the conversion of the

Jews, and that it was to be hoped Mirah would embrace Christianity; but

perceiving that Sir Hugo looked at her with amusement, she concluded

that she had said something foolish. Lady Mallinger felt apologetically

about herself as a woman who had produced nothing but daughters in a

case where sons were required, and hence regarded the apparent

contradictions of the world as probably due to the weakness of her own

understanding. But when she was much puzzled, it was her habit to say

to herself, "I will ask Daniel." Deronda was altogether a convenience

in the family; and Sir Hugo too, after intending to do the best for

him, had begun to feel that the pleasantest result would be to have

this substitute for a son always ready at his elbow.

This was the history of Deronda, so far as he knew it, up to the time

of that visit to Leubronn in which he saw Gwendolen Harleth at the

gaming-table.

CHAPTER XXI.

It is a common sentence that Knowledge is power; but who hath duly

Considered or set forth the power of Ignorance? Knowledge slowly

builds up what Ignorance in an hour pulls down. Knowledge, through

patient and frugal centuries, enlarges discovery and makes record of

it; Ignorance, wanting its day's dinner, lights a fire with the

record, and gives a flavor to its one roast with the burned souls of

many generations. Knowledge, instructing the sense, refining and

multiplying needs, transforms itself into skill and makes life various

with a new six days' work; comes Ignorance drunk on the seventh, with

a firkin of oil and a match and an easy "Let there not be," and the

many-colored creation is shriveled up in blackness. Of a truth,

Knowledge is power, but it is a power reined by scruple, having a

conscience of what must be and what may be; whereas Ignorance is a

blind giant who, let him but wax unbound, would make it a sport to

seize the pillars that hold up the long-wrought fabric of human good,

and turn all the places of joy dark as a buried Babylon. And looking

at life parcel-wise, in the growth of a single lot, who having a

practiced vision may not see that ignorance of the true bond between

events, and false conceit of means whereby sequences may be compelled

--like that falsity of eyesight which overlooks the gradations of

distance, seeing that which is afar off as if it were within a step or

a grasp--precipitates the mistaken soul on destruction?

It was half-past ten in the morning when Gwendolen Harleth, after her

gloomy journey from Leubronn, arrived at the station from which she

must drive to Offendene. No carriage or friend was awaiting her, for in

the telegram she had sent from Dover she had mentioned a later train,

and in her impatience of lingering at a London station she had set off

without picturing what it would be to arrive unannounced at half an

hour's drive from home--at one of those stations which have been fixed

on not as near anywhere, but as equidistant from everywhere. Deposited

as a \_femme sole\_ with her large trunks, and having to wait while a

vehicle was being got from the large-sized lantern called the Railway

Inn, Gwendolen felt that the dirty paint in the waiting-room, the dusty

decanter of flat water, and the texts in large letters calling on her

to repent and be converted, were part of the dreary prospect opened by

her family troubles; and she hurried away to the outer door looking

toward the lane and fields. But here the very gleams of sunshine seemed

melancholy, for the autumnal leaves and grass were shivering, and the

wind was turning up the feathers of a cock and two croaking hens which

had doubtless parted with their grown-up offspring and did not know

what to do with themselves. The railway official also seemed without

resources, and his innocent demeanor in observing Gwendolen and her

trunks was rendered intolerable by the cast in his eye; especially

since, being a new man, he did not know her, and must conclude that she

was not very high in the world. The vehicle--a dirty old barouche--was

within sight, and was being slowly prepared by an elderly laborer.

Contemptible details these, to make part of a history; yet the turn of

most lives is hardly to be accounted for without them. They are

continually entering with cumulative force into a mood until it gets

the mass and momentum of a theory or a motive. Even philosophy is not

quite free from such determining influences; and to be dropped solitary

at an ugly, irrelevant-looking spot, with a sense of no income on the

mind, might well prompt a man to discouraging speculation on the origin

of things and the reason of a world where a subtle thinker found

himself so badly off. How much more might such trifles tell on a young

lady equipped for society with a fastidious taste, an Indian shawl over

her arm, some twenty cubic feet of trunks by her side, and a mortal

dislike to the new consciousness of poverty which was stimulating her

imagination of disagreeables? At any rate they told heavily on poor

Gwendolen, and helped to quell her resistant spirit. What was the good

of living in the midst of hardships, ugliness, and humiliation? This

was the beginning of being at home again, and it was a sample of what

she had to expect.

Here was the theme on which her discontent rung its sad changes during

her slow drive in the uneasy barouche, with one great trunk squeezing

the meek driver, and the other fastened with a rope on the seat in

front of her. Her ruling vision all the way from Leubronn had been that

the family would go abroad again; for of course there must be some

little income left--her mamma did not mean that they would have

literally nothing. To go to a dull place abroad and live poorly, was

the dismal future that threatened her: she had seen plenty of poor

English people abroad and imagined herself plunged in the despised

dullness of their ill-plenished lives, with Alice, Bertha, Fanny and

Isabel all growing up in tediousness around her, while she advanced

toward thirty and her mamma got more and more melancholy. But she did

not mean to submit, and let misfortune do what it would with her: she

had not yet quite believed in the misfortune; but weariness and disgust

with this wretched arrival had begun to affect her like an

uncomfortable waking, worse than the uneasy dreams which had gone

before. The self-delight with which she had kissed her image in the

glass had faded before the sense of futility in being anything

whatever--charming, clever, resolute--what was the good of it all?

Events might turn out anyhow, and men were hateful. Yes, men were

hateful. But in these last hours, a certain change had come over their

meaning. It is one thing to hate stolen goods, and another thing to

hate them the more because their being stolen hinders us from making

use of them. Gwendolen had begun to be angry with Grandcourt for being

what had hindered her from marrying him, angry with him as the cause of

her present dreary lot.

But the slow drive was nearly at an end, and the lumbering vehicle

coming up the avenue was within sight of the windows. A figure

appearing under the portico brought a rush of new and less selfish

feeling in Gwendolen, and when springing from the carriage she saw the

dear beautiful face with fresh lines of sadness in it, she threw her

arms round her mother's neck, and for the moment felt all sorrows only

in relation to her mother's feeling about them.

Behind, of course, were the sad faces of the four superfluous girls,

each, poor thing--like those other many thousand sisters of us

all--having her peculiar world which was of no importance to any one

else, but all of them feeling Gwendolen's presence to be somehow a

relenting of misfortune: where Gwendolen was, something interesting

would happen; even her hurried submission to their kisses, and "Now go

away, girls," carried the sort of comfort which all weakness finds in

decision and authoritativeness. Good Miss Merry, whose air of meek

depression, hitherto held unaccountable in a governess affectionately

attached to the family, was now at the general level of circumstances,

did not expect any greeting, but busied herself with the trunks and the

coachman's pay; while Mrs. Davilow and Gwendolen hastened up-stairs and

shut themselves in the black and yellow bedroom.

"Never mind, mamma dear," said Gwendolen, tenderly pressing her

handkerchief against the tears that were rolling down Mrs. Davilow's

cheeks. "Never mind. I don't mind. I will do something. I will be

something. Things will come right. It seemed worse because I was away.

Come now! you must be glad because I am here."

Gwendolen felt every word of that speech. A rush of compassionate

tenderness stirred all her capability of generous resolution; and the

self-confident projects which had vaguely glanced before her during her

journey sprang instantaneously into new definiteness. Suddenly she

seemed to perceive how she could be "something." It was one of her best

moments, and the fond mother, forgetting everything below that tide

mark, looked at her with a sort of adoration. She said--

"Bless you, my good, good darling! I can be happy, if you can!"

But later in the day there was an ebb; the old slippery rocks, the old

weedy places reappeared. Naturally, there was a shrinking of courage as

misfortune ceased to be a mere announcement, and began to disclose

itself as a grievous tyrannical inmate. At first--that ugly drive at an

end--it was still Offendene that Gwendolen had come home to, and all

surroundings of immediate consequence to her were still there to secure

her personal ease; the roomy stillness of the large solid house while

she rested; all the luxuries of her toilet cared for without trouble to

her; and a little tray with her favorite food brought to her in

private. For she had said, "Keep them all away from us to-day, mamma.

Let you and me be alone together."

When Gwendolen came down into the drawing-room, fresh as a newly-dipped

swan, and sat leaning against the cushions of the settee beside her

mamma, their misfortune had not yet turned its face and breath upon

her. She felt prepared to hear everything, and began in a tone of

deliberate intention--

"What have you thought of doing, exactly, mamma?"

"Oh, my dear, the next thing to be done is to move away from this

house. Mr. Haynes most fortunately is as glad to have it now as he

would have been when we took it. Lord Brackenshaw's agent is to arrange

everything with him to the best advantage for us: Bazley, you know; not

at all an ill-natured man."

"I cannot help thinking that Lord Brackenshaw would let you stay here

rent-free, mamma," said Gwendolen, whose talents had not been applied

to business so much as to discernment of the admiration excited by her

charms.

"My dear child, Lord Brackenshaw is in Scotland, and knows nothing

about us. Neither your uncle nor I would choose to apply to him.

Besides, what could we do in this house without servants, and without

money to warm it? The sooner we are out the better. We have nothing to

carry but our clothes, you know?"

"I suppose you mean to go abroad, then?" said Gwendolen. After all,

this is what she had familiarized her mind with.

"Oh, no, dear, no. How could we travel? You never did learn anything

about income and expenses," said Mrs. Davilow, trying to smile, and

putting her hand on Gwendolen's as she added, mournfully, "that makes

it so much harder for you, my pet."

"But where are we to go?" said Gwendolen, with a trace of sharpness in

her tone. She felt a new current of fear passing through her.

"It is all decided. A little furniture is to be got in from the

rectory--all that can be spared." Mrs. Davilow hesitated. She dreaded

the reality for herself less than the shock she must give to Gwendolen,

who looked at her with tense expectancy, but was silent.

"It is Sawyer's Cottage we are to go to."

At first, Gwendolen remained silent, paling with anger--justifiable

anger, in her opinion. Then she said with haughtiness--

"That is impossible. Something else than that ought to have been

thought of. My uncle ought not to allow that. I will not submit to it."

"My sweet child, what else could have been thought of? Your uncle, I am

sure, is as kind as he can be: but he is suffering himself; he has his

family to bring up. And do you quite understand? You must remember--we

have nothing. We shall have absolutely nothing except what he and my

sister give us. They have been as wise and active a possible, and we

must try to earn something. I and the girls are going to work a

table-cloth border for the Ladies' Charity at Winchester, and a

communion cloth that the parishioners are to present to Pennicote

Church."

Mrs. Davilow went into these details timidly: but how else was she to

bring the fact of their position home to this poor child who, alas!

must submit at present, whatever might be in the background for her?

and she herself had a superstition that there must be something better

in the background.

"But surely somewhere else than Sawyer's Cottage might have been

found," Gwendolen persisted--taken hold of (as if in a nightmare) by

the image of this house where an exciseman had lived.

"No, indeed, dear. You know houses are scarce, and we may be thankful

to get anything so private. It is not so very bad. There are two little

parlors and four bedrooms. You shall sit alone whenever you like."

The ebb of sympathetic care for her mamma had gone so low just now,

that Gwendolen took no notice of these deprecatory words.

"I cannot conceive that all your property is gone at once, mamma. How

can you be sure in so short a time? It is not a week since you wrote to

me."

"The first news came much earlier, dear. But I would not spoil your

pleasure till it was quite necessary."

"Oh, how vexatious!" said Gwendolen, coloring with fresh anger. "If I

had known, I could have brought home the money I had won: and for want

of knowing, I stayed and lost it. I had nearly two hundred pounds, and

it would have done for us to live on a little while, till I could carry

out some plan." She paused an instant and then added more impetuously,

"Everything has gone against me. People have come near me only to

blight me."

Among the "people" she was including Deronda. If he had not interfered

in her life she would have gone to the gaming-table again with a few

napoleons, and might have won back her losses.

"We must resign ourselves to the will of Providence, my child," said

poor Mrs. Davilow, startled by this revelation of the gambling, but not

daring to say more. She felt sure that "people" meant Grandcourt, about

whom her lips were sealed. And Gwendolen answered immediately--

"But I don't resign myself. I shall do what I can against it. What is

the good of calling the people's wickedness Providence? You said in

your letter it was Mr. Lassman's fault we had lost our money. Has he

run away with it all?"

"No, dear, you don't understand. There were great speculations: he

meant to gain. It was all about mines and things of that sort. He

risked too much."

"I don't call that Providence: it was his improvidence with our money,

and he ought to be punished. Can't we go to law and recover our

fortune? My uncle ought to take measures, and not sit down by such

wrongs. We ought to go to law."

"My dear child, law can never bring back money lost in that way. Your

uncle says it is milk spilled upon the ground. Besides, one must have a

fortune to get any law: there is no law for people who are ruined. And

our money has only gone along with other's people's. We are not the

only sufferers: others have to resign themselves besides us."

"But I don't resign myself to live at Sawyer's Cottage and see you

working for sixpences and shillings because of that. I shall not do it.

I shall do what is more befitting our rank and education."

"I am sure your uncle and all of us will approve of that, dear, and

admire you the more for it," said Mrs. Davilow, glad of an unexpected

opening for speaking on a difficult subject. "I didn't mean that you

should resign yourself to worse when anything better offered itself.

Both your uncle and aunt have felt that your abilities and education

were a fortune for you, and they have already heard of something within

your reach."

"What is that, mamma?" some of Gwendolen's anger gave way to interest,

and she was not without romantic conjectures.

"There are two situations that offer themselves. One is in a bishop's

family, where there are three daughters, and the other is in quite a

high class of school; and in both, your French, and music, and

dancing--and then your manners and habits as a lady, are exactly what

is wanted. Each is a hundred a year--and--just for the present,"--Mrs.

Davilow had become frightened and hesitating,--"to save you from the

petty, common way of living that we must go to--you would perhaps

accept one of the two."

"What! be like Miss Graves at Madame Meunier's? No."

"I think, myself, that Dr. Monpert's would be more suitable. There

could be no hardship in a bishop's family."

"Excuse me, mamma. There are hardships everywhere for a governess. And

I don't see that it would be pleasanter to be looked down on in a

bishop's family than in any other. Besides, you know very well I hate

teaching. Fancy me shut up with three awkward girls something like

Alice! I would rather emigrate than be a governess."

What it precisely was to emigrate, Gwendolen was not called on to

explain. Mrs. Davilow was mute, seeing no outlet, and thinking with

dread of the collision that might happen when Gwendolen had to meet her

uncle and aunt. There was an air of reticence in Gwendolen's haughty,

resistant speeches which implied that she had a definite plan in

reserve; and her practical ignorance continually exhibited, could not

nullify the mother's belief in the effectiveness of that forcible will

and daring which had held mastery over herself.

"I have some ornaments, mamma, and I could sell them," said Gwendolen.

"They would make a sum: I want a little sum--just to go on with. I dare

say Marshall, at Wanchester, would take them: I know he showed me some

bracelets once that he said he had bought from a lady. Jocosa might go

and ask him. Jocosa is going to leave us, of course. But she might do

that first."

"She would do anything she could, poor, dear soul. I have not told you

yet--she wanted me to take all her savings--her three hundred pounds. I

tell her to set up a little school. It will be hard for her to go into

a new family now she has been so long with us."

"Oh, recommend her for the bishop's daughter's," said Gwendolen, with a

sudden gleam of laughter in her face. "I am sure she will do better

than I should."

"Do take care not to say such things to your uncle," said Mrs. Davilow.

"He will be hurt at your despising what he has exerted himself about.

But I dare say you have something else in your mind that he might not

disapprove, if you consulted him."

"There is some one else I want to consult first. Are the Arrowpoint's

at Quetcham still, and is Herr Klesmer there? But I daresay you know

nothing about it, poor, dear mamma. Can Jeffries go on horseback with a

note?"

"Oh, my dear, Jefferies is not here, and the dealer has taken the

horses. But some one could go for us from Leek's farm. The Arrowpoints

are at Quetcham, I know. Miss Arrowpoint left her card the other day: I

could not see her. But I don't know about Herr Klesmer. Do you want to

send before to-morrow?"

"Yes, as soon as possible. I will write a note," said Gwendolen, rising.

"What can you be thinking of, Gwen?" said Mrs. Davilow, relieved in the

midst of her wonderment by signs of alacrity and better humor.

"Don't mind what, there's a dear, good mamma," said Gwendolen,

reseating herself a moment to give atoning caresses. "I mean to do

something. Never mind what until it is all settled. And then you shall

be comforted. The dear face!--it is ten years older in these three

weeks. Now, now, now! don't cry"--Gwendolen, holding her mamma's head

with both hands, kissed the trembling eyelids. "But mind you don't

contradict me or put hindrances in my way. I must decide for myself. I

cannot be dictated to by my uncle or any one else. My life is my own

affair. And I think"--here her tone took an edge of scorn--"I think I

can do better for you than let you live in Sawyer's Cottage."

In uttering this last sentence Gwendolen again rose, and went to a desk

where she wrote the following note to Klesmer:--

Miss Harleth presents her compliments to Herr Klesmer, and ventures

to request of him the very great favor that he will call upon her, if

possible, to-morrow. Her reason for presuming so far on his kindness

is of a very serious nature. Unfortunate family circumstances have

obliged her to take a course in which she can only turn for advice to

the great knowledge and judgment of Herr Klesmer.

"Pray get this sent to Quetcham at once, mamma," said Gwendolen, as she

addressed the letter. "The man must be told to wait for an answer. Let

no time be lost."

For the moment, the absorbing purpose was to get the letter dispatched;

but when she had been assured on this point, another anxiety arose and

kept her in a state of uneasy excitement. If Klesmer happened not to be

at Quetcham, what could she do next? Gwendolen's belief in her star, so

to speak, had had some bruises. Things had gone against her. A splendid

marriage which presented itself within reach had shown a hideous flaw.

The chances of roulette had not adjusted themselves to her claims; and

a man of whom she knew nothing had thrust himself between her and her

intentions. The conduct of those uninteresting people who managed the

business of the world had been culpable just in the points most

injurious to her in particular. Gwendolen Harleth, with all her beauty

and conscious force, felt the close threats of humiliation: for the

first time the conditions of this world seemed to her like a hurrying

roaring crowd in which she had got astray, no more cared for and

protected than a myriad of other girls, in spite of its being a

peculiar hardship to her. If Klesmer were not at Quetcham--that would

be all of a piece with the rest: the unwelcome negative urged itself as

a probability, and set her brain working at desperate alternatives

which might deliver her from Sawyer's Cottage or the ultimate necessity

of "taking a situation," a phrase that summed up for her the

disagreeables most wounding to her pride, most irksome to her tastes;

at least so far as her experience enabled her to imagine disagreeables.

Still Klesmer might be there, and Gwendolen thought of the result in

that case with a hopefulness which even cast a satisfactory light over

her peculiar troubles, as what might well enter into the biography of

celebrities and remarkable persons. And if she had heard her immediate

acquaintances cross-examined as to whether they thought her remarkable,

the first who said "No" would have surprised her.

CHAPTER XXII.

We please our fancy with ideal webs

Of innovation, but our life meanwhile

Is in the loom, where busy passion plies

The shuttle to and fro, and gives our deeds

The accustomed pattern.

Gwendolen's note, coming "pat betwixt too early and too late," was put

into Klesmer's hands just when he was leaving Quetcham, and in order to

meet her appeal to his kindness he, with some inconvenience to himself

spent the night at Wanchester. There were reasons why he would not

remain at Quetcham.

That magnificent mansion, fitted with regard to the greatest expense,

had in fact became too hot for him, its owners having, like some great

politicians, been astonished at an insurrection against the established

order of things, which we plain people after the event can perceive to

have been prepared under their very noses.

There were as usual many guests in the house, and among them one in

whom Miss Arrowpoint foresaw a new pretender to her hand: a political

man of good family who confidently expected a peerage, and felt on

public grounds that he required a larger fortune to support the title

properly. Heiresses vary, and persons interested in one of them

beforehand are prepared to find that she is too yellow or too red, tall

and toppling or short and square, violent and capricious or moony and

insipid; but in every case it is taken for granted that she will

consider herself an appendage to her fortune, and marry where others

think her fortunes ought to go. Nature, however, not only accommodates

herself ill to our favorite practices by making "only children"

daughters, but also now and then endows the misplaced daughter with a

clear head and a strong will. The Arrowpoints had already felt some

anxiety owing to these endowments of their Catherine. She would not

accept the view of her social duty which required her to marry a needy

nobleman or a commoner on the ladder toward nobility; and they were not

without uneasiness concerning her persistence in declining suitable

offers. As to the possibility of her being in love with Klesmer they

were not at all uneasy--a very common sort of blindness. For in general

mortals have a great power of being astonished at the presence of an

effect toward which they have done everything, and at the absence of an

effect toward which they had done nothing but desire it. Parents are

astonished at the ignorance of their sons, though they have used the

most time-honored and expensive means of securing it; husbands and

wives are mutually astonished at the loss of affection which they have

taken no pains to keep; and all of us in our turn are apt to be

astonished that our neighbors do not admire us. In this way it happens

that the truth seems highly improbable. The truth is something

different from the habitual lazy combinations begotten by our wishes.

The Arrowpoints' hour of astonishment was come.

When there is a passion between an heiress and a proud

independent-spirited man, it is difficult for them to come to an

understanding; but the difficulties are likely to be overcome unless

the proud man secures himself by a constant \_alibi\_. Brief meetings

after studied absence are potent in disclosure: but more potent still

is frequent companionship, with full sympathy in taste and admirable

qualities on both sides; especially where the one is in the position of

teacher and the other is delightedly conscious of receptive ability

which also gives the teacher delight. The situation is famous in

history, and has no less charm now than it had in the days of Abelard.

But this kind of comparison had not occurred to the Arrowpoints when

they first engaged Klesmer to come down to Quetcham. To have a

first-rate musician in your house is a privilege of wealth; Catherine's

musical talent demanded every advantage; and she particularly desired

to use her quieter time in the country for more thorough study. Klesmer

was not yet a Liszt, understood to be adored by ladies of all European

countries with the exception of Lapland: and even with that

understanding it did not follow that he would make proposals to an

heiress. No musician of honor would do so. Still less was it

conceivable that Catherine would give him the slightest pretext for

such daring. The large check that Mr. Arrowpoint was to draw in

Klesmer's name seemed to make him as safe an inmate as a footman. Where

marriage is inconceivable, a girl's sentiments are safe.

Klesmer was eminently a man of honor, but marriages rarely begin with

formal proposals, and moreover, Catherine's limit of the conceivable

did not exactly correspond with her mother's.

Outsiders might have been more apt to think that Klesmer's position was

dangerous for himself if Miss Arrowpoint had been an acknowledged

beauty; not taking into account that the most powerful of all beauty is

that which reveals itself after sympathy and not before it. There is a

charm of eye and lip which comes with every little phrase that

certifies delicate perception or fine judgment, with every

unostentatious word or smile that shows a heart awake to others; and no

sweep of garment or turn of figure is more satisfying than that which

enters as a restoration of confidence that one person is present on

whom no intention will be lost. What dignity of meaning goes on

gathering in frowns and laughs which are never observed in the wrong

place; what suffused adorableness in a human frame where there is a

mind that can flash out comprehension and hands that can execute

finely! The more obvious beauty, also adorable sometimes--one may say

it without blasphemy--begins by being an apology for folly, and ends

like other apologies in becoming tiresome by iteration; and that

Klesmer, though very susceptible to it, should have a passionate

attachment to Miss Arrowpoint, was no more a paradox than any other

triumph of a manifold sympathy over a monotonous attraction. We object

less to be taxed with the enslaving excess of our passions than with

our deficiency in wider passion; but if the truth were known, our

reputed intensity is often the dullness of not knowing what else to do

with ourselves. TannhÃ¤user, one suspects, was a knight of ill-furnished

imagination, hardly of larger discourse than a heavy Guardsman; Merlin

had certainly seen his best days, and was merely repeating himself,

when he fell into that hopeless captivity; and we know that Ulysses

felt so manifest an \_ennui\_ under similar circumstances that Calypso

herself furthered his departure. There is indeed a report that he

afterward left Penelope; but since she was habitually absorbed in

worsted work, and it was probably from her that Telemachus got his

mean, pettifogging disposition, always anxious about the property and

the daily consumption of meat, no inference can be drawn from this

already dubious scandal as to the relation between companionship and

constancy.

Klesmer was as versatile and fascinating as a young Ulysses on a

sufficient acquaintance--one whom nature seemed to have first made

generously and then to have added music as a dominant power using all

the abundant rest, and, as in Mendelssohn, finding expression for

itself not only in the highest finish of execution, but in that fervor

of creative work and theoretic belief which pierces devoted purpose.

His foibles of arrogance and vanity did not exceed such as may be found

in the best English families; and Catherine Arrowpoint had no

corresponding restlessness to clash with his: notwithstanding her

native kindliness she was perhaps too coolly firm and self-sustained.

But she was one of those satisfactory creatures whose intercourse has

the charm of discovery; whose integrity of faculty and expression

begets a wish to know what they will say on all subjects or how they

will perform whatever they undertake; so that they end by raising not

only a continual expectation but a continual sense of fulfillment--the

systole and diastole of blissful companionship. In such cases the

outward presentment easily becomes what the image is to the worshipper.

It was not long before the two became aware that each was interesting

to the other; but the "how far" remained a matter of doubt. Klesmer did

not conceive that Miss Arrowpoint was likely to think of him as a

possible lover, and she was not accustomed to think of herself as

likely to stir more than a friendly regard, or to fear the expression

of more from any man who was not enamored of her fortune. Each was

content to suffer some unshared sense of denial for the sake of loving

the other's society a little too well; and under these conditions no

need had been felt to restrict Klesmer's visits for the last year

either in country or in town. He knew very well that if Miss Arrowpoint

had been poor he would have made ardent love to her instead of sending

a storm through the piano, or folding his arms and pouring out a

hyperbolical tirade about something as impersonal as the north pole;

and she was not less aware that if it had been possible for Klesmer to

wish for her hand she would have found overmastering reasons for giving

it to him. Here was the safety of full cups, which are as secure from

overflow as the half-empty, always supposing no disturbance. Naturally,

silent feeling had not remained at the same point any more than the

stealthly dial-hand, and in the present visit to Quetcham, Klesmer had

begun to think that he would not come again; while Catherine was more

sensitive to his frequent \_brusquerie\_, which she rather resented as a

needless effort to assert his footing of superior in every sense except

the conventional.

Meanwhile enters the expectant peer, Mr. Bult, an esteemed party man

who, rather neutral in private life, had strong opinions concerning the

districts of the Niger, was much at home also in Brazils, spoke with

decision of affairs in the South Seas, was studious of his

Parliamentary and itinerant speeches, and had the general solidity and

suffusive pinkness of a healthy Briton on the central table-land of

life. Catherine, aware of a tacit understanding that he was an

undeniable husband for an heiress, had nothing to say against him but

that he was thoroughly tiresome to her. Mr. Bult was amiably confident,

and had no idea that his insensibility to counterpoint could ever be

reckoned against him. Klesmer he hardly regarded in the light of a

serious human being who ought to have a vote; and he did not mind Miss

Arrowpoint's addiction to music any more than her probable expenses in

antique lace. He was consequently a little amazed at an after-dinner

outburst of Klesmer's on the lack of idealism in English politics,

which left all mutuality between distant races to be determined simply

by the need of a market; the crusades, to his mind, had at least this

excuse, that they had a banner of sentiment round which generous

feelings could rally: of course, the scoundrels rallied too, but what

then? they rally in equal force round your advertisement van of "Buy

cheap, sell dear." On this theme Klesmer's eloquence, gesticulatory and

other, went on for a little while like stray fireworks accidentally

ignited, and then sank into immovable silence. Mr. Bult was not

surprised that Klesmer's opinions should be flighty, but was astonished

at his command of English idiom and his ability to put a point in a way

that would have told at a constituents' dinner--to be accounted for

probably by his being a Pole, or a Czech, or something of that

fermenting sort, in a state of political refugeeism which had obliged

him to make a profession of his music; and that evening in the

drawing-room he for the first time went up to Klesmer at the piano,

Miss Arrowpoint being near, and said--

"I had no idea before that you were a political man."

Klesmer's only answer was to fold his arms, put out his nether lip, and

stare at Mr. Bult.

"You must have been used to public speaking. You speak uncommonly well,

though I don't agree with you. From what you said about sentiment, I

fancy you are a Panslavist."

"No; my name is Elijah. I am the Wandering Jew," said Klesmer, flashing

a smile at Miss Arrowpoint, and suddenly making a mysterious, wind-like

rush backward and forward on the piano. Mr. Bult felt this buffoonery

rather offensive and Polish, but--Miss Arrowpoint being there--did not

like to move away.

"Herr Klesmer has cosmopolitan ideas," said Miss Arrowpoint, trying to

make the best of the situation. "He looks forward to a fusion of races."

"With all my heart," said Mr. Bult, willing to be gracious. "I was sure

he had too much talent to be a mere musician."

"Ah, sir, you are under some mistake there," said Klesmer, firing up.

"No man has too much talent to be a musician. Most men have too little.

A creative artist is no more a mere musician than a great statesman is

a mere politician. We are not ingenious puppets, sir, who live in a box

and look out on the world only when it is gaping for amusement. We help

to rule the nations and make the age as much as any other public men.

We count ourselves on level benches with legislators. And a man who

speaks effectively through music is compelled to something more

difficult than parliamentary eloquence."

With the last word Klesmer wheeled from the piano and walked away.

Miss Arrowpoint colored, and Mr. Bult observed, with his usual

phlegmatic stolidity, "Your pianist does not think small beer of

himself."

"Herr Klesmer is something more than a pianist," said Miss Arrowpoint,

apologetically. "He is a great musician in the fullest sense of the

word. He will rank with Schubert and Mendelssohn."

"Ah, you ladies understand these things," said Mr. Bult, none the less

convinced that these things were frivolous because Klesmer had shown

himself a coxcomb.

Catherine, always sorry when Klesmer gave himself airs, found an

opportunity the next day in the music-room to say, "Why were you so

heated last night with Mr. Bult? He meant no harm."

"You wish me to be complaisant to him?" said Klesmer, rather fiercely.

"I think it is hardly worth your while to be other than civil."

"You find no difficulty in tolerating him, then?--you have a respect

for a political platitudinarian as insensible as an ox to everything he

can't turn into political capital. You think his monumental obtuseness

suited to the dignity of the English gentleman."

"I did not say that."

"You mean that I acted without dignity, and you are offended with me."

"Now you are slightly nearer the truth," said Catherine, smiling.

"Then I had better put my burial-clothes in my portmanteau and set off

at once."

"I don't see that. If I have to bear your criticism of my operetta, you

should not mind my criticism of your impatience."

"But I do mind it. You would have wished me to take his ignorant

impertinence about a 'mere musician' without letting him know his

place. I am to hear my gods blasphemed as well as myself insulted. But

I beg pardon. It is impossible you should see the matter as I do. Even

you can't understand the wrath of the artist: he is of another caste

for you."

"That is true," said Catherine, with some betrayal of feeling. "He is

of a caste to which I look up--a caste above mine."

Klesmer, who had been seated at a table looking over scores, started up

and walked to a little distance, from which he said--

"That is finely felt--I am grateful. But I had better go, all the same.

I have made up my mind to go, for good and all. You can get on

exceedingly well without me: your operetta is on wheels--it will go of

itself. And your Mr. Bull's company fits me 'wie die Faust ins Auge.' I

am neglecting my engagements. I must go off to St. Petersburg."

There was no answer.

"You agree with me that I had better go?" said Klesmer, with some

irritation.

"Certainly; if that is what your business and feeling prompt. I have

only to wonder that you have consented to give us so much of your time

in the last year. There must be treble the interest to you anywhere

else. I have never thought of you consenting to come here as anything

else than a sacrifice."

"Why should I make the sacrifice?" said Klesmer, going to seat himself

at the piano, and touching the keys so as to give with the delicacy of

an echo in the far distance a melody which he had set to Heine's "Ich

hab' dich geliebet und liebe dich noch."

"That is the mystery," said Catherine, not wanting to affect anything,

but from mere agitation. From the same cause she was tearing a piece of

paper into minute morsels, as if at a task of utmost multiplication

imposed by a cruel fairy.

"You can conceive no motive?" said Klesmer, folding his arms.

"None that seems in the least probable."

"Then I shall tell you. It is because you are to me the chief woman in

the world--the throned lady whose colors I carry between my heart and

my armor."

Catherine's hands trembled so much that she could no longer tear the

paper: still less could her lips utter a word. Klesmer went on--

"This would be the last impertinence in me, if I meant to found

anything upon it. That is out of the question. I meant no such thing.

But you once said it was your doom to suspect every man who courted you

of being an adventurer, and what made you angriest was men's imputing

to you the folly of believing that they courted you for your own sake.

Did you not say so?"

"Very likely," was the answer, in a low murmur.

"It was a bitter word. Well, at least one man who has seen women as

plenty as flowers in May has lingered about you for your own sake. And

since he is one whom you can never marry, you will believe him. There

is an argument in favor of some other man. But don't give yourself for

a meal to a minotaur like Bult. I shall go now and pack. I shall make

my excuses to Mrs. Arrowpoint." Klesmer rose as he ended, and walked

quickly toward the door.

"You must take this heap of manuscript," then said Catherine, suddenly

making a desperate effort. She had risen to fetch the heap from another

table. Klesmer came back, and they had the length of the folio sheets

between them.

"Why should I not marry the man who loves me, if I love him?" said

Catherine. To her the effort was something like the leap of a woman

from the deck into the lifeboat.

"It would be too hard--impossible--you could not carry it through. I am

not worth what you would have to encounter. I will not accept the

sacrifice. It would be thought a \_mÃ©salliance\_ for you and I should be

liable to the worst accusations."

"Is it the accusations you are afraid of? I am afraid of nothing but

that we should miss the passing of our lives together."

The decisive word had been spoken: there was no doubt concerning the

end willed by each: there only remained the way of arriving at it, and

Catherine determined to take the straightest possible. She went to her

father and mother in the library, and told them that she had promised

to marry Klesmer.

Mrs. Arrowpoint's state of mind was pitiable. Imagine Jean Jacques,

after his essay on the corrupting influence of the arts, waking up

among children of nature who had no idea of grilling the raw bone they

offered him for breakfast with the primitive flint knife; or Saint

Just, after fervidly denouncing all recognition of pre-eminence,

receiving a vote of thanks for the unbroken mediocrity of his speech,

which warranted the dullest patriots in delivering themselves at equal

length. Something of the same sort befell the authoress of "Tasso,"

when what she had safely demanded of the dead Leonora was enacted by

her own Catherine. It is hard for us to live up to our own eloquence,

and keep pace with our winged words, while we are treading the solid

earth and are liable to heavy dining. Besides, it has long been

understood that the proprieties of literature are not those of

practical life. Mrs. Arrowpoint naturally wished for the best of

everything. She not only liked to feel herself at a higher level of

literary sentiment than the ladies with whom she associated; she wished

not to be behind them in any point of social consideration. While

Klesmer was seen in the light of a patronized musician, his

peculiarities were picturesque and acceptable: but to see him by a

sudden flash in the light of her son-in-law gave her a burning sense of

what the world would say. And the poor lady had been used to represent

her Catherine as a model of excellence.

Under the first shock she forgot everything but her anger, and snatched

at any phrase that would serve as a weapon.

"If Klesmer has presumed to offer himself to you, your father shall

horsewhip him off the premises. Pray, speak, Mr. Arrowpoint."

The father took his cigar from his mouth, and rose to the occasion by

saying, "This will never do, Cath."

"Do!" cried Mrs. Arrowpoint; "who in their senses ever thought it would

do? You might as well say poisoning and strangling will not do. It is a

comedy you have got up, Catherine. Else you are mad."

"I am quite sane and serious, mamma, and Herr Klesmer is not to blame.

He never thought of my marrying him. I found out that he loved me, and

loving him, I told him I would marry him."

"Leave that unsaid, Catherine," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, bitterly. "Every

one else will say that for you. You will be a public fable. Every one

will say that you must have made an offer to a man who has been paid to

come to the house--who is nobody knows what--a gypsy, a Jew, a mere

bubble of the earth."

"Never mind, mamma," said Catherine, indignant in her turn. "We all

know he is a genius--as Tasso was."

"Those times were not these, nor is Klesmer Tasso," said Mrs.

Arrowpoint, getting more heated. "There is no sting in \_that\_ sarcasm,

except the sting of undutifulness."

"I am sorry to hurt you, mamma. But I will not give up the happiness of

my life to ideas that I don't believe in and customs I have no respect

for."

"You have lost all sense of duty, then? You have forgotten that you are

our only child--that it lies with you to place a great property in the

right hands?"

"What are the right hands? My grandfather gained the property in trade."

"Mr. Arrowpoint, \_will\_ you sit by and hear this without speaking?"

"I am a gentleman, Cath. We expect you to marry a gentleman," said the

father, exerting himself.

"And a man connected with the institutions of this country," said the

mother. "A woman in your position has serious duties. Where duty and

inclination clash, she must follow duty."

"I don't deny that," said Catherine, getting colder in proportion to

her mother's heat. "But one may say very true things and apply them

falsely. People can easily take the sacred word duty as a name for what

they desire any one else to do."

"Your parent's desire makes no duty for you, then?"

"Yes, within reason. But before I give up the happiness of my life--"

"Catherine, Catherine, it will not be your happiness," said Mrs.

Arrowpoint, in her most raven-like tones.

"Well, what seems to me my happiness--before I give it up, I must see

some better reason than the wish that I should marry a nobleman, or a

man who votes with a party that he may be turned into a nobleman. I

feel at liberty to marry the man I love and think worthy, unless some

higher duty forbids."

"And so it does, Catherine, though you are blinded and cannot see it.

It is a woman's duty not to lower herself. You are lowering yourself.

Mr. Arrowpoint, will you tell your daughter what is her duty?"

"You must see, Catherine, that Klesmer is not the man for you," said

Mr. Arrowpoint. "He won't do at the head of estates. He has a deuced

foreign look--is an unpractical man."

"I really can't see what that has to do with it, papa. The land of

England has often passed into the hands of foreigners--Dutch soldiers,

sons of foreign women of bad character:--if our land were sold

to-morrow it would very likely pass into the hands of some foreign

merchant on 'Change. It is in everybody's mouth that successful

swindlers may buy up half the land in the country. How can I stem that

tide?"

"It will never do to argue about marriage, Cath," said Mr. Arrowpoint.

"It's no use getting up the subject like a parliamentary question. We

must do as other people do. We must think of the nation and the public

good."

"I can't see any public good concerned here, papa," said Catherine.

"Why is it to be expected of any heiress that she should carry the

property gained in trade into the hands of a certain class? That seems

to be a ridiculous mishmash of superannuated customs and false

ambition. I should call it a public evil. People had better make a new

sort of public good by changing their ambitions."

"That is mere sophistry, Catherine," said Mrs. Arrowpoint. "Because you

don't wish to marry a nobleman, you are not obliged to marry a

mountebank or a charlatan."

"I cannot understand the application of such words, mamma."

"No, I dare say not," rejoined Mrs. Arrowpoint, with significant scorn.

"You have got to a pitch at which we are not likely to understand each

other."

"It can't be done, Cath," said Mr. Arrowpoint, wishing to substitute a

better-humored reasoning for his wife's impetuosity. "A man like

Klesmer can't marry such a property as yours. It can't be done."

"It certainly will not be done," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, imperiously.

"Where is the man? Let him be fetched."

"I cannot fetch him to be insulted," said Catherine. "Nothing will be

achieved by that."

"I suppose you would wish him to know that in marrying you he will not

marry your fortune," said Mrs. Arrowpoint.

"Certainly; if it were so, I should wish him to know it."

"Then you had better fetch him."

Catherine only went into the music-room and said, "Come." She felt no

need to prepare Klesmer.

"Herr Klesmer," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, with a rather contemptuous

stateliness, "it is unnecessary to repeat what has passed between us

and our daughter. Mr. Arrowpoint will tell you our resolution."

"Your marrying is out of the question," said Mr. Arrowpoint, rather too

heavily weighted with his task, and standing in an embarrassment

unrelieved by a cigar. "It is a wild scheme altogether. A man has been

called out for less."

"You have taken a base advantage of our confidence," burst in Mrs.

Arrowpoint, unable to carry out her purpose and leave the burden of

speech to her husband.

Klesmer made a low bow in silent irony.

"The pretension is ridiculous. You had better give it up and leave the

house at once," continued Mr. Arrowpoint. He wished to do without

mentioning the money.

"I can give up nothing without reference to your daughter's wish," said

Klesmer. "My engagement is to her."

"It is useless to discuss the question," said Mrs. Arrowpoint. "We

shall never consent to the marriage. If Catherine disobeys us we shall

disinherit her. You will not marry her fortune. It is right you should

know that."

"Madam, her fortune has been the only thing I have had to regret about

her. But I must ask her if she will not think the sacrifice greater

than I am worthy of."

"It is no sacrifice to me," said Catherine, "except that I am sorry to

hurt my father and mother. I have always felt my fortune to be a

wretched fatality of my life."

"You mean to defy us, then?" said Mrs. Arrowpoint.

"I mean to marry Herr Klesmer," said Catherine, firmly.

"He had better not count on our relenting," said Mrs. Arrowpoint, whose

manners suffered from that impunity in insult which has been reckoned

among the privileges of women.

"Madam," said Klesmer, "certain reasons forbid me to retort. But

understand that I consider it out of the power either of you, or of

your fortune, to confer on me anything that I value. My rank as an

artist is of my own winning, and I would not exchange it for any other.

I am able to maintain your daughter, and I ask for no change in my life

but her companionship."

"You will leave the house, however," said Mrs. Arrowpoint.

"I go at once," said Klesmer, bowing and quitting the room.

"Let there be no misunderstanding, mamma," said Catherine; "I consider

myself engaged to Herr Klesmer, and I intend to marry him."

The mother turned her head away and waved her hand in sign of dismissal.

"It's all very fine," said Mr. Arrowpoint, when Catherine was gone;

"but what the deuce are we to do with the property?"

"There is Harry Brendall. He can take the name."

"Harry Brendall will get through it all in no time," said Mr.

Arrowpoint, relighting his cigar.

And thus, with nothing settled but the determination of the lovers,

Klesmer had left Quetcham.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Among the heirs of Art, as is the division of the promised land, each

has to win his portion by hard fighting: the bestowal is after the

manner of prophecy, and is a title without possession. To carry the

map of an ungotten estate in your pocket is a poor sort of copyhold.

And in fancy to cast his shoe over Eden is little warrant that a man

shall ever set the sole of his foot on an acre of his own there.

The most obstinate beliefs that mortals entertain about themselves are

such as they have no evidence for beyond a constant, spontaneous

pulsing of their self-satisfaction--as it were a hidden seed of

madness, a confidence that they can move the world without precise

notion of standing-place or lever.

"Pray go to church, mamma," said Gwendolen the next morning. "I prefer

seeing Herr Klesmer alone." (He had written in reply to her note that

he would be with her at eleven.)

"That is hardly correct, I think," said Mrs. Davilow, anxiously.

"Our affairs are too serious for us to think of such nonsensical

rules," said Gwendolen, contemptuously. "They are insulting as well as

ridiculous."

"You would not mind Isabel sitting with you? She would be reading in a

corner."

"No; she could not: she would bite her nails and stare. It would be too

irritating. Trust my judgment, mamma, I must be alone, Take them all to

church."

Gwendolen had her way, of course; only that Miss Merry and two of the

girls stayed at home, to give the house a look of habitation by sitting

at the dining-room windows.

It was a delicious Sunday morning. The melancholy waning sunshine of

autumn rested on the half-strown grass and came mildly through the

windows in slanting bands of brightness over the old furniture, and the

glass panel that reflected the furniture; over the tapestried chairs

with their faded flower-wreaths, the dark enigmatic pictures, the

superannuated organ at which Gwendolen had pleased herself with acting

Saint Cecelia on her first joyous arrival, the crowd of pallid, dusty

knicknacks seen through the open doors of the antechamber where she had

achieved the wearing of her Greek dress as Hermione. This last memory

was just now very busy in her; for had not Klesmer then been struck

with admiration of her pose and expression? Whatever he had said,

whatever she imagined him to have thought, was at this moment pointed

with keenest interest for her: perhaps she had never before in her life

felt so inwardly dependent, so consciously in need of another person's

opinion. There was a new fluttering of spirit within her, a new element

of deliberation in her self-estimate which had hitherto been a blissful

gift of intuition. Still it was the recurrent burden of her inward

soliloquy that Klesmer had seen but little of her, and any unfavorable

conclusion of his must have too narrow a foundation. She really felt

clever enough for anything.

To fill up the time she collected her volumes and pieces of music, and

laying them on the top of the piano, set herself to classify them. Then

catching the reflection of her movements in the glass panel, she was

diverted to the contemplation of the image there and walked toward it.

Dressed in black, without a single ornament, and with the warm

whiteness of her skin set off between her light-brown coronet of hair

and her square-cut bodice, she might have tempted an artist to try

again the Roman trick of a statue in black, white, and tawny marble.

Seeing her image slowly advancing, she thought "I \_am\_ beautiful"--not

exultingly, but with grave decision. Being beautiful was after all the

condition on which she most needed external testimony. If any one

objected to the turn of her nose or the form of her neck and chin, she

had not the sense that she could presently show her power of attainment

in these branches of feminine perfection.

There was not much time to fill up in this way before the sound of

wheels, the loud ring, and the opening doors assured her that she was

not by any accident to be disappointed. This slightly increased her

inward flutter. In spite of her self-confidence, she dreaded Klesmer as

part of that unmanageable world which was independent of her

wishes--something vitriolic that would not cease to burn because you

smiled or frowned at it. Poor thing! she was at a higher crisis of her

woman's fate than in her last experience with Grandcourt. The

questioning then, was whether she should take a particular man as a

husband. The inmost fold of her questioning now was whether she need

take a husband at all--whether she could not achieve substantially for

herself and know gratified ambition without bondage.

Klesmer made his most deferential bow in the wide doorway of the

antechamber--showing also the deference of the finest gray kerseymere

trousers and perfect gloves (the 'masters of those who know' are

happily altogether human). Gwendolen met him with unusual gravity, and

holding out her hand said, "It is most kind of you to come, Herr

Klesmer. I hope you have not thought me presumptuous."

"I took your wish as a command that did me honor," said Klesmer, with

answering gravity. He was really putting by his own affairs in order to

give his utmost attention to what Gwendolen might have to say; but his

temperament was still in a state of excitation from the events of

yesterday, likely enough to give his expressions a more than usually

biting edge.

Gwendolen for once was under too great a strain of feeling to remember

formalities. She continued standing near the piano, and Klesmer took

his stand near the other end of it with his back to the light and his

terribly omniscient eyes upon her. No affectation was of use, and she

began without delay.

"I wish to consult you, Herr Klesmer. We have lost all our fortune; we

have nothing. I must get my own bread, and I desire to provide for my

mamma, so as to save her from any hardship. The only way I can think

of--and I should like it better than anything--is to be an actress--to

go on the stage. But, of course, I should like to take a high position,

and I thought--if you thought I could"--here Gwendolen became a little

more nervous--"it would be better for me to be a singer--to study

singing also."

Klesmer put down his hat upon the piano, and folded his arms as if to

concentrate himself.

"I know," Gwendolen resumed, turning from pale to pink and back

again--"I know that my method of singing is very defective; but I have

been ill taught. I could be better taught; I could study. And you will

understand my wish:--to sing and act too, like Grisi, is a much higher

position. Naturally, I should wish to take as high rank as I can. And I

can rely on your judgment. I am sure you will tell me the truth."

Gwendolen somehow had the conviction that now she made this serious

appeal the truth would be favorable.

Still Klesmer did not speak. He drew off his gloves quickly, tossed

them into his hat, rested his hands on his hips, and walked to the

other end of the room. He was filled with compassion for this girl: he

wanted to put a guard on his speech. When he turned again, he looked at

her with a mild frown of inquiry, and said with gentle though quick

utterance, "You have never seen anything, I think, of artists and their

lives?--I mean of musicians, actors, artists of that kind?"

"Oh, no," said Gwendolen, not perturbed by a reference to this obvious

fact in the history of a young lady hitherto well provided for.

"You are--pardon me," said Klesmer, again pausing near the piano--"in

coming to a conclusion on such a matter as this, everything must be

taken into consideration--you are perhaps twenty?"

"I am twenty-one," said Gwendolen, a slight fear rising in her. "Do you

think I am too old?"

Klesmer pouted his under lip and shook his long fingers upward in a

manner totally enigmatic.

"Many persons begin later than others," said Gwendolen, betrayed by her

habitual consciousness of having valuable information to bestow.

Klesmer took no notice, but said with more studied gentleness than

ever, "You have probably not thought of an artistic career until now:

you did not entertain the notion, the longing--what shall I say?--you

did not wish yourself an actress, or anything of that sort, till the

present trouble?"

"Not exactly: but I was fond of acting. I have acted; you saw me, if

you remember--you saw me here in charades, and as Hermione," said

Gwendolen, really fearing that Klesmer had forgotten.

"Yes, yes," he answered quickly, "I remember--I remember perfectly,"

and again walked to the other end of the room, It was difficult for him

to refrain from this kind of movement when he was in any argument

either audible or silent.

Gwendolen felt that she was being weighed. The delay was unpleasant.

But she did not yet conceive that the scale could dip on the wrong

side, and it seemed to her only graceful to say, "I shall be very much

obliged to you for taking the trouble to give me your advice, whatever

it maybe."

"Miss Harleth," said Klesmer, turning toward her and speaking with a

slight increase of accent, "I will veil nothing from you in this

matter. I should reckon myself guilty if I put a false visage on

things--made them too black or too white. The gods have a curse for him

who willingly tells another the wrong road. And if I misled one who is

so young, so beautiful--who, I trust, will find her happiness along the

right road, I should regard myself as a--\_BÃ¶sewicht\_." In the last word

Klesmer's voice had dropped to a loud whisper.

Gwendolen felt a sinking of heart under this unexpected solemnity, and

kept a sort of fascinated gaze on Klesmer's face, as he went on.

"You are a beautiful young lady--you have been brought up in ease--you

have done what you would--you have not said to yourself, 'I must know

this exactly,' 'I must understand this exactly,' 'I must do this

exactly,'"--in uttering these three terrible \_musts\_, Klesmer lifted up

three long fingers in succession. "In sum, you have not been called

upon to be anything but a charming young lady, whom it is an

impoliteness to find fault with."

He paused an instant; then resting his fingers on his hips again, and

thrusting out his powerful chin, he said--

"Well, then, with that preparation, you wish to try the life of an

artist; you wish to try a life of arduous, unceasing work,

and--uncertain praise. Your praise would have to be earned, like your

bread; and both would come slowly, scantily--what do I say?--they may

hardly come at all."

This tone of discouragement, which Klesmer had hoped might suffice

without anything more unpleasant, roused some resistance in Gwendolen.

With a slight turn of her head away from him, and an air of pique, she

said--

"I thought that you, being an artist, would consider the life one of

the most honorable and delightful. And if I can do nothing better?--I

suppose I can put up with the same risks as other people do."

"Do nothing better?" said Klesmer, a little fired. "No, my dear Miss

Harleth, you could do nothing better--neither man nor woman could do

anything better--if you could do what was best or good of its kind. I

am not decrying the life of the true artist. I am exalting it. I say,

it is out of the reach of any but choice organizations--natures framed

to love perfection and to labor for it; ready, like all true lovers, to

endure, to wait, to say, I am not yet worthy, but she--Art, my

mistress--is worthy, and I will live to merit her. An honorable life?

Yes. But the honor comes from the inward vocation and the hard-won

achievement: there is no honor in donning the life as a livery."

Some excitement of yesterday had revived in Klesmer and hurried him

into speech a little aloof from his immediate friendly purpose. He had

wished as delicately as possible to rouse in Gwendolen a sense of her

unfitness for a perilous, difficult course; but it was his wont to be

angry with the pretensions of incompetence, and he was in danger of

getting chafed. Conscious of this, he paused suddenly. But Gwendolen's

chief impression was that he had not yet denied her the power of doing

what would be good of its kind. Klesmer's fervor seemed to be a sort of

glamor such as he was prone to throw over things in general; and what

she desired to assure him of was that she was not afraid of some

preliminary hardships. The belief that to present herself in public on

the stage must produce an effect such as she had been used to feel

certain of in private life; was like a bit of her flesh--it was not to

be peeled off readily, but must come with blood and pain. She said, in

a tone of some insistance--

"I am quite prepared to bear hardships at first. Of course no one can

become celebrated all at once. And it is not necessary that every one

should be first-rate--either actresses or singers. If you would be so

kind as to tell me what steps I should take, I shall have the courage

to take them. I don't mind going up hill. It will be easier than the

dead level of being a governess. I will take any steps you recommend."

Klesmer was convinced now that he must speak plainly.

"I will tell you the steps, not that I recommend, but that will be

forced upon you. It is all one, so far, what your goal will

be--excellence, celebrity, second, third rateness--it is all one. You

must go to town under the protection of your mother. You must put

yourself under training--musical, dramatic, theatrical:--whatever you

desire to do you have to learn"--here Gwendolen looked as if she were

going to speak, but Klesmer lifted up his hand and said, decisively, "I

know. You have exercised your talents--you recite--you sing--from the

drawing-room \_standpunkt\_. My dear FrÃ¤ulein, you must unlearn all that.

You have not yet conceived what excellence is: you must unlearn your

mistaken admirations. You must know what you have to strive for, and

then you must subdue your mind and body to unbroken discipline. Your

mind, I say. For you must not be thinking of celebrity: put that candle

out of your eyes, and look only at excellence. You would of course earn

nothing--you could get no engagement for a long while. You would need

money for yourself and your family. But that," here Klesmer frowned and

shook his fingers as if to dismiss a triviality, "that could perhaps be

found."

Gwendolen turned pink and pale during this speech. Her pride had felt a

terrible knife-edge, and the last sentence only made the smart keener.

She was conscious of appearing moved, and tried to escape from her

weakness by suddenly walking to a seat and pointing out a chair to

Klesmer. He did not take it, but turned a little in order to face her

and leaned against the piano. At that moment she wished that she had

not sent for him: this first experience of being taken on some other

ground than that of her social rank and her beauty was becoming bitter

to her. Klesmer, preoccupied with a serious purpose, went on without

change of tone.

"Now, what sort of issue might be fairly expected from all this

self-denial? You would ask that. It is right that your eyes should be

open to it. I will tell you truthfully. This issue would be uncertain,

and, most probably, would not be worth much."

At these relentless words Klesmer put out his lip and looked through

his spectacles with the air of a monster impenetrable by beauty.

Gwendolen's eyes began to burn, but the dread of showing weakness urged

her to added self-control. She compelled herself to say, in a hard

tone--

"You think I want talent, or am too old to begin."

Klesmer made a sort of hum, and then descended on an emphatic "Yes! The

desire and the training should have begun seven years ago--or a good

deal earlier. A mountebank's child who helps her father to earn

shillings when she is six years old--a child that inherits a singing

throat from a long line of choristers and learns to sing as it learns

to talk, has a likelier beginning. Any great achievement in acting or

in music grows with the growth. Whenever an artist has been able to

say, 'I came, I saw, I conquered,' it has been at the end of patient

practice. Genius at first is little more than a great capacity for

receiving discipline. Singing and acting, like the fine dexterity of

the juggler with his cups and balls, require a shaping of the organs

toward a finer and finer certainty of effect. Your muscles--your whole

frame--must go like a watch, true, true to a hair. That is the work of

spring-time, before habits have been determined."

"I did not pretend to genius," said Gwendolen, still feeling that she

might somehow do what Klesmer wanted to represent as impossible. "I

only suppose that I might have a little talent--enough to improve."

"I don't deny that," said Klesmer. "If you had been put in the right

track some years ago and had worked well you might now have made a

public singer, though I don't think your voice would have counted for

much in public. For the stage your personal charms and intelligence

might then have told without the present drawback of inexperience--lack

of discipline--lack of instruction."

Certainly Klesmer seemed cruel, but his feeling was the reverse of

cruel. Our speech, even when we are most single-minded, can never take

its line absolutely from one impulse; but Klesmer's was, as far as

possible, directed by compassion for poor Gwendolen's ignorant

eagerness to enter on a course of which he saw all the miserable

details with a definiteness which he could not if he would have

conveyed to her mind.

Gwendolen, however, was not convinced. Her self-opinion rallied, and

since the counselor whom she had called in gave a decision of such

severe peremptoriness, she was tempted to think that his judgment was

not only fallible but biased. It occurred to her that a simpler and

wiser step for her to have taken would have been to send a letter

through the post to the manager of a London theatre, asking him to make

an appointment. She would make no further reference to her singing;

Klesmer, she saw, had set himself against her singing. But she felt

equal to arguing with him about her going on the stage, and she

answered in a resistant tone--

"I understood, of course, that no one can be a finished actress at

once. It may be impossible to tell beforehand whether I should succeed;

but that seems to me a reason why I should try. I should have thought

that I might have taken an engagement at a theatre meanwhile, so as to

earn money and study at the same time."

"Can't be done, my dear Miss Harleth--I speak plainly--it can't be

done. I must clear your mind of these notions which have no more

resemblance to reality than a pantomime. Ladies and gentlemen think

that when they have made their toilet and drawn on their gloves they

are as presentable on the stage as in a drawing-room. No manager thinks

that. With all your grace and charm, if you were to present yourself as

an aspirant to the stage, a manager would either require you to pay as

an amateur for being allowed to perform or he would tell you to go and

be taught--trained to bear yourself on the stage, as a horse, however

beautiful, must be trained for the circus; to say nothing of that study

which would enable you to personate a character consistently, and

animate it with the natural language of face, gesture, and tone. For

you to get an engagement fit for you straight away is out of the

question."

"I really cannot understand that," said Gwendolen, rather

haughtily--then, checking herself, she added in another tone--"I shall

be obliged to you if you will explain how it is that such poor

actresses get engaged. I have been to the theatre several times, and I

am sure there were actresses who seemed to me to act not at all well

and who were quite plain."

"Ah, my dear Miss Harleth, that is the easy criticism of the buyer. We

who buy slippers toss away this pair and the other as clumsy; but there

went an apprenticeship to the making of them. Excuse me; you could not

at present teach one of those actresses; but there is certainly much

that she could teach you. For example, she can pitch her voice so as to

be heard: ten to one you could not do it till after many trials. Merely

to stand and move on the stage is an art--requires practice. It is

understood that we are not now talking of a \_comparse\_ in a petty

theatre who earns the wages of a needle-woman. That is out of the

question for you."

"Of course I must earn more than that," said Gwendolen, with a sense of

wincing rather than of being refuted, "but I think I could soon learn

to do tolerably well all those little things you have mentioned. I am

not so very stupid. And even in Paris, I am sure, I saw two actresses

playing important ladies' parts who were not at all ladies and quite

ugly. I suppose I have no particular talent, but I \_must\_ think it is

an advantage, even on the stage, to be a lady and not a perfect fright."

"Ah, let us understand each other," said Klesmer, with a flash of new

meaning. "I was speaking of what you would have to go through if you

aimed at becoming a real artist--if you took music and the drama as a

higher vocation in which you would strive after excellence. On that

head, what I have said stands fast. You would find--after your

education in doing things slackly for one-and-twenty years--great

difficulties in study; you would find mortifications in the treatment

you would get when you presented yourself on the footing of skill. You

would be subjected to tests; people would no longer feign not to see

your blunders. You would at first only be accepted on trial. You would

have to bear what I may call a glaring insignificance: any success must

be won by the utmost patience. You would have to keep your place in a

crowd, and after all it is likely you would lose it and get out of

sight. If you determine to face these hardships and still try, you will

have the dignity of a high purpose, even though you may have chosen

unfortunately. You will have some merit, though you may win no prize.

You have asked my judgment on your chances of winning. I don't pretend

to speak absolutely; but measuring probabilities, my judgment is:--you

will hardly achieve more than mediocrity."

Klesmer had delivered himself with emphatic rapidity, and now paused a

moment. Gwendolen was motionless, looking at her hands, which lay over

each other on her lap, till the deep-toned, long-drawn "\_But\_," with

which he resumed, had a startling effect, and made her look at him

again.

"But--there are certainly other ideas, other dispositions with which a

young lady may take up an art that will bring her before the public.

She may rely on the unquestioned power of her beauty as a passport. She

may desire to exhibit herself to an admiration which dispenses with

skill. This goes a certain way on the stage: not in music: but on the

stage, beauty is taken when there is nothing more commanding to be had.

Not without some drilling, however: as I have said before,

technicalities have in any case to be mastered. But these excepted, we

have here nothing to do with art. The woman who takes up this career is

not an artist: she is usually one who thinks of entering on a luxurious

life by a short and easy road--perhaps by marriage--that is her most

brilliant chance, and the rarest. Still, her career will not be

luxurious to begin with: she can hardly earn her own poor bread

independently at once, and the indignities she will be liable to are

such as I will not speak of."

"I desire to be independent," said Gwendolen, deeply stung and

confusedly apprehending some scorn for herself in Klesmer's words.

"That was my reason for asking whether I could not get an immediate

engagement. Of course I cannot know how things go on about theatres.

But I thought that I could have made myself independent. I have no

money, and I will not accept help from any one."

Her wounded pride could not rest without making this disclaimer. It was

intolerable to her that Klesmer should imagine her to have expected

other help from him than advice.

"That is a hard saying for your friends," said Klesmer, recovering the

gentleness of tone with which he had begun the conversation. "I have

given you pain. That was inevitable. I was bound to put the truth, the

unvarnished truth, before you. I have not said--I will not say--you

will do wrong to choose the hard, climbing path of an endeavoring

artist. You have to compare its difficulties with those of any less

hazardous--any more private course which opens itself to you. If you

take that more courageous resolve I will ask leave to shake hands with

you on the strength of our freemasonry, where we are all vowed to the

service of art, and to serve her by helping every fellow-servant."

Gwendolen was silent, again looking at her hands. She felt herself very

far away from taking the resolve that would enforce acceptance; and

after waiting an instant or two, Klesmer went on with deepened

seriousness.

"Where there is the duty of service there must be the duty of accepting

it. The question is not one of personal obligation. And in relation to

practical matters immediately affecting your future--excuse my

permitting myself to mention in confidence an affair of my own. I am

expecting an event which would make it easy for me to exert myself on

your behalf in furthering your opportunities of instruction and

residence in London--under the care, that is, of your family--without

need for anxiety on your part. If you resolve to take art as a

bread-study, you need only undertake the study at first; the bread will

be found without trouble. The event I mean is my marriage--in fact--you

will receive this as a matter of confidence--my marriage with Miss

Arrowpoint, which will more than double such right as I have to be

trusted by you as a friend. Your friendship will have greatly risen in

value for \_her\_ by your having adopted that generous labor."

Gwendolen's face had begun to burn. That Klesmer was about to marry

Miss Arrowpoint caused her no surprise, and at another moment she would

have amused herself in quickly imagining the scenes that must have

occurred at Quetcham. But what engrossed her feeling, what filled her

imagination now, was the panorama of her own immediate future that

Klesmer's words seemed to have unfolded. The suggestion of Miss

Arrowpoint as a patroness was only another detail added to its

repulsiveness: Klesmer's proposal to help her seemed an additional

irritation after the humiliating judgment he had passed on her

capabilities. His words had really bitten into her self-confidence and

turned it into the pain of a bleeding wound; and the idea of presenting

herself before other judges was now poisoned with the dread that they

also might be harsh; they also would not recognize the talent she was

conscious of. But she controlled herself, and rose from her seat before

she made any answer. It seemed natural that she should pause. She went

to the piano and looked absently at leaves of music, pinching up the

corners. At last she turned toward Klesmer and said, with almost her

usual air of proud equality, which in this interview had not been

hitherto perceptible.

"I congratulate you sincerely, Herr Klesmer. I think I never saw any

one so admirable as Miss Arrowpoint. And I have to thank you for every

sort of kindness this morning. But I can't decide now. If I make the

resolve you have spoken of, I will use your permission--I will let you

know. But I fear the obstacles are too great. In any case, I am deeply

obliged to you. It was very bold of me to ask you to take this trouble."

Klesmer's inward remark was, "She will never let me know." But with the

most thorough respect in his manner, he said, "Command me at any time.

There is an address on this card which will always find me with little

delay."

When he had taken up his hat and was going to make his bow, Gwendolen's

better self, conscious of an ingratitude which the clear-seeing Klesmer

must have penetrated, made a desperate effort to find its way above the

stifling layers of egoistic disappointment and irritation. Looking at

him with a glance of the old gayety, she put out her hand, and said

with a smile, "If I take the wrong road, it will not be because of your

flattery."

"God forbid that you should take any road but one where you will find

and give happiness!" said Klesmer, fervently. Then, in foreign fashion,

he touched her fingers lightly with his lips, and in another minute she

heard the sound of his departing wheels getting more distant on the

gravel.

Gwendolen had never in her life felt so miserable. No sob came, no

passion of tears, to relieve her. Her eyes were burning; and the

noonday only brought into more dreary clearness the absence of interest

from her life. All memories, all objects, the pieces of music

displayed, the open piano--the very reflection of herself in the

glass--seemed no better than the packed-up shows of a departing fair.

For the first time since her consciousness began, she was having a

vision of herself on the common level, and had lost the innate sense

that there were reasons why she should not be slighted, elbowed,

jostled--treated like a passenger with a third-class ticket, in spite

of private objections on her own part. She did not move about; the

prospects begotten by disappointment were too oppressively

preoccupying; she threw herself into the shadiest corner of a settee,

and pressed her fingers over her burning eyelids. Every word that

Klesmer had said seemed to have been branded into her memory, as most

words are which bring with them a new set of impressions and make an

epoch for us. Only a few hours before, the dawning smile of

self-contentment rested on her lips as she vaguely imagined a future

suited to her wishes: it seemed but the affair of a year or so for her

to become the most approved Juliet of the time: or, if Klesmer

encouraged her idea of being a singer, to proceed by more gradual steps

to her place in the opera, while she won money and applause by

occasional performances. Why not? At home, at school, among

acquaintances, she had been used to have her conscious superiority

admitted; and she had moved in a society where everything, from low

arithmetic to high art, is of the amateur kind, politely supposed to

fall short of perfection only because gentlemen and ladies are not

obliged to do more than they like--otherwise they would probably give

forth abler writings, and show themselves more commanding artists than

any the world is at present obliged to put up with. The self-confident

visions that had beguiled her were not of a highly exceptional kind;

and she had at least shown some rationality in consulting the person

who knew the most and had flattered her the least. In asking Klesmer's

advice, however, she had rather been borne up by a belief in his latent

admiration than bent on knowing anything more unfavorable that might

have lain behind his slight objections to her singing; and the truth

she had asked for, with an expectation that it would be agreeable, had

come like a lacerating thong.

"Too old--should have begun seven years ago--you will not, at best,

achieve more than mediocrity--hard, incessant work, uncertain

praise--bread coming slowly, scantily, perhaps not at

all--mortifications, people no longer feigning not to see your

blunders--glaring insignificance"--all these phrases rankled in her;

and even more galling was the hint that she could only be accepted on

the stage as a beauty who hoped to get a husband. The "indignities"

that she might be visited with had no very definite form for her, but

the mere association of anything called "indignity" with herself,

roused a resentful alarm. And along with the vaguer images which were

raised by those biting words, came the precise conception of

disagreeables which her experience enabled her to imagine. How could

she take her mamma and the four sisters to London? if it were not

possible for her to earn money at once? And as for submitting to be a

\_protÃ©gÃ©\_, and asking her mamma to submit with her to the humiliation

of being supported by Miss Arrowpoint--that was as bad as being a

governess; nay, worse; for suppose the end of all her study to be as

worthless as Klesmer clearly expected it to be, the sense of favors

received and never repaid, would embitter the miseries of

disappointment. Klesmer doubtless had magnificent ideas about helping

artists; but how could he know the feelings of ladies in such matters?

It was all over: she had entertained a mistaken hope; and there was an

end of it.

"An end of it!" said Gwendolen, aloud, starting from her seat as she

heard the steps and voices of her mamma and sisters coming in from

church. She hurried to the piano and began gathering together her

pieces of music with assumed diligence, while the expression on her

pale face and in her burning eyes was what would have suited a woman

enduring a wrong which she might not resent, but would probably revenge.

"Well, my darling," said gentle Mrs. Davilow, entering, "I see by the

wheel-marks that Klesmer has been here. Have you been satisfied with

the interview?" She had some guesses as to its object, but felt timid

about implying them.

"Satisfied, mamma? oh, yes," said Gwendolen, in a high, hard tone, for

which she must be excused, because she dreaded a scene of emotion. If

she did not set herself resolutely to feign proud indifference, she

felt that she must fall into a passionate outburst of despair, which

would cut her mamma more deeply than all the rest of their calamities.

"Your uncle and aunt were disappointed at not seeing you," said Mrs.

Davilow, coming near the piano, and watching Gwendolen's movements. "I

only said that you wanted rest."

"Quite right, mamma," said Gwendolen, in the same tone, turning to put

away some music.

"Am I not to know anything now, Gwendolen? Am I always to be in the

dark?" said Mrs. Davilow, too keenly sensitive to her daughter's manner

and expression not to fear that something painful had occurred.

"There is really nothing to tell now, mamma," said Gwendolen, in a

still higher voice. "I had a mistaken idea about something I could do.

Herr Klesmer has undeceived me. That is all."

"Don't look and speak in that way, my dear child: I cannot bear it,"

said Mrs. Davilow, breaking down. She felt an undefinable terror.

Gwendolen looked at her a moment in silence, biting her inner lip; then

she went up to her, and putting her hands on her mamma's shoulders,

said, with a drop in her voice to the lowest undertone, "Mamma, don't

speak to me now. It is useless to cry and waste our strength over what

can't be altered. You will live at Sawyer's Cottage, and I am going to

the bishop's daughters. There is no more to be said. Things cannot be

altered, and who cares? It makes no difference to any one else what we

do. We must try not to care ourselves. We must not give way. I dread

giving way. Help me to be quiet."

Mrs. Davilow was like a frightened child under her daughter's face and

voice; her tears were arrested and she went away in silence.

CHAPTER XXIV.

"I question things but do not find

One that will answer to my mind:

And all the world appears unkind."

--WORDSWORTH.

Gwendolen was glad that she had got through her interview with Klesmer

before meeting her uncle and aunt. She had made up her mind now that

there were only disagreeables before her, and she felt able to maintain

a dogged calm in the face of any humiliation that might be proposed.

The meeting did not happen until the Monday, when Gwendolen went to the

rectory with her mamma. They had called at Sawyer's Cottage by the way,

and had seen every cranny of the narrow rooms in a mid-day light,

unsoftened by blinds and curtains; for the furnishing to be done by

gleanings from the rectory had not yet begun.

"How \_shall\_ you endure it, mamma?" said Gwendolen, as they walked

away. She had not opened her lips while they were looking round at the

bare walls and floors, and the little garden with the cabbage-stalks,

and the yew arbor all dust and cobwebs within. "You and the four girls

all in that closet of a room, with the green and yellow paper pressing

on your eyes? And without me?"

"It will be some comfort that you have not to bear it too, dear."

"If it were not that I must get some money, I would rather be there

than go to be a governess."

"Don't set yourself against it beforehand, Gwendolen. If you go to the

palace you will have every luxury about you. And you know how much you

have always cared for that. You will not find it so hard as going up

and down those steep narrow stairs, and hearing the crockery rattle

through the house, and the dear girls talking."

"It is like a bad dream," said Gwendolen, impetuously. "I cannot

believe that my uncle will let you go to such a place. He ought to have

taken some other steps."

"Don't be unreasonable, dear child. What could he have done?"

"That was for him to find out. It seems to me a very extraordinary

world if people in our position must sink in this way all at once,"

said Gwendolen, the other worlds with which she was conversant being

constructed with a sense of fitness that arranged her own future

agreeably.

It was her temper that framed her sentences under this entirely new

pressure of evils: she could have spoken more suitably on the

vicissitudes in other people's lives, though it was never her

aspiration to express herself virtuously so much as cleverly--a point

to be remembered in extenuation of her words, which were usually worse

than she was.

And, notwithstanding the keen sense of her own bruises, she was capable

of some compunction when her uncle and aunt received her with a more

affectionate kindness than they had ever shown before. She could not

but be struck by the dignified cheerfulness with which they talked of

the necessary economies in their way of living, and in the education of

the boys. Mr. Gascoigne's worth of character, a little obscured by

worldly opportunities--as the poetic beauty of women is obscured by the

demands of fashionable dressing--showed itself to great advantage under

this sudden reduction of fortune. Prompt and methodical, he had set

himself not only to put down his carriage, but to reconsider his worn

suits of clothes, to leave off meat for breakfast, to do without

periodicals, to get Edwy from school and arrange hours of study for all

the boys under himself, and to order the whole establishment on the

sparest footing possible. For all healthy people economy has its

pleasures; and the rector's spirit had spread through the household.

Mrs. Gascoigne and Anna, who always made papa their model, really did

not miss anything they cared about for themselves, and in all sincerity

felt that the saddest part of the family losses was the change for Mrs.

Davilow and her children.

Anna for the first time could merge her resentment on behalf of Rex in

her sympathy with Gwendolen; and Mrs. Gascoigne was disposed to hope

that trouble would have a salutary effect on her niece, without

thinking it her duty to add any bitters by way of increasing the

salutariness. They had both been busy devising how to get blinds and

curtains for the cottage out of the household stores; but with delicate

feeling they left these matters in the back-ground, and talked at first

of Gwendolen's journey, and the comfort it was to her mamma to have her

at home again.

In fact there was nothing for Gwendolen to take as a justification for

extending her discontent with events to the persons immediately around

her, and she felt shaken into a more alert attention, as if by a call

to drill that everybody else was obeying, when her uncle began in a

voice of firm kindness to talk to her of the efforts he had been making

to get her a situation which would offer her as many advantages as

possible. Mr. Gascoigne had not forgotten Grandcourt, but the

possibility of further advances from that quarter was something too

vague for a man of his good sense to be determined by it: uncertainties

of that kind must not now slacken his action in doing the best he could

for his niece under actual conditions.

"I felt that there was no time to be lost, Gwendolen; for a position in

a good family where you will have some consideration is not to be had

at a moment's notice. And however long we waited we could hardly find

one where you would be better off than at Bishop Mompert's. I am known

to both him and Mrs. Mompert, and that of course is an advantage to

you. Our correspondence has gone on favorably; but I cannot be

surprised that Mrs. Mompert wishes to see you before making an absolute

engagement. She thinks of arranging for you to meet her at Wanchester

when she is on her way to town. I dare say you will feel the interview

rather trying for you, my dear; but you will have a little time to

prepare your mind."

"Do you know \_why\_ she wants to see me, uncle?" said Gwendolen, whose

mind had quickly gone over various reasons that an imaginary Mrs.

Mompert with three daughters might be supposed to entertain, reasons

all of a disagreeable kind to the person presenting herself for

inspection.

The rector smiled. "Don't be alarmed, my dear. She would like to have a

more precise idea of you than my report can give. And a mother is

naturally scrupulous about a companion for her daughters. I have told

her you are very young. But she herself exercises a close supervision

over her daughters' education, and that makes her less anxious as to

age. She is a woman of taste and also of strict principle, and objects

to having a French person in the house. I feel sure that she will think

your manners and accomplishments as good as she is likely to find; and

over the religious and moral tone of the education she, and indeed the

bishop himself, will preside."

Gwendolen dared not answer, but the repression of her decided dislike

to the whole prospect sent an unusually deep flush over her face and

neck, subsiding as quickly as it came. Anna, full of tender fears, put

her little hand into her cousin's, and Mr. Gascoigne was too kind a man

not to conceive something of the trial which this sudden change must be

for a girl like Gwendolen. Bent on giving a cheerful view of things, he

went on, in an easy tone of remark, not as if answering supposed

objections--

"I think so highly of the position, that I should have been tempted to

try and get it for Anna, if she had been at all likely to meet Mrs.

Mompert's wants. It is really a home, with a continuance of education

in the highest sense: 'governess' is a misnomer. The bishop's views are

of a more decidedly Low Church color than my own--he is a close friend

of Lord Grampian's; but, though privately strict, he is not by any

means narrow in public matters. Indeed, he has created as little

dislike in his diocese as any bishop on the bench. He has always

remained friendly to me, though before his promotion, when he was an

incumbent of this diocese, we had a little controversy about the Bible

Society."

The rector's words were too pregnant with satisfactory meaning to

himself for him to imagine the effect they produced in the mind of his

niece. "Continuance of education"--"bishop's views"--"privately

strict"--"Bible Society,"--it was as if he had introduced a few snakes

at large for the instruction of ladies who regarded them as all alike

furnished with poison-bags, and, biting or stinging, according to

convenience. To Gwendolen, already shrinking from the prospect open to

her, such phrases came like the growing heat of a burning glass--not at

all as the links of persuasive reflection which they formed for the

good uncle. She began, desperately, to seek an alternative.

"There was another situation, I think, mamma spoke of?" she said, with

determined self-mastery.

'"Yes," said the rector, in rather a depreciatory tone; "but that is in

a school. I should not have the same satisfaction in your taking that.

It would be much harder work, you are aware, and not so good in any

other respect. Besides, you have not an equal chance of getting it."

"Oh dear no," said Mrs. Gascoigne, "it would be much less appropriate,

You might not have a bedroom to yourself." And Gwendolen's memories of

school suggested other particulars which forced her to admit to herself

that this alternative would be no relief. She turned to her uncle again

and said, apparently in acceptance of his ideas--

"When is Mrs. Mompert likely to send for me?"

"That is rather uncertain, but she has promised not to entertain any

other proposal till she has seen you. She has entered with much feeling

into your position. It will be within the next fortnight, probably. But

I must be off now. I am going to let part of my glebe uncommonly well."

The rector ended very cheerfully, leaving the room with the

satisfactory conviction that Gwendolen was going to adapt herself to

circumstances like a girl of good sense. Having spoken appropriately,

he naturally supposed that the effects would be appropriate; being

accustomed, as a household and parish authority, to be asked to "speak

to" refractory persons, with the understanding that the measure was

morally coercive.

"What a stay Henry is to us all?" said Mrs. Gascoigne, when her husband

had left the room.

"He is indeed," said Mrs. Davilow, cordially. "I think cheerfulness is

a fortune in itself. I wish I had it."

"And Rex is just like him," said Mrs. Gascoigne. "I must tell you the

comfort we have had in a letter from him. I must read you a little

bit," she added, taking the letter from her pocket, while Anna looked

rather frightened--she did not know why, except that it had been a rule

with her not to mention Rex before Gwendolen.

The proud mother ran her eyes over the letter, seeking for sentences to

read aloud. But apparently she had found it sown with what might seem

to be closer allusions than she desired to the recent past, for she

looked up, folding the letter, and saying--

"However, he tells us that our trouble has made a man of him; he sees a

reason for any amount of work: he means to get a fellowship, to take

pupils, to set one of his brothers going, to be everything that is most

remarkable. The letter is full of fun--just like him. He says, 'Tell

mother she has put out an advertisement for a jolly good hard-working

son, in time to hinder me from taking ship; and I offer myself for the

place.' The letter came on Friday. I never saw my husband so much moved

by anything since Rex was born. It seemed a gain to balance our loss."

This letter, in fact, was what had helped both Mrs. Gascoigne and Anna

to show Gwendolen an unmixed kindliness; and she herself felt very

amiably about it, smiling at Anna, and pinching her chin, as much as to

say, "Nothing is wrong with you now, is it?" She had no gratuitously

ill-natured feeling, or egoistic pleasure in making men miserable. She

only had an intense objection to their making her miserable.

But when the talk turned on furniture for the cottage Gwendolen was not

roused to show even a languid interest. She thought that she had done

as much as could be expected of her this morning, and indeed felt at an

heroic pitch in keeping to herself the struggle that was going on

within her. The recoil of her mind from the only definite prospect

allowed her, was stronger than even she had imagined beforehand. The

idea of presenting herself before Mrs. Mompert in the first instance,

to be approved or disapproved, came as pressure on an already painful

bruise; even as a governess, it appeared she was to be tested and was

liable to rejection. After she had done herself the violence to accept

the bishop and his wife, they were still to consider whether they would

accept her; it was at her peril that she was to look, speak, or be

silent. And even when she had entered on her dismal task of

self-constraint in the society of three girls whom she was bound

incessantly to edify, the same process of inspection was to go on:

there was always to be Mrs. Mompert's supervision; always something or

other would be expected of her to which she had not the slightest

inclination; and perhaps the bishop would examine her on serious

topics. Gwendolen, lately used to the social successes of a handsome

girl, whose lively venturesomeness of talk has the effect of wit, and

who six weeks before would have pitied the dullness of the bishop

rather than have been embarrassed by him, saw the life before her as an

entrance into a penitentiary. Wild thoughts of running away to be an

actress, in spite of Klesmer, came to her with the lure of freedom; but

his words still hung heavily on her soul; they had alarmed her pride

and even her maidenly dignity: dimly she conceived herself getting

amongst vulgar people who would treat her with rude familiarity--odious

men, whose grins and smirks would not be seen through the strong

grating of polite society. Gwendolen's daring was not in the least that

of the adventuress; the demand to be held a lady was in her very

marrow; and when she had dreamed that she might be the heroine of the

gaming-table, it was with the understanding that no one should treat

her with the less consideration, or presume to look at her with irony

as Deronda had done. To be protected and petted, and to have her

susceptibilities consulted in every detail, had gone along with her

food and clothing as matters of course in her life: even without any

such warning as Klesmer's she could not have thought it an attractive

freedom to be thrown in solitary dependence on the doubtful civility of

strangers. The endurance of the episcopal penitentiary was less

repulsive than that; though here too she would certainly never be

petted or have her susceptibilities consulted. Her rebellion against

this hard necessity which had come just to her of all people in the

world--to her whom all circumstances had concurred in preparing for

something quite different--was exaggerated instead of diminished as one

hour followed another, with the imagination of what she might have

expected in her lot and what it was actually to be. The family

troubles, she thought, were easier for every one than for her--even for

poor dear mamma, because she had always used herself to not enjoying.

As to hoping that if she went to the Momperts' and was patient a little

while, things might get better--it would be stupid to entertain hopes

for herself after all that had happened: her talents, it appeared,

would never be recognized as anything remarkable, and there was not a

single direction in which probability seemed to flatter her wishes.

Some beautiful girls who, like her, had read romances where even plain

governesses are centres of attraction and are sought in marriage, might

have solaced themselves a little by transporting such pictures into

their own future; but even if Gwendolen's experience had led her to

dwell on love-making and marriage as her elysium, her heart was too

much oppressed by what was near to her, in both the past and the

future, for her to project her anticipations very far off. She had a

world-nausea upon her, and saw no reason all through her life why she

should wish to live. No religious view of trouble helped her: her

troubles had in her opinion all been caused by other people's

disagreeable or wicked conduct; and there was really nothing pleasant

to be counted on in the world: that was her feeling; everything else

she had heard said about trouble was mere phrase-making not attractive

enough for her to have caught it up and repeated it. As to the

sweetness of labor and fulfilled claims; the interest of inward and

outward activity; the impersonal delights of life as a perpetual

discovery; the dues of courage, fortitude, industry, which it is mere

baseness not to pay toward the common burden; the supreme worth of the

teacher's vocation;--these, even if they had been eloquently preached

to her, could have been no more than faintly apprehended doctrines: the

fact which wrought upon her was her invariable observation that for a

lady to become a governess--to "take a situation"--was to descend in

life and to be treated at best with a compassionate patronage. And poor

Gwendolen had never dissociated happiness from personal pre-eminence

and \_Ã©clat\_. That where these threatened to forsake her, she should

take life to be hardly worth the having, cannot make her so unlike the

rest of us, men or women, that we should cast her out of our

compassion; our moments of temptation to a mean opinion of things in

general being usually dependent on some susceptibility about ourselves

and some dullness to subjects which every one else would consider more

important. Surely a young creature is pitiable who has the labyrinth of

life before her and no clue--to whom distrust in herself and her good

fortune has come as a sudden shock, like a rent across the path that

she was treading carelessly.

In spite of her healthy frame, her irreconcilable repugnance affected

her even physically; she felt a sort of numbness and could set about

nothing; the least urgency, even that she should take her meals, was an

irritation to her; the speech of others on any subject seemed

unreasonable, because it did not include her feeling and was an

ignorant claim on her. It was not in her nature to busy herself with

the fancies of suicide to which disappointed young people are prone:

what occupied and exasperated her was the sense that there was nothing

for her but to live in a way she hated. She avoided going to the

rectory again: it was too intolerable to have to look and talk as if

she were compliant; and she could not exert herself to show interest

about the furniture of that horrible cottage. Miss Merry was staying on

purpose to help, and such people as Jocosa liked that sort of thing.

Her mother had to make excuses for her not appearing, even when Anna

came to see her. For that calm which Gwendolen had promised herself to

maintain had changed into sick motivelessness: she thought, "I suppose

I shall begin to pretend by-and-by, but why should I do it now?"

Her mother watched her with silent distress; and, lapsing into the

habit of indulgent tenderness, she began to think what she imagined

that Gwendolen was thinking, and to wish that everything should give

way to the possibility of making her darling less miserable.

One day when she was in the black and yellow bedroom and her mother was

lingering there under the pretext of considering and arranging

Gwendolen's articles of dress, she suddenly roused herself to fetch the

casket which contained the ornaments.

"Mamma," she began, glancing over the upper layer, "I had forgotten

these things. Why didn't you remind me of them? Do see about getting

them sold. You will not mind about parting with them. You gave them all

to me long ago."

She lifted the upper tray and looked below.

"If we can do without them, darling, I would rather keep them for you,"

said Mrs. Davilow, seating herself beside Gwendolen with a feeling of

relief that she was beginning to talk about something. The usual

relation between them had become reversed. It was now the mother who

tried to cheer the daughter. "Why, how came you to put that pocket

handkerchief in here?"

It was the handkerchief with the corner torn off which Gwendolen had

thrust in with the turquoise necklace.

"It happened to be with the necklace--I was in a hurry." said

Gwendolen, taking the handkerchief away and putting it in her pocket.

"Don't sell the necklace, mamma," she added, a new feeling having come

over her about that rescue of it which had formerly been so offensive.

"No, dear, no; it was made out of your dear father's chain. And I

should prefer not selling the other things. None of them are of any

great value. All my best ornaments were taken from me long ago."

Mrs. Davilow colored. She usually avoided any reference to such facts

about Gwendolen's step-father as that he had carried off his wife's

jewelry and disposed of it. After a moment's pause she went on--

"And these things have not been reckoned on for any expenses. Carry

them with you."

"That would be quite useless, mamma," said Gwendolen, coldly.

"Governesses don't wear ornaments. You had better get me a gray frieze

livery and a straw poke, such as my aunt's charity children wear."

"No, dear, no; don't take that view of it. I feel sure the Momperts

will like you the better for being graceful and elegant."

"I am not at all sure what the Momperts will like me to be. It is

enough that I am expected to be what they like," said Gwendolen

bitterly.

"If there is anything you would object to less--anything that could be

done--instead of your going to the bishop's, do say so, Gwendolen. Tell

me what is in your heart. I will try for anything you wish," said the

mother, beseechingly. "Don't keep things away from me. Let us bear them

together."

"Oh, mamma, there is nothing to tell. I can't do anything better. I

must think myself fortunate if they will have me. I shall get some

money for you. That is the only thing I have to think of. I shall not

spend any money this year: you will have all the eighty pounds. I don't

know how far that will go in housekeeping; but you need not stitch your

poor fingers to the bone, and stare away all the sight that the tears

have left in your dear eyes."

Gwendolen did not give any caresses with her words as she had been used

to do. She did not even look at her mother, but was looking at the

turquoise necklace as she turned it over her fingers.

"Bless you for your tenderness, my good darling!" said Mrs. Davilow,

with tears in her eyes. "Don't despair because there are clouds now.

You are so young. There may be great happiness in store for you yet."

"I don't see any reason for expecting it, mamma," said Gwendolen, in a

hard tone; and Mrs. Davilow was silent, thinking as she had often

thought before--"What did happen between her and Mr. Grandcourt?"

"I \_will\_ keep this necklace, mamma," said Gwendolen, laying it apart

and then closing the casket. "But do get the other things sold, even if

they will not bring much. Ask my uncle what to do with them. I shall

certainly not use them again. I am going to take the veil. I wonder if

all the poor wretches who have ever taken it felt as I do."

"Don't exaggerate evils, dear."

"How can any one know that I exaggerate, when I am speaking of my own

feeling? I did not say what any one else felt."

She took out the torn handkerchief from her pocket again, and wrapped

it deliberately round the necklace. Mrs. Davilow observed the action

with some surprise, but the tone of her last words discouraged her from

asking any question.

The "feeling" Gwendolen spoke of with an air of tragedy was not to be

explained by the mere fact that she was going to be a governess: she

was possessed by a spirit of general disappointment. It was not simply

that she had a distaste for what she was called on to do: the distaste

spread itself over the world outside her penitentiary, since she saw

nothing very pleasant in it that seemed attainable by her even if she

were free. Naturally her grievances did not seem to her smaller than

some of her male contemporaries held theirs to be when they felt a

profession too narrow for their powers, and had an \_Ã  priori\_

conviction that it was not worth while to put forth their latent

abilities. Because her education had been less expensive than theirs,

it did not follow that she should have wider emotions or a keener

intellectual vision. Her griefs were feminine; but to her as a woman

they were not the less hard to bear, and she felt an equal right to the

Promethean tone.

But the movement of mind which led her to keep the necklace, to fold it

up in the handkerchief, and rise to put it in her \_nÃ©cessaire\_, where

she had first placed it when it had been returned to her, was more

peculiar, and what would be called less reasonable. It came from that

streak of superstition in her which attached itself both to her

confidence and her terror--a superstition which lingers in an intense

personality even in spite of theory and science; any dread or hope for

self being stronger than all reasons for or against it. Why she should

suddenly determine not to part with the necklace was not much clearer

to her than why she should sometimes have been frightened to find

herself in the fields alone: she had a confused state of emotion about

Deronda--was it wounded pride and resentment, or a certain awe and

exceptional trust? It was something vague and yet mastering, which

impelled her to this action about the necklace. There is a great deal

of unmapped country within us which would have to be taken into account

in an explanation of our gusts and storms.

CHAPTER XXV.

How trace the why and wherefore in a mind reduced to the barrenness of

a fastidious egoism, in which all direct desires are dulled, and have

dwindled from motives into a vacillating expectation of motives: a

mind made up of moods, where a fitful impulse springs here and there

conspicuously rank amid the general weediness? 'Tis a condition apt to

befall a life too much at large, unmoulded by the pressure of

obligation. \_Nam deteriores omnes sumus licentiae\_, or, as a more

familiar tongue might deliver it, \_"As you like" is a bad finger-post.\_

Potentates make known their intentions and affect the funds at a small

expense of words. So when Grandcourt, after learning that Gwendolen had

left Leubronn, incidentally pronounced that resort of fashion a beastly

hole, worse than Baden, the remark was conclusive to Mr. Lush that his

patron intended straightway to return to Diplow. The execution was sure

to be slower than the intention, and, in fact, Grandcourt did loiter

through the next day without giving any distinct orders about

departure--perhaps because he discerned that Lush was expecting them:

he lingered over his toilet, and certainly came down with a faded

aspect of perfect distinction which made fresh complexions and hands

with the blood in them, seem signs of raw vulgarity; he lingered on the

terrace, in the gambling-rooms, in the reading-room, occupying himself

in being indifferent to everybody and everything around him. When he

met Lady Mallinger, however, he took some trouble--raised his hat,

paused, and proved that he listened to her recommendation of the waters

by replying, "Yes; I heard somebody say how providential it was that

there always happened to be springs at gambling places."

"Oh, that was a joke," said innocent Lady Mallinger, misled by

Grandcourt's languid seriousness, "in imitation of the old one about

the towns and the rivers, you know."

"Ah, perhaps," said Grandcourt, without change of expression. Lady

Mallinger thought this worth telling to Sir Hugo, who said, "Oh, my

dear, he is not a fool. You must not suppose that he can't see a joke.

He can play his cards as well as most of us."

"He has never seemed to me a very sensible man," said Lady Mallinger,

in excuse of herself. She had a secret objection to meeting Grandcourt,

who was little else to her than a large living sign of what she felt to

be her failure as a wife--the not having presented Sir Hugo with a son.

Her constant reflection was that her husband might fairly regret his

choice, and if he had not been very good might have treated her with

some roughness in consequence, gentlemen naturally disliking to be

disappointed.

Deronda, too, had a recognition from Grandcourt, for which he was not

grateful, though he took care to return it with perfect civility. No

reasoning as to the foundations of custom could do away with the

early-rooted feeling that his birth had been attended with injury for

which his father was to blame; and seeing that but for this injury

Grandcourt's prospects might have been his, he was proudly resolute not

to behave in any way that might be interpreted into irritation on that

score. He saw a very easy descent into mean unreasoning rancor and

triumph in others' frustration; and being determined not to go down

that ugly pit, he turned his back on it, clinging to the kindlier

affections within him as a possession. Pride certainly helped him

well--the pride of not recognizing a disadvantage for one's self which

vulgar minds are disposed to exaggerate, such as the shabby equipage of

poverty: he would not have a man like Grandcourt suppose himself envied

by him. But there is no guarding against interpretation. Grandcourt did

believe that Deronda, poor devil, who he had no doubt was his cousin by

the father's side, inwardly winced under their mutual position;

wherefore the presence of that less lucky person was more agreeable to

him than it would otherwise have been. An imaginary envy, the idea that

others feel their comparative deficiency, is the ordinary \_cortÃ¨ge\_ of

egoism; and his pet dogs were not the only beings that Grandcourt liked

to feel his power over in making them jealous. Hence he was civil

enough to exchange several words with Deronda on the terrace about the

hunting round Diplow, and even said, "You had better come over for a

run or two when the season begins."

Lush, not displeased with delay, amused himself very well, partly in

gossiping with Sir Hugo and in answering his questions about

Grandcourt's affairs so far as they might affect his willingness to

part with his interest in Diplow. Also about Grandcourt's personal

entanglements, the baronet knew enough already for Lush to feel

released from silence on a sunny autumn day, when there was nothing

more agreeable to do in lounging promenades than to speak freely of a

tyrannous patron behind his back. Sir Hugo willingly inclined his ear

to a little good-humored scandal, which he was fond of calling \_traits

de moeurs\_; but he was strict in keeping such communications from

hearers who might take them too seriously. Whatever knowledge he had of

his nephew's secrets, he had never spoken of it to Deronda, who

considered Grandcourt a pale-blooded mortal, but was far from wishing

to hear how the red corpuscles had been washed out of him. It was

Lush's policy and inclination to gratify everybody when he had no

reason to the contrary; and the baronet always treated him well, as one

of those easy-handled personages who, frequenting the society of

gentlemen, without being exactly gentlemen themselves, can be the more

serviceable, like the second-best articles of our wardrobe, which we

use with a comfortable freedom from anxiety.

"Well, you will let me know the turn of events," said Sir Hugo, "if

this marriage seems likely to come off after all, or if anything else

happens to make the want of money pressing. My plan would be much

better for him than burdening Ryelands."

"That's true," said Lush, "only it must not be urged on him--just

placed in his way that the scent may tickle him. Grandcourt is not a

man to be always led by what makes for his own interest; especially if

you let him see that it makes for your interest too. I'm attached to

him, of course. I've given up everything else for the sake of keeping

by him, and it has lasted a good fifteen years now. He would not easily

get any one else to fill my place. He's a peculiar character, is

Henleigh Grandcourt, and it has been growing on him of late years.

However, I'm of a constant disposition, and I've been a sort of

guardian to him since he was twenty; an uncommonly fascinating fellow

he was then, to be sure--and could be now, if he liked. I'm attached to

him; and it would be a good deal worse for him if he missed me at his

elbow."

Sir Hugo did not think it needful to express his sympathy or even

assent, and perhaps Lush himself did not expect this sketch of his

motives to be taken as exact. But how can a man avoid himself as a

subject in conversation? And he must make some sort of decent toilet in

words, as in cloth and linen. Lush's listener was not severe: a member

of Parliament could allow for the necessities of verbal toilet; and the

dialogue went on without any change of mutual estimate.

However, Lush's easy prospect of indefinite procrastination was cut off

the next morning by Grandcourt's saluting him with the question--

"Are you making all the arrangements for our starting by the Paris

train?"

"I didn't know you meant to start," said Lush, not exactly taken by

surprise.

"You might have known," said Grandcourt, looking at the burned length

of his cigar, and speaking in that lowered tone which was usual with

him when he meant to express disgust and be peremptory. "Just see to

everything, will you? and mind no brute gets into the same carriage

with us. And leave my P. P. C. at the Mallingers."

In consequence they were at Paris the next day; but here Lush was

gratified by the proposal or command that he should go straight on to

Diplow and see that everything was right, while Grandcourt and the

valet remained behind; and it was not until several days later that

Lush received the telegram ordering the carriage to the Wanchester

station.

He had used the interim actively, not only in carrying out Grandcourt's

orders about the stud and household, but in learning all he could of

Gwendolen, and how things were going on at Offendene. What was the

probable effect that the news of the family misfortunes would have on

Grandcourt's fitful obstinacy he felt to be quite incalculable. So far

as the girl's poverty might be an argument that she would accept an

offer from him now in spite of any previous coyness, it might remove

that bitter objection to risk a repulse which Lush divined to be one of

Grandcourt's deterring motives; on the other hand, the certainty of

acceptance was just "the sort of thing" to make him lapse hither and

thither with no more apparent will than a moth. Lush had had his patron

under close observation for many years, and knew him perhaps better

than he knew any other subject; but to know Grandcourt was to doubt

what he would do in any particular case. It might happen that he would

behave with an apparent magnanimity, like the hero of a modern French

drama, whose sudden start into moral splendor after much lying and

meanness, leaves you little confidence as to any part of his career

that may follow the fall of the curtain. Indeed, what attitude would

have been more honorable for a final scene than that of declining to

seek an heiress for her money, and determining to marry the attractive

girl who had none? But Lush had some general certainties about

Grandcourt, and one was that of all inward movements those of

generosity were least likely to occur in him. Of what use, however, is

a general certainty that an insect will not walk with his head

hindmost, when what you need to know is the play of inward stimulus

that sends him hither and thither in a network of possible paths? Thus

Lush was much at fault as to the probable issue between Grandcourt and

Gwendolen, when what he desired was a perfect confidence that they

would never be married. He would have consented willingly that

Grandcourt should marry an heiress, or that he should marry Mrs.

Glasher: in the one match there would have been the immediate abundance

that prospective heirship could not supply, in the other there would

have been the security of the wife's gratitude, for Lush had always

been Mrs. Glasher's friend; and that the future Mrs. Grandcourt should

not be socially received could not affect his private comfort. He would

not have minded, either, that there should be no marriage in question

at all; but he felt himself justified in doing his utmost to hinder a

marriage with a girl who was likely to bring nothing but trouble to her

husband--not to speak of annoyance if not ultimate injury to her

husband's old companion, whose future Mr. Lush earnestly wished to make

as easy as possible, considering that he had well deserved such

compensation for leading a dog's life, though that of a dog who enjoyed

many tastes undisturbed, and who profited by a large establishment. He

wished for himself what he felt to be good, and was not conscious of

wishing harm to any one else; unless perhaps it were just now a little

harm to the inconvenient and impertinent Gwendolen. But the

easiest-humored of luxury and music, the toad-eater the least liable to

nausea, must be expected to have his susceptibilities. And Mr. Lush was

accustomed to be treated by the world in general as an apt, agreeable

fellow: he had not made up his mind to be insulted by more than one

person.

With this imperfect preparation of a war policy, Lush was awaiting

Grandcourt's arrival, doing little more than wondering how the campaign

would begin. The first day Grandcourt was much occupied with the

stables, and amongst other things he ordered a groom to put a

side-saddle on Criterion and let him review the horse's paces. This

marked indication of purpose set Lush on considering over again whether

he should incur the ticklish consequences of speaking first, while he

was still sure that no compromising step had been taken; and he rose

the next morning almost resolved that if Grandcourt seemed in as good a

humor as yesterday and entered at all into talk, he would let drop the

interesting facts about Gwendolen and her family, just to see how they

would work, and to get some guidance. But Grandcourt did not enter into

talk, and in answer to a question even about his own convenience, no

fish could have maintained a more unwinking silence. After he had read

his letters he gave various orders to be executed or transmitted by

Lush, and then thrust his shoulder toward that useful person, who

accordingly rose to leave the room. But before he was out of the door

Grandcourt turned his head slightly and gave a broken, languid "Oh."

"What is it?" said Lush, who, it must have been observed, did not take

his dusty puddings with a respectful air.

"Shut the door, will you? I can't speak into the corridor."

Lush closed the door, came forward, and chose to sit down.

After a little pause Grandcourt said, "Is Miss Harleth at Offendene?"

He was quite certain that Lush had made it his business to inquire

about her, and he had some pleasure in thinking that Lush did not want

\_him\_ to inquire.

"Well, I hardly know," said Lush, carelessly. "The family's utterly

done up. They and the Gascoignes too have lost all their money. It's

owing to some rascally banking business. The poor mother hasn't a

\_sou\_, it seems. She and the girls have to huddle themselves into a

little cottage like a laborer's."

"Don't lie to me, if you please," said Grandcourt, in his lowest

audible tone. "It's not amusing, and it answers no other purpose."

"What do you mean?" said Lush, more nettled than was common with

him--the prospect before him being more than commonly disturbing.

"Just tell me the truth, will you?"

"It's no invention of mine. I have heard the story from

several--Bazley, Brackenshaw's man, for one. He is getting a new tenant

for Offendene."

"I don't mean that. Is Miss Harleth there, or is she not?" said

Grandcourt, in his former tone.

"Upon my soul, I can't tell," said Lush, rather sulkily. "She may have

left yesterday. I heard she had taken a situation as governess; she may

be gone to it for what I know. But if you wanted to see her no doubt

the mother would send for her back." This sneer slipped off his tongue

without strict intention.

"Send Hutchins to inquire whether she will be there tomorrow." Lush did

not move. Like many persons who have thought over beforehand what they

shall say in given cases, he was impelled by an unexpected irritation

to say some of those prearranged things before the cases were given.

Grandcourt, in fact, was likely to get into a scrape so tremendous that

it was impossible to let him take the first step toward it without

remonstrance. Lush retained enough caution to use a tone of rational

friendliness, still he felt his own value to his patron, and was

prepared to be daring.

"It would be as well for you to remember, Grandcourt, that you are

coming under closer fire now. There can be none of the ordinary

flirting done, which may mean everything or nothing. You must make up

your mind whether you wish to be accepted; and more than that, how you

would like being refused. Either one or the other. You can't be

philandering after her again for six weeks."

Grandcourt said nothing, but pressed the newspaper down on his knees

and began to light another cigar. Lush took this as a sign that he was

willing to listen, and was the more bent on using the opportunity; he

wanted, if possible, to find out which would be the more potent cause

of hesitation--probable acceptance or probable refusal.

"Everything has a more serious look now than it had before. There is

her family to be provided for. You could not let your wife's mother

live in beggary. It will be a confoundedly hampering affair. Marriage

will pin you down in a way you haven't been used to; and in point of

money you have not too much elbow-room. And after all, what will you

get by it? You are master over your estates, present or future, as far

as choosing your heir goes; it's a pity to go on encumbering them for a

mere whim, which you may repent of in a twelvemonth. I should be sorry

to see you making a mess of your life in that way. If there were

anything solid to be gained by the marriage, that would be a different

affair."

Lush's tone had gradually become more and more unctuous in its

friendliness of remonstrance, and he was almost in danger of forgetting

that he was merely gambling in argument. When he left off, Grandcourt

took his cigar out of his mouth, and looking steadily at the moist end

while he adjusted the leaf with his delicate finger-tips, said--

"I knew before that you had an objection to my marrying Miss Harleth."

Here he made a little pause before he continued. "But I never

considered that a reason against it."

"I never supposed you did," answered Lush, not unctuously but dryly.

"It was not \_that\_ I urged as a reason. I should have thought it might

have been a reason against it, after all your experience, that you

would be acting like the hero of a ballad, and making yourself

absurd--and all for what? You know you couldn't make up your mind

before. It's impossible you can care much about her. And as for the

tricks she is likely to play, you may judge of that from what you heard

at Leubronn. However, what I wished to point out to you was, that there

can be no shilly-shally now."

"Perfectly," said Grandcourt, looking round at Lush and fixing him with

narrow eyes; "I don't intend that there should be. I dare say it's

disagreeable to you. But if you suppose I care a damn for that you are

most stupendously mistaken."

"Oh, well," said Lush, rising with his hands in his pockets, and

feeling some latent venom still within him, "if you have made up your

mind!--only there's another aspect of the affair. I have been speaking

on the supposition that it was absolutely certain she would accept you,

and that destitution would have no choice. But I am not so sure that

the young lady is to be counted on. She is kittle cattle to shoe, I

think. And she had her reasons for running away before." Lush had moved

a step or two till he stood nearly in front of Grandcourt, though at

some distance from him. He did not feel himself much restrained by

consequences, being aware that the only strong hold he had on his

present position was his serviceableness; and even after a quarrel the

want of him was likely sooner or later to recur. He foresaw that

Gwendolen would cause him to be ousted for a time, and his temper at

this moment urged him to risk a quarrel.

"She had her reasons," he repeated more significantly.

"I had come to that conclusion before," said Grandcourt, with

contemptuous irony.

"Yes, but I hardly think you know what her reasons were."

"You do, apparently," said Grandcourt, not betraying by so much as an

eyelash that he cared for the reasons.

"Yes, and you had better know too, that you may judge of the influence

you have over her if she swallows her reasons and accepts you. For my

own part I would take odds against it. She saw Lydia in Cardell Chase

and heard the whole story."

Grandcourt made no immediate answer, and only went on smoking. He was

so long before he spoke that Lush moved about and looked out of the

windows, unwilling to go away without seeing some effect of his daring

move. He had expected that Grandcourt would tax him with having

contrived the affair, since Mrs. Glasher was then living at Gadsmere, a

hundred miles off, and he was prepared to admit the fact: what he cared

about was that Grandcourt should be staggered by the sense that his

intended advances must be made to a girl who had that knowledge in her

mind and had been scared by it. At length Grandcourt, seeing Lush turn

toward him, looked at him again and said, contemptuously, "What

follows?"

Here certainly was a "mate" in answer to Lush's "check:" and though his

exasperation with Grandcourt was perhaps stronger than it had ever been

before, it would have been idiocy to act as if any further move could

be useful. He gave a slight shrug with one shoulder, and was going to

walk away, when Grandcourt, turning on his seat toward the table, said,

as quietly as if nothing had occurred, "Oblige me by pushing that pen

and paper here, will you?"

No thunderous, bullying superior could have exercised the imperious

spell that Grandcourt did. Why, instead of being obeyed, he had never

been told to go to a warmer place, was perhaps a mystery to those who

found themselves obeying him. The pen and paper were pushed to him, and

as he took them he said, "Just wait for this letter."

He scrawled with ease, and the brief note was quickly addressed. "Let

Hutchins go with it at once, will you?" said Grandcourt, pushing the

letter away from him.

As Lush had expected, it was addressed to Miss Harleth, Offendene. When

his irritation had cooled down he was glad there had been no explosive

quarrel; but he felt sure that there was a notch made against him, and

that somehow or other he was intended to pay. It was also clear to him

that the immediate effect of his revelation had been to harden

Grandcourt's previous determination. But as to the particular movements

that made this process in his baffling mind, Lush could only toss up

his chin in despair of a theory.

CHAPTER XXVI.

He brings white asses laden with the freight

Of Tyrian vessels, purple, gold and balm,

To bribe my will: I'll bid them chase him forth,

Nor let him breathe the taint of his surmise

On my secure resolve.

Ay, 'tis secure:

And therefore let him come to spread his freight.

For firmness hath its appetite and craves

The stronger lure, more strongly to resist;

Would know the touch of gold to fling it off;

Scent wine to feel its lip the soberer;

Behold soft byssus, ivory, and plumes

To say, "They're fair, but I will none of them,"

And flout Enticement in the very face.

Mr. Gascoigne one day came to Offendene with what he felt to be the

satisfactory news that Mrs. Mompert had fixed Tuesday in the following

week for her interview with Gwendolen at Wanchester. He said nothing of

his having incidentally heard that Mr. Grandcourt had returned to

Diplow; knowing no more than she did that Leubronn had been the goal of

her admirer's journeying, and feeling that it would be unkind uselessly

to revive the memory of a brilliant prospect under the present

reverses. In his secret soul he thought of his niece's unintelligible

caprice with regret, but he vindicated her to himself by considering

that Grandcourt had been the first to behave oddly, in suddenly walking

away when there had the best opportunity for crowning his marked

attentions. The rector's practical judgment told him that his chief

duty to his niece now was to encourage her resolutely to face the

change in her lot, since there was no manifest promise of any event

that would avert it.

"You will find an interest in varied experience, my dear, and I have no

doubt you will be a more valuable woman for having sustained such a

part as you are called to."

"I cannot pretend to believe that I shall like it," said Gwendolen, for

the first time showing her uncle some petulance. "But I am quite aware

that I am obliged to bear it."

She remembered having submitted to his admonition on a different

occasion when she was expected to like a very different prospect.

"And your good sense will teach you to behave suitably under it," said

Mr. Gascoigne, with a shade more gravity. "I feel sure that Mrs.

Mompert will be pleased with you. You will know how to conduct yourself

to a woman who holds in all senses the relation of a superior to you.

This trouble has come on you young, but that makes it in some respects

easier, and there is a benefit in all chastisement if we adjust our

minds to it."

This was precisely what Gwendolen was unable to do; and after her uncle

was gone, the bitter tears, which had rarely come during the late

trouble, rose and fell slowly as she sat alone. Her heart denied that

the trouble was easier because she was young. When was she to have any

happiness, if it did not come while she was young? Not that her visions

of possible happiness for herself were as unmixed with necessary evil

as they used to be--not that she could still imagine herself plucking

the fruits of life without suspicion of their core. But this general

disenchantment with the world--nay, with herself, since it appeared

that she was not made for easy pre-eminence--only intensified her sense

of forlornness; it was a visibly sterile distance enclosing the dreary

path at her feet, in which she had no courage to tread. She was in that

first crisis of passionate youthful rebellion against what is not fitly

called pain, but rather the absence of joy--that first rage of

disappointment in life's morning, which we whom the years have subdued

are apt to remember but dimly as part of our own experience, and so to

be intolerant of its self-enclosed unreasonableness and impiety. What

passion seems more absurd, when we have got outside it and looked at

calamity as a collective risk, than this amazed anguish that I and not

Thou, He or She, should be just the smitten one? Yet perhaps some who

have afterward made themselves a willing fence before the breast of

another, and have carried their own heart-wound in heroic silence--some

who have made their deeds great, nevertheless began with this angry

amazement at their own smart, and on the mere denial of their fantastic

desires raged as if under the sting of wasps which reduced the universe

for them to an unjust infliction of pain. This was nearly poor

Gwendolen's condition. What though such a reverse as hers had often

happened to other girls? The one point she had been all her life

learning to care for was, that it had happened to \_her\_: it was what

\_she\_ felt under Klesmer's demonstration that she was not remarkable

enough to command fortune by force of will and merit; it was what \_she\_

would feel under the rigors of Mrs. Mompert's constant expectation,

under the dull demand that she should be cheerful with three Miss

Momperts, under the necessity of showing herself entirely submissive,

and keeping her thoughts to herself. To be a queen disthroned is not so

hard as some other down-stepping: imagine one who had been made to

believe in his own divinity finding all homage withdrawn, and himself

unable to perform a miracle that would recall the homage and restore

his own confidence. Something akin to this illusion and this

helplessness had befallen the poor spoiled child, with the lovely lips

and eyes and the majestic figure--which seemed now to have no magic in

them.

She rose from the low ottoman where she had been sitting purposeless,

and walked up and down the drawing-room, resting her elbow on one palm

while she leaned down her cheek on the other, and a slow tear fell. She

thought, "I have always, ever since I was little, felt that mamma was

not a happy woman; and now I dare say I shall be more unhappy than she

has been."

Her mind dwelt for a few moments on the picture of herself losing her

youth and ceasing to enjoy--not minding whether she did this or that:

but such picturing inevitably brought back the image of her mother.

"Poor mamma! it will be still worse for her now. I can get a little

money for her--that is all I shall care about now." And then with an

entirely new movement of her imagination, she saw her mother getting

quite old and white, and herself no longer young but faded, and their

two faces meeting still with memory and love, and she knowing what was

in her mother's mind--"Poor Gwen too is sad and faded now"--and then,

for the first time, she sobbed, not in anger, but with a sort of tender

misery.

Her face was toward the door, and she saw her mother enter. She barely

saw that; for her eyes were large with tears, and she pressed her

handkerchief against them hurriedly. Before she took it away she felt

her mother's arms round her, and this sensation, which seemed a

prolongation of her inward vision, overcame her will to be reticent;

she sobbed anew in spite of herself, as they pressed their cheeks

together.

Mrs. Davilow had brought something in her hand which had already caused

her an agitating anxiety, and she dared not speak until her darling had

become calmer. But Gwendolen, with whom weeping had always been a

painful manifestation to be resisted, if possible, again pressed her

handkerchief against her eyes, and, with a deep breath, drew her head

backward and looked at her mother, who was pale and tremulous.

"It was nothing, mamma," said Gwendolen, thinking that her mother had

been moved in this way simply by finding her in distress. "It is all

over now."

But Mrs. Davilow had withdrawn her arms, and Gwendolen perceived a

letter in her hand.

"What is that letter?--worse news still?" she asked, with a touch of

bitterness.

"I don't know what you will think it, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, keeping

the letter in her hand. "You will hardly guess where it comes from."

"Don't ask me to guess anything," said Gwendolen, rather impatiently,

as if a bruise were being pressed.

"It is addressed to you, dear."

Gwendolen gave the slightest perceptible toss of the head.

"It comes from Diplow," said Mrs. Davilow, giving her the letter.

She knew Grandcourt's indistinct handwriting, and her mother was not

surprised to see her blush deeply; but watching her as she read, and

wondering much what was the purport of the letter, she saw the color

die out. Gwendolen's lips even were pale as she turned the open note

toward her mother. The words were few and formal:

Mr. Grandcourt presents his compliments to Miss Harleth, and begs to

know whether he may be permitted to call at Offendene tomorrow after

two and to see her alone. Mr. Grandcourt has just returned from

Leubronn, where he had hoped to find Miss Harleth.

Mrs. Davilow read, and then looked at her daughter inquiringly, leaving

the note in her hand. Gwendolen let it fall to the floor, and turned

away.

"It must be answered, darling," said Mrs. Davilow, timidly. "The man

waits."

Gwendolen sank on the settee, clasped her hands, and looked straight

before her, not at her mother. She had the expression of one who had

been startled by a sound and was listening to know what would come of

it. The sudden change of the situation was bewildering. A few minutes

before she was looking along an inescapable path of repulsive monotony,

with hopeless inward rebellion against the imperious lot which left her

no choice: and lo, now, a moment of choice was come. Yet--was it

triumph she felt most or terror? Impossible for Gwendolen not to feel

some triumph in a tribute to her power at a time when she was first

tasting the bitterness of insignificance: again she seemed to be

getting a sort of empire over her own life. But how to use it? Here

came the terror. Quick, quick, like pictures in a book beaten open with

a sense of hurry, came back vividly, yet in fragments, all that she had

gone through in relation to Grandcourt--the allurements, the

vacillations, the resolve to accede, the final repulsion; the incisive

face of that dark-eyed lady with the lovely boy: her own pledge (was it

a pledge not to marry him?)--the new disbelief in the worth of men and

things for which that scene of disclosure had become a symbol. That

unalterable experience made a vision at which in the first agitated

moment, before tempering reflections could suggest themselves, her

native terror shrank.

Where was the good of choice coming again? What did she wish? Anything

different? No! And yet in the dark seed-growths of consciousness a new

wish was forming itself--"I wish I had never known it!" Something,

anything she wished for that would have saved her from the dread to let

Grandcourt come.

It was no long while--yet it seemed long to Mrs. Davilow, before she

thought it well to say, gently--

"It will be necessary for you to write, dear. Or shall I write an

answer for you--which you will dictate?"

"No, mamma," said Gwendolen, drawing a deep breath. "But please lay me

out the pen and paper."

That was gaining time. Was she to decline Grandcourt's visit--close the

shutters--not even look out on what would happen?--though with the

assurance that she should remain just where she was? The young activity

within her made a warm current through her terror and stirred toward

something that would be an event--toward an opportunity in which she

could look and speak with the former effectiveness. The interest of the

morrow was no longer at a deadlock.

"There is really no reason on earth why you should be so alarmed at the

man's waiting a few minutes, mamma," said Gwendolen, remonstrantly, as

Mrs. Davilow, having prepared the writing materials, looked toward her

expectantly. "Servants expect nothing else than to wait. It is not to

be supposed that I must write on the instant."

"No, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, in the tone of one corrected, turning to

sit down and take up a bit of work that lay at hand; "he can wait

another quarter of an hour, if you like."

If was very simple speech and action on her part, but it was what might

have been subtly calculated. Gwendolen felt a contradictory desire to

be hastened: hurry would save her from deliberate choice.

"I did not mean him to wait long enough for that needlework to be

finished," she said, lifting her hands to stroke the backward curves of

her hair, while she rose from her seat and stood still.

"But if you don't feel able to decide?" said Mrs. Davilow,

sympathizingly.

"I \_must\_ decide," said Gwendolen, walking to the writing-table and

seating herself. All the while there was a busy undercurrent in her,

like the thought of a man who keeps up a dialogue while he is

considering how he can slip away. Why should she not let him come? It

bound her to nothing. He had been to Leubronn after her: of course he

meant a direct unmistakable renewal of the suit which before had been

only implied. What then? She could reject him. Why was she to deny

herself the freedom of doing this--which she would like to do?

"If Mr. Grandcourt has only just returned from Leubronn," said Mrs.

Davilow, observing that Gwendolen leaned back in her chair after taking

the pen in her hand--"I wonder whether he has heard of our misfortunes?"

"That could make no difference to a man in his position," said

Gwendolen, rather contemptuously,

"It would to some men," said Mrs. Davilow. "They would not like to take

a wife from a family in a state of beggary almost, as we are. Here we

are at Offendene with a great shell over us, as usual. But just imagine

his finding us at Sawyer's Cottage. Most men are afraid of being bored

or taxed by a wife's family. If Mr. Grandcourt did know, I think it a

strong proof of his attachment to you."

Mrs. Davilow spoke with unusual emphasis: it was the first time she had

ventured to say anything about Grandcourt which would necessarily seem

intended as an argument in favor of him, her habitual impression being

that such arguments would certainly be useless and might be worse. The

effect of her words now was stronger than she could imagine. They

raised a new set of possibilities in Gwendolen's mind--a vision of what

Grandcourt might do for her mother if she, Gwendolen, did--what she was

not going to do. She was so moved by a new rush of ideas that, like one

conscious of being urgently called away, she felt that the immediate

task must be hastened: the letter must be written, else it might be

endlessly deferred. After all, she acted in a hurry, as she had wished

to do. To act in a hurry was to have a reason for keeping away from an

absolute decision, and to leave open as many issues as possible.

She wrote: "Miss Harleth presents her compliments to Mr. Grandcourt.

She will be at home after two o'clock to-morrow."

Before addressing the note she said, "Pray ring the bell, mamma, if

there is any one to answer it." She really did not know who did the

work of the house.

It was not till after the letter had been taken away and Gwendolen had

risen again, stretching out one arm and then resting it on her head,

with a low moan which had a sound of relief in it, that Mrs. Davilow

ventured to ask--

"What did you say, Gwen?"

"I said that I should be at home," answered Gwendolen, rather loftily.

Then after a pause, "You must not expect, because Mr. Grandcourt is

coming, that anything is going to happen, mamma."

"I don't allow myself to expect anything, dear. I desire you to follow

your own feeling. You have never told me what that was."

"What is the use of telling?" said Gwendolen, hearing a reproach in

that true statement. "When I have anything pleasant to tell, you may be

sure I will tell you."

"But Mr. Grandcourt will consider that you have already accepted him,

in allowing him to come. His note tells you plainly enough that he is

coming to make you an offer."

"Very well; and I wish to have the pleasure of refusing him."

Mrs. Davilow looked up in wonderment, but Gwendolen implied her wish

not to be questioned further by saying--

"Put down that detestable needle-work, and let us walk in the avenue. I

am stifled."

CHAPTER XXVII.

Desire has trimmed the sails, and Circumstance

Brings but the breeze to fill them.

While Grandcourt on his beautiful black Yarico, the groom behind him on

Criterion, was taking the pleasant ride from Diplow to Offendene,

Gwendolen was seated before the mirror while her mother gathered up the

lengthy mass of light-brown hair which she had been carefully brushing.

"Only gather it up easily and make a coil, mamma," said Gwendolen.

"Let me bring you some ear-rings, Gwen," said Mrs. Davilow, when the

hair was adjusted, and they were both looking at the reflection in the

glass. It was impossible for them not to notice that the eyes looked

brighter than they had done of late, that there seemed to be a shadow

lifted from the face, leaving all the lines once more in their placid

youthfulness. The mother drew some inference that made her voice rather

cheerful. "You do want your earrings?"

"No, mamma; I shall not wear any ornaments, and I shall put on my black

silk. Black is the only wear when one is going to refuse an offer,"

said Gwendolen, with one of her old smiles at her mother, while she

rose to throw off her dressing-gown.

"Suppose the offer is not made after all," said Mrs. Davilow, not

without a sly intention.

"Then that will be because I refuse it beforehand," said Gwendolen. "It

comes to the same thing."

There was a proud little toss of the head as she said this; and when

she walked down-stairs in her long black robes, there was just that

firm poise of head and elasticity of form which had lately been

missing, as in a parched plant. Her mother thought, "She is quite

herself again. It must be pleasure in his coming. Can her mind be

really made up against him?"

Gwendolen would have been rather angry if that thought had been

uttered; perhaps all the more because through the last twenty hours,

with a brief interruption of sleep, she had been so occupied with

perpetually alternating images and arguments for and against the

possibility of her marrying Grandcourt, that the conclusion which she

had determined on beforehand ceased to have any hold on her

consciousness: the alternate dip of counterbalancing thoughts begotten

of counterbalancing desires had brought her into a state in which no

conclusion could look fixed to her. She would have expressed her

resolve as before; but it was a form out of which the blood had been

sucked--no more a part of quivering life than the "God's will be done"

of one who is eagerly watching chances. She did not mean to accept

Grandcourt; from the first moment of receiving his letter she had meant

to refuse him; still, that could not but prompt her to look the

unwelcome reasons full in the face until she had a little less awe of

them, could not hinder her imagination from filling out her knowledge

in various ways, some of which seemed to change the aspect of what she

knew. By dint of looking at a dubious object with a constructive

imagination, who can give it twenty different shapes. Her indistinct

grounds of hesitation before the interview at the Whispering Stones, at

present counted for nothing; they were all merged in the final

repulsion. If it had not been for that day in Cardell Chase, she said

to herself now, there would have been no obstacle to her marrying

Grandcourt. On that day and after it, she had not reasoned and

balanced; she had acted with a force of impulse against which all

questioning was no more than a voice against a torrent. The impulse had

come--not only from her maidenly pride and jealousy, not only from the

shock of another woman's calamity thrust close on her vision, but--from

her dread of wrong-doing, which was vague, it was true, and aloof from

the daily details of her life, but not the less strong. Whatever was

accepted as consistent with being a lady she had no scruple about; but

from the dim region of what was called disgraceful, wrong, guilty, she

shrunk with mingled pride and terror; and even apart from shame, her

feeling would have made her place any deliberate injury of another in

the region of guilt.

But now--did she know exactly what was the state of the case with

regard to Mrs. Glasher and her children? She had given a sort of

promise--had said, "I will not interfere with your wishes." But would

another woman who married Grandcourt be in fact the decisive obstacle

to her wishes, or be doing her and her boy any real injury? Might it

not be just as well, nay better, that Grandcourt should marry? For what

could not a woman do when she was married, if she knew how to assert

herself? Here all was constructive imagination. Gwendolen had about as

accurate a conception of marriage--that is to say, of the mutual

influences, demands, duties of man and woman in the state of

matrimony--as she had of magnetic currents and the law of storms.

"Mamma managed baldly," was her way of summing up what she had seen of

her mother's experience: she herself would manage quite differently.

And the trials of matrimony were the last theme into which Mrs. Davilow

could choose to enter fully with this daughter.

"I wonder what mamma and my uncle would say if they knew about Mrs.

Glasher!" thought Gwendolen in her inward debating; not that she could

imagine herself telling them, even if she had not felt bound to

silence. "I wonder what anybody would say; or what they would say to

Mr. Grandcourt's marrying some one else and having other children!" To

consider what "anybody" would say, was to be released from the

difficulty of judging where everything was obscure to her when feeling

had ceased to be decisive. She had only to collect her memories, which

proved to her that "anybody" regarded the illegitimate children as more

rightfully to be looked shy on and deprived of social advantages than

illegitimate fathers. The verdict of "anybody" seemed to be that she

had no reason to concern herself greatly on behalf of Mrs. Glasher and

her children.

But there was another way in which they had caused her concern. What

others might think, could not do away with a feeling which in the first

instance would hardly be too strongly described as indignation and

loathing that she should have been expected to unite herself with an

outworn life, full of backward secrets which must have been more keenly

felt than any association with \_her\_. True, the question of love on her

own part had occupied her scarcely at all in relation to Grandcourt.

The desirability of marriage for her had always seemed due to other

feeling than love; and to be enamored was the part of the man, on whom

the advances depended. Gwendolen had found no objection to Grandcourt's

way of being enamored before she had had that glimpse of his past,

which she resented as if it had been a deliberate offense against her.

His advances to \_her\_ were deliberate, and she felt a retrospective

disgust for them. Perhaps other men's lives were of the same kind--full

of secrets which made the ignorant suppositions of the women they

wanted to marry a farce at which they were laughing in their sleeves.

These feelings of disgust and indignation had sunk deep; and though

other troublous experience in the last weeks had dulled them from

passion into remembrance, it was chiefly their reverberating activity

which kept her firm to the understanding with herself, that she was not

going to accept Grandcourt. She had never meant to form a new

determination; she had only been considering what might be thought or

said. If anything could have induced her to change, it would have been

the prospect of making all things easy for "poor mamma:" that, she

admitted, was a temptation. But no! she was going to refuse him.

Meanwhile, the thought that he was coming to be refused was

inspiriting: she had the white reins in her hands again; there was a

new current in her frame, reviving her from the beaten-down

consciousness in which she had been left by the interview with Klesmer.

She was not now going to crave an opinion of her capabilities; she was

going to exercise her power.

Was this what made her heart palpitate annoyingly when she heard the

horse's footsteps on the gravel?--when Miss Merry, who opened the door

to Grandcourt, came to tell her that he was in the drawing-room? The

hours of preparation and the triumph of the situation were apparently

of no use: she might as well have seen Grandcourt coming suddenly on

her in the midst of her despondency. While walking into the

drawing-room, she had to concentrate all her energy in that

self-control, which made her appear gravely gracious--as she gave her

hand to him, and answered his hope that she was quite well in a voice

as low and languid as his own. A moment afterward, when they were both

of them seated on two of the wreath-painted chairs--Gwendolen upright

with downcast eyelids, Grandcourt about two yards distant, leaning one

arm over the back of his chair and looking at her, while he held his

hat in his left hand--any one seeing them as a picture would have

concluded that they were in some stage of love-making suspense. And

certainly the love-making had begun: she already felt herself being

wooed by this silent man seated at an agreeable distance, with the

subtlest atmosphere of attar of roses and an attention bent wholly on

her. And he also considered himself to be wooing: he was not a man to

suppose that his presence carried no consequences; and he was exactly

the man to feel the utmost piquancy in a girl whom he had not found

quite calculable.

"I was disappointed not to find you at Leubronn," he began, his usual

broken drawl having just a shade of amorous languor in it. "The place

was intolerable without you. A mere kennel of a place. Don't you think

so?"

"I can't judge what it would be without myself," said Gwendolen,

turning her eyes on him, with some recovered sense of mischief. "\_With\_

myself I like it well enough to have stayed longer, if I could. But I

was obliged to come home on account of family troubles."

"It was very cruel of you to go to Leubronn," said Grandcourt, taking

no notice of the troubles, on which Gwendolen--she hardly knew

why--wished that there should be a clear understanding at once. "You

must have known that it would spoil everything: you knew you were the

heart and soul of everything that went on. Are you quite reckless about

me?"

It would be impossible to say "yes" in a tone that would be taken

seriously; equally impossible to say "no;" but what else could she say?

In her difficulty, she turned down her eyelids again and blushed over

face and neck. Grandcourt saw her in a new phase, and believed that she

was showing her inclination. But he was determined that she should show

it more decidedly.

"Perhaps there is some deeper interest? Some attraction--some

engagement--which it would have been only fair to make me aware of? Is

there any man who stands between us?"

Inwardly the answer framed itself. "No; but there is a woman." Yet how

could she utter this? Even if she had not promised that woman to be

silent, it would have been impossible for her to enter on the subject

with Grandcourt. But how could she arrest his wooing by beginning to

make a formal speech--"I perceive your intention--it is most

flattering, etc."? A fish honestly invited to come and be eaten has a

clear course in declining, but how if it finds itself swimming against

a net? And apart from the network, would she have dared at once to say

anything decisive? Gwendolen had not time to be clear on that point. As

it was, she felt compelled to silence, and after a pause, Grandcourt

said--

"Am I to understand that some one else is preferred?"

Gwendolen, now impatient of her own embarrassment, determined to rush

at the difficulty and free herself. She raised her eyes again and said

with something of her former clearness and defiance, "No"--wishing him

to understand, "What then? I may not be ready to take \_you\_." There was

nothing that Grandcourt could not understand which he perceived likely

to affect his \_amour propre\_.

"The last thing I would do, is to importune you. I should not hope to

win you by making myself a bore. If there were no hope for me, I would

ask you to tell me so at once, that I might just ride away to--no

matter where."

Almost to her own astonishment, Gwendolen felt a sudden alarm at the

image of Grandcourt finally riding away. What would be left her then?

Nothing but the former dreariness. She liked him to be there. She

snatched at the subject that would defer any decisive answer.

"I fear you are not aware of what has happened to us. I have lately had

to think so much of my mamma's troubles, that other subjects have been

quite thrown into the background. She has lost all her fortune, and we

are going to leave this place. I must ask you to excuse my seeming

preoccupied."

In eluding a direct appeal Gwendolen recovered some of her

self-possession. She spoke with dignity and looked straight at

Grandcourt, whose long, narrow, impenetrable eyes met hers, and

mysteriously arrested them: mysteriously; for the subtly-varied drama

between man and woman is often such as can hardly be rendered in words

put together like dominoes, according to obvious fixed marks. The word

of all work, Love, will no more express the myriad modes of mutual

attraction, than the word Thought can inform you what is passing

through your neighbor's mind. It would be hard to tell on which

side--Gwendolen's or Grandcourt's--the influence was more mixed. At

that moment his strongest wish was to be completely master of this

creature--this piquant combination of maidenliness and mischief: that

she knew things which had made her start away from him, spurred him to

triumph over that repugnance; and he was believing that he should

triumph. And she--ah, piteous equality in the need to dominate!--she

was overcome like the thirsty one who is drawn toward the seeming water

in the desert, overcome by the suffused sense that here in this man's

homage to her lay the rescue from helpless subjection to an oppressive

lot.

All the while they were looking at each other; and Grandcourt said,

slowly and languidly, as if it were of no importance, other things

having been settled--

"You will tell me now, I hope, that Mrs. Davilow's loss of fortune will

not trouble you further. You will trust me to prevent it from weighing

upon her. You will give me the claim to provide against that."

The little pauses and refined drawlings with which this speech was

uttered, gave time for Gwendolen to go through the dream of a life. As

the words penetrated her, they had the effect of a draught of wine,

which suddenly makes all things easier, desirable things not so wrong,

and people in general less disagreeable. She had a momentary phantasmal

love for this man who chose his words so well, and who was a mere

incarnation of delicate homage. Repugnance, dread, scruples--these were

dim as remembered pains, while she was already tasting relief under the

immediate pain of hopelessness. She imagined herself already springing

to her mother, and being playful again. Yet when Grandcourt had ceased

to speak, there was an instant in which she was conscious of being at

the turning of the ways.

"You are very generous," she said, not moving her eyes, and speaking

with a gentle intonation.

"You accept what will make such things a matter of course?" said

Grandcourt, without any new eagerness. "You consent to become my wife?"

This time Gwendolen remained quite pale. Something made her rise from

her seat in spite of herself and walk to a little distance. Then she

turned and with her hands folded before her stood in silence.

Grandcourt immediately rose too, resting his hat on the chair, but

still keeping hold of it. The evident hesitation of this destitute girl

to take his splendid offer stung him into a keenness of interest such

as he had not known for years. None the less because he attributed her

hesitation entirely to her knowledge about Mrs. Glasher. In that

attitude of preparation, he said--

"Do you command me to go?" No familiar spirit could have suggested to

him more effective words.

"No," said Gwendolen. She could not let him go: that negative was a

clutch. She seemed to herself to be, after all, only drifted toward the

tremendous decision--but drifting depends on something besides the

currents when the sails have been set beforehand.

"You accept my devotion?" said Grandcourt, holding his hat by his side

and looking straight into her eyes, without other movement. Their eyes

meeting in that way seemed to allow any length of pause: but wait as

long as she would, how could she contradict herself! What had she

detained him for? He had shut out any explanation.

"Yes," came as gravely from Gwendolen's lips as if she had been

answering to her name in a court of justice. He received it gravely,

and they still looked at each other in the same attitude. Was there

ever such a way before of accepting the bliss-giving "Yes"? Grandcourt

liked better to be at that distance from her, and to feel under a

ceremony imposed by an indefinable prohibition that breathed from

Gwendolen's bearing.

But he did at length lay down his hat and advance to take her hand,

just pressing his lips upon it and letting it go again. She thought his

behavior perfect, and gained a sense of freedom which made her almost

ready to be mischievous. Her "Yes" entailed so little at this moment

that there was nothing to screen the reversal of her gloomy prospects;

her vision was filled by her own release from the Momperts, and her

mother's release from Sawyer's Cottage. With a happy curl of the lips,

she said--

"Will you not see mamma? I will fetch her."

"Let us wait a little," said Grandcourt, in his favorite attitude,

having his left forefinger and thumb in his waist-coat pocket, and with

his right hand caressing his whisker, while he stood near Gwendolen and

looked at her--not unlike a gentleman who has a felicitous introduction

at an evening party.

"Have you anything else to say to me," said Gwendolen, playfully.

"Yes--I know having things said to you is a great bore," said

Grandcourt, rather sympathetically.

"Not when they are things I like to hear."

"Will it bother you to be asked how soon we can be married?"

"I think it will, to-day," said Gwendolen, putting up her chin saucily.

"Not to-day, then, but to-morrow. Think of it before I come to-morrow.

In a fortnight--or three weeks--as soon as possible."

"Ah, you think you will be tired of my company," said Gwendolen. "I

notice when people are married the husband is not so much with his wife

as when they are engaged. But perhaps I shall like that better, too."

She laughed charmingly.

"You shall have whatever you like," said Grandcourt.

"And nothing that I don't like?--please say that; because I think I

dislike what I don't like more than I like what I like," said

Gwendolen, finding herself in the woman's paradise, where all her

nonsense is adorable.

Grandcourt paused; these were subtilties in which he had much

experience of his own. "I don't know--this is such a brute of a world,

things are always turning up that one doesn't like. I can't always

hinder your being bored. If you like to ride Criterion, I can't hinder

his coming down by some chance or other."

"Ah, my friend Criterion, how is he?"

"He is outside: I made the groom ride him, that you might see him. He

had the side-saddle on for an hour or two yesterday. Come to the window

and look at him."

They could see the two horses being taken slowly round the sweep, and

the beautiful creatures, in their fine grooming, sent a thrill of

exultation through Gwendolen. They were the symbols of command and

luxury, in delightful contrast with the ugliness of poverty and

humiliation at which she had lately been looking close.

"Will you ride Criterion to-morrow?" said Grandcourt. "If you will,

everything shall be arranged."

"I should like it of all things," said Gwendolen. "I want to lose

myself in a gallop again. But now I must go and fetch mamma."

"Take my arm to the door, then," said Grandcourt, and she accepted.

Their faces were very near each other, being almost on a level, and he

was looking at her. She thought his manners as a lover more agreeable

than any she had seen described. She had no alarm lest he meant to kiss

her, and was so much at her ease, that she suddenly paused in the

middle of the room and said half archly, half earnestly--

"Oh, while I think of it--there is something I dislike that you can

save me from. I do \_not\_ like Mr. Lush's company."

"You shall not have it. I'll get rid of him."

"You are not fond of him yourself?"

"Not in the least. I let him hang on me because he has always been a

poor devil," said Grandcourt, in an \_adagio\_ of utter indifference.

"They got him to travel with me when I was a lad. He was always that

coarse-haired kind of brute--sort of cross between a hog and a

\_dilettante\_."

Gwendolen laughed. All that seemed kind and natural enough:

Grandcourt's fastidiousness enhanced the kindness. And when they

reached the door, his way of opening it for her was the perfection of

easy homage. Really, she thought, he was likely to be the least

disagreeable of husbands.

Mrs. Davilow was waiting anxiously in her bed-room when Gwendolen

entered, stepped toward her quickly, and kissing her on both cheeks

said in a low tone, "Come down, mamma, and see Mr. Grandcourt. I am

engaged to him."

"My darling child," said Mrs. Davilow, with a surprise that was rather

solemn than glad.

"Yes," said Gwendolen, in the same tone, and with a quickness which

implied that it was needless to ask questions. "Everything is settled.

You are not going to Sawyer's Cottage, I am not going to be inspected

by Mrs. Mompert, and everything is to be as I like. So come down with

me immediately."

BOOK IV--GWENDOLEN GETS HER CHOICE.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

"Il est plus aisÃ© de connoÃ®tre l'homme en gÃ©nÃ©ral que de connoÃ®tre un

homme en particulier.--LA ROCHEFOUCAULD."

An hour after Grandcourt had left, the important news of Gwendolen's

engagement was known at the rectory, and Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne, with

Anna, spent the evening at Offendene.

"My dear, let me congratulate you on having created a strong

attachment," said the rector. "You look serious, and I don't wonder at

it: a lifelong union is a solemn thing. But from the way Mr. Grandcourt

has acted and spoken I think we may already see some good arising out

of our adversity. It has given you an opportunity of observing your

future husband's delicate liberality."

Mr. Gascoigne referred to Grandcourt's mode of implying that he would

provide for Mrs. Davilow--a part of the love-making which Gwendolen had

remembered to cite to her mother with perfect accuracy.

"But I have no doubt that Mr. Grandcourt would have behaved quite as

handsomely if you had not gone away to Germany, Gwendolen, and had been

engaged to him, as you no doubt might have been, more than a month

ago," said Mrs. Gascoigne, feeling that she had to discharge a duty on

this occasion. "But now there is no more room for caprice; indeed, I

trust you have no inclination to any. A woman has a great debt of

gratitude to a man who perseveres in making her such an offer. But no

doubt you feel properly."

"I am not at all sure that I do, aunt," said Gwendolen, with saucy

gravity. "I don't know everything it is proper to feel on being

engaged."

The rector patted her shoulder and smiled as at a bit of innocent

naughtiness, and his wife took his behavior as an indication that she

was not to be displeased. As for Anna, she kissed Gwendolen and said,

"I do hope you will be happy," but then sank into the background and

tried to keep the tears back too. In the late days she had been

imagining a little romance about Rex--how if he still longed for

Gwendolen her heart might be softened by trouble into love, so that

they could by-and-by be married. And the romance had turned to a prayer

that she, Anna, might be able to rejoice like a good sister, and only

think of being useful in working for Gwendolen, as long as Rex was not

rich. But now she wanted grace to rejoice in something else. Miss Merry

and the four girls, Alice with the high shoulders, Bertha and Fanny the

whisperers, and Isabel the listener, were all present on this family

occasion, when everything seemed appropriately turning to the honor and

glory of Gwendolen, and real life was as interesting as "Sir Charles

Grandison." The evening passed chiefly in decisive remarks from the

rector, in answer to conjectures from the two elder ladies. According

to him, the case was not one in which he could think it his duty to

mention settlements: everything must, and doubtless would safely be

left to Mr. Grandcourt.

"I should like to know exactly what sort of places Ryelands and

Gadsmere are," said Mrs. Davilow.

"Gadsmere, I believe, is a secondary place," said Mr. Gascoigne; "But

Ryelands I know to be one of our finest seats. The park is extensive

and the woods of a very valuable order. The house was built by Inigo

Jones, and the ceilings are painted in the Italian style. The estate is

said to be worth twelve thousand a year, and there are two livings, one

a rectory, in the gift of the Grandcourts. There may be some burdens on

the land. Still, Mr. Grandcourt was an only child."

"It would be most remarkable," said Mrs. Gascoigne, "if he were to

become Lord Stannery in addition to everything else. Only think: there

is the Grandcourt estate, the Mallinger estate, \_and\_ the baronetcy,

\_and\_ the peerage,"--she was marking off the items on her fingers, and

paused on the fourth while she added, "but they say there will be no

land coming to him with the peerage." It seemed a pity there was

nothing for the fifth finger.

"The peerage," said the rector, judiciously, "must be regarded as a

remote chance. There are two cousins between the present peer and Mr.

Grandcourt. It is certainly a serious reflection how death and other

causes do sometimes concentrate inheritances on one man. But an excess

of that kind is to be deprecated. To be Sir Mallinger Grandcourt

Mallinger--I suppose that will be his style--with corresponding

properties, is a valuable talent enough for any man to have committed

to him. Let us hope it will be well used."

"And what a position for the wife, Gwendolen!" said Mrs. Gascoigne; "a

great responsibility indeed. But you must lose no time in writing to

Mrs. Mompert, Henry. It is a good thing that you have an engagement of

marriage to offer as an excuse, else she might feel offended. She is

rather a high woman."

"I am rid of that horror," thought Gwendolen, to whom the name of

Mompert had become a sort of Mumbo-jumbo. She was very silent through

the evening, and that night could hardly sleep at all in her little

white bed. It was a rarity in her strong youth to be wakeful: and

perhaps a still greater rarity for her to be careful that her mother

should not know of her restlessness. But her state of mind was

altogether new: she who had been used to feel sure of herself, and

ready to manage others, had just taken a decisive step which she had

beforehand thought that she would not take--nay, perhaps, was bound not

to take. She could not go backward now; she liked a great deal of what

lay before her; and there was nothing for her to like if she went back.

But her resolution was dogged by the shadow of that previous resolve

which had at first come as the undoubting movement of her whole being.

While she lay on her pillow with wide-open eyes, "looking on darkness

which the blind do see," she was appalled by the idea that she was

going to do what she had once started away from with repugnance. It was

new to her that a question of right or wrong in her conduct should

rouse her terror; she had known no compunction that atoning caresses

and presents could not lay to rest. But here had come a moment when

something like a new consciousness was awaked. She seemed on the edge

of adopting deliberately, as a notion for all the rest of her life,

what she had rashly said in her bitterness, when her discovery had

driven her away to Leubronn:--that it did not signify what she did; she

had only to amuse herself as best she could. That lawlessness, that

casting away of all care for justification, suddenly frightened her: it

came to her with the shadowy array of possible calamity behind

it--calamity which had ceased to be a mere name for her; and all the

infiltrated influences of disregarded religious teaching, as well as

the deeper impressions of something awful and inexorable enveloping

her, seemed to concentrate themselves in the vague conception of

avenging power. The brilliant position she had longed for, the imagined

freedom she would create for herself in marriage, the deliverance from

the dull insignificance of her girlhood--all immediately before her;

and yet they had come to her hunger like food with the taint of

sacrilege upon it, which she must snatch with terror. In the darkness

and loneliness of her little bed, her more resistant self could not act

against the first onslaught of dread after her irrevocable decision.

That unhappy-faced woman and her children--Grandcourt and his relations

with her--kept repeating themselves in her imagination like the

clinging memory of a disgrace, and gradually obliterated all other

thought, leaving only the consciousness that she had taken those scenes

into her life. Her long wakefulness seemed a delirium; a faint, faint

light penetrated beside the window-curtain; the chillness increased.

She could bear it no longer, and cried "Mamma!"

"Yes, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, immediately, in a wakeful voice.

"Let me come to you."

She soon went to sleep on her mother's shoulder, and slept on till

late, when, dreaming of a lit-up ball-room, she opened her eyes on her

mother standing by the bedside with a small packet in her hand.

"I am sorry to wake you, darling, but I thought it better to give you

this at once. The groom has brought Criterion; he has come on another

horse, and says he is to stay here."

Gwendolen sat up in bed and opened the packet. It was a delicate

enameled casket, and inside was a splendid diamond ring with a letter

which contained a folded bit of colored paper and these words:--

Pray wear this ring when I come at twelve in sign of our betrothal. I

enclose a check drawn in the name of Mr. Gascoigne, for immediate

expenses. Of course Mrs. Davilow will remain at Offendene, at least

for some time. I hope, when I come, you will have granted me an early

day, when you may begin to command me at a shorter distance.

Yours devotedly,

H. M. GRANDCOURT.

The check was for five hundred pounds, and Gwendolen turned it toward

her mother, with the letter.

"How very kind and delicate!" said Mrs. Davilow, with much feeling.

"But I really should like better not to be dependent on a son-in-law. I

and the girls could get along very well."

"Mamma, if you say that again, I will not marry him," said Gwendolen,

angrily.

"My dear child, I trust you are not going to marry only for my sake,"

said Mrs. Davilow, depreciatingly.

Gwendolen tossed her head on the pillow away from her mother, and let

the ring lie. She was irritated at this attempt to take away a motive.

Perhaps the deeper cause of her irritation was the consciousness that

she was not going to marry solely for her mamma's sake--that she was

drawn toward the marriage in ways against which stronger reasons than

her mother's renunciation were yet not strong enough to hinder her. She

had waked up to the signs that she was irrevocably engaged, and all the

ugly visions, the alarms, the arguments of the night, must be met by

daylight, in which probably they would show themselves weak. "What I

long for is your happiness, dear," continued Mrs. Davilow, pleadingly.

"I will not say anything to vex you. Will you not put on the ring?"

For a few moments Gwendolen did not answer, but her thoughts were

active. At last she raised herself with a determination to do as she

would do if she had started on horseback, and go on with spirit,

whatever ideas might be running in her head.

"I thought the lover always put on the betrothal ring himself," she

said laughingly, slipping the ring on her finger, and looking at it

with a charming movement of her head. "I know why he has sent it," she

added, nodding at her mamma.

"Why?"

"He would rather make me put it on than ask me to let him do it. Aha!

he is very proud. But so am I. We shall match each other. I should hate

a man who went down on his knees, and came fawning on me. He really is

not disgusting."

"That is very moderate praise, Gwen."

"No, it is not, for a man," said Gwendolen gaily. "But now I must get

up and dress. Will you come and do my hair, mamma, dear," she went on,

drawing down her mamma's face to caress it with her own cheeks, "and

not be so naughty any more as to talk of living in poverty? You must

bear to be made comfortable, even if you don't like it. And Mr.

Grandcourt behaves perfectly, now, does he not?"

"Certainly he does," said Mrs. Davilow, encouraged, and persuaded that

after all Gwendolen was fond of her betrothed. She herself thought him

a man whose attentions were likely to tell on a girl's feeling. Suitors

must often be judged as words are, by the standing and the figure they

make in polite society: it is difficult to know much else of them. And

all the mother's anxiety turned not on Grandcourt's character, but on

Gwendolen's mood in accepting him.

The mood was necessarily passing through a new phase this morning. Even

in the hour of making her toilet, she had drawn on all the knowledge

she had for grounds to justify her marriage. And what she most dwelt on

was the determination, that when she was Grandcourt's wife, she would

urge him to the most liberal conduct toward Mrs. Glasher's children.

"Of what use would it be to her that I should not marry him? He could

have married her if he liked; but he did \_not\_ like. Perhaps she is to

blame for that. There must be a great deal about her that I know

nothing of. And he must have been good to her in many ways, else she

would not have wanted to marry him."

But that last argument at once began to appear doubtful. Mrs. Glasher

naturally wished to exclude other children who would stand between

Grandcourt and her own: and Gwendolen's comprehension of this feeling

prompted another way of reconciling claims.

"Perhaps we shall have no children. I hope we shall not. And he might

leave the estate to the pretty little boy. My uncle said that Mr.

Grandcourt could do as he liked with the estates. Only when Sir Hugo

Mallinger dies there will be enough for two."

This made Mrs. Glasher appear quite unreasonable in demanding that her

boy should be sole heir; and the double property was a security that

Grandcourt's marriage would do her no wrong, when the wife was

Gwendolen Harleth with all her proud resolution not to be fairly

accused. This maiden had been accustomed to think herself blameless;

other persons only were faulty.

It was striking, that in the hold which this argument of her doing no

wrong to Mrs. Glasher had taken on her mind, her repugnance to the idea

of Grandcourt's past had sunk into a subordinate feeling. The terror

she had felt in the night-watches at overstepping the border of

wickedness by doing what she had at first felt to be wrong, had dulled

any emotions about his conduct. She was thinking of him, whatever he

might be, as a man over whom she was going to have indefinite power;

and her loving him having never been a question with her, any

agreeableness he had was so much gain. Poor Gwendolen had no awe of

unmanageable forces in the state of matrimony, but regarded it as

altogether a matter of management, in which she would know how to act.

In relation to Grandcourt's past she encouraged new doubts whether he

were likely to have differed much from other men; and she devised

little schemes for learning what was expected of men in general.

But whatever else might be true in the world, her hair was dressed

suitably for riding, and she went down in her riding-habit, to avoid

delay before getting on horseback. She wanted to have her blood stirred

once more with the intoxication of youth, and to recover the daring

with which she had been used to think of her course in life. Already a

load was lifted off her; for in daylight and activity it was less

oppressive to have doubts about her choice, than to feel that she had

no choice but to endure insignificance and servitude.

"Go back and make yourself look like a duchess, mamma," she said,

turning suddenly as she was going down-stairs. "Put your point-lace

over your head. I must have you look like a duchess. You must not take

things humbly."

When Grandcourt raised her left hand gently and looked at the ring, she

said gravely, "It was very good of you to think of everything and send

me that packet."

"You will tell me if there is anything I forget?" he said, keeping the

hand softly within his own. "I will do anything you wish."

"But I am very unreasonable in my wishes," said Gwendolen, smiling.

"Yes, I expect that. Women always are."

"Then I will not be unreasonable," said Gwendolen, taking away her hand

and tossing her head saucily. "I will not be told that I am what women

always are."

"I did not say that," said Grandcourt, looking at her with his usual

gravity. "You are what no other woman is."

"And what is that, pray?" said Gwendolen, moving to a distance with a

little air of menace.

Grandcourt made his pause before he answered. "You are the woman I

love."

"Oh, what nice speeches!" said Gwendolen, laughing. The sense of that

love which he must once have given to another woman under strange

circumstances was getting familiar.

"Give me a nice speech in return. Say when we are to be married."

"Not yet. Not till we have had a gallop over the downs. I am so thirsty

for that, I can think of nothing else. I wish the hunting had begun.

Sunday the twentieth, twenty-seventh, Monday, Tuesday." Gwendolen was

counting on her fingers with the prettiest nod while she looked at

Grandcourt, and at last swept one palm over the other while she said

triumphantly, "It will begin in ten days!"

"Let us be married in ten days, then," said Grandcourt, "and we shall

not be bored about the stables."

"What do women always say in answer to that?" said Gwendolen,

mischievously.

"They agree to it," said the lover, rather off his guard.

"Then I will not!" said Gwendolen, taking up her gauntlets and putting

them on, while she kept her eyes on him with gathering fun in them.

The scene was pleasant on both sides. A cruder lover would have lost

the view of her pretty ways and attitudes, and spoiled all by stupid

attempts at caresses, utterly destructive of drama. Grandcourt

preferred the drama; and Gwendolen, left at ease, found her spirits

rising continually as she played at reigning. Perhaps if Klesmer had

seen more of her in this unconscious kind of acting, instead of when

she was trying to be theatrical, he might have rated her chance higher.

When they had had a glorious gallop, however, she was in a state of

exhilaration that disposed her to think well of hastening the marriage

which would make her life all of apiece with this splendid kind of

enjoyment. She would not debate any more about an act to which she had

committed herself; and she consented to fix the wedding on that day

three weeks, notwithstanding the difficulty of fulfilling the customary

laws of the \_trousseau\_.

Lush, of course, was made aware of the engagement by abundant signs,

without being formally told. But he expected some communication as a

consequence of it, and after a few days he became rather impatient

under Grandcourt's silence, feeling sure that the change would affect

his personal prospects, and wishing to know exactly how. His tactics no

longer included any opposition--which he did not love for its own sake.

He might easily cause Grandcourt a great deal of annoyance, but it

would be to his own injury, and to create annoyance was not a motive

with him. Miss Gwendolen he would certainly not have been sorry to

frustrate a little, but--after all there was no knowing what would

come. It was nothing new that Grandcourt should show a perverse

wilfulness; yet in his freak about this girl he struck Lush rather

newly as something like a man who was \_fey\_--led on by an ominous

fatality; and that one born to his fortune should make a worse business

of his life than was necessary, seemed really pitiable. Having

protested against the marriage, Lush had a second-sight for its evil

consequences. Grandcourt had been taking the pains to write letters and

give orders himself instead of employing Lush, and appeared to be

ignoring his usefulness, even choosing, against the habit of years, to

breakfast alone in his dressing-room. But a \_tete-Ã -tete\_ was not to be

avoided in a house empty of guests; and Lush hastened to use an

opportunity of saying--it was one day after dinner, for there were

difficulties in Grandcourt's dining at Offendene--

"And when is the marriage to take place?"

Grandcourt, who drank little wine, had left the table and was lounging,

while he smoked, in an easy chair near the hearth, where a fire of oak

boughs was gaping to its glowing depths, and edging them with a

delicate tint of ashes delightful to behold. The chair of red-brown

velvet brocade was a becoming back-ground for his pale-tinted, well-cut

features and exquisite long hands. Omitting the cigar, you might have

imagined him a portrait by Moroni, who would have rendered wonderfully

the impenetrable gaze and air of distinction; and a portrait by that

great master would have been quite as lively a companion as Grandcourt

was disposed to be. But he answered without unusual delay.

"On the tenth."

"I suppose you intend to remain here."

"We shall go to Ryelands for a little while; but we shall return here

for the sake of the hunting."

After this word there was the languid inarticulate sound frequent with

Grandcourt when he meant to continue speaking, and Lush waited for

something more. Nothing came, and he was going to put another question,

when the inarticulate sound began again and introduced the mildly

uttered suggestion--

"You had better make some new arrangement for yourself."

"What! I am to cut and run?" said Lush, prepared to be good-tempered on

the occasion.

"Something of that kind."

"The bride objects to me. I hope she will make up to you for the want

of my services."

"I can't help your being so damnably disagreeable to women," said

Grandcourt, in soothing apology.

"To one woman, if you please."

"It makes no difference since she is the one in question."

"I suppose I am not to be turned adrift after fifteen years without

some provision."

"You must have saved something out of me."

"Deuced little. I have often saved something for you."

"You can have three hundred a year. But you must live in town and be

ready to look after things when I want you. I shall be rather hard up."

"If you are not going to be at Ryelands this winter, I might run down

there and let you know how Swinton goes on."

"If you like. I don't care a toss where you are, so that you keep out

of sight."

"Much obliged," said Lush, able to take the affair more easily than he

had expected. He was supported by the secret belief that he should

by-and-by be wanted as much as ever.

"Perhaps you will not object to packing up as soon as possible," said

Grandcourt. "The Torringtons are coming, and Miss Harleth will be

riding over here."

"With all my heart. Can't I be of use in going to Gadsmere."

"No. I am going myself."

"About your being rather hard up. Have you thought of that plan--"

"Just leave me alone, will you?" said Grandcourt, in his lowest audible

tone, tossing his cigar into the fire, and rising to walk away.

He spent the evening in the solitude of the smaller drawing-room,

where, with various new publications on the table of the kind a

gentleman may like to have on hand without touching, he employed

himself (as a philosopher might have done) in sitting meditatively on

the sofa and abstaining from literature--political, comic, cynical, or

romantic. In this way hours may pass surprisingly soon, without the

arduous invisible chase of philosophy; not from love of thought, but

from hatred of effort--from a state of the inward world, something like

premature age, where the need for action lapses into a mere image of

what has been, is, and may or might be; where impulse is born and dies

in a phantasmal world, pausing in rejection of even a shadowy

fulfillment. That is a condition which often comes with whitening hair;

and sometimes, too, an intense obstinacy and tenacity of rule, like the

main trunk of an exorbitant egoism, conspicuous in proportion as the

varied susceptibilities of younger years are stripped away.

But Grandcourt's hair, though he had not much of it, was of a fine,

sunny blonde, and his moods were not entirely to be explained as ebbing

energy. We mortals have a strange spiritual chemistry going on within

us, so that a lazy stagnation or even a cottony milkiness may be

preparing one knows not what biting or explosive material. The navvy

waking from sleep and without malice heaving a stone to crush the life

out of his still sleeping comrade, is understood to lack the trained

motive which makes a character fairly calculable in its actions; but by

a roundabout course even a gentleman may make of himself a chancy

personage, raising an uncertainty as to what he may do next, that sadly

spoils companionship.

Grandcourt's thoughts this evening were like the circlets one sees in a

dark pool, continually dying out and continually started again by some

impulse from below the surface. The deeper central impulse came from

the image of Gwendolen; but the thoughts it stirred would be

imperfectly illustrated by a reference to the amatory poets of all

ages. It was characteristic that he got none of his satisfaction from

the belief that Gwendolen was in love with him; and that love had

overcome the jealous resentment which had made her run away from him.

On the contrary, he believed that this girl was rather exceptional in

the fact that, in spite of his assiduous attention to her, she was not

in love with him; and it seemed to him very likely that if it had not

been for the sudden poverty which had come over her family, she would

not have accepted him. From the very first there had been an

exasperating fascination in the tricksiness with which she had--not met

his advances, but--wheeled away from them. She had been brought to

accept him in spite of everything--brought to kneel down like a horse

under training for the arena, though she might have an objection to it

all the while. On the whole, Grandcourt got more pleasure out of this

notion than he could have done out of winning a girl of whom he was

sure that she had a strong inclination for him personally. And yet this

pleasure in mastering reluctance flourished along with the habitual

persuasion that no woman whom he favored could be quite indifferent to

his personal influence; and it seemed to him not unlikely that

by-and-by Gwendolen might be more enamored of him than he of her. In

any case, she would have to submit; and he enjoyed thinking of her as

his future wife, whose pride and spirit were suited to command every

one but himself. He had no taste for a woman who was all tenderness to

him, full of petitioning solicitude and willing obedience. He meant to

be master of a woman who would have liked to master him, and who

perhaps would have been capable of mastering another man.

Lush, having failed in his attempted reminder to Grandcourt, thought it

well to communicate with Sir Hugo, in whom, as a man having perhaps

interest enough to command the bestowal of some place where the work

was light, gentlemanly, and not ill-paid, he was anxious to cultivate a

sense of friendly obligation, not feeling at all secure against the

future need of such a place. He wrote the following letter, and

addressed it to Park Lane, whither he knew the family had returned from

Leubronn:--

MY DEAR SIR HUGO--Since we came home the marriage has been absolutely

decided on, and is to take place in less than three weeks. It is so

far the worse for him that her mother has lately lost all her fortune,

and he will have to find supplies. Grandcourt, I know, is feeling the

want of cash; and unless some other plan is resorted to, he will be

raising money in a foolish way. I am going to leave Diplow

immediately, and I shall not be able to start the topic. What I should

advise is, that Mr. Deronda, who I know has your confidence, should

propose to come and pay a short visit here, according to invitation

(there are going to be other people in the house), and that you should

put him fully in possession of your wishes and the possible extent of

your offer. Then, that he should introduce the subject to Grandcourt

so as not to imply that you suspect any particular want of money on

his part, but only that there is a strong wish on yours, What I have

formerly said to him has been in the way of a conjecture that you

might be willing to give a good sum for his chance of Diplow; but if

Mr. Deronda came armed with a definite offer, that would take another

sort of hold. Ten to one he will not close for some time to come; but

the proposal will have got a stronger lodgment in his mind; and though

at present he has a great notion of the hunting here, I see a

likelihood, under the circumstances, that he will get a distaste for

the neighborhood, and there will be the notion of the money sticking

by him without being urged. I would bet on your ultimate success. As I

am not to be exiled to Siberia, but am to be within call, it is

possible that, by and by, I may be of more service to you. But at

present I can think of no medium so good as Mr. Deronda. Nothing puts

Grandcourt in worse humor than having the lawyers thrust their paper

under his nose uninvited.

Trusting that your visit to Leubronn has put you in excellent

condition for the winter, I remain, my dear Sir Hugo,

Yours very faithfully,

THOMAS CRANMER LUSH.

Sir Hugo, having received this letter at breakfast, handed it to

Deronda, who, though he had chambers in town, was somehow hardly ever

in them, Sir Hugo not being contented without him. The chatty baronet

would have liked a young companion even if there had been no peculiar

reasons for attachment between them: one with a fine harmonious

unspoiled face fitted to keep up a cheerful view of posterity and

inheritance generally, notwithstanding particular disappointments; and

his affection for Deronda was not diminished by the deep-lying though

not obtrusive difference in their notions and tastes. Perhaps it was

all the stronger; acting as the same sort of difference does between a

man and a woman in giving a piquancy to the attachment which subsists

in spite of it. Sir Hugo did not think unapprovingly of himself; but he

looked at men and society from a liberal-menagerie point of view, and

he had a certain pride in Deronda's differing from him, which, if it

had found voice, might have said--"You see this fine young fellow--not

such as you see every day, is he?--he belongs to me in a sort of way. I

brought him up from a child; but you would not ticket him off easily,

he has notions of his own, and he's as far as the poles asunder from

what I was at his age." This state of feeling was kept up by the mental

balance in Deronda, who was moved by an affectionateness such as we are

apt to call feminine, disposing him to yield in ordinary details, while

he had a certain inflexibility of judgment, and independence of

opinion, held to be rightfully masculine.

When he had read the letter, he returned it without speaking, inwardly

wincing under Lush's mode of attributing a neutral usefulness to him in

the family affairs.

"What do you say, Dan? It would be pleasant enough for you. You have

not seen the place for a good many years now, and you might have a

famous run with the harriers if you went down next week," said Sir Hugo.

"I should not go on that account," said Deronda, buttering his bread

attentively. He had an objection to this transparent kind of

persuasiveness, which all intelligent animals are seen to treat with

indifference. If he went to Diplow he should be doing something

disagreeable to oblige Sir Hugo.

"I think Lush's notion is a good one. And it would be a pity to lose

the occasion."

"That is a different matter--if you think my going of importance to

your object," said Deronda, still with that aloofness of manner which

implied some suppression. He knew that the baronet had set his heart on

the affair.

"Why, you will see the fair gambler, the Leubronn Diana, I shouldn't

wonder," said Sir Hugo, gaily. "We shall have to invite her to the

Abbey, when they are married," he added, turning to Lady Mallinger, as

if she too had read the letter.

"I cannot conceive whom you mean," said Lady Mallinger, who in fact had

not been listening, her mind having been taken up with her first sips

of coffee, the objectionable cuff of her sleeve, and the necessity of

carrying Theresa to the dentist--innocent and partly laudable

preoccupations, as the gentle lady's usually were. Should her

appearance be inquired after, let it be said that she had reddish

blonde hair (the hair of the period), a small Roman nose, rather

prominent blue eyes and delicate eyelids, with a figure which her

thinner friends called fat, her hands showing curves and dimples like a

magnified baby's.

"I mean that Grandcourt is going to marry the girl you saw at

Leubronn--don't you remember her--the Miss Harleth who used to play at

roulette."

"Dear me! Is that a good match for him?"

"That depends on the sort of goodness he wants," said Sir Hugo,

smiling. "However, she and her friends have nothing, and she will bring

him expenses. It's a good match for my purposes, because if I am

willing to fork out a sum of money, he may be willing to give up his

chance of Diplow, so that we shall have it out and out, and when I die

you will have the consolation of going to the place you would like to

go to--wherever I may go."

"I wish you would not talk of dying in that light way, dear."

"It's rather a heavy way, Lou, for I shall have to pay a heavy

sum--forty thousand, at least."

"But why are we to invite them to the Abbey?" said Lady Mallinger. "I

do \_not\_ like women who gamble, like Lady Cragstone."

"Oh, you will not mind her for a week. Besides, she is not like Lady

Cragstone because she gambled a little, any more than I am like a

broker because I'm a Whig. I want to keep Grandcourt in good humor, and

to let him see plenty of this place, that he may think the less of

Diplow. I don't know yet whether I shall get him to meet me in this

matter. And if Dan were to go over on a visit there, he might hold out

the bait to him. It would be doing me a great service." This was meant

for Deronda.

"Daniel is not fond of Mr. Grandcourt, I think, is he?" said Lady

Mallinger, looking at Deronda inquiringly.

"There is no avoiding everybody one doesn't happen to be fond of," said

Deronda. "I will go to Diplow--I don't know that I have anything better

to do--since Sir Hugo wishes it."

"That's a trump!" said Sir Hugo, well pleased. "And if you don't find

it very pleasant, it's so much experience. Nothing used to come amiss

to me when I was young. You must see men and manners."

"Yes; but I have seen that man, and something of his manners too," said

Deronda.

"Not nice manners, I think," said Lady Mallinger.

"Well, you see they succeed with your sex," said Sir Hugo, provokingly.

"And he was an uncommonly good-looking fellow when he was two or three

and twenty--like his father. He doesn't take after his father in

marrying the heiress, though. If he had got Miss Arrowpoint and my land

too, confound him, he would have had a fine principality."

Deronda, in anticipating the projected visit, felt less disinclination

than when consenting to it. The story of that girl's marriage did

interest him: what he had heard through Lush of her having run away

from the suit of the man she was now going to take as a husband, had

thrown a new sort of light on her gambling; and it was probably the

transition from that fevered worldliness into poverty which had urged

her acceptance where she must in some way have felt repulsion. All this

implied a nature liable to difficulty and struggle--elements of life

which had a predominant attraction for his sympathy, due perhaps to his

early pain in dwelling on the conjectured story of his own existence.

Persons attracted him, as Hans Meyrick had done, in proportion to the

possibility of his defending them, rescuing them, telling upon their

lives with some sort of redeeming influence; and he had to resist an

inclination, easily accounted for, to withdraw coldly from the

fortunate. But in the movement which had led him to repurchase

Gwendolen's necklace for her, and which was at work in him still, there

was something beyond his habitual compassionate fervor--something due

to the fascination of her womanhood. He was very open to that sort of

charm, and mingled it with the consciously Utopian pictures of his own

future; yet any one able to trace the folds of his character might have

conceived that he would be more likely than many less passionate men to

love a woman without telling her of it. Sprinkle food before a

delicate-eared bird: there is nothing he would more willingly take, yet

he keeps aloof, because of his sensibility to checks which to you are

imperceptible. And one man differs from another, as we all differ from

the Bosjesman, in a sensibility to checks, that come from variety of

needs, spiritual or other. It seemed to foreshadow that capability of

reticence in Deronda that his imagination was much occupied with two

women, to neither of whom would he have held it possible that he should

ever make love. Hans Meyrick had laughed at him for having something of

the knight-errant in his disposition; and he would have found his proof

if he had known what was just now going on in Deronda's mind about

Mirah and Gwendolen.

Deronda wrote without delay to announce his visit to Diplow, and

received in reply a polite assurance that his coming would give great

pleasure. That was not altogether untrue. Grandcourt thought it

probable that the visit was prompted by Sir Hugo's desire to court him

for a purpose which he did not make up his mind to resist; and it was

not a disagreeable idea to him that this fine fellow, whom he believed

to be his cousin under the rose, would witness, perhaps with some

jealousy, Henleigh Mallinger Grandcourt play the commanding part of

betrothed lover to a splendid girl whom the cousin had already looked

at with admiration.

Grandcourt himself was not jealous of anything unless it threatened his

mastery--which he did not think himself likely to lose.

CHAPTER XXIX.

"Surely whoever speaks to me in the right voice,

him or her I shall follow.

As the water follows the moon, silently,

with fluid steps anywhere around the globe."

--WALT WHITMAN.

"Now my cousins are at Diplow," said Grandcourt, "will you go

there?--to-morrow? The carriage shall come for Mrs. Davilow. You can

tell me what you would like done in the rooms. Things must be put in

decent order while we are away at Ryelands. And to-morrow is the only

day."

He was sitting sideways on a sofa in the drawing-room at Offendene, one

hand and elbow resting on the back, and the other hand thrust between

his crossed knees--in the attitude of a man who is much interested in

watching the person next to him. Gwendolen, who had always disliked

needlework, had taken to it with apparent zeal since her engagement,

and now held a piece of white embroidery which, on examination, would

have shown many false stitches. During the last eight or nine days

their hours had been chiefly spent on horseback, but some margin had

always been left for this more difficult sort of companionship, which,

however, Gwendolen had not found disagreeable. She was very well

satisfied with Grandcourt. His answers to her lively questions about

what he had seen and done in his life, bore drawling very well. From

the first she had noticed that he knew what to say; and she was

constantly feeling not only that he had nothing of the fool in his

composition, but that by some subtle means he communicated to her the

impression that all the folly lay with other people, who did what he

did not care to do. A man who seems to have been able to command the

best, has a sovereign power of depreciation. Then Grandcourt's behavior

as a lover had hardly at all passed the limit of an amorous homage

which was inobtrusive as a wafted odor of roses, and spent all its

effects in a gratified vanity. One day, indeed, he had kissed not her

cheek but her neck a little below her ear; and Gwendolen, taken by

surprise, had started up with a marked agitation which made him rise

too and say, "I beg your pardon--did I annoy you?" "Oh, it was

nothing," said Gwendolen, rather afraid of herself, "only I cannot

bear--to be kissed under my ear." She sat down again with a little

playful laugh, but all the while she felt her heart beating with a

vague fear: she was no longer at liberty to flout him as she had

flouted poor Rex. Her agitation seemed not uncomplimentary, and he had

been contented not to transgress again.

To-day a slight rain hindered riding; but to compensate, a package had

come from London, and Mrs. Davilow had just left the room after

bringing in for admiration the beautiful things (of Grandcourt's

ordering) which lay scattered about on the tables. Gwendolen was just

then enjoying the scenery of her life. She let her hands fall on her

lap, and said with a pretty air of perversity--

"Why is to-morrow the only day?"

"Because the next day is the first with the hounds," said Grandcourt.

"And after that?"

"After that I must go away for a couple of days--it's a bore--but I

shall go one day and come back the next." Grandcourt noticed a change

in her face, and releasing his hand from under his knees, he laid it on

hers, and said, "You object to my going away?"

"It's no use objecting," said Gwendolen, coldly. She was resisting to

the utmost her temptation to tell him that she suspected to whom he was

going--the temptation to make a clean breast, speaking without

restraint.

"Yes it is," said Grandcourt, enfolding her hand. "I will put off

going. And I will travel at night, so as only to be away one day." He

thought that he knew the reason of what he inwardly called this bit of

temper, and she was particularly fascinating to him at this moment.

"Then don't put off going, but travel at night," said Gwendolen,

feeling that she could command him, and finding in this peremptoriness

a small outlet for her irritation.

"Then you will go to Diplow to-morrow?"

"Oh, yes, if you wish it," said Gwendolen, in a high tone of careless

assent. Her concentration in other feelings had really hindered her

from taking notice that her hand was being held.

"How you treat us poor devils of men!" said Grandcourt, lowering his

tone. "We are always getting the worst of it."

"\_Are\_ you?" said Gwendolen, in a tone of inquiry, looking at him more

naÃ¯vely than usual. She longed to believe this commonplace \_badinage\_

as the serious truth about her lover: in that case, she too was

justified. If she knew everything, Mrs. Glasher would appear more

blamable than Grandcourt. "\_Are\_ you always getting the worst?"

"Yes. Are you as kind to me as I am to you?" said Grandcourt, looking

into her eyes with his narrow gaze.

Gwendolen felt herself stricken. She was conscious of having received

so much, that her sense of command was checked, and sank away in the

perception that, look around her as she might, she could not turn back:

it was as if she had consented to mount a chariot where another held

the reins; and it was not in her nature to leap out in the eyes of the

world. She had not consented in ignorance, and all she could say now

would be a confession that she had not been ignorant. Her right to

explanation was gone. All she had to do now was to adjust herself, so

that the spikes of that unwilling penance which conscience imposed

should not gall her. With a sort of mental shiver, she resolutely

changed her mental attitude. There had been a little pause, during

which she had not turned away her eyes; and with a sudden break into a

smile, she said--

"If I were as kind to you as you are to me, that would spoil your

generosity: it would no longer be as great as it could be--and it is

that now."

"Then I am not to ask for one kiss," said Grandcourt, contented to pay

a large price for this new kind of love-making, which introduced

marriage by the finest contrast.

"Not one?" said Gwendolen, getting saucy, and nodding at him defiantly.

He lifted her little left hand to his lips, and then released it

respectfully. Clearly it was faint praise to say of him that he was not

disgusting: he was almost charming; and she felt at this moment that it

was not likely she could ever have loved another man better than this

one. His reticence gave her some inexplicable, delightful consciousness.

"Apropos," she said, taking up her work again, "is there any one

besides Captain and Mrs. Torrington at Diplow?--or do you leave them

\_tete-Ã -tete\_? I suppose he converses in cigars, and she answers with

her chignon."

"She has a sister with her," said Grandcourt, with his shadow of a

smile, "and there are two men besides--one of them you know, I believe."

"Ah, then, I have a poor opinion of him," said Gwendolen, shaking her

head.

"You saw him at Leubronn--young Deronda--a young fellow with the

Mallingers."

Gwendolen felt as if her heart were making a sudden gambol, and her

fingers, which tried to keep a firm hold on her work, got cold.

"I never spoke to him," she said, dreading any discernible change in

herself. "Is he not disagreeable?"

"No, not particularly," said Grandcourt, in his most languid way. "He

thinks a little too much of himself. I thought he had been introduced

to you."

"No. Some one told me his name the evening before I came away. That was

all. What is he?"

"A sort of ward of Sir Hugo Mallinger's. Nothing of any consequence."

"Oh, poor creature! How very unpleasant for him!" said Gwendolen,

speaking from the lip, and not meaning any sarcasm. "I wonder if it has

left off raining!" she added, rising and going to look out of the

window.

Happily it did not rain the next day, and Gwendolen rode to Diplow on

Criterion as she had done on that former day when she returned with her

mother in the carriage. She always felt the more daring for being in

her riding-dress; besides having the agreeable belief that she looked

as well as possible in it--a sustaining consciousness in any meeting

which seems formidable. Her anger toward Deronda had changed into a

superstitious dread--due, perhaps, to the coercion he had exercised

over her thought--lest the first interference of his in her life might

foreshadow some future influence. It is of such stuff that

superstitions are commonly made: an intense feeling about ourselves

which makes the evening star shine at us with a threat, and the

blessing of a beggar encourage us. And superstitions carry consequences

which often verify their hope or their foreboding.

The time before luncheon was taken up for Gwendolen by going over the

rooms with Mrs. Torrington and Mrs. Davilow; and she thought it likely

that if she saw Deronda, there would hardly be need for more than a bow

between them. She meant to notice him as little as possible.

And after all she found herself under an inward compulsion too strong

for her pride. From the first moment of their being in the room

together, she seemed to herself to be doing nothing but notice him;

everything else was automatic performance of an habitual part.

When he took his place at lunch, Grandcourt had said, "Deronda, Miss

Harleth tells me you were not introduced to her at Leubronn?"

"Miss Harleth hardly remembers me, I imagine," said Deronda, looking at

her quite simply, as they bowed. "She was intensely occupied when I saw

her."

Now, did he suppose that she had not suspected him of being the person

who redeemed her necklace?

"On the contrary. I remember you very well," said Gwendolen, feeling

rather nervous, but governing herself and looking at him in return with

new examination. "You did not approve of my playing at roulette."

"How did you come to that conclusion?" said Deronda, gravely.

"Oh, you cast an evil eye on my play," said Gwendolen, with a turn of

her head and a smile. "I began to lose as soon as you came to look on.

I had always been winning till then."

"Roulette in such a kennel as Leubronn is a horrid bore," said

Grandcourt.

"\_I\_ found it a bore when I began to lose," said Gwendolen. Her face

was turned toward Grandcourt as she smiled and spoke, but she gave a

sidelong glance at Deronda, and saw his eyes fixed on her with a look

so gravely penetrating that it had a keener edge for her than his

ironical smile at her losses--a keener edge than Klesmer's judgment.

She wheeled her neck round as if she wanted to listen to what was being

said by the rest, while she was only thinking of Deronda. His face had

that disturbing kind of form and expression which threatens to affect

opinion--as if one's standard was somehow wrong. (Who has not seen men

with faces of this corrective power till they frustrated it by speech

or action?) His voice, heard now for the first time, was to

Grandcourt's toneless drawl, which had been in her ears every day, as

the deep notes of a violoncello to the broken discourse of poultry and

other lazy gentry in the afternoon sunshine. Grandcourt, she inwardly

conjectured, was perhaps right in saying that Deronda thought too much

of himself:--a favorite way of explaining a superiority that

humiliates. However the talk turned on the rinderpest and Jamaica, and

no more was said about roulette. Grandcourt held that the Jamaica negro

was a beastly sort of baptist Caliban; Deronda said he had always felt

a little with Caliban, who naturally had his own point of view and

could sing a good song; Mrs. Davilow observed that her father had an

estate in Barbadoes, but that she herself had never been in the West

Indies; Mrs. Torrington was sure she should never sleep in her bed if

she lived among blacks; her husband corrected her by saying that the

blacks would be manageable enough if it were not for the half-breeds;

and Deronda remarked that the whites had to thank themselves for the

half-breeds.

While this polite pea-shooting was going on, Gwendolen trifled with her

jelly, and looked at every speaker in turn that she might feel at ease

in looking at Deronda.

"I wonder what he thinks of me, really? He must have felt interested in

me, else he would not have sent me my necklace. I wonder what he thinks

of my marriage? What notions has he to make him so grave about things?

Why is he come to Diplow?"

These questions ran in her mind as the voice of an uneasy longing to be

judged by Deronda with unmixed admiration--a longing which had had its

seed in her first resentment at his critical glance. Why did she care

so much about the opinion of this man who was "nothing of any

consequence"? She had no time to find the reason--she was too much

engaged in caring. In the drawing-room, when something had called

Grandcourt away, she went quite unpremeditatedly up to Deronda, who was

standing at a table apart, turning over some prints, and said to him--

"Shall you hunt to-morrow, Mr. Deronda?"

"Yes, I believe so."

"You don't object to hunting, then?"

"I find excuses for it. It is a sin I am inclined to--when I can't get

boating or cricketing."

"Do you object to my hunting?" said Gwendolen, with a saucy movement of

the chin.

"I have no right to object to anything you choose to do."

"You thought you had a right to object to my gambling," persisted

Gwendolen.

"I was sorry for it. I am not aware that I told you of my objection,"

said Deronda, with his usual directness of gaze--a large-eyed gravity,

innocent of any intention. His eyes had a peculiarity which has drawn

many men into trouble; they were of a dark yet mild intensity which

seemed to express a special interest in every one on whom he fixed

them, and might easily help to bring on him those claims which ardently

sympathetic people are often creating in the minds of those who need

help. In mendicant fashion we make the goodness of others a reason for

exorbitant demands on them. That sort of effect was penetrating

Gwendolen.

"You hindered me from gambling again," she answered. But she had no

sooner spoken than she blushed over face and neck; and Deronda blushed,

too, conscious that in the little affair of the necklace he had taken a

questionable freedom.

It was impossible to speak further; and she turned away to a window,

feeling that she had stupidly said what she had not meant to say, and

yet being rather happy that she had plunged into this mutual

understanding. Deronda also did not like it. Gwendolen seemed more

decidedly attractive than before; and certainly there had been changes

going on within her since that time at Leubronn: the struggle of mind

attending a conscious error had wakened something like a new soul,

which had better, but also worse, possibilities than her former poise

of crude self-confidence: among the forces she had come to dread was

something within her that troubled satisfaction.

That evening Mrs. Davilow said, "Was it really so, or only a joke of

yours, about Mr. Deronda's spoiling your play, Gwen?"

Her curiosity had been excited, and she could venture to ask a question

that did not concern Mr. Grandcourt.

"Oh, it merely happened that he was looking on when I began to lose,"

said Gwendolen, carelessly. "I noticed him."

"I don't wonder at that: he is a striking young man. He puts me in mind

of Italian paintings. One would guess, without being told, that there

was foreign blood in his veins."

"Is there?" said Gwendolen.

"Mrs. Torrington says so. I asked particularly who he was, and she told

me that his mother was some foreigner of high rank."

"His mother?" said Gwendolen, rather sharply. "Then who was his father?"

"Well--every one says he is the son of Sir Hugo Mallinger, who brought

him up; though he passes for a ward. She says, if Sir Hugo Mallinger

could have done as he liked with his estates, he would have left them

to this Mr. Deronda, since he has no legitimate son."

Gwendolen was silent; but her mother observed so marked an effect in

her face that she was angry with herself for having repeated Mrs.

Torrington's gossip. It seemed, on reflection, unsuited to the ear of

her daughter, for whom Mrs. Davilow disliked what is called knowledge

of the world; and indeed she wished that she herself had not had any of

it thrust upon her.

An image which had immediately arisen in Gwendolen's mind was that of

the unknown mother--no doubt a dark-eyed woman--probably sad. Hardly

any face could be less like Deronda's than that represented as Sir

Hugo's in a crayon portrait at Diplow. A dark-eyed woman, no longer

young, had become "stuff o' the conscience" to Gwendolen.

That night when she had got into her little bed, and only a dim light

was burning, she said--

"Mamma, have men generally children before they are married?"

"No, dear, no," said Mrs. Davilow. "Why do you ask such a question?"

(But she began to think that she saw the why.)

"If it were so, I ought to know," said Gwendolen, with some indignation.

"You are thinking of what I said about Mr. Deronda and Sir Hugo

Mallinger. That is a very unusual case, dear."

"Does Lady Mallinger know?"

"She knows enough to satisfy her. That is quite clear, because Mr.

Deronda has lived with them."

"And people think no worse of him?"

"Well, of course he is under some disadvantage: it is not as if he were

Lady Mallinger's son. He does not inherit the property, and he is not

of any consequence in the world. But people are not obliged to know

anything about his birth; you see, he is very well received."

"I wonder whether he knows about it; and whether he is angry with his

father?"

"My dear child, why should you think of that?"

"Why?" said Gwendolen, impetuously, sitting up in her bed. "Haven't

children reason to be angry with their parents? How can they help their

parents marrying or not marrying?"

But a consciousness rushed upon her, which made her fall back again on

her pillow. It was not only what she would have felt months

before--that she might seem to be reproaching her mother for that

second marriage of hers; what she chiefly felt now was, that she had

been led on to a condemnation which seemed to make her own marriage a

forbidden thing.

There was no further talk, and till sleep came over her Gwendolen lay

struggling with the reasons against that marriage--reasons which

pressed upon her newly now that they were unexpectedly mirrored in the

story of a man whose slight relations with her had, by some hidden

affinity, bitten themselves into the most permanent layers of feeling.

It was characteristic that, with all her debating, she was never

troubled by the question whether the indefensibleness of her marriage

did not include the fact that she had accepted Grandcourt solely as a

man whom it was convenient for her to marry, not in the least as one to

whom she would be binding herself in duty. Gwendolen's ideas were

pitiably crude; but many grand difficulties of life are apt to force

themselves on us in our crudity. And to judge wisely, I suppose we must

know how things appear to the unwise; that kind of appearance making

the larger part of the world's history.

In the morning there was a double excitement for her. She was going to

hunt, from which scruples about propriety had threatened to hinder her,

until it was found that Mrs. Torrington was horsewoman enough to

accompany her--going to hunt for the first time since her escapade with

Rex; and she was going again to see Deronda, in whom, since last night,

her interest had so gathered that she expected, as people do about

revealed celebrities, to see something in his appearance which she had

missed before.

What was he going to be? What sort of life had he before him--he being

nothing of any consequence? And with only a little difference in events

he might have been as important as Grandcourt, nay--her imagination

inevitably went into that direction--might have held the very estates

which Grandcourt was to have. But now, Deronda would probably some day

see her mistress of the Abbey at Topping, see her bearing the title

which would have been his own wife's. These obvious, futile thoughts of

what might have been, made a new epoch for Gwendolen. She, whose

unquestionable habit it had been to take the best that came to her for

less than her own claim, had now to see the position which tempted her

in a new light, as a hard, unfair exclusion of others. What she had now

heard about Deronda seemed to her imagination to throw him into one

group with Mrs. Glasher and her children; before whom she felt herself

in an attitude of apology--she who had hitherto been surrounded by a

group that in her opinion had need be apologetic to her. Perhaps

Deronda himself was thinking of these things. Could he know of Mrs.

Glasher? If he knew that she knew, he would despise her; but he could

have no such knowledge. Would he, without that, despise her for

marrying Grandcourt? His possible judgment of her actions was telling

on her as importunately as Klesmer's judgment of her powers; but she

found larger room for resistance to a disapproval of her marriage,

because it is easier to make our conduct seem justifiable to ourselves

than to make our ability strike others. "How can I help it?" is not our

favorite apology for incompetency. But Gwendolen felt some strength in

saying--

"How can I help what other people have done? Things would not come

right if I were to turn round now and declare that I would not marry

Mr. Grandcourt." And such turning round was out of the question. The

horses in the chariot she had mounted were going at full speed.

This mood of youthful, elated desperation had a tidal recurrence. She

could dare anything that lay before her sooner than she could choose to

go backward, into humiliation; and it was even soothing to think that

there would now be as much ill-doing in the one as in the other. But

the immediate delightful fact was the hunt, where she would see

Deronda, and where he would see her; for always lurking ready to

obtrude before other thoughts about him was the impression that he was

very much interested in her. But to-day she was resolved not to repeat

her folly of yesterday, as if she were anxious to say anything to him.

Indeed, the hunt would be too absorbing.

And so it was for a long while. Deronda was there, and within her sight

very often; but this only added to the stimulus of a pleasure which

Gwendolen had only once before tasted, and which seemed likely always

to give a delight independent of any crosses, except such as took away

the chance of riding. No accident happened to throw them together; the

run took them within convenient reach of home, and the agreeable

sombreness of the gray November afternoon, with a long stratum of

yellow light in the west, Gwendolen was returning with the company from

Diplow, who were attending her on the way to Offendene. Now the sense

of glorious excitement was over and gone, she was getting irritably

disappointed that she had had no opportunity of speaking to Deronda,

whom she would not see again, since he was to go away in a couple of

days. What was she going to say? That was not quite certain. She wanted

to speak to him. Grandcourt was by her side; Mrs. Torrington, her

husband, and another gentleman in advance; and Deronda's horse she

could hear behind. The wish to speak to him and have him speaking to

her was becoming imperious; and there was no chance of it unless she

simply asserted her will and defied everything. Where the order of

things could give way to Miss Gwendolen, it must be made to do so. They

had lately emerged from a wood of pines and beeches, where the twilight

stillness had a repressing effect, which increased her impatience. The

horse-hoofs again heard behind at some little distance were a growing

irritation. She reined in her horse and looked behind her; Grandcourt

after a few paces, also paused; but she, waving her whip and nodding

sideways with playful imperiousness, said, "Go on! I want to speak to

Mr. Deronda."

Grandcourt hesitated; but that he would have done after any

proposition. It was an awkward situation for him. No gentleman, before

marriage; could give the emphasis of refusal to a command delivered in

this playful way. He rode on slowly, and she waited till Deronda came

up. He looked at her with tacit inquiry, and she said at once, letting

her horse go alongside of his--

"Mr. Deronda, you must enlighten my ignorance. I want to know why you

thought it wrong for me to gamble. Is it because I am a woman?"

"Not altogether; but I regretted it the more because you were a woman,"

said Deronda, with an irrepressible smile. Apparently it must be

understood between them now that it was he who sent the necklace. "I

think it would be better for men not to gamble. It is a besotting kind

of taste, likely to turn into a disease. And, besides, there is

something revolting to me in raking a heap of money together, and

internally chuckling over it, when others are feeling the loss of it. I

should even call it base, if it were more than an exceptional lapse.

There are enough inevitable turns of fortune which force us to see that

our gain is another's loss:--that is one of the ugly aspects of life.

One would like to reduce it as much as one could, not get amusement out

of exaggerating it." Deronda's voice had gathered some indignation

while he was speaking.

"But you do admit that we can't help things," said Gwendolen, with a

drop in her tone. The answer had not been anything like what she had

expected. "I mean that things are so in spite of us; we can't always

help it that our gain is another's loss."

"Clearly. Because of that, we should help it where we can."

Gwendolen, biting her lip inside, paused a moment, and then forcing

herself to speak with an air of playfulness again, said--

"But why should you regret it more because I am a woman?"

"Perhaps because we need that you should be better than we are."

"But suppose \_we\_ need that men should be better than we are," said

Gwendolen with a little air of "check!"

"That is rather a difficulty," said Deronda, smiling. "I suppose I

should have said, we each of us think it would be better for the other

to be good."

"You see, I needed you to be better than I was--and you thought so,"

said Gwendolen, nodding and laughing, while she put her horse forward

and joined Grandcourt, who made no observation.

"Don't you want to know what I had to say to Mr. Deronda?" said

Gwendolen, whose own pride required her to account for her conduct.

"A--no," said Grandcourt, coldly.

"Now that is the first impolite word you have spoken--that you don't

wish to hear what I had to say," said Gwendolen, playing at a pout.

"I wish to hear what you say to me--not to other men," said Grandcourt.

"Then you wish to hear this. I wanted to make him tell me why he

objected to my gambling, and he gave me a little sermon."

"Yes--but excuse me the sermon." If Gwendolen imagined that Grandcourt

cared about her speaking to Deronda, he wished her to understand that

she was mistaken. But he was not fond of being told to ride on. She saw

he was piqued, but did not mind. She had accomplished her object of

speaking again to Deronda before he raised his hat and turned with the

rest toward Diplow, while her lover attended her to Offendene, where he

was to bid farewell before a whole day's absence on the unspecified

journey. Grandcourt had spoken truth in calling the journey a bore: he

was going by train to Gadsmere.

CHAPTER XXX.

No penitence and no confessional,

No priest ordains it, yet they're forced to sit

Amid deep ashes of their vanished years.

Imagine a rambling, patchy house, the best part built of gray stone,

and red-tiled, a round tower jutting at one of the corners, the mellow

darkness of its conical roof surmounted by a weather-cock making an

agreeable object either amidst the gleams and greenth of summer or the

low-hanging clouds and snowy branches of winter: the ground shady with

spreading trees: a great tree flourishing on one side, backward some

Scotch firs on a broken bank where the roots hung naked, and beyond, a

rookery: on the other side a pool overhung with bushes, where the

water-fowl fluttered and screamed: all around, a vast meadow which

might be called a park, bordered by an old plantation and guarded by

stone ledges which looked like little prisons. Outside the gate the

country, once entirely rural and lovely, now black with coal mines, was

chiefly peopled by men and brethren with candles stuck in their hats,

and with a diabolic complexion which laid them peculiarly open to

suspicion in the eyes of the children at Gadsmere--Mrs. Glasher's four

beautiful children, who had dwelt there for about three years. Now, in

November, when the flower-beds were empty, the trees leafless, and the

pool blackly shivering, one might have said that the place was sombrely

in keeping with the black roads and black mounds which seemed to put

the district in mourning;--except when the children were playing on the

gravel with the dogs for their companions. But Mrs. Glasher, under her

present circumstances, liked Gadsmere as well as she would have liked

any other abode. The complete seclusion of the place, which the

unattractiveness of the country secured, was exactly to her taste. When

she drove her two ponies with a waggonet full of children, there were

no gentry in carriages to be met, only men of business in gigs; at

church there were no eyes she cared to avoid, for the curate's wife and

the curate himself were either ignorant of anything to her

disadvantage, or ignored it: to them she was simply a widow lady, the

tenant of Gadsmere; and the name of Grandcourt was of little interest

in that district compared with the names of Fletcher and Gawcome, the

lessees of the collieries.

It was full ten years since the elopement of an Irish officer's

beautiful wife with young Grandcourt, and a consequent duel where the

bullets wounded the air only, had made some little noise. Most of those

who remembered the affair now wondered what had become of that Mrs.

Glasher, whose beauty and brilliancy had made her rather conspicuous to

them in foreign places, where she was known to be living with young

Grandcourt.

That he should have disentangled himself from that connection seemed

only natural and desirable. As to her, it was thought that a woman who

was understood to have forsaken her child along with her husband had

probably sunk lower. Grandcourt had of course got weary of her. He was

much given to the pursuit of women: but a man in his position would by

this time desire to make a suitable marriage with the fair young

daughter of a noble house. No one talked of Mrs. Glasher now, any more

than they talked of the victim in a trial for manslaughter ten years

before: she was a lost vessel after whom nobody would send out an

expedition of search; but Grandcourt was seen in harbor with his colors

flying, registered as seaworthy as ever.

Yet, in fact, Grandcourt had never disentangled himself from Mrs.

Glasher. His passion for her had been the strongest and most lasting he

had ever known; and though it was now as dead as the music of a cracked

flute, it had left a certain dull disposedness, which, on the death of

her husband three years before, had prompted in him a vacillating

notion of marrying her, in accordance with the understanding often

expressed between them during the days of his first ardor. At that

early time Grandcourt would willingly have paid for the freedom to be

won by a divorce; but the husband would not oblige him, not wanting to

be married again himself, and not wishing to have his domestic habits

printed in evidence.

The altered poise which the years had brought in Mrs. Glasher was just

the reverse. At first she was comparatively careless about the

possibility of marriage. It was enough that she had escaped from a

disagreeable husband and found a sort of bliss with a lover who had

completely fascinated her--young, handsome, amorous, and living in the

best style, with equipage and conversation of the kind to be expected

in young men of fortune who have seen everything. She was an

impassioned, vivacious woman, fond of adoration, exasperated by five

years of marital rudeness; and the sense of release was so strong upon

her that it stilled anxiety for more than she actually enjoyed. An

equivocal position was of no importance to her then; she had no envy

for the honors of a dull, disregarded wife: the one spot which spoiled

her vision of her new pleasant world, was the sense that she left her

three-year-old boy, who died two years afterward, and whose first tones

saying "mamma" retained a difference from those of the children that

came after. But now the years had brought many changes besides those in

the contour of her cheek and throat; and that Grandcourt should marry

her had become her dominant desire. The equivocal position which she

had not minded about for herself was now telling upon her through her

children, whom she loved with a devotion charged with the added passion

of atonement. She had no repentance except in this direction. If

Grandcourt married her, the children would be none the worse off for

what had passed: they would see their mother in a dignified position,

and they would be at no disadvantage with the world: her son could be

made his father's heir. It was the yearning for this result which gave

the supreme importance to Grandcourt's feeling for her; her love for

him had long resolved itself into anxiety that he should give her the

unique, permanent claim of a wife, and she expected no other happiness

in marriage than the satisfaction of her maternal love and

pride--including her pride for herself in the presence of her children.

For the sake of that result she was prepared even with a tragic

firmness to endure anything quietly in marriage; and she had acuteness

enough to cherish Grandcourt's flickering purpose negatively, by not

molesting him with passionate appeals and with scene-making. In her, as

in every one else who wanted anything of him, his incalculable turns,

and his tendency to harden under beseeching, had created a reasonable

dread:--a slow discovery, of which no presentiment had been given in

the bearing of a youthful lover with a fine line of face and the

softest manners. But reticence had necessarily cost something to this

impassioned woman, and she was the bitterer for it. There is no

quailing--even that forced on the helpless and injured--which has not

an ugly obverse: the withheld sting was gathering venom. She was

absolutely dependent on Grandcourt; for though he had been always

liberal in expenses for her, he had kept everything voluntary on his

part; and with the goal of marriage before her, she would ask for

nothing less. He had said that he would never settle anything except by

will; and when she was thinking of alternatives for the future it often

occurred to her that, even if she did not become Grandcourt's wife, he

might never have a son who would have a legitimate claim on him, and

the end might be that her son would be made heir to the best part of

his estates. No son at that early age could promise to have more of his

father's physique. But her becoming Grandcourt's wife was so far from

being an extravagant notion of possibility, that even Lush had

entertained it, and had said that he would as soon bet on it as on any

other likelihood with regard to his familiar companion. Lush, indeed,

on inferring that Grandcourt had a preconception of using his residence

at Diplow in order to win Miss Arrowpoint, had thought it well to fan

that project, taking it as a tacit renunciation of the marriage with

Mrs. Glasher, which had long been a mark for the hovering and wheeling

of Grandcourt's caprice. But both prospects had been negatived by

Gwendolen's appearance on the scene; and it was natural enough for Mrs.

Glasher to enter with eagerness into Lush's plan of hindering that new

danger by setting up a barrier in the mind of the girl who was being

sought as a bride. She entered into it with an eagerness which had

passion in it as well as purpose, some of the stored-up venom

delivering itself in that way.

After that, she had heard from Lush of Gwendolen's departure, and the

probability that all danger from her was got rid of; but there had been

no letter to tell her that the danger had returned and had become a

certainty. She had since then written to Grandcourt, as she did

habitually, and he had been longer than usual in answering. She was

inferring that he might intend coming to Gadsmere at the time when he

was actually on the way; and she was not without hope--what

construction of another's mind is not strong wishing equal to?--that a

certain sickening from that frustrated courtship might dispose him to

slip the more easily into the old track of intention.

Grandcourt had two grave purposes in coming to Gadsmere: to convey the

news of his approaching marriage in person, in order to make this first

difficulty final; and to get from Lydia his mother's diamonds, which

long ago he had confided to her and wished her to wear. Her person

suited diamonds, and made them look as if they were worth some of the

money given for them. These particular diamonds were not mountains of

light--they were mere peas and haricots for the ears, neck and hair;

but they were worth some thousands, and Grandcourt necessarily wished

to have them for his wife. Formerly when he had asked Lydia to put them

into his keeping again, simply on the ground that they would be safer

and ought to be deposited at the bank, she had quietly but absolutely

refused, declaring that they were quite safe; and at last had said, "If

you ever marry another woman I will give them up to her: are you going

to marry another woman?" At that time Grandcourt had no motive which

urged him to persist, and he had this grace in him, that the

disposition to exercise power either by cowing or disappointing others

or exciting in them a rage which they dared not express--a disposition

which was active in him as other propensities became languid--had

always been in abeyance before Lydia. A severe interpreter might say

that the mere facts of their relation to each other, the melancholy

position of this woman who depended on his will, made a standing

banquet for his delight in dominating. But there was something else

than this in his forbearance toward her: there was the surviving though

metamorphosed effect of the power she had had over him; and it was this

effect, the fitful dull lapse toward solicitations that once had the

zest now missing from life, which had again and again inclined him to

espouse a familiar past rather than rouse himself to the expectation of

novelty. But now novelty had taken hold of him and urged him to make

the most of it.

Mrs. Glasher was seated in the pleasant room where she habitually

passed her mornings with her children round her. It had a square

projecting window and looked on broad gravel and grass, sloping toward

a little brook that entered the pool. The top of a low, black cabinet,

the old oak table, the chairs in tawny leather, were littered with the

children's toys, books and garden garments, at which a maternal lady in

pastel looked down from the walls with smiling indulgence. The children

were all there. The three girls, seated round their mother near the

widow, were miniature portraits of her--dark-eyed, delicate-featured

brunettes with a rich bloom on their cheeks, their little nostrils and

eyebrows singularly finished as if they were tiny women, the eldest

being barely nine. The boy was seated on the carpet at some distance,

bending his blonde head over the animals from a Noah's ark, admonishing

them separately in a voice of threatening command, and occasionally

licking the spotted ones to see if the colors would hold. Josephine,

the eldest, was having her French lesson; and the others, with their

dolls on their laps, sat demurely enough for images of the Madonna.

Mrs. Glasher's toilet had been made very carefully--each day now she

said to herself that Grandcourt might come in. Her head, which, spite

of emaciation, had an ineffaceable beauty in the fine profile, crisp

curves of hair, and clearly-marked eyebrows, rose impressively above

her bronze-colored silk and velvet, and the gold necklace which

Grandcourt had first clasped round her neck years ago. Not that she had

any pleasure in her toilet; her chief thought of herself seen in the

glass was, "How changed!"--but such good in life as remained to her she

would keep. If her chief wish were fulfilled, she could imagine herself

getting the comeliness of a matron fit for the highest rank. The little

faces beside her, almost exact reductions of her own, seemed to tell of

the blooming curves which had once been where now was sunken pallor.

But the children kissed the pale cheeks and never found them deficient.

That love was now the one end of her life.

Suddenly Mrs. Glasher turned away her head from Josephine's book and

listened. "Hush, dear! I think some one is coming."

Henleigh the boy jumped up and said, "Mamma, is it the miller with my

donkey?"

He got no answer, and going up to his mamma's knee repeated his

question in an insistent tone. But the door opened, and the servant

announced Mr. Grandcourt. Mrs. Glasher rose in some agitation. Henleigh

frowned at him in disgust at his not being the miller, and the three

little girls lifted up their dark eyes to him timidly. They had none of

them any particular liking for this friend of mamma's--in fact, when he

had taken Mrs. Glasher's hand and then turned to put his other hand on

Henleigh's head, that energetic scion began to beat the friend's arm

away with his fists. The little girls submitted bashfully to be patted

under the chin and kissed, but on the whole it seemed better to send

them into the garden, where they were presently dancing and chatting

with the dogs on the gravel.

"How far are you come?" said Mrs. Glasher, as Grandcourt put away his

hat and overcoat.

"From Diplow," he answered slowly, seating himself opposite her and

looking at her with an unnoting gaze which she noted.

"You are tired, then."

"No, I rested at the Junction--a hideous hole. These railway journeys

are always a confounded bore. But I had coffee and smoked."

Grandcourt drew out his handkerchief, rubbed his face, and in returning

the handkerchief to his pocket looked at his crossed knee and blameless

boot, as if any stranger were opposite to him, instead of a woman

quivering with a suspense which every word and look of his was to

incline toward hope or dread. But he was really occupied with their

interview and what it was likely to include. Imagine the difference in

rate of emotion between this woman whom the years had worn to a more

conscious dependence and sharper eagerness, and this man whom they were

dulling into a more neutral obstinacy.

"I expected to see you--it was so long since I had heard from you. I

suppose the weeks seem longer at Gadsmere than they do at Diplow," said

Mrs. Glasher. She had a quick, incisive way of speaking that seemed to

go with her features, as the tone and \_timbre\_ of a violin go with its

form.

"Yes," drawled Grandcourt. "But you found the money paid into the bank."

"Oh, yes," said Mrs. Glasher, curtly, tingling with impatience. Always

before--at least she fancied so--Grandcourt had taken more notice of

her and the children than he did to-day.

"Yes," he resumed, playing with his whisker, and at first not looking

at her, "the time has gone on at rather a rattling pace with me;

generally it is slow enough. But there has been a good deal happening,

as you know"--here he turned his eyes upon her.

"What do I know?" said she, sharply.

He left a pause before he said, without change of manner, "That I was

thinking of marrying. You saw Miss Harleth?"

"\_She\_ told you that?"

The pale cheeks looked even paler, perhaps from the fierce brightness

in the eyes above them.

"No. Lush told me," was the slow answer. It was as if the thumb-screw

and the iron boot were being placed by creeping hands within sight of

the expectant victim.

"Good God! say at once that you are going to marry her," she burst out,

passionately, her knees shaking and her hands tightly clasped.

"Of course, this kind of thing must happen some time or other, Lydia,"

said he; really, now the thumb-screw was on, not wishing to make the

pain worse.

"You didn't always see the necessity."

"Perhaps not. I see it now."

In those few under-toned words of Grandcourt's she felt as absolute a

resistance as if her thin fingers had been pushing at a fast shut iron

door. She knew her helplessness, and shrank from testing it by any

appeal--shrank from crying in a dead ear and clinging to dead knees,

only to see the immovable face and feel the rigid limbs. She did not

weep nor speak; she was too hard pressed by the sudden certainty which

had as much of chill sickness in it as of thought and emotion. The

defeated clutch of struggling hope gave her in these first moments a

horrible sensation. At last she rose, with a spasmodic effort, and,

unconscious of every thing but her wretchedness, pressed her forehead

against the hard, cold glass of the window. The children, playing on

the gravel, took this as a sign that she wanted them, and, running

forward, stood in front of her with their sweet faces upturned

expectantly. This roused her: she shook her head at them, waved them

off, and overcome with this painful exertion, sank back in the nearest

chair.

Grandcourt had risen too. He was doubly annoyed--at the scene itself,

and at the sense that no imperiousness of his could save him from it;

but the task had to be gone through, and there was the administrative

necessity of arranging things so that there should be as little

annoyance as possible in the future. He was leaning against the corner

of the fire-place. She looked up at him and said, bitterly--

"All this is of no consequence to you. I and the children are

importunate creatures. You wish to get away again and be with Miss

Harleth."

"Don't make the affair more disagreeable than it need be. Lydia. It is

of no use to harp on things that can't be altered. Of course, its

deucedly disagreeable to me to see you making yourself miserable. I've

taken this journey to tell you what you must make up your mind to--you

and the children will be provided for as usual--and there's an end of

it."

Silence. She dared not answer. This woman with the intense, eager look

had had the iron of the mother's anguish in her soul, and it had made

her sometimes capable of a repression harder than shrieking and

struggle. But underneath the silence there was an outlash of hatred and

vindictiveness: she wished that the marriage might make two others

wretched, besides herself. Presently he went on--

"It will be better for you. You may go on living here. But I think of

by-and-by settling a good sum on you and the children, and you can live

where you like. There will be nothing for you to complain of then.

Whatever happens, you will feel secure. Nothing could be done

beforehand. Every thing has gone on in a hurry."

Grandcourt ceased his slow delivery of sentences. He did not expect her

to thank him, but he considered that she might reasonably be contented;

if it were possible for Lydia to be contented. She showed no change,

and after a minute he said--

"You have never had any reason to fear that I should be illiberal. I

don't care a curse about the money."

"If you did care about it, I suppose you would not give it us," said

Lydia. The sarcasm was irrepressible.

"That's a devilishly unfair thing to say," Grandcourt replied, in a

lower tone; "and I advise you not to say that sort of thing again."

"Should you punish me by leaving the children in beggary?" In spite of

herself, the one outlet of venom had brought the other.

"There is no question about leaving the children in beggary," said

Grandcourt, still in his low voice. "I advise you not to say things

that you will repent of."

"I am used to repenting," said she, bitterly. "Perhaps you will repent.

You have already repented of loving me."

"All this will only make it uncommonly difficult for us to meet again.

What friend have you besides me?"

"Quite true."

The words came like a low moan. At the same moment there flashed

through her the wish that after promising himself a better happiness

than that he had had with her, he might feel a misery and loneliness

which would drive him back to her to find some memory of a time when he

was young, glad, and hopeful. But no! he would go scathless; it was she

that had to suffer.

With this the scorching words were ended. Grandcourt had meant to stay

till evening; he wished to curtail his visit, but there was no suitable

train earlier than the one he had arranged to go by, and he had still

to speak to Lydia on the second object of his visit, which like a

second surgical operation seemed to require an interval. The hours had

to go by; there was eating to be done; the children came in--all this

mechanism of life had to be gone through with the dreary sense of

constraint which is often felt in domestic quarrels of a commoner kind.

To Lydia it was some slight relief for her stifled fury to have the

children present: she felt a savage glory in their loveliness, as if it

would taunt Grandcourt with his indifference to her and them--a secret

darting of venom which was strongly imaginative. He acquitted himself

with all the advantage of a man whose grace of bearing has long been

moulded on an experience of boredom--nursed the little Antonia, who sat

with her hands crossed and eyes upturned to his bald head, which struck

her as worthy of observation--and propitiated Henleigh by promising him

a beautiful saddle and bridle. It was only the two eldest girls who had

known him as a continual presence; and the intervening years had

overlaid their infantine memories with a bashfulness which Grandcourt's

bearing was not likely to dissipate. He and Lydia occasionally, in the

presence of the servants, made a conventional remark; otherwise they

never spoke; and the stagnant thought in Grandcourt's mind all the

while was of his own infatuation in having given her those diamonds,

which obliged him to incur the nuisance of speaking about them. He had

an ingrained care for what he held to belong to his caste, and about

property he liked to be lordly; also he had a consciousness of

indignity to himself in having to ask for anything in the world. But

however he might assert his independence of Mrs. Glasher's past, he had

made a past for himself which was a stronger yoke than any he could

impose. He must ask for the diamonds which he had promised to Gwendolen.

At last they were alone again, with the candles above them, face to

face with each other. Grandcourt looked at his watch, and then said, in

an apparently indifferent drawl, "There is one thing I had to mention,

Lydia. My diamonds--you have them."

"Yes, I have them," she answered promptly, rising and standing with her

arms thrust down and her fingers threaded, while Grandcourt sat still.

She had expected the topic, and made her resolve about it. But she

meant to carry out her resolve, if possible, without exasperating him.

During the hours of silence she had longed to recall the words which

had only widened the breach between them.

"They are in this house, I suppose?"

"No; not in this house."

"I thought you said you kept them by you."

"When I said so it was true. They are in the bank at Dudley."

"Get them away, will you? I must make an arrangement for your

delivering them to some one."

"Make no arrangement. They shall be delivered to the person you

intended them for. \_I\_ will make the arrangement."

"What do you mean?"

"What I say. I have always told you that I would give them up to your

wife. I shall keep my word. She is not your wife yet."

"This is foolery," said Grandcourt, with undertoned disgust. It was too

irritating that this indulgence of Lydia had given her a sort of

mastery over him in spite of dependent condition.

She did not speak. He also rose now, but stood leaning against the

mantle-piece with his side-face toward her.

"The diamonds must be delivered to me before my marriage," he began

again.

"What is your wedding-day?"

"The tenth. There is no time to be lost."

"And where do you go after the marriage?"

He did not reply except by looking more sullen. Presently he said, "You

must appoint a day before then, to get them from the bank and meet

me--or somebody else I will commission;--it's a great nuisance, Mention

a day."

"No; I shall not do that. They shall be delivered to her safely. I

shall keep my word."

"Do you mean to say," said Grandcourt, just audibly, turning to face

her, "that you will not do as I tell you?"

"Yes, I mean that," was the answer that leaped out, while her eyes

flashed close to him. The poor creature was immediately conscious that

if her words had any effect on her own lot, the effect must be

mischievous, and might nullify all the remaining advantage of her long

patience. But the word had been spoken.

He was in a position the most irritating to him. He could not shake her

nor touch her hostilely; and if he could, the process would not bring

his mother's diamonds. He shrank from the only sort of threat that

would frighten her--if she believed it. And in general, there was

nothing he hated more than to be forced into anything like violence

even in words: his will must impose itself without trouble. After

looking at her for a moment, he turned his side-face toward her again,

leaning as before, and said--

"Infernal idiots that women are!"

"Why will you not tell me where you are going after the marriage? I

could be at the wedding if I liked, and learn in that way," said Lydia,

not shrinking from the one suicidal form of threat within her power.

"Of course, if you like, you can play the mad woman," said Grandcourt,

with \_sotto voce\_ scorn. "It is not to be supposed that you will wait

to think what good will come of it--or what you owe to me."

He was in a state of disgust and embitterment quite new in the history

of their relation to each other. It was undeniable that this woman,

whose life he had allowed to send such deep suckers into his, had a

terrible power of annoyance in her; and the rash hurry of his

proceedings had left her opportunities open. His pride saw very ugly

possibilities threatening it, and he stood for several minutes in

silence reviewing the situation--considering how he could act upon her.

Unlike himself she was of a direct nature, with certain simple

strongly-colored tendencies, and there was one often-experienced effect

which he thought he could count upon now. As Sir Hugo had said of him,

Grandcourt knew how to play his cards upon occasion.

He did not speak again, but looked at his watch, rang the bell, and

ordered the vehicle to be brought round immediately. Then he removed

farther from her, walked as if in expectation of a summons, and

remained silent without turning his eyes upon her.

She was suffering the horrible conflict of self-reproach and tenacity.

She saw beforehand Grandcourt leaving her without even looking at her

again--herself left behind in lonely uncertainty--hearing nothing from

him--not knowing whether she had done her children harm--feeling that

she had perhaps made him hate her;--all the wretchedness of a creature

who had defeated her own motives. And yet she could not bear to give up

a purpose which was a sweet morsel to her vindictiveness. If she had

not been a mother she would willingly have sacrificed herself to her

revenge--to what she felt to be the justice of hindering another from

getting happiness by willingly giving her over to misery. The two

dominant passions were at struggle. She must satisfy them both.

"Don't let us part in anger, Henleigh," she began, without changing her

voice or attitude: "it is a very little thing I ask. If I were refusing

to give anything up that you call yours it would be different: that

would be a reason for treating me as if you hated me. But I ask such a

little thing. If you will tell me where you are going on the

wedding-day I will take care that the diamonds shall be delivered to

her without scandal. Without scandal," she repeated entreatingly.

"Such preposterous whims make a woman odious," said Grandcourt, not

giving way in look or movement. "What is the use of talking to mad

people?"

"Yes, I am foolish--loneliness has made me foolish--indulge me." Sobs

rose as she spoke. "If you will indulge me in this one folly I will be

very meek--I will never trouble you." She burst into hysterical crying,

and said again almost with a scream--"I will be very meek after that."

There was a strange mixture of acting and reality in this passion. She

kept hold of her purpose as a child might tighten its hand over a small

stolen thing, crying and denying all the while. Even Grandcourt was

wrought upon by surprise: this capricious wish, this childish violence,

was as unlike Lydia's bearing as it was incongruous with her person.

Both had always had a stamp of dignity on them. Yet she seemed more

manageable in this state than in her former attitude of defiance. He

came close up to her again, and said, in his low imperious tone, "Be

quiet, and hear what I tell you, I will never forgive you if you

present yourself again and make a scene."

She pressed her handkerchief against her face, and when she could speak

firmly said, in the muffled voice that follows sobbing, "I will not--if

you will let me have my way--I promise you not to thrust myself forward

again. I have never broken my word to you--how many have you broken to

me? When you gave me the diamonds to wear you were not thinking of

having another wife. And I now give them up--I don't reproach you--I

only ask you to let me give them up in my own way. Have I not borne it

well? Everything is to be taken away from me, and when I ask for a

straw, a chip--you deny it me." She had spoken rapidly, but after a

little pause she said more slowly, her voice freed from its muffled

tone: "I will not bear to have it denied me."

Grandcourt had a baffling sense that he had to deal with something like

madness; he could only govern by giving way. The servant came to say

the fly was ready. When the door was shut again Grandcourt said

sullenly, "We are going to Ryelands then."

"They shall be delivered to her there," said Lydia, with decision.

"Very well, I am going." He felt no inclination even to take her hand:

she had annoyed him too sorely. But now that she had gained her point,

she was prepared to humble herself that she might propitiate him.

"Forgive me; I will never vex you again," she said, with beseeching

looks. Her inward voice said distinctly--"It is only I who have to

forgive." Yet she was obliged to ask forgiveness.

"You had better keep that promise. You have made me feel uncommonly ill

with your folly," said Grandcourt, apparently choosing this statement

as the strongest possible use of language.

"Poor thing!" cried Lydia, with a faint smile;--was he aware of the

minor fact that he made her feel ill this morning?

But with the quick transition natural to her, she was now ready to coax

him if he would let her, that they might part in some degree

reconciled. She ventured to lay her hand on his shoulder, and he did

not move away from her: she had so far succeeded in alarming him, that

he was not sorry for these proofs of returned subjection.

"Light a cigar," she said, soothingly, taking the case from his

breast-pocket and opening it.

Amidst such caressing signs of mutual fear they parted. The effect that

clung and gnawed within Grandcourt was a sense of imperfect mastery.

CHAPTER XXXI.

"A wild dedication of yourselves

To unpath'd waters, undreamed shores."

--SHAKESPEARE.

On the day when Gwendolen Harleth was married and became Mrs.

Grandcourt, the morning was clear and bright, and while the sun was low

a slight frost crisped the leaves. The bridal party was worth seeing,

and half Pennicote turned out to see it, lining the pathway up to the

church. An old friend of the rector's performed the marriage ceremony,

the rector himself acting as father, to the great advantage of the

procession. Only two faces, it was remarked, showed signs of

sadness--Mrs. Davilow's and Anna's. The mother's delicate eyelids were

pink, as if she had been crying half the night; and no one was

surprised that, splendid as the match was, she should feel the parting

from a daughter who was the flower of her children and of her own life.

It was less understood why Anna should be troubled when she was being

so well set off by the bridesmaid's dress. Every one else seemed to

reflect the brilliancy of the occasion--the bride most of all. Of her

it was agreed that as to figure and carriage she was worthy to be a

"lady o' title": as to face, perhaps it might be thought that a title

required something more rosy; but the bridegroom himself not being

fresh-colored--being indeed, as the miller's wife observed, very much

of her own husband's complexion--the match was the more complete.

Anyhow he must be very fond of her; and it was to be hoped that he

would never cast it up to her that she had been going out to service as

a governess, and her mother to live at Sawyer's Cottage--vicissitudes

which had been much spoken of in the village. The miller's daughter of

fourteen could not believe that high gentry behaved badly to their

wives, but her mother instructed her--"Oh, child, men's men: gentle or

simple, they're much of a muchness. I've heard my mother say Squire

Pelton used to take his dogs and a long whip into his wife's room, and

flog 'em there to frighten her; and my mother was lady's-maid there at

the very time."

"That's unlucky talk for a wedding, Mrs. Girdle," said the tailor. "A

quarrel may end wi' the whip, but it begins wi' the tongue, and it's

the women have got the most o' that."

"The Lord gave it 'em to use, I suppose," said Mrs. Girdle. "\_He\_ never

meant you to have it all your own way."

"By what I can make out from the gentleman as attends to the grooming

at Offendene," said the tailor, "this Mr. Grandcourt has wonderful

little tongue. Everything must be done dummy-like without his ordering."

"Then he's the more whip, I doubt," said Mrs. Girdle. "\_She's\_ got

tongue enough, I warrant her. See, there they come out together!"

"What wonderful long corners she's got to her eyes!" said the tailor.

"She makes you feel comical when she looks at you."

Gwendolen, in fact, never showed more elasticity in her bearing, more

lustre in her long brown glance: she had the brilliancy of strong

excitement, which will sometimes come even from pain. It was not pain,

however, that she was feeling: she had wrought herself up to much the

same condition as that in which she stood at the gambling-table when

Deronda was looking at her, and she began to lose. There was an

enjoyment in it: whatever uneasiness a growing conscience had created

was disregarded as an ailment might have been, amidst the gratification

of that ambitious vanity and desire for luxury within her which it

would take a great deal of slow poisoning to kill. This morning she

could not have said truly that she repented her acceptance of

Grandcourt, or that any fears in hazy perspective could hinder the

glowing effect of the immediate scene in which she was the central

object. That she was doing something wrong--that a punishment might be

hanging over her--that the woman to whom she had given a promise and

broken it, was thinking of her in bitterness and misery with a just

reproach--that Deronda with his way of looking into things very likely

despised her for marrying Grandcourt, as he had despised her for

gambling--above all, that the cord which united her with this lover and

which she had heretofore held by the hand, was now being flung over her

neck,--all this yeasty mingling of dimly understood facts with vague

but deep impressions, and with images half real, half fantastic, had

been disturbing her during the weeks of her engagement. Was that

agitating experience nullified this morning? No: it was surmounted and

thrust down with a sort of exulting defiance as she felt herself

standing at the game of life with many eyes upon her, daring everything

to win much--or if to lose, still with \_Ã©clat\_ and a sense of

importance. But this morning a losing destiny for herself did not press

upon her as a fear: she thought that she was entering on a fuller power

of managing circumstances--with all the official strength of marriage,

which some women made so poor a use of. That intoxication of youthful

egoism out of which she had been shaken by trouble, humiliation, and a

new sense of culpability, had returned upon her under a newly-fed

strength of the old fumes. She did not in the least present the ideal

of the tearful, tremulous bride. Poor Gwendolen, whom some had judged

much too forward and instructed in the world's ways!--with her erect

head and elastic footstep she was walking among illusions; and yet,

too, there was an under-consciousness of her that she was a little

intoxicated.

"Thank God you bear it so well, my darling!" said Mrs. Davilow, when

she had helped Gwendolen to doff her bridal white and put on her

traveling dress. All the trembling had been done by the poor mother,

and her agitation urged Gwendolen doubly to take the morning as if it

were a triumph.

"Why, you might have said that, if I had been going to Mrs. Mompert's,

you dear, sad, incorrigible mamma!" said Gwendolen just putting her

hands to her mother's cheeks with laughing tenderness--then retreating

a little and spreading out her arms as if to exhibit herself: "Here am

I--Mrs. Grandcourt! what else would you have me, but what I am sure to

be? You know you were ready to die with vexation when you thought that

I would not be Mrs. Grandcourt."

"Hush, hush, my child, for heaven's sake!" said Mrs. Davilow, almost in

a whisper. "How can I help feeling it when I am parting from you. But I

can bear anything gladly if you are happy."

"Not gladly, mamma, no!" said Gwendolen, shaking her head, with a

bright smile. "Willingly you would bear it, but always sorrowfully.

Sorrowing is your sauce; you can take nothing without it." Then,

clasping her mother's shoulders and raining kisses first on one cheek

and then on the other between her words, she said, gaily, "And you

shall sorrow over my having everything at my beck---and enjoying

everything glorious--splendid houses--and horses--and diamonds, I shall

have diamonds--and going to court--and being Lady Certainly--and Lady

Perhaps--and grand here--and tantivy there--and always loving you

better than anybody else in the world."

"My sweet child!--But I shall not be jealous if you love your husband

better; and he will expect to be first."

Gwendolen thrust out her lips and chin with a pretty grimace, saying,

"Rather a ridiculous expectation. However, I don't mean to treat him

ill, unless he deserves it."

Then the two fell into a clinging embrace, and Gwendolen could not

hinder a rising sob when she said, "I wish you were going with me,

mamma."

But the slight dew on her long eyelashes only made her the more

charming when she gave her hand to Grandcourt to be led to the carriage.

The rector looked in on her to give a final "Good-bye; God bless you;

we shall see you again before long," and then returned to Mrs. Davilow,

saying half cheerfully, half solemnly--

"Let us be thankful, Fanny. She is in a position well suited to her,

and beyond what I should have dared to hope for. And few women can have

been chosen more entirely for their own sake. You should feel yourself

a happy mother."

\* \* \* \* \*

There was a railway journey of some fifty miles before the new husband

and wife reached the station near Ryelands. The sky had veiled itself

since the morning, and it was hardly more than twilight when they

entered the park-gates, but still Gwendolen, looking out of the

carriage-window as they drove rapidly along, could see the grand

outlines and the nearer beauties of the scene--the long winding drive

bordered with evergreens backed by huge gray stems: then the opening of

wide grassy spaces and undulations studded with dark clumps; till at

last came a wide level where the white house could be seen, with a

hanging wood for a back-ground, and the rising and sinking balustrade

of a terrace in front.

Gwendolen had been at her liveliest during the journey, chatting

incessantly, ignoring any change in their mutual position since

yesterday; and Grandcourt had been rather ecstatically quiescent, while

she turned his gentle seizure of her hand into a grasp of his hand by

both hers, with an increased vivacity as of a kitten that will not sit

quiet to be petted. She was really getting somewhat febrile in her

excitement; and now in this drive through the park her usual

susceptibility to changes of light and scenery helped to make her heart

palpitate newly. Was it at the novelty simply, or the almost incredible

fulfilment about to be given to her girlish dreams of being

"somebody"--walking through her own furlong of corridor and under her

own ceilings of an out-of-sight loftiness, where her own painted Spring

was shedding painted flowers, and her own fore-shortened Zephyrs were

blowing their trumpets over her; while her own servants, lackeys in

clothing but men in bulk and shape, were as nought in her presence, and

revered the propriety of her insolence to them:--being in short the

heroine of an admired play without the pains of art? Was it alone the

closeness of this fulfilment which made her heart flutter? or was it

some dim forecast, the insistent penetration of suppressed experience,

mixing the expectation of a triumph with the dread of a crisis? Hers

was one of the natures in which exultation inevitably carries an

infusion of dread ready to curdle and declare itself.

She fell silent in spite of herself as they approached the gates, and

when her husband said, "Here we are at home!" and for the first time

kissed her on the lips, she hardly knew of it: it was no more than the

passive acceptance of a greeting in the midst of an absorbing show. Was

not all her hurrying life of the last three months a show, in which her

consciousness was a wondering spectator? After the half-willful

excitement of the day, a numbness had come over her personality.

But there was a brilliant light in the hall--warmth, matting, carpets,

full-length portraits, Olympian statues, assiduous servants. Not many

servants, however: only a few from Diplow in addition to those

constantly in charge of the house; and Gwendolen's new maid, who had

come with her, was taken under guidance by the housekeeper. Gwendolen

felt herself being led by Grandcourt along a subtly-scented corridor,

into an ante-room where she saw an open doorway sending out a rich glow

of light and color.

"These are our dens," said Grandcourt. "You will like to be quiet here

till dinner. We shall dine early."

He pressed her hand to his lips and moved away, more in love than he

had ever expected to be.

Gwendolen, yielded up her hat and mantle, threw herself into a chair by

the glowing hearth, and saw herself repeated in glass panels with all

her faint-green satin surroundings. The housekeeper had passed into

this boudoir from the adjoining dressing-room and seemed disposed to

linger, Gwendolen thought, in order to look at the new mistress of

Ryelands, who, however, being impatient for solitude said to her, "Will

you tell Hudson when she has put out my dress to leave everything? I

shall not want her again, unless I ring."

The housekeeper, coming forward, said, "Here is a packet, madam, which

I was ordered to give into nobody's hands but yours, when you were

alone. The person who brought it said it was a present particularly

ordered by Mr. Grandcourt; but he was not to know of its arrival till

he saw you wear it. Excuse me, madam; I felt it right to obey orders."

Gwendolen took the packet and let it lie on her lap till she heard the

doors close. It came into her mind that the packet might contain the

diamonds which Grandcourt had spoken of as being deposited somewhere

and to be given to her on her marriage. In this moment of confused

feeling and creeping luxurious languor she was glad of this

diversion--glad of such an event as having her own diamonds to try on.

Within all the sealed paper coverings was a box, but within the box

there \_was\_ a jewel-case; and now she felt no doubt that she had the

diamonds. But on opening the case, in the same instant that she saw

them gleam she saw a letter lying above them. She knew the handwriting

of the address. It was as if an adder had lain on them. Her heart gave

a leap which seemed to have spent all her strength; and as she opened

the bit of thin paper, it shook with the trembling of her hands. But it

was legible as print, and thrust its words upon her.

These diamonds, which were once given with ardent love to Lydia

Glasher, she passes on to you. You have broken your word to her, that

you might possess what was hers. Perhaps you think of being happy, as

she once was, and of having beautiful children such as hers, who will

thrust hers aside. God is too just for that. The man you have married

has a withered heart. His best young love was mine: you could not take

that from me when you took the rest. It is dead: but I am the grave

in which your chance of happiness is buried as well as mine. You had

your warning. You have chosen to injure me and my children. He had

meant to marry me. He would have married me at last, if you had not

broken your word. You will have your punishment. I desire it with all

my soul.

Will you give him this letter to set him against me and ruin us

more--me and my children? Shall you like to stand before your husband

with these diamonds on you, and these words of mine in his thoughts and

yours? Will he think you have any right to complain when he has made

you miserable? You took him with your eyes open. The willing wrong you

have done me will be your curse.

It seemed at first as if Gwendolen's eyes were spell-bound in reading

the horrible words of the letter over and over again as a doom of

penance; but suddenly a new spasm of terror made her lean forward and

stretch out the paper toward the fire, lest accusation and proof at

once should meet all eyes. It flew like a feather from her trembling

fingers and was caught up in a great draught of flame. In her movement

the casket fell on the floor and the diamonds rolled out. She took no

notice, but fell back in her chair again helpless. She could not see

the reflections of herself then; they were like so many women petrified

white; but coming near herself you might have seen the tremor in her

lips and hands. She sat so for a long while, knowing little more than

that she was feeling ill, and that those written words kept repeating

themselves to her.

Truly here were poisoned gems, and the poison had entered into this

poor young creature.

After that long while, there was a tap at the door and Grandcourt

entered, dressed for dinner. The sight of him brought a new nervous

shock, and Gwendolen screamed again and again with hysterical violence.

He had expected to see her dressed and smiling, ready to be led down.

He saw her pallid, shrieking as it seemed with terror, the jewels

scattered around her on the floor. Was it a fit of madness?

In some form or other the furies had crossed his threshold.

CHAPTER XXXII.

In all ages it hath been a favorite text that a potent love hath the

nature of an isolated fatality, whereto the mind's opinions and wonted

resolves are altogether alien; as, for example, Daphnis his frenzy,

wherein it had little availed him to have been convinced of Heraclitus

his doctrine; or the philtre-bred passion of Tristan, who, though he

had been as deep as Duns Scotus, would have had his reasoning marred

by that cup too much; or Romeo in his sudden taking for Juliet,

wherein any objections he might have held against Ptolemy had made

little difference to his discourse under the balcony. Yet all love is

not such, even though potent; nay, this passion hath as large scope as

any for allying itself with every operation of the soul: so that it

shall acknowledge an effect from the imagined light of unproven

firmaments, and have its scale set to the grander orbits of what hath

been and shall be.

Deronda, on his return to town, could assure Sir Hugo of his having

lodged in Grandcourt's mind a distinct understanding that he could get

fifty thousand pounds by giving up a prospect which was probably

distant, and not absolutely certain; but he had no further sign of

Grandcourt's disposition in the matter than that he was evidently

inclined to keep up friendly communications.

"And what did you think of the future bride on a nearer survey?" said

Sir Hugo.

"I thought better of her than I did in Leubronn. Roulette was not a

good setting for her; it brought out something of the demon. At Diplow

she seemed much more womanly and attractive--less hard and

self-possessed. I thought her mouth and eyes had quite a different

expression."

"Don't flirt with her too much, Dan," said Sir Hugo, meaning to be

agreeably playful. "If you make Grandcourt savage when they come to the

Abbey at Christmas, it will interfere with my affairs."

"I can stay in town, sir."

"No, no. Lady Mallinger and the children can't do without you at

Christmas. Only don't make mischief--unless you can get up a duel, and

manage to shoot Grandcourt, which might be worth a little

inconvenience."

"I don't think you ever saw me flirt," said Deronda, not amused.

"Oh, haven't I, though?" said Sir Hugo, provokingly. "You are always

looking tenderly at the women, and talking to them in a Jesuitical way.

You are a dangerous young fellow--a kind of Lovelace who will make the

Clarissas run after you instead of you running after them."

What was the use of being exasperated at a tasteless joke?--only the

exasperation comes before the reflection on utility. Few friendly

remarks are more annoying than the information that we are always

seeming to do what we never mean to do. Sir Hugo's notion of flirting,

it was to be hoped, was rather peculiar; for his own part, Deronda was

sure that he had never flirted. But he was glad that the baronet had no

knowledge about the repurchase of Gwendolen's necklace to feed his

taste for this kind of rallying.

He would be on his guard in future; for example, in his behavior at

Mrs. Meyrick's, where he was about to pay his first visit since his

arrival from Leubronn. For Mirah was certainly a creature in whom it

was difficult not to show a tender kind of interest both by looks and

speech.

Mrs. Meyrick had not failed to send Deronda a report of Mirah's

well-being in her family. "We are getting fonder of her every day," she

had written. "At breakfast-time we all look toward the door with

expectation to see her come in; and we watch her and listen to her as

if she were a native from a new country. I have not heard a word from

her lips that gives me a doubt about her. She is quite contented and

full of gratitude. My daughters are learning from her, and they hope to

get her other pupils; for she is anxious not to eat the bread of

idleness, but to work, like my girls. Mab says our life has become like

a fairy tale, and all she is afraid of is that Mirah will turn into a

nightingale again and fly away from us. Her voice is just perfect: not

loud and strong, but searching and melting, like the thoughts of what

has been. That is the way old people like me feel a beautiful voice."

But Mrs. Meyrick did not enter into particulars which would have

required her to say that Amy and Mab, who had accompanied Mirah to the

synagogue, found the Jewish faith less reconcilable with their wishes

in her case than in that of Scott's Rebecca. They kept silence out of

delicacy to Mirah, with whom her religion was too tender a subject to

be touched lightly; but after a while Amy, who was much of a practical

reformer, could not restrain a question.

"Excuse me, Mirah, but \_does\_ it seem quite right to you that the women

should sit behind rails in a gallery apart?"

"Yes, I never thought of anything else," said Mirah, with mild surprise.

"And you like better to see the men with their hats on?" said Mab,

cautiously proposing the smallest item of difference.

"Oh, yes. I like what I have always seen there, because it brings back

to me the same feelings--the feelings I would not part with for

anything else in the world."

After this, any criticism, whether of doctrine or practice, would have

seemed to these generous little people an inhospitable cruelty. Mirah's

religion was of one fibre with her affections, and had never presented

itself to her as a set of propositions.

"She says herself she is a very bad Jewess, and does not half know her

people's religion," said Amy, when Mirah was gone to bed. "Perhaps it

would gradually melt away from her, and she would pass into

Christianity like the rest of the world, if she got to love us very

much, and never found her mother. It is so strange to be of the Jews'

religion now."

"Oh, oh, oh!" cried Mab. "I wish I were not such a hideous Christian.

How can an ugly Christian, who is always dropping her work, convert a

beautiful Jewess, who has not a fault?"

"It may be wicked of me," said shrewd Kate, "but I cannot help wishing

that her mother may not be found. There might be something unpleasant."

"I don't think it, my dear," said Mrs. Meyrick. "I believe Mirah is cut

out after the pattern of her mother. And what a joy it would be to her

to have such a daughter brought back again! But a mother's feelings are

not worth reckoning, I suppose" (she shot a mischievous glance at her

own daughters), "and a dead mother is worth more that a living one?"

"Well, and so she may be, little mother," said Kate; "but we would

rather hold you cheaper, and have you alive."

Not only the Meyricks, whose various knowledge had been acquired by the

irregular foraging to which clever girls have usually been reduced, but

Deronda himself, with all his masculine instruction, had been roused by

this apparition of Mirah to the consciousness of knowing hardly

anything about modern Judaism or the inner Jewish history. The Chosen

People have been commonly treated as a people chosen for the sake of

somebody else; and their thinking as something (no matter exactly what)

that ought to have been entirely otherwise; and Deronda, like his

neighbors, had regarded Judaism as a sort of eccentric fossilized form

which an accomplished man might dispense with studying, and leave to

specialists. But Mirah, with her terrified flight from one parent, and

her yearning after the other, had flashed on him the hitherto neglected

reality that Judaism was something still throbbing in human lives,

still making for them the only conceivable vesture of the world; and in

the idling excursion on which he immediately afterward set out with Sir

Hugo he began to look for the outsides of synagogues, and the title of

books about the Jews. This awakening of a new interest--this passing

from the supposition that we hold the right opinions on a subject we

are careless about, to a sudden care for it, and a sense that our

opinions were ignorance--is an effectual remedy for \_ennui\_, which,

unhappily, cannot be secured on a physician's prescription; but Deronda

had carried it with him, and endured his weeks of lounging all the

better. It was on this journey that he first entered a Jewish

synagogue--at Frankfort--where his party rested on a Friday. In

exploring the Juden-gasse, which he had seen long before, he remembered

well enough its picturesque old houses; what his eyes chiefly dwelt on

now were the human types there; and his thought, busily connecting them

with the past phases of their race, stirred that fibre of historic

sympathy which had helped to determine in him certain traits worth

mentioning for those who are interested in his future. True, when a

young man has a fine person, no eccentricity of manners, the education

of a gentleman, and a present income, it is not customary to feel a

prying curiosity about his way of thinking, or his peculiar tastes. He

may very well be settled in life as an agreeable clever young fellow

without passing a special examination on those heads. Later, when he is

getting rather slovenly and portly, his peculiarities are more

distinctly discerned, and it is taken as a mercy if they are not highly

objectionable. But any one wishing to understand the effect of

after-events on Deronda should know a little more of what he was at

five-and-twenty than was evident in ordinary intercourse.

It happened that the very vividness of his impressions had often made

him the more enigmatic to his friends, and had contributed to an

apparent indefiniteness in his sentiments. His early-wakened

sensibility and reflectiveness had developed into a many-sided

sympathy, which threatened to hinder any persistent course of action:

as soon as he took up any antagonism, though only in thought, he seemed

to himself like the Sabine warriors in the memorable story--with

nothing to meet his spear but flesh of his flesh, and objects that he

loved. His imagination had so wrought itself to the habit of seeing

things as they probably appeared to others, that a strong partisanship,

unless it were against an immediate oppression, had become an

insincerity for him. His plenteous, flexible sympathy had ended by

falling into one current with that reflective analysis which tends to

neutralize sympathy. Few men were able to keep themselves clearer of

vices than he; yet he hated vices mildly, being used to think of them

less in the abstract than as a part of mixed human natures having an

individual history, which it was the bent of his mind to trace with

understanding and pity. With the same innate balance he was fervidly

democratic in his feeling for the multitude, and yet, through his

affections and imagination, intensely conservative; voracious of

speculations on government and religion, yet loth to part with

long-sanctioned forms which, for him, were quick with memories and

sentiments that no argument could lay dead. We fall on the leaning

side; and Deronda suspected himself of loving too well the losing

causes of the world. Martyrdom changes sides, and he was in danger of

changing with it, having a strong repugnance to taking up that clue of

success which the order of the world often forces upon us and makes it

treason against the common weal to reject. And yet his fear of falling

into an unreasoning narrow hatred made a check for him: he apologized

for the heirs of privilege; he shrank with dislike from the loser's

bitterness and the denunciatory tone of the unaccepted innovator. A too

reflective and diffusive sympathy was in danger of paralyzing in him

that indignation against wrong and that selectness of fellowship which

are the conditions of moral force; and in the last few years of

confirmed manhood he had become so keenly aware of this that what he

most longed for was either some external event, or some inward light,

that would urge him into a definite line of action, and compress his

wandering energy. He was ceasing to care for knowledge--he had no

ambition for practice--unless they could both be gathered up into one

current with his emotions; and he dreaded, as if it were a

dwelling-place of lost souls, that dead anatomy of culture which turns

the universe into a mere ceaseless answer to queries, and knows, not

everything, but everything else about everything--as if one should be

ignorant of nothing concerning the scent of violets except the scent

itself for which one had no nostril. But how and whence was the needed

event to come?--the influence that would justify partiality, and make

him what he longed to be, yet was unable to make himself--an organic

part of social life, instead of roaming in it like a yearning

disembodied spirit, stirred with a vague social passion, but without

fixed local habitation to render fellowship real? To make a little

difference for the better was what he was not contented to live

without; but how to make it? It is one thing to see your road, another

to cut it. He found some of the fault in his birth and the way he had

been brought up, which had laid no special demands on him and had given

him no fixed relationship except one of a doubtful kind; but he did not

attempt to hide from himself that he had fallen into a meditative

numbness, and was gliding farther and farther from that life of

practically energetic sentiment which he would have proclaimed (if he

had been inclined to proclaim anything) to be the best of all life, and

for himself the only way worth living. He wanted some way of keeping

emotion and its progeny of sentiments--which make the savors of

life--substantial and strong in the face of a reflectiveness that

threatened to nullify all differences. To pound the objects of

sentiment into small dust, yet keep sentiment alive and active, was

something like the famous recipe for making cannon--to first take a

round hole and then enclose it with iron; whatever you do keeping fast

hold of your round hole. Yet how distinguish what our will may wisely

save in its completeness, from the heaping of cat-mummies and the

expensive cult of enshrined putrefactions?

Something like this was the common under-current in Deronda's mind

while he was reading law or imperfectly attending to polite

conversation. Meanwhile he had not set about one function in particular

with zeal and steadiness. Not an admirable experience, to be proposed

as an ideal; but a form of struggle before break of day which some

young men since the patriarch have had to pass through, with more or

less of bruising if not laming.

I have said that under his calm exterior he had a fervor which made him

easily feel the presence of poetry in everyday events; and the forms of

the Juden-gasse, rousing the sense of union with what is remote, set

him musing on two elements of our historic life which that sense raises

into the same region of poetry;--the faint beginnings of faiths and

institutions, and their obscure lingering decay; the dust and withered

remnants with which they are apt to be covered, only enhancing for the

awakened perception the impressiveness either of a sublimely

penetrating life, as in the twin green leaves that will become the

sheltering tree, or of a pathetic inheritance in which all the grandeur

and the glory have become a sorrowing memory.

This imaginative stirring, as he turned out of the Juden-gasse, and

continued to saunter in the warm evening air, meaning to find his way

to the synagogue, neutralized the repellent effect of certain ugly

little incidents on his way. Turning into an old book-shop to ask the

exact time of service at the synagogue, he was affectionately directed

by a precocious Jewish youth, who entered cordially into his wanting,

not the fine new building of the Reformed but the old Rabbinical school

of the orthodox; and then cheated him like a pure Teuton, only with

more amenity, in his charge for a book quite out of request as one

"nicht so leicht zu bekommen." Meanwhile at the opposite counter a deaf

and grisly tradesman was casting a flinty look at certain cards,

apparently combining advantages of business with religion, and

shoutingly proposed to him in Jew-dialect by a dingy man in a tall coat

hanging from neck to heel, a bag in hand, and a broad low hat

surmounting his chosen nose--who had no sooner disappeared than another

dingy man of the same pattern issued from the background glooms of the

shop and also shouted in the same dialect. In fact, Deronda saw various

queer-looking Israelites not altogether without guile, and just

distinguishable from queer-looking Christians of the same mixed

\_morale\_. In his anxiety about Mirah's relatives, he had lately been

thinking of vulgar Jews with a sort of personal alarm. But a little

comparison will often diminish our surprise and disgust at the

aberrations of Jews and other dissidents whose lives do not offer a

consistent or lovely pattern of their creed; and this evening Deronda,

becoming more conscious that he was falling into unfairness and

ridiculous exaggeration, began to use that corrective comparison: he

paid his thaler too much, without prejudice to his interests in the

Hebrew destiny, or his wish to find the \_Rabbinische Schule\_, which he

arrived at by sunset, and entered with a good congregation of men.

He happened to take his seat in a line with an elderly man from whom he

was distant enough to glance at him more than once as rather a

noticeable figure--his ample white beard and felt hat framing a profile

of that fine contour which may as easily be Italian as Hebrew. He

returned Deronda's notice till at last their eyes met; an undesirable

chance with unknown persons, and a reason to Deronda for not looking

again; but he immediately found an open prayer-book pushed toward him

and had to bow his thanks. However, the congregation had mustered, the

reader had mounted to the \_almemor\_ or platform, and the service began.

Deronda, having looked enough at the German translation of the Hebrew

in the book before him to know that he was chiefly hearing Psalms and

Old Testament passages or phrases, gave himself up to that strongest

effect of chanted liturgies which is independent of detailed verbal

meaning--like the effect of an Allegri's \_Miserere\_ or a Palestrina's

\_Magnificat\_. The most powerful movement of feeling with a liturgy is

the prayer which seeks for nothing special, but is a yearning to escape

from the limitations of our own weakness and an invocation of all Good

to enter and abide with us; or else a self-oblivious lifting up of

Gladness, a \_Gloria in excelsis\_ that such Good exists; both the

yearning and the exaltation gathering their utmost force from the sense

of communion in a form which has expressed them both, for long

generations of struggling fellow-men. The Hebrew liturgy, like others,

has its transitions of litany, lyric, proclamation, dry statement and

blessing; but this evening, all were one for Deronda: the chant of the

\_Chazaris\_ or Reader's grand wide-ranging voice with its passage from

monotony to sudden cries, the outburst of sweet boys' voices from the

little choir, the devotional swaying of men's bodies backward and

forward, the very commonness of the building and shabbiness of the

scene where a national faith, which had penetrated the thinking of half

the world, and moulded the splendid forms of that world's religion, was

finding a remote, obscure echo--all were blent for him as one

expression of a binding history, tragic and yet glorious. He wondered

at the strength of his own feeling; it seemed beyond the occasion--what

one might imagine to be a divine influx in the darkness, before there

was any vision to interpret. The whole scene was a coherent strain, its

burden a passionate regret, which, if he had known the liturgy for the

Day of Reconciliation, he might have clad in its authentic burden;

"Happy the eye which saw all these things; but verily to hear only of

them afflicts our soul. Happy the eye that saw our temple and the joy

of our congregation; but verily to hear only of them afflicts our soul.

Happy the eye that saw the fingers when tuning every kind of song; but

verily to hear only of them afflicts our soul."

But with the cessation of the devotional sounds and the movement of

many indifferent faces and vulgar figures before him there darted into

his mind the frigid idea that he had probably been alone in his

feeling, and perhaps the only person in the congregation for whom the

service was more than a dull routine. There was just time for this

chilling thought before he had bowed to his civil neighbor and was

moving away with the rest--when he felt a hand on his arm, and turning

with the rather unpleasant sensation which this abrupt sort of claim is

apt to bring, he saw close to him the white-bearded face of that

neighbor, who said to him in German, "Excuse me, young gentleman--allow

me--what is your parentage--your mother's family--her maiden name?"

Deronda had a strongly resistant feeling: he was inclined to shake off

hastily the touch on his arm; but he managed to slip it away and said

coldly, "I am an Englishman."

The questioner looked at him dubiously still for an instant, then just

lifted his hat and turned away; whether under a sense of having made a

mistake or of having been repulsed, Deronda was uncertain. In his walk

back to the hotel he tried to still any uneasiness on the subject by

reflecting that he could not have acted differently. How could he say

that he did not know the name of his mother's family to that total

stranger?--who indeed had taken an unwarrantable liberty in the

abruptness of his question, dictated probably by some fancy of likeness

such as often occurs without real significance. The incident, he said

to himself, was trivial; but whatever import it might have, his inward

shrinking on the occasion was too strong for him to be sorry that he

had cut it short. It was a reason, however, for his not mentioning the

synagogue to the Mallingers--in addition to his usual inclination to

reticence on anything that the baronet would have been likely to call

Quixotic enthusiasm. Hardly any man could be more good-natured than Sir

Hugo; indeed in his kindliness especially to women, he did actions

which others would have called romantic; but he never took a romantic

view of them, and in general smiled at the introduction of motives on a

grand scale, or of reasons that lay very far off. This was the point of

strongest difference between him and Deronda, who rarely ate at

breakfast without some silent discursive flight after grounds for

filling up his day according to the practice of his contemporaries.

This halt at Frankfort was taken on their way home, and its impressions

were kept the more actively vibrating in him by the duty of caring for

Mirah's welfare. That question about his parentage, which if he had not

both inwardly and outwardly shaken it off as trivial, would have seemed

a threat rather than a promise of revelation, and reinforced his

anxiety as to the effect of finding Mirah's relatives and his resolve

to proceed with caution. If he made any unpleasant discovery, was he

bound to a disclosure that might cast a new net of trouble around her?

He had written to Mrs. Meyrick to announce his visit at four o'clock,

and he found Mirah seated at work with only Mrs. Meyrick and Mab, the

open piano, and all the glorious company of engravings. The dainty

neatness of her hair and dress, the glow of tranquil happiness in a

face where a painter need have changed nothing if he had wanted to put

it in front of the host singing "peace on earth and good will to men,"

made a contrast to his first vision of her that was delightful to

Deronda's eyes. Mirah herself was thinking of it, and immediately on

their greeting said--

"See how different I am from the miserable creature by the river! all

because you found me and brought me to the very best."

"It was my good chance to find you," said Deronda. "Any other man would

have been glad to do what I did."

"That is not the right way to be thinking about it," said Mirah,

shaking her head with decisive gravity, "I think of what really was. It

was you, and not another, who found me and were good to me."

"I agree with Mirah," said Mrs. Meyrick. "Saint Anybody is a bad saint

to pray to."

"Besides, Anybody could not have brought me to you," said Mirah,

smiling at Mrs. Meyrick. "And I would rather be with you than with any

one else in the world except my mother. I wonder if ever a poor little

bird, that was lost and could not fly, was taken and put into a warm

nest where was a mother and sisters who took to it so that everything

came naturally, as if it had been always there. I hardly thought before

that the world could ever be as happy and without fear as it is to me

now." She looked meditative a moment, and then said, "sometimes I am a

\_little\_ afraid."

"What is it you are afraid of?" said Deronda with anxiety.

"That when I am turning at the corner of a street I may meet my father.

It seems dreadful that I should be afraid of meeting him. That is my

only sorrow," said Mirah, plaintively.

"It is surely not very probable," said Deronda, wishing that it were

less so; then, not to let the opportunity escape--"Would it be a great

grief to you now if you were never to meet your mother?"

She did not answer immediately, but meditated again, with her eyes

fixed on the opposite wall. Then she turned them on Deronda and said

firmly, as if she had arrived at the exact truth, "I want her to know

that I have always loved her, and if she is alive I want to comfort

her. She may be dead. If she were I should long to know where she was

buried; and to know whether my brother lives, so that we can remember

her together. But I will try not to grieve. I have thought much for so

many years of her being dead. And I shall have her with me in my mind,

as I have always had. We can never be really parted. I think I have

never sinned against her. I have always tried not to do what would hurt

her. Only, she might be sorry that I was not a good Jewess."

"In what way are you not a good Jewess?" said Deronda.

"I am ignorant, and we never observed the laws, but lived among

Christians just as they did. But I have heard my father laugh at the

strictness of the Jews about their food and all customs, and their not

liking Christians. I think my mother was strict; but she could never

want me not to like those who are better to me than any of my own

people I have ever known. I think I could obey in other things that she

wished but not in that. It is so much easier to me to share in love

than in hatred. I remember a play I read in German--since I have been

here it has come into my mind--where the heroine says something like

that."

"Antigone," said Deronda.

"Ah, you know it. But I do not believe that my mother would wish me not

to love my best friends. She would be grateful to them." Here Mirah had

turned to Mrs. Meyrick, and with a sudden lighting up of her whole

countenance, she said, "Oh, if we ever do meet and know each other as

we are now, so that I could tell what would comfort her--I should be so

full of blessedness my soul would know no want but to love her!"

"God bless you, child!" said Mrs. Meyrick, the words escaping

involuntarily from her motherly heart. But to relieve the strain of

feeling she looked at Deronda and said, "It is curious that Mirah, who

remembers her mother so well it is as if she saw her, cannot recall her

brother the least bit--except the feeling of having been carried by him

when she was tired, and of his being near her when she was in her

mother's lap. It must be that he was rarely at home. He was already

grown up. It is a pity her brother should be quite a stranger to her."

"He is good; I feel sure Ezra is good," said Mirah, eagerly. "He loved

my mother--he would take care of her. I remember more of him than that.

I remember my mother's voice once calling, 'Ezra!' and then his

answering from a distance 'Mother!'"--Mirah had changed her voice a

little in each of these words and had given them a loving

intonation--"and then he came close to us. I feel sure he is good. I

have always taken comfort from that."

It was impossible to answer this either with agreement or doubt. Mrs.

Meyrick and Deronda exchanged a quick glance: about this brother she

felt as painfully dubious as he did. But Mirah went on, absorbed in her

memories--

"Is it not wonderful how I remember the voices better than anything

else? I think they must go deeper into us than other things. I have

often fancied heaven might be made of voices."

"Like your singing--yes," said Mab, who had hitherto kept a modest

silence, and now spoke bashfully, as was her wont in the presence of

Prince Camaralzaman--"Ma, do ask Mirah to sing. Mr. Deronda has not

heard her."

"Would it be disagreeable to you to sing now?" said Deronda, with a

more deferential gentleness than he had ever been conscious of before.

"Oh, I shall like it," said Mirah. "My voice has come back a little

with rest."

Perhaps her ease of manner was due to something more than the

simplicity of her nature. The circumstances of her life made her think

of everything she did as work demanded from her, in which affectation

had nothing to do; and she had begun her work before self-consciousness

was born.

She immediately rose and went to the piano--a somewhat worn instrument

that seemed to get the better of its infirmities under the firm touch

of her small fingers as she preluded. Deronda placed himself where he

could see her while she sang; and she took everything as quietly as if

she had been a child going to breakfast.

Imagine her--it is always good to imagine a human creature in whom

bodily loveliness seems as properly one with the entire being as the

bodily loveliness of those wondrous transparent orbs of life that we

find in the sea--imagine her with her dark hair brushed from her

temples, but yet showing certain tiny rings there which had cunningly

found their own way back, the mass of it hanging behind just to the

nape of the little neck in curly fibres, such as renew themselves at

their own will after being bathed into straightness like that of

water-grasses. Then see the perfect cameo her profile makes, cut in a

duskish shell, where by some happy fortune there pierced a gem-like

darkness for the eye and eyebrow; the delicate nostrils defined enough

to be ready for sensitive movements, the finished ear, the firm curves

of the chin and neck, entering into the expression of a refinement

which was not feebleness.

She sang Beethoven's "Per pietÃ  non dirmi addio" with a subdued but

searching pathos which had that essential of perfect singing, the

making one oblivious of art or manner, and only possessing one with the

song. It was the sort of voice that gives the impression of being meant

like a bird's wooing for an audience near and beloved. Deronda began by

looking at her, but felt himself presently covering his eyes with his

hand, wanting to seclude the melody in darkness; then he refrained from

what might seem oddity, and was ready to meet the look of mute appeal

which she turned toward him at the end.

"I think I never enjoyed a song more than that," he said, gratefully.

"You like my singing? I am so glad," she said, with a smile of delight.

"It has been a great pain to me, because it failed in what it was

wanted for. But now we think I can use it to get my bread. I have

really been taught well. And now I have two pupils, that Miss Meyrick

found for me. They pay me nearly two crowns for their two lessons."

"I think I know some ladies who would find you many pupils after

Christmas," said Deronda. "You would not mind singing before any one

who wished to hear you?"

"Oh no, I want to do something to get money. I could teach reading and

speaking, Mrs. Meyrick thinks. But if no one would learn of me, that is

difficult." Mirah smiled with a touch of merriment he had not seen in

her before. "I dare say I should find her poor--I mean my mother. I

should want to get money for her. And I can not always live on charity;

though"--here she turned so as to take all three of her companions in

one glance--"it is the sweetest charity in all the world."

"I should think you can get rich," said Deronda, smiling. "Great ladies

will perhaps like you to teach their daughters, We shall see. But now

do sing again to us."

She went on willingly, singing with ready memory various things by

Gordigiani and Schubert; then, when she had left the piano, Mab said,

entreatingly, "Oh, Mirah, if you would not mind singing the little

hymn."

"It is too childish," said Mirah. "It is like lisping."

"What is the hymn?" said Deronda.

"It is the Hebrew hymn she remembers her mother singing over her when

she lay in her cot," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"I should like very much to hear it," said Deronda, "if you think I am

worthy to hear what is so sacred."

"I will sing it if you like," said Mirah, "but I don't sing real

words--only here and there a syllable like hers--the rest is lisping.

Do you know Hebrew? because if you do, my singing will seem childish

nonsense."

Deronda shook his head. "It will be quite good Hebrew to me."

Mirah crossed her little feet and hands in her easiest attitude, and

then lifted up her head at an angle which seemed to be directed to some

invisible face bent over her, while she sang a little hymn of quaint

melancholy intervals, with syllables that really seemed childish

lisping to her audience; the voice in which she gave it forth had

gathered even a sweeter, more cooing tenderness than was heard in her

other songs.

"If I were ever to know the real words, I should still go on in my old

way with them," said Mirah, when she had repeated the hymn several

times.

"Why not?" said Deronda. "The lisped syllables are very full of

meaning."

"Yes, indeed," said Mrs. Meyrick. "A mother hears something of a lisp

in her children's talk to the very last. Their words are not just what

everybody else says, though they may be spelled the same. If I were to

live till my Hans got old, I should still see the boy in him. A

mother's love, I often say, is like a tree that has got all the wood in

it, from the very first it made."

"Is not that the way with friendship, too?" said Deronda, smiling. "We

must not let the mothers be too arrogant."

The little woman shook her head over her darning.

"It is easier to find an old mother than an old friend. Friendships

begin with liking or gratitude--roots that can be pulled up. Mother's

love begins deeper down."

"Like what you were saying about the influence of voices," said

Deronda, looking at Mirah. "I don't think your hymn would have had more

expression for me if I had known the words. I went to the synagogue at

Frankfort before I came home, and the service impressed me just as much

as if I had followed the words--perhaps more."

"Oh, was it great to you? Did it go to your heart?" said Mirah,

eagerly. "I thought none but our people would feel that. I thought it

was all shut away like a river in a deep valley, where only heaven

saw--I mean---" she hesitated feeling that she could not disentangle

her thought from its imagery.

"I understand," said Deronda. "But there is not really such a

separation--deeper down, as Mrs. Meyrick says. Our religion is chiefly

a Hebrew religion; and since Jews are men, their religious feelings

must have much in common with those of other men--just as their poetry,

though in one sense peculiar, has a great deal in common with the

poetry of other nations. Still it is to be expected that a Jew would

feel the forms of his people's religion more than one of another

race--and yet"--here Deronda hesitated in his turn--"that is perhaps

not always so."

"Ah no," said Mirah, sadly. "I have seen that. I have seen them mock.

Is it not like mocking your parents?--like rejoicing in your parents'

shame?"

"Some minds naturally rebel against whatever they were brought up in,

and like the opposite; they see the faults in what is nearest to them,"

said Deronda apologetically.

"But you are not like that," said Mirah, looking at him with

unconscious fixedness.

"No, I think not," said Deronda; "but you know I was not brought up as

a Jew."

"Ah, I am always forgetting," said Mirah, with a look of disappointed

recollection, and slightly blushing.

Deronda also felt rather embarrassed, and there was an awkward pause,

which he put an end to by saying playfully--

"Whichever way we take it, we have to tolerate each other; for if we

all went in opposition to our teaching, we must end in difference, just

the same."

"To be sure. We should go on forever in zig-zags," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"I think it is very weak-minded to make your creed up by the rule of

the contrary. Still one may honor one's parents, without following

their notions exactly, any more than the exact cut of their clothing.

My father was a Scotch Calvinist and my mother was a French Calvinist;

I am neither quite Scotch, nor quite French, nor two Calvinists rolled

into one, yet I honor my parents' memory."

"But I could not make myself not a Jewess," said Mirah, insistently,

"even if I changed my belief."

"No, my dear. But if Jews and Jewesses went on changing their religion,

and making no difference between themselves and Christians, there would

come a time when there would be no Jews to be seen," said Mrs. Meyrick,

taking that consummation very cheerfully.

"Oh, please not to say that," said Mirah, the tears gathering. "It is

the first unkind thing you ever said. I will not begin that. I will

never separate myself from my mother's people. I was forced to fly from

my father; but if he came back in age and weakness and want, and needed

me, should I say, 'This is not my father'? If he had shame, I must

share it. It was he who was given to me for my father, and not another.

And so it is with my people. I will always be a Jewess. I will love

Christians when they are good, like you. But I will always cling to my

people. I will always worship with them."

As Mirah had gone on speaking she had become possessed with a sorrowful

passion--fervent, not violent. Holding her little hands tightly clasped

and looking at Mrs. Meyrick with beseeching, she seemed to Deronda a

personification of that spirit which impelled men after a long

inheritance of professed Catholicism to leave wealth and high place and

risk their lives in flight, that they might join their own people and

say, "I am a Jew."

"Mirah, Mirah, my dear child, you mistake me!" said Mrs. Meyrick,

alarmed. "God forbid I should want you to do anything against your

conscience. I was only saying what might be if the world went on. But I

had better have left the world alone, and not wanted to be over-wise.

Forgive me, come! we will not try to take you from anybody you feel has

more right to you."

"I would do anything else for you. I owe you my life," said Mirah, not

yet quite calm.

"Hush, hush, now," said Mrs. Meyrick. "I have been punished enough for

wagging my tongue foolishly--making an almanac for the Millennium, as

my husband used to say."

"But everything in the world must come to an end some time. We must

bear to think of that," said Mab, unable to hold her peace on this

point. She had already suffered from a bondage of tongue which

threatened to become severe if Mirah were to be too much indulged in

this inconvenient susceptibility to innocent remarks.

Deronda smiled at the irregular, blonde face, brought into strange

contrast by the side of Mirah's--smiled, Mab thought, rather

sarcastically as he said, "That 'prospect of everything coming to an

end will not guide us far in practice. Mirah's feelings, she tells us,

are concerned with what is."

Mab was confused and wished she had not spoken, since Mr. Deronda

seemed to think that she had found fault with Mirah; but to have spoken

once is a tyrannous reason for speaking again, and she said--

"I only meant that we must have courage to hear things, else there is

hardly anything we can talk about." Mab felt herself unanswerable here,

inclining to the opinion of Socrates: "What motive has a man to live,

if not for the pleasure of discourse?"

Deronda took his leave soon after, and when Mrs. Meyrick went outside

with him to exchange a few words about Mirah, he said, "Hans is to

share my chambers when he comes at Christmas."

"You have written to Rome about that?" said Mrs. Meyrick, her face

lighting up. "How very good and thoughtful of you! You mentioned Mirah,

then?"

"Yes, I referred to her. I concluded he knew everything from you."

"I must confess my folly. I have not yet written a word about her. I

have always been meaning to do it, and yet have ended my letter without

saying a word. And I told the girls to leave it to me. However!--Thank

you a thousand times."

Deronda divined something of what was in the mother's mind, and his

divination reinforced a certain anxiety already present in him. His

inward colloquy was not soothing. He said to himself that no man could

see this exquisite creature without feeling it possible to fall in love

with her; but all the fervor of his nature was engaged on the side of

precaution. There are personages who feel themselves tragic because

they march into a palpable morass, dragging another with them, and then

cry out against all the gods. Deronda's mind was strongly set against

imitating them.

"I have my hands on the reins now," he thought, "and I will not drop

them. I shall go there as little as possible."

He saw the reasons acting themselves out before him. How could he be

Mirah's guardian and claim to unite with Mrs. Meyrick, to whose charge

he had committed her, if he showed himself as a lover--whom she did not

love--whom she would not marry? And if he encouraged any germ of

lover's feeling in himself it would lead up to that issue. Mirah's was

not a nature that would bear dividing against itself; and even if love

won her consent to marry a man who was not of her race and religion,

she would never be happy in acting against that strong native bias

which would still reign in her conscience as remorse.

Deronda saw these consequences as we see any danger of marring our own

work well begun. It was a delight to have rescued this child acquainted

with sorrow, and to think of having placed her little feet in protected

paths. The creature we help to save, though only a half-reared linnet,

bruised and lost by the wayside--how we watch and fence it, and dote on

its signs of recovery! Our pride becomes loving, our self is a not-self

for whose sake we become virtuous, when we set to some hidden work of

reclaiming a life from misery and look for our triumph in the secret

joy--"This one is the better for me."

"I would as soon hold out my finger to be bitten off as set about

spoiling her peace," said Deronda. "It was one of the rarest bits of

fortune that I should have had friends like the Meyricks to place her

with--generous, delicate friends without any loftiness in their ways,

so that her dependence on them is not only safety but happiness. There

could be no refuge to replace that, if it were broken up. But what is

the use of my taking the vows and settling everything as it should be,

if that marplot Hans comes and upsets it all?"

Few things were more likely. Hans was made for mishaps: his very limbs

seemed more breakable than other people's--his eyes more of a resort

for uninvited flies and other irritating guests. But it was impossible

to forbid Hans's coming to London. He was intending to get a studio

there and make it his chief home; and to propose that he should defer

coming on some ostensible ground, concealing the real motive of winning

time for Mirah's position to become more confirmed and independent, was

impracticable. Having no other resource Deronda tried to believe that

both he and Mrs. Meyrick were foolishly troubling themselves about one

of those endless things called probabilities, which never occur; but he

did not quite succeed in his trying; on the contrary, he found himself

going inwardly through a scene where on the first discovery of Han's

inclination he gave him a very energetic warning--suddenly checked,

however, by the suspicion of personal feeling that his warmth might be

creating in Hans. He could come to no result, but that the position was

peculiar, and that he could make no further provision against dangers

until they came nearer. To save an unhappy Jewess from drowning

herself, would not have seemed a startling variation among police

reports; but to discover in her so rare a creature as Mirah, was an

exceptional event which might well bring exceptional consequences.

Deronda would not let himself for a moment dwell on any supposition

that the consequences might enter deeply into his own life. The image

of Mirah had never yet had that penetrating radiation which would have

been given to it by the idea of her loving him. When this sort of

effluence is absent from the fancy (whether from the fact or not) a man

may go far in devotedness without perturbation.

As to the search for Mirah's mother and brother, Deronda took what she

had said to-day as a warrant for deferring any immediate measures. His

conscience was not quite easy in this desire for delay, any more than

it was quite easy in his not attempting to learn the truth about his

own mother: in both cases he felt that there might be an unfulfilled

duty to a parent, but in both cases there was an overpowering

repugnance to the possible truth, which threw a turning weight into the

scale of argument.

"At least, I will look about," was his final determination. "I may find

some special Jewish machinery. I will wait till after Christmas."

What should we all do without the calendar, when we want to put off a

disagreeable duty? The admirable arrangements of the solar system, by

which our time is measured, always supply us with a term before which

it is hardly worth while to set about anything we are disinclined to.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

"No man," says a Rabbi, by way of indisputable instance, "may turn the

bones of his father and mother into spoons"--sure that his hearers

felt the checks against that form of economy. The market for spoons

has never expanded enough for any one to say, "Why not?" and to argue

that human progress lies in such an application of material. The only

check to be alleged is a sentiment, which will coerce none who do not

hold that sentiments are the better part of the world's wealth.

Deronda meanwhile took to a less fashionable form of exercise than

riding in Rotten Row. He went often rambling in those parts of London

which are most inhabited by common Jews. He walked to the synagogues at

times of service, he looked into shops, he observed faces:--a process

not very promising of particular discovery. Why did he not address

himself to an influential Rabbi or other member of a Jewish community,

to consult on the chances of finding a mother named Cohen, with a son

named Ezra, and a lost daughter named Mirah? He thought of doing

so--after Christmas. The fact was, notwithstanding all his sense of

poetry in common things, Deronda, where a keen personal interest was

aroused, could not, more than the rest of us, continuously escape

suffering from the pressure of that hard unaccommodating Actual, which

has never consulted our taste and is entirely unselect. Enthusiasm, we

know, dwells at ease among ideas, tolerates garlic breathed in the

middle ages, and sees no shabbiness in the official trappings of

classic processions: it gets squeamish when ideals press upon it as

something warmly incarnate, and can hardly face them without fainting.

Lying dreamily in a boat, imagining one's self in quest of a beautiful

maiden's relatives in Cordova elbowed by Jews in the time of

Ibn-Gebirol, all the physical incidents can be borne without shock. Or

if the scenery of St. Mary Axe and Whitechapel were imaginatively

transported to the borders of the Rhine at the end of the eleventh

century, when in the ears listening for the signals of the Messiah, the

Hep! Hep! Hep! of the Crusaders came like the bay of blood-hounds; and

in the presence of those devilish missionaries with sword and firebrand

the crouching figure of the reviled Jew turned round erect, heroic,

flashing with sublime constancy in the face of torture and death--what

would the dingy shops and unbeautiful faces signify to the thrill of

contemplative emotion? But the fervor of sympathy with which we

contemplate a grandiose martyrdom is feeble compared with the

enthusiasm that keeps unslacked where there is no danger, no

challenge--nothing but impartial midday falling on commonplace, perhaps

half-repulsive, objects which are really the beloved ideas made flesh.

Here undoubtedly lies the chief poetic energy:--in the force of

imagination that pierces or exalts the solid fact, instead of floating

among cloud-pictures. To glory in a prophetic vision of knowledge

covering the earth, is an easier exercise of believing imagination than

to see its beginning in newspaper placards, staring at you from the

bridge beyond the corn-fields; and it might well happen to most of us

dainty people that we were in the thick of the battle of Armageddon

without being aware of anything more than the annoyance of a little

explosive smoke and struggling on the ground immediately about us.

It lay in Deronda's nature usually to contemn the feeble, fastidious

sympathy which shrinks from the broad life of mankind; but now, with

Mirah before him as a living reality, whose experience he had to care

for, he saw every common Jew and Jewess in the light of a comparison

with her, and had a presentiment of the collision between her idea of

the unknown mother and brother and the discovered fact--a presentiment

all the keener in him because of a suppressed consciousness that a not

unlike possibility of collision might lie hidden in his own lot. Not

that he would have looked with more complacency of expectation at

wealthy Jews, outdoing the lords of the Philistines in their sports;

but since there was no likelihood of Mirah's friends being found among

that class, their habits did not immediately affect him. In this mood

he rambled, without expectation of a more pregnant result than a little

preparation of his own mind, perhaps for future theorizing as well as

practice--very much as if, Mirah being related to Welsh miners, he had

gone to look more closely at the ways of those people, not without

wishing at the same time to get a little light of detail on the history

of Strikes.

He really did not long to find anybody in particular; and when, as his

habit was, he looked at the name over a shop door, he was well content

that it was not Ezra Cohen. I confess, he particularly desired that

Ezra Cohen should not keep a shop. Wishes are held to be ominous;

according to which belief the order of the world is so arranged that if

you have an impious objection to a squint, your offspring is the more

likely to be born with one; also, that if you happened to desire a

squint you would not get it. This desponding view of probability the

hopeful entirely reject, taking their wishes as good and sufficient

security for all kinds of fulfilment. Who is absolutely neutral?

Deronda happening one morning to turn into a little side street out of

the noise and obstructions of Holborn, felt the scale dip on the

desponding side.

He was rather tired of the streets and had paused to hail a hansom cab

which he saw coming, when his attention was caught by some fine old

clasps in chased silver displayed in the window at his right hand. His

first thought was that Lady Mallinger, who had a strictly Protestant

taste for such Catholic spoils, might like to have these missal-clasps

turned into a bracelet: then his eyes traveled over the other contents

of the window, and he saw that the shop was that kind of pawnbroker's

where the lead is given to jewelry, lace and all equivocal objects

introduced as \_bric-Ã -brac\_. A placard in one corner

announced--\_Watches and Jewelry exchanged and repaired\_. But his survey

had been noticed from within, and a figure appeared at the door,

looking round at him and saying in a tone of cordial encouragement,

"Good day, sir." The instant was enough for Deronda to see the face,

unmistakably Jewish, belonged to a young man about thirty, and wincing

from the shopkeeper's persuasiveness that would probably follow, he had

no sooner returned the "good day," than he passed to the other side of

the street and beckoned to the cabman to draw up there. From that

station he saw the name over the shop window--Ezra Cohen.

There might be a hundred Ezra Cohens lettered above shop windows, but

Deronda had not seen them. Probably the young man interested in a

possible customer was Ezra himself; and he was about the age to be

expected in Mirah's brother, who was grown up while she was still a

little child. But Deronda's first endeavor as he drove homeward was to

convince himself that there was not the slightest warrantable

presumption of this Ezra being Mirah's brother; and next, that even if,

in spite of good reasoning, he turned out to be that brother, while on

inquiry the mother was found to be dead, it was not

his--Deronda's--duty to make known the discovery to Mirah. In

inconvenient disturbance of this conclusion there came his

lately-acquired knowledge that Mirah would have a religious desire to

know of her mother's death, and also to learn whether her brother were

living. How far was he justified in determining another life by his own

notions? Was it not his secret complaint against the way in which

others had ordered his own life, that he had not open daylight on all

its relations, so that he had not, like other men, the full guidance of

primary duties?

The immediate relief from this inward debate was the reflection that he

had not yet made any real discovery, and that by looking into the facts

more closely he should be certified that there was no demand on him for

any decision whatever. He intended to return to that shop as soon as he

could conveniently, and buy the clasps for Lady Mallinger. But he was

hindered for several days by Sir Hugo, who, about to make an

after-dinner speech on a burning topic, wanted Deronda to forage for

him on the legal part of the question, besides wasting time every day

on argument which always ended in a drawn battle. As on many other

questions, they held different sides, but Sir Hugo did not mind this,

and when Deronda put his point well, said, with a mixture of

satisfaction and regret--

"Confound it, Dan! why don't you make an opportunity of saying these

things in public? You're wrong, you know. You won't succeed. You've got

the massive sentiment--the heavy artillery of the country against you.

But it's all the better ground for a young man to display himself on.

When I was your age, I should have taken it. And it would be quite as

well for you to be in opposition to me here and there. It would throw

you more into relief. If you would seize an occasion of this sort to

make an impression, you might be in Parliament in no time. And you know

that would gratify me."

"I am sorry not to do what would gratify you, sir," said Deronda. "But

I cannot persuade myself to look at politics as a profession."

"Why not? if a man is not born into public life by his position in the

country, there's no way for him but to embrace it by his own efforts.

The business of the country must be done--her Majesty's Government

carried on, as the old Duke said. And it never could be, my boy, if

everybody looked at politics as if they were prophecy, and demanded an

inspired vocation. If you are to get into Parliament, it won't do to

sit still and wait for a call either from heaven or constituents."

"I don't want to make a living out of opinions," said Deronda;

"especially out of borrowed opinions. Not that I mean to blame other

men. I dare say many better fellows than I don't mind getting on to a

platform to praise themselves, and giving their word of honor for a

party."

"I'll tell you what, Dan," said Sir Hugo, "a man who sets his face

against every sort of humbug is simply a three-cornered, impracticable

fellow. There's a bad style of humbug, but there is also a good

style--one that oils the wheels and makes progress possible. If you are

to rule men, you must rule them through their own ideas; and I agree

with the Archbishop at Naples who had a St. Januarius procession

against the plague. It's no use having an Order in Council against

popular shallowness. There is no action possible without a little

acting."

"One may be obliged to give way to an occasional necessity," said

Deronda. "But it is one thing to say, 'In this particular case I am

forced to put on this foolscap and grin,' and another to buy a pocket

foolscap and practice myself in grinning. I can't see any real public

expediency that does not keep an ideal before it which makes a limit of

deviation from the direct path. But if I were to set up for a public

man I might mistake my success for public expediency."

It was after this dialogue, which was rather jarring to him, that

Deronda set out on his meditated second visit to Ezra Cohen's. He

entered the street at the end opposite to the Holborn entrance, and an

inward reluctance slackened his pace while his thoughts were

transferring what he had just been saying about public expediency to

the entirely private difficulty which brought him back again into this

unattractive thoroughfare. It might soon become an immediate practical

question with him how far he could call it a wise expediency to conceal

the fact of close kindred. Such questions turning up constantly in life

are often decided in a rough-and-ready way; and to many it will appear

an over-refinement in Deronda that he should make any great point of a

matter confined to his own knowledge. But we have seen the reasons why

he had come to regard concealment as a bane of life, and the necessity

of concealment as a mark by which lines of action were to be avoided.

The prospect of being urged against the confirmed habit of his mind was

naturally grating. He even paused here and there before the most

plausible shop-windows for a gentleman to look into, half inclined to

decide that he would not increase his knowledge about that modern Ezra,

who was certainly not a leader among his people--a hesitation which

proved how, in a man much given to reasoning, a bare possibility may

weigh more than the best-clad likelihood; for Deronda's reasoning had

decided that all likelihood was against this man's being Mirah's

brother.

One of the shop-windows he paused before was that of a second-hand

book-shop, where, on a narrow table outside, the literature of the ages

was represented in judicious mixture, from the immortal verse of Homer

to the mortal prose of the railway novel. That the mixture was

judicious was apparent from Deronda's finding in it something that he

wanted--namely, that wonderful bit of autobiography, the life of the

Polish Jew, Salomon Maimon; which, as he could easily slip it into his

pocket, he took from its place, and entered the shop to pay for,

expecting to see behind the counter a grimy personage showing that

\_nonchalance\_ about sales which seems to belong universally to the

second-hand book-business. In most other trades you find generous men

who are anxious to sell you their wares for your own welfare; but even

a Jew will not urge Simson's Euclid on you with an affectionate

assurance that you will have pleasure in reading it, and that he wishes

he had twenty more of the article, so much is it in request. One is led

to fear that a secondhand bookseller may belong to that unhappy class

of men who have no belief in the good of what they get their living by,

yet keep conscience enough to be morose rather than unctuous in their

vocation.

But instead of the ordinary tradesman, he saw, on the dark background

of books in the long narrow shop, a figure that was somewhat startling

in its unusualness. A man in threadbare clothing, whose age was

difficult to guess--from the dead yellowish flatness of the flesh,

something like an old ivory carving--was seated on a stool against some

bookshelves that projected beyond the short counter, doing nothing more

remarkable than reading yesterday's \_Times\_; but when he let the paper

rest on his lap and looked at the incoming customer, the thought

glanced through Deronda that precisely such a physiognomy as that might

possibly have been seen in a prophet of the Exile, or in some New

Hebrew poet of the mediÃ¦val time. It was a fine typical Jewish face,

wrought into intensity of expression apparently by a strenuous eager

experience in which all the satisfaction had been indirect and far off,

and perhaps by some bodily suffering also, which involved that absence

of ease in the present. The features were clear-cut, not large; the

brow not high but broad, and fully defined by the crisp black hair. It

might never have been a particularly handsome face, but it must always

have been forcible; and now with its dark, far-off gaze, and yellow

pallor in relief on the gloom of the backward shop, one might have

imagined one's self coming upon it in some past prison of the

Inquisition, which a mob had suddenly burst upon; while the look fixed

on an incidental customer seemed eager and questioning enough to have

been turned on one who might have been a messenger either of delivery

or of death. The figure was probably familiar and unexciting enough to

the inhabitants of this street; but to Deronda's mind it brought so

strange a blending of the unwonted with the common, that there was a

perceptible interval of mutual observation before he asked his

question; "What is the price of this book?"

After taking the book and examining the fly-leaves without rising, the

supposed bookseller said, "There is no mark, and Mr. Ram is not in now.

I am keeping the shop while he is gone to dinner. What are you disposed

to give for it?" He held the book close on his lap with his hand on it

and looked examiningly at Deronda, over whom there came the

disagreeable idea, that possibly this striking personage wanted to see

how much could be got out of a customer's ignorance of prices. But

without further reflection he said, "Don't you know how much it is

worth?"

"Not its market-price. May I ask have you read it?"

"No. I have read an account of it, which makes me want to buy it."

"You are a man of learning--you are interested in Jewish history?" This

was said in a deepened tone of eager inquiry.

"I am certainly interested in Jewish history," said Deronda, quietly,

curiosity overcoming his dislike to the sort of inspection as well as

questioning he was under.

But immediately the strange Jew rose from his sitting posture, and

Deronda felt a thin hand pressing his arm tightly, while a hoarse,

excited voice, not much above a loud whisper, said--

"You are perhaps of our race?"

Deronda colored deeply, not liking the grasp, and then answered with a

slight shake of the head, "No." The grasp was relaxed, the hand

withdrawn, the eagerness of the face collapsed into uninterested

melancholy, as if some possessing spirit which had leaped into the eyes

and gestures had sunk back again to the inmost recesses of the frame;

and moving further off as he held out the little book, the stranger

said in a tone of distant civility, "I believe Mr. Ram will be

satisfied with half-a-crown, sir."

The effect of this change on Deronda--he afterward smiled when he

recalled it--was oddly embarrassing and humiliating, as if some high

dignitary had found him deficient and given him his \_congÃ©\_. There was

nothing further to be said, however: he paid his half-crown and carried

off his \_Salomon Maimon's Lebensgeschichte\_ with a mere "good-morning."

He felt some vexation at the sudden arrest of the interview, and the

apparent prohibition that he should know more of this man, who was

certainly something out of the common way--as different probably as a

Jew could well be from Ezra Cohen, through whose door Deronda was

presently entering, and whose flourishing face glistening on the way to

fatness was hanging over the counter in negotiation with some one on

the other side of the partition, concerning two plated stoppers and

three teaspoons, which lay spread before him. Seeing Deronda enter, he

called out "Mother! Mother!" and then with a familiar nod and smile,

said, "Coming, sir--coming directly."

Deronda could not help looking toward the door from the back with some

anxiety, which was not soothed when he saw a vigorous woman beyond

fifty enter and approach to serve him. Not that there was anything very

repulsive about her: the worst that could be said was that she had that

look of having made her toilet with little water, and by twilight,

which is common to unyouthful people of her class, and of having

presumably slept in her large earrings, if not in her rings and

necklace. In fact, what caused a sinking of heart in Deronda was, her

not being so coarse and ugly as to exclude the idea of her being

Mirah's mother. Any one who has looked at a face to try and discern

signs of known kinship in it will understand his process of

conjecture--how he tried to think away the fat which had gradually

disguised the outlines of youth, and to discern what one may call the

elementary expressions of the face. He was sorry to see no absolute

negative to his fears. Just as it was conceivable that this Ezra,

brought up to trade, might resemble the scapegrace father in everything

but his knowledge and talent, so it was not impossible that this mother

might have had a lovely refined daughter whose type of feature and

expression was like Mirah's. The eyebrows had a vexatious similarity of

line; and who shall decide how far a face may be masked when the

uncherishing years have thrust it far onward in the ever-new procession

of youth and age? The good-humor of the glance remained and shone out

in a motherly way at Deronda, as she said, in a mild guttural tone--

"How can I serve you, sir?"

"I should like to look at the silver clasps in the window," said

Deronda; "the larger ones, please, in the corner there."

They were not quite easy to get at from the mother's station, and the

son seeing this called out, "I'll reach 'em, mother; I'll reach 'em,"

running forward with alacrity, and then handing the clasps to Deronda

with the smiling remark--

"Mother's too proud: she wants to do everything herself. That's why I

called her to wait on you, sir. When there's a particular gentleman

customer, sir, I daren't do any other than call her. But I can't let

her do herself mischief with stretching."

Here Mr. Cohen made way again for his parent, who gave a little

guttural, amiable laugh while she looked at Deronda, as much as to say,

"This boy will be at his jokes, but you see he's the best son in the

world," and evidently the son enjoyed pleasing her, though he also

wished to convey an apology to his distinguished customer for not

giving him the advantage of his own exclusive attention.

Deronda began to examine the clasps as if he had many points to observe

before he could come to a decision.

"They are only three guineas, sir," said the mother, encouragingly.

"First-rate workmanship, sir--worth twice the money; only I get 'em a

bargain from Cologne," said the son, parenthetically, from a distance.

Meanwhile two new customers entered, and the repeated call, "Addy!"

brought from the back of the shop a group that Deronda turned frankly

to stare at, feeling sure that the stare would be held complimentary.

The group consisted of a black-eyed young woman who carried a

black-eyed little one, its head already covered with black curls, and

deposited it on the counter, from which station it looked round with

even more than the usual intelligence of babies: also a robust boy of

six and a younger girl, both with black eyes and black-ringed

hair--looking more Semitic than their parents, as the puppy lions show

the spots of far-off progenitors. The young woman answering to

"Addy"--a sort of paroquet in a bright blue dress, with coral necklace

and earrings, her hair set up in a huge bush--looked as complacently

lively and unrefined as her husband; and by a certain difference from

the mother deepened in Deronda the unwelcome impression that the latter

was not so utterly common a Jewess as to exclude her being the mother

of Mirah. While that thought was glancing through his mind, the boy had

run forward into the shop with an energetic stamp, and setting himself

about four feet from Deronda, with his hands in the pockets of his

miniature knickerbockers, looked at him with a precocious air of

survey. Perhaps it was chiefly with a diplomatic design to linger and

ingratiate himself that Deronda patted the boy's head, saying--

"What is your name, sirrah?"

"Jacob Alexander Cohen," said the small man, with much ease and

distinctness.

"You are not named after your father, then?"

"No, after my grandfather; he sells knives and razors and scissors--my

grandfather does," said Jacob, wishing to impress the stranger with

that high connection. "He gave me this knife." Here a pocket-knife was

drawn forth, and the small fingers, both naturally and artificially

dark, opened two blades and a cork-screw with much quickness.

"Is not that a dangerous plaything?" said Deronda, turning to the

grandmother.

"\_He\_'ll never hurt himself, bless you!" said she, contemplating her

grandson with placid rapture.

"Have \_you\_ got a knife?" says Jacob, coming closer. His small voice

was hoarse in its glibness, as if it belonged to an aged commercial

soul, fatigued with bargaining through many generations.

"Yes. Do you want to see it?" said Deronda, taking a small penknife

from his waistcoat-pocket.

Jacob seized it immediately and retreated a little, holding the two

knives in his palms and bending over them in meditative comparison. By

this time the other clients were gone, and the whole family had

gathered to the spot, centering their attention on the marvelous Jacob:

the father, mother, and grandmother behind the counter, with baby held

staggering thereon, and the little girl in front leaning at her

brother's elbow to assist him in looking at the knives.

"Mine's the best," said Jacob, at last, returning Deronda's knife as if

he had been entertaining the idea of exchange and had rejected it.

Father and mother laughed aloud with delight. "You won't find Jacob

choosing the worst," said Mr. Cohen, winking, with much confidence in

the customer's admiration. Deronda, looking at the grandmother, who had

only an inward silent laugh, said--

"Are these the only grandchildren you have?"

"All. This is my only son," she answered in a communicative tone,

Deronda's glance and manner as usual conveying the impression of

sympathetic interest--which on this occasion answered his purpose well.

It seemed to come naturally enough that he should say--

"And you have no daughter?"

There was an instantaneous change in the mother's face. Her lips closed

more firmly, she looked down, swept her hands outward on the counter,

and finally turned her back on Deronda to examine some Indian

handkerchiefs that hung in pawn behind her. Her son gave a significant

glance, set up his shoulders an instant and just put his fingers to his

lips,--then said quickly, "I think you're a first-rate gentleman in the

city, sir, if I may be allowed to guess."

"No," said Deronda, with a preoccupied air, "I have nothing to do with

the city."

"That's a bad job. I thought you might be the young principal of a

first-rate firm," said Mr. Cohen, wishing to make amends for the check

on his customer's natural desire to know more of him and his. "But you

understand silver-work, I see."

"A little," said Deronda, taking up the clasps a moment and laying them

down again. That unwelcome bit of circumstantial evidence had made his

mind busy with a plan which was certainly more like acting than

anything he had been aware of in his own conduct before. But the bare

possibility that more knowledge might nullify the evidence now

overpowered the inclination to rest in uncertainty.

"To tell you the truth," he went on, "my errand is not so much to buy

as to borrow. I dare say you go into rather heavy transactions

occasionally."

"Well, sir, I've accommodated gentlemen of distinction--I'm proud to

say it. I wouldn't exchange my business with any in the world. There's

none more honorable, nor more charitable, nor more necessary for all

classes, from the good lady who wants a little of the ready for the

baker, to a gentleman like yourself, sir, who may want it for

amusement. I like my business, I like my street, and I like my shop. I

wouldn't have it a door further down. And I wouldn't be without a

pawn-shop, sir, to be the Lord Mayor. It puts you in connection with

the world at large. I say it's like the government revenue--it embraces

the brass as well as the gold of the country. And a man who doesn't get

money, sir, can't accommodate. Now, what can I do for \_you\_, sir?"

If an amiable self-satisfaction is the mark of earthly bliss, Solomon

in all his glory was a pitiable mortal compared with Mr. Cohen--clearly

one of those persons, who, being in excellent spirits about themselves,

are willing to cheer strangers by letting them know it. While he was

delivering himself with lively rapidity, he took the baby from his wife

and holding it on his arm presented his features to be explored by its

small fists. Deronda, not in a cheerful mood, was rashly pronouncing

this Ezra Cohen to be the most unpoetic Jew he had ever met with in

books or life: his phraseology was as little as possible like that of

the Old Testament: and no shadow of a suffering race distinguished his

vulgarity of soul from that of a prosperous, pink-and-white huckster of

the purest English lineage. It is naturally a Christian feeling that a

Jew ought not to be conceited. However, this was no reason for not

persevering in his project, and he answered at once in adventurous

ignorance of technicalities--

"I have a fine diamond ring to offer as security--not with me at this

moment, unfortunately, for I am not in the habit of wearing it. But I

will come again this evening and bring it with me. Fifty pounds at once

would be a convenience to me."

"Well, you know, this evening is the Sabbath, young gentleman," said

Cohen, "and I go to the \_Shool\_. The shop will be closed. But

accommodation is a work of charity; if you can't get here before, and

are any ways pressed--why, I'll look at your diamond. You're perhaps

from the West End--a longish drive?"

"Yes; and your Sabbath begins early at this season. I could be here by

five--will that do?" Deronda had not been without hope that by asking

to come on a Friday evening he might get a better opportunity of

observing points in the family character, and might even be able to put

some decisive question.

Cohen assented; but here the marvelous Jacob, whose \_physique\_

supported a precocity that would have shattered a Gentile of his years,

showed that he had been listening with much comprehension by saying,

"You are coming again. Have you got any more knives at home?"

"I think I have one," said Deronda, smiling down at him.

"Has it two blades and a hook--and a white handle like that?" said

Jacob, pointing to the waistcoat-pocket.

"I dare say it has?"

"Do you like a cork-screw?" said Jacob, exhibiting that article in his

own knife again, and looking up with serious inquiry.

"Yes," said Deronda, experimentally.

"Bring your knife, then, and we'll shwop," said Jacob, returning the

knife to his pocket, and stamping about with the sense that he had

concluded a good transaction.

The grandmother had now recovered her usual manners, and the whole

family watched Deronda radiantly when he caressingly lifted the little

girl, to whom he had not hitherto given attention, and seating her on

the counter, asked for her name also. She looked at him in silence, and

put her fingers to her gold earrings, which he did not seem to have

noticed.

"Adelaide Rebekah is her name," said her mother, proudly. "Speak to the

gentleman, lovey."

"Shlav'm Shabbes fyock on," said Adelaide Rebekah.

"Her Sabbath frock, she means," said the father, in explanation.

"She'll have her Sabbath frock on this evening."

"And will you let me see you in it, Adelaide?" said Deronda, with that

gentle intonation which came very easily to him.

"Say yes, lovey--yes, if you please, sir," said her mother, enchanted

with this handsome young gentleman, who appreciated remarkable children.

"And will you give me a kiss this evening?" said Deronda with a hand on

each of her little brown shoulders.

Adelaide Rebekah (her miniature crinoline and monumental features

corresponded with the combination of her names) immediately put up her

lips to pay the kiss in advance; whereupon her father rising in still

more glowing satisfaction with the general meritoriousness of his

circumstances, and with the stranger who was an admiring witness, said

cordially--

"You see there's somebody will be disappointed if you don't come this

evening, sir. You won't mind sitting down in our family place and

waiting a bit for me, if I'm not in when you come, sir? I'll stretch a

point to accommodate a gent of your sort. Bring the diamond, and I'll

see what I can do for you."

Deronda thus left the most favorable impression behind him, as a

preparation for more easy intercourse. But for his own part those

amenities had been carried on under the heaviest spirits. If these were

really Mirah's relatives, he could not imagine that even her fervid

filial piety could give the reunion with them any sweetness beyond such

as could be found in the strict fulfillment of a painful duty. What did

this vaunting brother need? And with the most favorable supposition

about the hypothetic mother, Deronda shrank from the image of a first

meeting between her and Mirah, and still more from the idea of Mirah's

domestication with this family. He took refuge in disbelief. To find an

Ezra Cohen when the name was running in your head was no more

extraordinary than to find a Josiah Smith under like circumstances; and

as to the coincidence about the daughter, it would probably turn out to

be a difference. If, however, further knowledge confirmed the more

undesirable conclusion, what would be wise expediency?--to try and

determine the best consequences by concealment, or to brave other

consequences for the sake of that openness which is the sweet fresh air

of our moral life.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

"Er ist geheissen

Israel. Ihn hat verwandelt

Hexenspruch in elnen Hund.

\* \* \* \* \*

Aber jeden Freitag Abend,

In der DÃ¤mmrungstunde, plÃ¶tzlich

Weicht der Zauber, und der Hund

Wird aufs Neu' ein menschlich Wesen."

--HEINE: \_Prinzessin Sabbaz\_.

When Deronda arrived at five o'clock, the shop was closed and the door

was opened for him by the Christian servant. When she showed him into

the room behind the shop he was surprised at the prettiness of the

scene. The house was old, and rather extensive at the back: probably

the large room he how entered was gloomy by daylight, but now it was

agreeably lit by a fine old brass lamp with seven oil-lights hanging

above the snow-white cloth spread on the central table, The ceiling and

walls were smoky, and all the surroundings were dark enough to throw

into relief the human figures, which had a Venetian glow of coloring.

The grandmother was arrayed in yellowish brown with a large gold chain

in lieu of the necklace, and by this light her yellow face with its

darkly-marked eyebrows and framing roll of gray hair looked as handsome

as was necessary for picturesque effect. Young Mrs. Cohen was clad in

red and black, with a string of large artificial pearls wound round and

round her neck: the baby lay asleep in the cradle under a scarlet

counterpane; Adelaide Rebekah was in braided amber, and Jacob Alexander

was in black velveteen with scarlet stockings. As the four pairs of

black eyes all glistened a welcome at Deronda, he was almost ashamed of

the supercilious dislike these happy-looking creatures had raised in

him by daylight. Nothing could be more cordial than the greeting he

received, and both mother and grandmother seemed to gather more dignity

from being seen on the private hearth, showing hospitality. He looked

round with some wonder at the old furniture: the oaken bureau and high

side-table must surely be mere matters of chance and economy, and not

due to the family taste. A large dish of blue and yellow ware was set

up on the side-table, and flanking it were two old silver vessels; in

front of them a large volume in darkened vellum with a deep-ribbed

back. In the corner at the farther end was an open door into an inner

room, where there was also a light.

Deronda took in these details by parenthetic glances while he met

Jacob's pressing solicitude about the knife. He had taken the pains to

buy one with the requisites of the hook and white handle, and produced

it on demand, saying,--

"Is that the sort of thing you want, Jacob?"

It was subjected to a severe scrutiny, the hook and blades were opened,

and the article of barter with the cork-screw was drawn forth for

comparison.

"Why do you like a hook better than a cork-screw?" said Deronda.

"'Caush I can get hold of things with a hook. A corkscrew won't go into

anything but corks. But it's better for you, you can draw corks."

"You agree to change, then?" said Deronda, observing that the

grandmother was listening with delight.

"What else have you got in your pockets?" said Jacob, with deliberative

seriousness.

"Hush, hush, Jacob, love," said the grandmother. And Deronda, mindful

of discipline, answered--

"I think I must not tell you that. Our business was with the knives."

Jacob looked up into his face scanningly for a moment or two, and

apparently arriving at his conclusions, said gravely--

"I'll shwop," handing the cork-screw knife to Deronda, who pocketed it

with corresponding gravity.

Immediately the small son of Shem ran off into the next room, whence

his voice was heard in rapid chat; and then ran back again--when,

seeing his father enter, he seized a little velveteen hat which lay on

a chair and put it on to approach him. Cohen kept on his own hat, and

took no notice of the visitor, but stood still while the two children

went up to him and clasped his knees: then he laid his hands on each in

turn and uttered his Hebrew benediction; whereupon the wife, who had

lately taken baby from the cradle, brought it up to her husband and

held it under his outstretched hands, to be blessed in its sleep. For

the moment, Deronda thought that this pawnbroker, proud of his

vocation, was not utterly prosaic.

"Well, sir, you found your welcome in my family, I think," said Cohen,

putting down his hat and becoming his former self. "And you've been

punctual. Nothing like a little stress here," he added, tapping his

side pocket as he sat down. "It's good for us all in our turn. I've

felt it when I've had to make up payments. I began to fit every sort of

box. It's bracing to the mind. Now then! let us see, let us see."

"That is the ring I spoke of," said Deronda, taking it from his finger.

"I believe it cost a hundred pounds. It will be a sufficient pledge to

you for fifty, I think. I shall probably redeem it in a month or so."

Cohen's glistening eyes seemed to get a little nearer together as he

met the ingenuous look of this crude young gentleman, who apparently

supposed that redemption was a satisfaction to pawnbrokers. He took the

ring, examined and returned it, saying with indifference, "Good, good.

We'll talk of it after our meal. Perhaps you'll join us, if you've no

objection. Me and my wife'll feel honored, and so will mother; won't

you, mother?"

The invitation was doubly echoed, and Deronda gladly accepted it. All

now turned and stood round the table. No dish was at present seen

except one covered with a napkin; and Mrs. Cohen had placed a china

bowl near her husband that he might wash his hands in it. But after

putting on his hat again, he paused, and called in a loud voice,

"Mordecai!"

Can this be part of the religious ceremony? thought Deronda, not

knowing what might be expected of the ancient hero. But he heard a

"Yes" from the next room, which made him look toward the open door; and

there, to his astonishment, he saw the figure of the enigmatic Jew whom

he had this morning met with in the book-shop. Their eyes met, and

Mordecai looked as much surprised as Deronda--neither in his surprise

making any sign of recognition. But when Mordecai was seating himself

at the end of the table, he just bent his head to the guest in a cold

and distant manner, as if the disappointment of the morning remained a

disagreeable association with this new acquaintance.

Cohen now washed his hands, pronouncing Hebrew words the while:

afterward, he took off the napkin covering the dish and disclosed the

two long flat loaves besprinkled with seed--the memorial of the manna

that fed the wandering forefathers--and breaking off small pieces gave

one to each of the family, including Adelaide Rebekah, who stood on the

chair with her whole length exhibited in her amber-colored garment, her

little Jewish nose lengthened by compression of the lip in the effort

to make a suitable appearance. Cohen then uttered another Hebrew

blessing, and after that, the male heads were uncovered, all seated

themselves, and the meal went on without any peculiarity that

interested Deronda. He was not very conscious of what dishes he ate

from; being preoccupied with a desire to turn the conversation in a way

that would enable him to ask some leading question; and also thinking

of Mordecai, between whom and himself there was an exchange of

fascinated, half furtive glances. Mordecai had no handsome Sabbath

garment, but instead of the threadbare rusty black coat of the morning

he wore one of light drab, which looked as if it had once been a

handsome loose paletot now shrunk with washing; and this change of

clothing gave a still stronger accentuation to his dark-haired, eager

face which might have belonged to the prophet Ezekiel--also probably

not modish in the eyes of contemporaries. It was noticeable that the

thin tails of the fried fish were given to Mordecai; and in general the

sort of share assigned to a poor relation--no doubt a "survival" of

prehistoric practice, not yet generally admitted to be superstitious.

Mr. Cohen kept up the conversation with much liveliness, introducing as

subjects always in taste (the Jew is proud of his loyalty) the Queen

and the Royal Family, the Emperor and Empress of the French--into which

both grandmother and wife entered with zest. Mrs. Cohen the younger

showed an accurate memory of distinguished birthdays; and the elder

assisted her son in informing the guest of what occurred when the

Emperor and Empress were in England and visited the city ten years

before.

"I dare say you know all about it better than we do, sir," said Cohen,

repeatedly, by way of preface to full information; and the interesting

statements were kept up in a trio.

"Our baby is named \_Eu\_genie Esther," said young Mrs. Cohen,

vivaciously.

"It's wonderful how the Emperor's like a cousin of mine in the face,"

said the grandmother; "it struck me like lightning when I caught sight

of him. I couldn't have thought it."

"Mother, and me went to see the Emperor and Empress at the Crystal

Palace," said Mr. Cohen. "I had a fine piece of work to take care of,

mother; she might have been squeezed flat--though she was pretty near

as lusty then as she is now. I said if I had a hundred mothers I'd

never take one of 'em to see the Emperor and Empress at the Crystal

Palace again; and you may think a man can't afford it when he's got but

one mother--not if he'd ever so big an insurance on her." He stroked

his mother's shoulder affectionately, and chuckled a little at his own

humor.

"Your mother has been a widow a long while, perhaps," said Deronda,

seizing his opportunity. "That has made your care for her the more

needful."

"Ay, ay, it's a good many \_yore-zeit\_ since I had to manage for her and

myself," said Cohen quickly. "I went early to it. It's that makes you a

sharp knife."

"What does--what makes a sharp knife, father?" said Jacob, his cheek

very much swollen with sweet-cake.

The father winked at his guest and said, "Having your nose put on the

grindstone."

Jacob slipped from his chair with the piece of sweet-cake in his hand,

and going close up to Mordecai, who had been totally silent hitherto,

said, "What does that mean--putting my nose to the grindstone?"

"It means that you are to bear being hurt without making a noise," said

Mordecai, turning his eyes benignantly on the small face close to his.

Jacob put the corner of the cake into Mordecai's mouth as an invitation

to bite, saying meanwhile, "I shan't though," and keeping his eyes on

the cake to observe how much of it went in this act of generosity.

Mordecai took a bite and smiled, evidently meaning to please the lad,

and the little incident made them both look more lovable. Deronda,

however, felt with some vexation that he had taken little by his

question.

"I fancy that is the right quarter for learning," said he, carrying on

the subject that he might have an excuse for addressing Mordecai, to

whom he turned and said, "You have been a great student, I imagine?"

"I have studied," was the quiet answer. "And you?--You know German by

the book you were buying."

"Yes, I have studied in Germany. Are you generally engaged in

bookselling?" said Deronda.

"No; I only go to Mr. Ram's shop every day to keep it while he goes to

meals," said Mordecai, who was now looking at Deronda with what seemed

a revival of his original interest: it seemed as if the face had some

attractive indication for him which now neutralized the former

disappointment. After a slight pause, he said, "Perhaps you know

Hebrew?"

"I am sorry to say, not at all."

Mordecai's countenance fell: he cast down his eyelids, looking at his

hands, which lay crossed before him, and said no more. Deronda had now

noticed more decisively than in their former interview a difficulty in

breathing, which he thought must be a sign of consumption.

"I've had something else to do than to get book-learning." said Mr.

Cohen,--"I've had to make myself knowing about useful things. I know

stones well,"--here he pointed to Deronda's ring. "I'm not afraid of

taking that ring of yours at my own valuation. But now," he added, with

a certain drop in his voice to a lower, more familiar nasal, "what do

you want for it?"

"Fifty or sixty pounds," Deronda answered, rather too carelessly.

Cohen paused a little, thrust his hands into his pockets, fixed on

Deronda a pair of glistening eyes that suggested a miraculous

guinea-pig, and said, "Couldn't do you that. Happy to oblige, but

couldn't go that lengths. Forty pound--say forty--I'll let you have

forty on it."

Deronda was aware that Mordecai had looked up again at the words

implying a monetary affair, and was now examining him again, while he

said, "Very well, I shall redeem it in a month or so."

"Good. I'll make you out the ticket by-and-by," said Cohen,

indifferently. Then he held up his finger as a sign that conversation

must be deferred. He, Mordecai and Jacob put on their hats, and Cohen

opened a thanksgiving, which was carried on by responses, till Mordecai

delivered himself alone at some length, in a solemn chanting tone, with

his chin slightly uplifted and his thin hands clasped easily before

him. Not only in his accent and tone, but in his freedom from the

self-consciousness which has reference to others' approbation, there

could hardly have been a stronger contrast to the Jew at the other end

of the table. It was an unaccountable conjunction--the presence among

these common, prosperous, shopkeeping types, of a man who, in an

emaciated threadbare condition, imposed a certain awe on Deronda, and

an embarrassment at not meeting his expectations.

No sooner had Mordecai finished his devotional strain, than rising,

with a slight bend of his head to the stranger, he walked back into his

room, and shut the door behind him.

"That seems to be rather a remarkable man," said Deronda, turning to

Cohen, who immediately set up his shoulders, put out his tongue

slightly, and tapped his own brow. It was clearly to be understood that

Mordecai did not come up to the standard of sanity which was set by Mr.

Cohen's view of men and things.

"Does he belong to your family?" said Deronda.

This idea appeared to be rather ludicrous to the ladies as well as to

Cohen, and the family interchanged looks of amusement.

"No, no," said Cohen. "Charity! charity! he worked for me, and when he

got weaker and weaker I took him in. He's an incumbrance; but he brings

a blessing down, and he teaches the boy. Besides, he does the repairing

at the watches and jewelry."

Deronda hardly abstained from smiling at this mixture of kindliness and

the desire to justify it in the light of a calculation; but his

willingness to speak further of Mordecai, whose character was made the

more enigmatically striking by these new details, was baffled. Mr.

Cohen immediately dismissed the subject by reverting to the

"accommodation," which was also an act of charity, and proceeded to

make out the ticket, get the forty pounds, and present them both in

exchange for the diamond ring. Deronda, feeling that it would be hardly

delicate to protract his visit beyond the settlement of the business

which was its pretext, had to take his leave, with no more decided

result than the advance of forty pounds and the pawn-ticket in his

breast-pocket, to make a reason for returning when he came up to town

after Christmas. He was resolved that he would then endeavor to gain a

little more insight into the character and history of Mordecai; from

whom also he might gather something decisive about the Cohens--for

example, the reason why it was forbidden to ask Mrs. Cohen the elder

whether she had a daughter.

BOOK V.--MORDECAI.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Were uneasiness of conscience measured by extent of crime, human

history had been different, and one should look to see the contrivers

of greedy wars and the mighty marauders of the money-market in one

troop of self-lacerating penitents with the meaner robber and

cut-purse and the murderer that doth his butchery in small with his own

hand. No doubt wickedness hath its rewards to distribute; but who so

wins in this devil's game must needs be baser, more cruel, more brutal

than the order of this planet will allow for the multitude born of

woman, the most of these carrying a form of conscience--a fear which

is the shadow of justice, a pity which is the shadow of love--that

hindereth from the prize of serene wickedness, itself difficult of

maintenance in our composite flesh.

On the twenty-ninth of December Deronda knew that the Grandcourts had

arrived at the Abbey, but he had had no glimpse of them before he went

to dress for dinner. There had been a splendid fall of snow, allowing

the party of children the rare pleasures of snow-balling and

snow-building, and in the Christmas holidays the Mallinger girls were

content with no amusement unless it were joined in and managed by

"cousin," as they had always called Deronda. After that outdoor

exertion he had been playing billiards, and thus the hours had passed

without his dwelling at all on the prospect of meeting Gwendolen at

dinner. Nevertheless that prospect was interesting to him; and when, a

little tired and heated with working at amusement, he went to his room

before the half-hour bell had rung, he began to think of it with some

speculation on the sort of influence her marriage with Grandcourt would

have on her, and on the probability that there would be some

discernible shades of change in her manner since he saw her at Diplow,

just as there had been since his first vision of her at Leubronn.

"I fancy there are some natures one could see growing or degenerating

every day, if one watched them," was his thought. "I suppose some of us

go on faster than others: and I am sure she is a creature who keeps

strong traces of anything that has once impressed her. That little

affair of the necklace, and the idea that somebody thought her gambling

wrong, had evidently bitten into her. But such impressibility leads

both ways: it may drive one to desperation as soon as to anything

better. And whatever fascinations Grandcourt may have for capricious

tastes--good heavens! who can believe that he would call out the tender

affections in daily companionship? One might be tempted to horsewhip

him for the sake of getting some show of passion into his face and

speech. I'm afraid she married him out of ambition--to escape poverty.

But why did she run out of his way at first? The poverty came after,

though. Poor thing! she may have been urged into it. How can one feel

anything else than pity for a young creature like that--full of unused

life--ignorantly rash--hanging all her blind expectations on that

remnant of a human being."

Doubtless the phrases which Deronda's meditation applied to the

bridegroom were the less complimentary for the excuses and pity in

which it clad the bride. His notion of Grandcourt as a "remnant" was

founded on no particular knowledge, but simply on the impression which

ordinary polite intercourse had given him that Grandcourt had worn out

all his natural healthy interest in things.

In general, one may be sure that whenever a marriage of any mark takes

place, male acquaintances are likely to pity the bride, female

acquaintances the bridegroom: each, it is thought, might have done

better; and especially where the bride is charming, young gentlemen on

the scene are apt to conclude that she can have no real attachment to a

fellow so uninteresting to themselves as her husband, but has married

him on other grounds. Who, under such circumstances, pities the

husband? Even his female friends are apt to think his position

retributive: he should have chosen some one else. But perhaps Deronda

may be excused that he did not prepare any pity for Grandcourt, who had

never struck acquaintances as likely to come out of his experiences

with more suffering than he inflicted; whereas, for Gwendolen, young,

headlong, eager for pleasure, fed with the flattery which makes a

lovely girl believe in her divine right to rule--how quickly might life

turn from expectancy to a bitter sense of the irremediable! After what

he had seen of her he must have had rather dull feelings not to have

looked forward with some interest to her entrance into the room. Still,

since the honeymoon was already three weeks in the distance, and

Gwendolen had been enthroned, not only at Ryeland's, but at Diplow, she

was likely to have composed her countenance with suitable manifestation

or concealment, not being one who would indulge the curious by a

helpless exposure of her feelings.

A various party had been invited to meet the new couple; the old

aristocracy was represented by Lord and Lady Pentreath; the old gentry

by young Mr. and Mrs. Fitzadam of the Worcestershire branch of the

Fitzadams; politics and the public good, as specialized in the cider

interest, by Mr. Fenn, member for West Orchards, accompanied by his two

daughters; Lady Mallinger's family, by her brother, Mr. Raymond, and

his wife; the useful bachelor element by Mr. Sinker, the eminent

counsel, and by Mr. Vandernoodt, whose acquaintance Sir Hugo had found

pleasant enough at Leubronn to be adopted in England.

All had assembled in the drawing-room before the new couple appeared.

Meanwhile, the time was being passed chiefly in noticing the

children--various little Raymonds, nephews and nieces of Lady

Mallinger's with her own three girls, who were always allowed to appear

at this hour. The scene was really delightful--enlarged by full-length

portraits with deep backgrounds, inserted in the cedar

paneling--surmounted by a ceiling that glowed with the rich colors of

the coats of arms ranged between the sockets--illuminated almost as

much by the red fire of oak-boughs as by the pale wax-lights--stilled

by the deep-piled carpet and by the high English breeding that subdues

all voices; while the mixture of ages, from the white-haired Lord and

Lady Pentreath to the four-year-old Edgar Raymond, gave a varied charm

to the living groups. Lady Mallinger, with fair matronly roundness and

mildly prominent blue eyes, moved about in her black velvet, carrying a

tiny white dog on her arm as a sort of finish to her costume; the

children were scattered among the ladies, while most of the gentlemen

were standing rather aloof, conversing with that very moderate vivacity

observable during the long minutes before dinner. Deronda was a little

out of the circle in a dialogue fixed upon him by Mr. Vandernoodt, a

man of the best Dutch blood imported at the revolution: for the rest,

one of those commodious persons in society who are nothing particular

themselves, but are understood to be acquainted with the best in every

department; close-clipped, pale-eyed, \_nonchalant\_, as good a foil as

could well be found to the intense coloring and vivid gravity of

Deronda.

He was talking of the bride and bridegroom, whose appearance was being

waited for. Mr. Vandernoodt was an industrious gleaner of personal

details, and could probably tell everything about a great philosopher

or physicist except his theories or discoveries; he was now implying

that he had learned many facts about Grandcourt since meeting him at

Leubronn.

"Men who have seen a good deal of life don't always end by choosing

their wives so well. He has had rather an anecdotic history--gone

rather deep into pleasures, I fancy, lazy as he is. But, of course, you

know all about him."

"No, really," said Deronda, in an indifferent tone. "I know little more

of him than that he is Sir Hugo's nephew."

But now the door opened and deferred any satisfaction of Mr.

Vandernoodt's communicativeness.

The scene was one to set off any figure of distinction that entered on

it, and certainly when Mr. and Mrs. Grandcourt entered, no beholder

could deny that their figures had distinction. The bridegroom had

neither more nor less easy perfection of costume, neither more nor less

well-cut impassibility of face, than before his marriage. It was to be

supposed of him that he would put up with nothing less than the best in

outward equipment, wife included; and the bride was what he might have

been expected to choose. "By George, I think she's handsomer, if

anything!" said Mr. Vandernoodt. And Deronda was of the same opinion,

but he said nothing. The white silk and diamonds--it may seem strange,

but she did wear diamonds on her neck, in her ears, in her hair--might

have something to do with the new imposingness of her beauty, which

flashed on him as more unquestionable if not more thoroughly

satisfactory than when he had first seen her at the gaming-table. Some

faces which are peculiar in their beauty are like original works of

art: for the first time they are almost always met with question. But

in seeing Gwendolen at Diplow, Deronda had discerned in her more than

he had expected of that tender appealing charm which we call womanly.

Was there any new change since then? He distrusted his impressions; but

as he saw her receiving greetings with what seemed a proud cold

quietude and a superficial smile, there seemed to be at work within her

the same demonic force that had possessed her when she took him in her

resolute glance and turned away a loser from the gaming-table. There

was no time for more of a conclusion--no time even for him to give his

greeting before the summons to dinner.

He sat not far from opposite to her at table, and could sometimes hear

what she said in answer to Sir Hugo, who was at his liveliest in

conversation with her; but though he looked toward her with the

intention of bowing, she gave him no opportunity of doing so for some

time. At last Sir Hugo, who might have imagined that they had already

spoken to each other, said, "Deronda, you will like to hear what Mrs.

Grandcourt tells me about your favorite Klesmer."

Gwendolen's eyelids had been lowered, and Deronda, already looking at

her, thought he discovered a quivering reluctance as she was obliged to

raise them and return his unembarrassed bow and smile, her own smile

being one of the lip merely. It was but an instant, and Sir Hugo

continued without pause--

"The Arrowpoints have condoned the marriage, and he is spending the

Christmas with his bride at Quetcham."

"I suppose he will be glad of it for the sake of his wife, else I dare

say he would not have minded keeping at a distance," said Deronda.

"It's a sort of troubadour story," said Lady Pentreath, an easy,

deep-voiced old lady; "I'm glad to find a little romance left among us.

I think our young people now are getting too worldly wise."

"It shows the Arrowpoints' good sense, however, to have adopted the

affair, after the fuss in the paper," said Sir Hugo. "And disowning

your own child because of a \_mÃ©salliance\_ is something like disowning

your one eye: everybody knows it's yours, and you have no other to make

an appearance with."

"As to \_mÃ©salliance\_, there's no blood on any side," said Lady

Pentreath. "Old Admiral Arrowpoint was one of Nelson's men, you know--a

doctor's son. And we all know how the mother's money came."

"If they were any \_mÃ©salliance\_ in the case, I should say it was on

Klesmer's side," said Deronda.

"Ah, you think it is a case of the immortal marrying the mortal. What

is your opinion?" said Sir Hugo, looking at Gwendolen.

"I have no doubt that Herr Klesmer thinks himself immortal. But I dare

say his wife will burn as much incense before him as he requires," said

Gwendolen. She had recovered any composure that she might have lost.

"Don't you approve of a wife burning incense before her husband?" said

Sir Hugo, with an air of jocoseness.

"Oh, yes," said Gwendolen, "if it were only to make others believe in

him." She paused a moment and then said with more gayety, "When Herr

Klesmer admires his own genius, it will take off some of the absurdity

if his wife says Amen."

"Klesmer is no favorite of yours, I see," said Sir Hugo.

"I think very highly of him, I assure you," said Gwendolen. "His genius

is quite above my judgment, and I know him to be exceedingly generous."

She spoke with the sudden seriousness which is often meant to correct

an unfair or indiscreet sally, having a bitterness against Klesmer in

her secret soul which she knew herself unable to justify. Deronda was

wondering what he should have thought of her if he had never heard of

her before: probably that she put on a little hardness and defiance by

way of concealing some painful consciousness--if, indeed, he could

imagine her manners otherwise than in the light of his suspicion. But

why did she not recognize him with more friendliness?

Sir Hugo, by way of changing the subject, said to her, "Is not this a

beautiful room? It was part of the refectory of the Abbey. There was a

division made by those pillars and the three arches, and afterward they

were built up. Else it was half as large again originally. There used

to be rows of Benedictines sitting where we are sitting. Suppose we

were suddenly to see the lights burning low and the ghosts of the old

monks rising behind all our chairs!"

"Please don't!" said Gwendolen, with a playful shudder. "It is very

nice to come after ancestors and monks, but they should know their

places and keep underground. I should be rather frightened to go about

this house all alone. I suppose the old generations must be angry with

us because we have altered things so much."

"Oh, the ghosts must be of all political parties," said Sir Hugo. "And

those fellows who wanted to change things while they lived and couldn't

do it must be on our side. But if you would not like to go over the

house alone, you will like to go in company, I hope. You and Grandcourt

ought to see it all. And we will ask Deronda to go round with us. He is

more learned about it than I am." The baronet was in the most

complaisant of humors.

Gwendolen stole a glance at Deronda, who must have heard what Sir Hugo

said, for he had his face turned toward them helping himself to an

\_entrÃ©e\_; but he looked as impassive as a picture. At the notion of

Deronda's showing her and Grandcourt the place which was to be theirs,

and which she with painful emphasis remembered might have been his

(perhaps, if others had acted differently), certain thoughts had rushed

in--thoughts repeated within her, but now returning on an occasion

embarrassingly new; and was conscious of something furtive and awkward

in her glance which Sir Hugo must have noticed. With her usual

readiness of resource against betrayal, she said, playfully, "You don't

know how much I am afraid of Mr. Deronda."

"How's that? Because you think him too learned?" said Sir Hugo, whom

the peculiarity of her glance had not escaped.

"No. It is ever since I first saw him at Leubronn. Because when he came

to look on at the roulette-table, I began to lose. He cast an evil eye

on my play. He didn't approve it. He has told me so. And now whatever I

do before him, I am afraid he will cast an evil eye upon it."

"Gad! I'm rather afraid of him myself when he doesn't approve," said

Sir Hugo, glancing at Deronda; and then turning his face toward

Gwendolen, he said less audibly, "I don't think ladies generally object

to have his eyes upon them." The baronet's small chronic complaint of

facetiousness was at this moment almost as annoying to Gwendolen as it

often was to Deronda.

"I object to any eyes that are critical," she said, in a cool, high

voice, with a turn of her neck. "Are there many of these old rooms left

in the Abbey?"

"Not many. There is a fine cloistered court with a long gallery above

it. But the finest bit of all is turned into stables. It is part of the

old church. When I improved the place I made the most of every other

bit; but it was out of my reach to change the stables, so the horses

have the benefit of the fine old choir. You must go and see it."

"I shall like to see the horses as well as the building," said

Gwendolen.

"Oh, I have no stud to speak of. Grandcourt will look with contempt at

my horses," said Sir Hugo. "I've given up hunting, and go on in a

jog-trot way, as becomes an old gentlemen with daughters. The fact is,

I went in for doing too much at this place. We all lived at Diplow for

two years while the alterations were going on: Do you like Diplow?"

"Not particularly," said Gwendolen, with indifference. One would have

thought that the young lady had all her life had more family seats than

she cared to go to.

"Ah! it will not do after Ryelands," said Sir Hugo, well pleased.

"Grandcourt, I know, took it for the sake of the hunting. But he found

something so much better there," added the baronet, lowering his voice,

"that he might well prefer it to any other place in the world."

"It has one attraction for me," said Gwendolen, passing over this

compliment with a chill smile, "that it is within reach of Offendene."

"I understand that," said Sir Hugo, and then let the subject drop.

What amiable baronet can escape the effect of a strong desire for a

particular possession? Sir Hugo would have been glad that Grandcourt,

with or without reason, should prefer any other place to Diplow; but

inasmuch as in the pure process of wishing we can always make the

conditions of our gratification benevolent, he did wish that

Grandcourt's convenient disgust for Diplow should not be associated

with his marriage with this very charming bride. Gwendolen was much to

the baronet's taste, but, as he observed afterward to Lady Mallinger,

he should never have taken her for a young girl who had married beyond

her expectations.

Deronda had not heard much of this conversation, having given his

attention elsewhere, but the glimpses he had of Gwendolen's manner

deepened the impression that it had something newly artificial.

Later, in the drawing-room, Deronda, at somebody's request, sat down to

the piano and sang. Afterward, Mrs. Raymond took his place; and on

rising he observed that Gwendolen had left her seat, and had come to

this end of the room, as if to listen more fully, but was now standing

with her back to every one, apparently contemplating a fine cowled head

carved in ivory which hung over a small table. He longed to go to her

and speak. Why should he not obey such an impulse, as he would have

done toward any other lady in the room? Yet he hesitated some moments,

observing the graceful lines of her back, but not moving.

If you have any reason for not indulging a wish to speak to a fair

woman, it is a bad plan to look long at her back: the wish to see what

it screens becomes the stronger. There may be a very sweet smile on the

other side. Deronda ended by going to the end of the small table, at

right angles to Gwendolen's position, but before he could speak she had

turned on him no smile, but such an appealing look of sadness, so

utterly different from the chill effort of her recognition at table,

that his speech was checked. For what was an appreciative space of time

to both, though the observation of others could not have measured it,

they looked at each other--she seeming to take the deep rest of

confession, he with an answering depth of sympathy that neutralized all

other feelings.

"Will you not join in the music?" he said by way of meeting the

necessity for speech.

That her look of confession had been involuntary was shown by that just

perceptible shake and change of countenance with which she roused

herself to reply calmly, "I join in it by listening. I am fond of

music."

"Are you not a musician?"

"I have given a great deal of time to music. But I have not talent

enough to make it worth while. I shall never sing again."

"But if you are fond of music, it will always be worth while in

private, for your own delight. I make it a virtue to be content with my

middlingness," said Deronda, smiling; "it is always pardonable, so that

one does not ask others to take it for superiority."

"I cannot imitate you," said Gwendolen, recovering her tone of

artificial vivacity. "To be middling with me is another phrase for

being dull. And the worst fault I have to find with the world is, that

it is dull. Do you know, I am going to justify gambling in spite of

you. It is a refuge from dullness."

"I don't admit the justification," said Deronda. "I think what we call

the dullness of things is a disease in ourselves. Else how can any one

find an intense interest in life? And many do."

"Ah, I see! The fault I find in the world is my own fault," said

Gwendolen, smiling at him. Then after a moment, looking up at the ivory

again, she said, "Do \_you\_ never find fault with the world or with

others?"

"Oh, yes. When I am in a grumbling mood."

"And hate people? Confess you hate them when they stand in your

way--when their gain is your loss? That is your own phrase, you know."

"We are often standing in each other's way when we can't help it. I

think it is stupid to hate people on that ground."

"But if they injure you and could have helped it?" said Gwendolen with

a hard intensity unaccountable in incidental talk like this.

Deronda wondered at her choice of subjects. A painful impression

arrested his answer a moment, but at last he said, with a graver,

deeper intonation, "Why, then, after all, I prefer my place to theirs."

"There I believe you are right," said Gwendolen, with a sudden little

laugh, and turned to join the group at the piano.

Deronda looked around for Grandcourt, wondering whether he followed his

bride's movements with any attention; but it was rather undiscerning to

him to suppose that he could find out the fact. Grandcourt had a

delusive mood of observing whatever had an interest for him, which

could be surpassed by no sleepy-eyed animal on the watch for prey. At

that moment he was plunged in the depth of an easy chair, being talked

to by Mr. Vandernoodt, who apparently thought the acquaintance of such

a bridegroom worth cultivating; and an incautious person might have

supposed it safe to telegraph secrets in front of him, the common

prejudice being that your quick observer is one whose eyes have quick

movements. Not at all. If you want a respectable witness who will see

nothing inconvenient, choose a vivacious gentleman, very much on the

alert, with two eyes wide open, a glass in one of them, and an entire

impartiality as to the purpose of looking. If Grandcourt cared to keep

any one under his power he saw them out of the corners of his long

narrow eyes, and if they went behind him he had a constructive process

by which he knew what they were doing there. He knew perfectly well

where his wife was, and how she was behaving. Was he going to be a

jealous husband? Deronda imagined that to be likely; but his

imagination was as much astray about Grandcourt as it would have been

about an unexplored continent where all the species were peculiar. He

did not conceive that he himself was a likely subject of jealousy, or

that he should give any pretext for it; but the suspicion that a wife

is not happy naturally leads one to speculate on the husband's private

deportment; and Deronda found himself after one o'clock in the morning

in the rather ludicrous position of sitting up severely holding a

Hebrew grammar in his hands (for somehow, in deference to Mordecai, he

had begun to study Hebrew), with the consciousness that he had been in

that attitude nearly an hour, and had thought of nothing but Gwendolen

and her husband. To be an unusual young man means for the most part to

get a difficult mastery over the usual, which is often like the sprite

of ill-luck you pack up your goods to escape from, and see grinning at

you from the top of your luggage van. The peculiarities of Deronda's

nature had been acutely touched by the brief incident and words which

made the history of his intercourse with Gwendolen; and this evening's

slight addition had given them an importunate recurrence. It was not

vanity--it was ready sympathy that had made him alive to a certain

appealingness in her behavior toward him; and the difficulty with which

she had seemed to raise her eyes to bow to him, in the first instance,

was to be interpreted now by that unmistakable look of involuntary

confidence which she had afterward turned on him under the

consciousness of his approach.

"What is the use of it all?" thought Deronda, as he threw down his

grammar, and began to undress. "I can't do anything to help her--nobody

can, if she has found out her mistake already. And it seems to me that

she has a dreary lack of the ideas that might help her. Strange and

piteous to human flesh like that might be, wrapped round with fine

raiment, her ears pierced for gems, her head held loftily, her mouth

all smiling pretence, the poor soul within her sitting in sick distaste

of all things! But what do I know of her? There may be a demon in her

to match the worst husband, for what I can tell. She was clearly an

ill-educated, worldly girl: perhaps she is a coquette."

This last reflection, not much believed in, was a self-administered

dose of caution, prompted partly by Sir Hugo's much-contemned joking on

the subject of flirtation. Deronda resolved not to volunteer any

\_tete-Ã -tete\_ with Gwendolen during the days of her stay at the Abbey;

and he was capable of keeping a resolve in spite of much inclination to

the contrary.

But a man cannot resolve about a woman's actions, least of all about

those of a woman like Gwendolen, in whose nature there was a

combination of proud reserve with rashness, of perilously poised terror

with defiance, which might alternately flatter and disappoint control.

Few words could less represent her than "coquette." She had native love

of homage, and belief in her own power; but no cold artifice for the

sake of enslaving. And the poor thing's belief in her power, with her

other dreams before marriage, had often to be thrust aside now like the

toys of a sick child, which it looks at with dull eyes, and has no

heart to play with, however it may try.

The next day at lunch Sir Hugo said to her, "The thaw has gone on like

magic, and it's so pleasant out of doors just now--shall we go and see

the stables and the other odd bits about the place?"

"Yes, pray," said Gwendolen. "You will like to see the stables,

Henleigh?" she added, looking at her husband.

"Uncommonly," said Grandcourt, with an indifference which seemed to

give irony to the word, as he returned her look. It was the first time

Deronda had seen them speak to each other since their arrival, and he

thought their exchange of looks as cold or official as if it had been a

ceremony to keep up a charter. Still, the English fondness for reserve

will account for much negation; and Grandcourt's manners with an extra

veil of reserve over them might be expected to present the extreme type

of the national taste.

"Who else is inclined to make the tour of the house and premises?" said

Sir Hugo. "The ladies must muffle themselves; there is only just about

time to do it well before sunset. You will go, Dan, won't you?"

"Oh, yes," said Deronda, carelessly, knowing that Sir Hugo would think

any excuse disobliging.

"All meet in the library, then, when they are ready--say in half an

hour," said the baronet. Gwendolen made herself ready with wonderful

quickness, and in ten minutes came down into the library in her sables,

plume, and little thick boots. As soon as she entered the room she was

aware that some one else was there: it was precisely what she had hoped

for. Deronda was standing with his back toward her at the far end of

the room, and was looking over a newspaper. How could little thick

boots make any noise on an Axminster carpet? And to cough would have

seemed an intended signaling which her pride could not condescend to;

also, she felt bashful about walking up to him and letting him know

that she was there, though it was her hunger to speak to him which had

set her imagination on constructing this chance of finding him, and had

made her hurry down, as birds hover near the water which they dare not

drink. Always uneasily dubious about his opinion of her, she felt a

peculiar anxiety to-day, lest he might think of her with contempt, as

one triumphantly conscious of being Grandcourt's wife, the future lady

of this domain. It was her habitual effort now to magnify the

satisfactions of her pride, on which she nourished her strength; but

somehow Deronda's being there disturbed them all. There was not the

faintest touch of coquetry in the attitude of her mind toward him: he

was unique to her among men, because he had impressed her as being not

her admirer but her superior: in some mysterious way he was becoming a

part of her conscience, as one woman whose nature is an object of

reverential belief may become a new conscience to a man.

And now he would not look round and find out that she was there! The

paper crackled in his hand, his head rose and sank, exploring those

stupid columns, and he was evidently stroking his beard; as if this

world were a very easy affair to her. Of course all the rest of the

company would soon be down, and the opportunity of her saying something

to efface her flippancy of the evening before, would be quite gone. She

felt sick with irritation--so fast do young creatures like her absorb

misery through invisible suckers of their own fancies--and her face had

gathered that peculiar expression which comes with a mortification to

which tears are forbidden.

At last he threw down the paper and turned round.

"Oh, you are there already," he said, coming forward a step or two: "I

must go and put on my coat."

He turned aside and walked out of the room. This was behaving quite

badly. Mere politeness would have made him stay to exchange some words

before leaving her alone. It was true that Grandcourt came in with Sir

Hugo immediately after, so that the words must have been too few to be

worth anything. As it was, they saw him walking from the library door.

"A--you look rather ill," said Grandcourt, going straight up to her,

standing in front of her, and looking into her eyes. "Do you feel equal

to the walk?"

"Yes, I shall like it," said Gwendolen, without the slightest movement

except this of the lips.

"We could put off going over the house, you know, and only go out of

doors," said Sir Hugo, kindly, while Grandcourt turned aside.

"Oh, dear no!" said Gwendolen, speaking with determination; "let us put

off nothing. I want a long walk."

The rest of the walking party--two ladies and two gentlemen besides

Deronda--had now assembled; and Gwendolen rallying, went with due

cheerfulness by the side of Sir Hugo, paying apparently an equal

attention to the commentaries Deronda was called upon to give on the

various architectural fragments, to Sir Hugo's reasons for not

attempting to remedy the mixture of the undisguised modern with the

antique--which in his opinion only made the place the more truly

historical. On their way to the buttery and kitchen they took the

outside of the house and paused before a beautiful pointed doorway,

which was the only old remnant in the east front.

"Well, now, to my mind," said Sir Hugo, "that is more interesting

standing as it is in the middle of what is frankly four centuries

later, than if the whole front had been dressed up in a pretense of the

thirteenth century. Additions ought to smack of the time when they are

made and carry the stamp of their period. I wouldn't destroy any old

bits, but that notion of reproducing the old is a mistake, I think. At

least, if a man likes to do it he must pay for his whistle. Besides,

where are you to stop along that road--making loopholes where you don't

want to peep, and so on? You may as well ask me to wear out the stones

with kneeling; eh, Grandcourt?"

"A confounded nuisance," drawled Grandcourt. "I hate fellows wanting to

howl litanies--acting the greatest bores that have ever existed."

"Well, yes, that's what their romanticism must come to," said Sir Hugo,

in a tone of confidential assent--"that is if they carry it out

logically."

"I think that way of arguing against a course because it may be ridden

down to an absurdity would soon bring life to a standstill," said

Deronda. "It is not the logic of human action, but of a roasting-jack,

that must go on to the last turn when it has been once wound up. We can

do nothing safely without some judgment as to where we are to stop."

"I find the rule of the pocket the best guide," said Sir Hugo,

laughingly. "And as for most of your new-old building, you had need to

hire men to scratch and chip it all over artistically to give it an

elderly-looking surface; which at the present rate of labor would not

answer."

"Do you want to keep up the old fashions, then, Mr. Deronda?" said

Gwendolen, taking advantage of the freedom of grouping to fall back a

little, while Sir Hugo and Grandcourt went on.

"Some of them. I don't see why we should not use our choice there as we

do elsewhere--or why either age or novelty by itself is an argument for

or against. To delight in doing things because our fathers did them is

good if it shuts out nothing better; it enlarges the range of

affection--and affection is the broadest basis of good in life."

"Do you think so?" said Gwendolen with a little surprise. "I should

have thought you cared most about ideas, knowledge, wisdom, and all

that."

"But to care about \_them\_ is a sort of affection," said Deronda,

smiling at her sudden \_naÃ¯vetÃ©\_. "Call it attachment; interest, willing

to bear a great deal for the sake of being with them and saving them

from injury. Of course, it makes a difference if the objects of

interest are human beings; but generally in all deep affections the

objects are a mixture--half persons and half ideas--sentiments and

affections flow in together."

"I wonder whether I understand that," said Gwendolen, putting up her

chin in her old saucy manner. "I believe I am not very affectionate;

perhaps you mean to tell me, that is the reason why I don't see much

good in life."

"No, I did \_not\_ mean to tell you that; but I admit that I should think

it true if I believed what you say of yourself," said Deronda, gravely.

Here Sir Hugo and Grandcourt turned round and paused.

"I never can get Mr. Deronda to pay me a compliment," said Gwendolen.

"I have quite a curiosity to see whether a little flattery can be

extracted from him."

"Ah!" said Sir Hugo, glancing at Deronda, "the fact is, it is useless

to flatter a bride. We give it up in despair. She has been so fed on

sweet speeches that every thing we say seems tasteless."

"Quite true," said Gwendolen, bending her head and smiling. "Mr.

Grandcourt won me by neatly-turned compliments. If there had been one

word out of place it would have been fatal."

"Do you hear that?" said Sir Hugo, looking at the husband.

"Yes," said Grandcourt, without change of countenance. "It's a deucedly

hard thing to keep up, though."

All this seemed to Sir Hugo a natural playfulness between such a

husband and wife; but Deronda wondered at the misleading alternations

in Gwendolen's manner, which at one moment seemed to excite sympathy by

childlike indiscretion, at another to repel it by proud concealment. He

tried to keep out of her way by devoting himself to Miss Juliet Fenn, a

young lady whose profile had been so unfavorably decided by

circumstances over which she had no control, that Gwendolen some months

ago had felt it impossible to be jealous of her. Nevertheless, when

they were seeing the kitchen--a part of the original building in

perfect preservation--the depth of shadow in the niches of the

stone-walls and groined vault, the play of light from the huge glowing

fire on polished tin, brass, and copper, the fine resonance that came

with every sound of voice or metal, were all spoiled for Gwendolen, and

Sir Hugo's speech about them was made rather importunate, because

Deronda was discoursing to the other ladies and kept at a distance from

her. It did not signify that the other gentlemen took the opportunity

of being near her: of what use in the world was their admiration while

she had an uneasy sense that there was some standard in Deronda's mind

which measured her into littleness? Mr. Vandernoodt, who had the mania

of always describing one thing while you were looking at another, was

quite intolerable with his insistence on Lord Blough's kitchen, which

he had seen in the north.

"Pray don't ask us to see two kitchens at once. It makes the heat

double. I must really go out of it," she cried at last, marching

resolutely into the open air, and leaving the others in the rear.

Grandcourt was already out, and as she joined him, he said--

"I wondered how long you meant to stay in that damned place"--one of

the freedoms he had assumed as a husband being the use of his strongest

epithets. Gwendolen, turning to see the rest of the party approach,

said--

"It was certainly rather too warm in one's wraps."

They walked on the gravel across a green court, where the snow still

lay in islets on the grass, and in masses on the boughs of the great

cedar and the crenelated coping of the stone walls, and then into a

larger court, where there was another cedar, to find the beautiful

choir long ago turned into stables, in the first instance perhaps after

an impromptu fashion by troopers, who had a pious satisfaction in

insulting the priests of Baal and the images of Ashtoreth, the queen of

heaven. The exterior--its west end, save for the stable door, walled in

with brick and covered with ivy--was much defaced, maimed of finial and

gurgoyle, the friable limestone broken and fretted, and lending its

soft gray to a powdery dark lichen; the long windows, too, were filled

in with brick as far as the springing of the arches, the broad

clerestory windows with wire or ventilating blinds. With the low wintry

afternoon sun upon it, sending shadows from the cedar boughs, and

lighting up the touches of snow remaining on every ledge, it had still

a scarcely disturbed aspect of antique solemnity, which gave the scene

in the interior rather a startling effect; though, ecclesiastical or

reverential indignation apart, the eyes could hardly help dwelling with

pleasure on its piquant picturesqueness. Each finely-arched chapel was

turned into a stall, where in the dusty glazing of the windows there

still gleamed patches of crimson, orange, blue, and palest violet; for

the rest, the choir had been gutted, the floor leveled, paved, and

drained according to the most approved fashion, and a line of loose

boxes erected in the middle: a soft light fell from the upper windows

on sleek brown or gray flanks and haunches; on mild equine faces

looking out with active nostrils over the varnished brown boarding; on

the hay hanging from racks where the saints once looked down from the

altar-pieces, and on the pale golden straw scattered or in heaps; on a

little white-and-liver-colored spaniel making his bed on the back of an

elderly hackney, and on four ancient angels, still showing signs of

devotion like mutilated martyrs--while over all, the grand pointed

roof, untouched by reforming wash, showed its lines and colors

mysteriously through veiling shadow and cobweb, and a hoof now and then

striking against the boards seemed to fill the vault with thunder,

while outside there was the answering bay of the blood-hounds.

"Oh, this is glorious!" Gwendolen burst forth, in forgetfulness of

everything but the immediate impression: there had been a little

intoxication for her in the grand spaces of courts and building, and

the fact of her being an important person among them. "This \_is\_

glorious! Only I wish there were a horse in every one of the boxes. I

would ten times rather have these stables than those at Diplow."

But she had no sooner said this than some consciousness arrested her,

and involuntarily she turned her eyes toward Deronda, who oddly enough

had taken off his felt hat and stood holding it before him as if they

had entered a room or an actual church. He, like others, happened to be

looking at her, and their eyes met--to her intense vexation, for it

seemed to her that by looking at him she had betrayed the reference of

her thoughts, and she felt herself blushing: she exaggerated the

impression that even Sir Hugo as well as Deronda would have of her bad

taste in referring to the possession of anything at the Abbey: as for

Deronda, she had probably made him despise her. Her annoyance at what

she imagined to be the obviousness of her confusion robbed her of her

usual facility in carrying it off by playful speech, and turning up her

face to look at the roof, she wheeled away in that attitude. If any had

noticed her blush as significant, they had certainly not interpreted it

by the secret windings and recesses of her feeling. A blush is no

language: only a dubious flag-signal which may mean either of two

contradictories. Deronda alone had a faint guess at some part of her

feeling; but while he was observing her he was himself under

observation.

"Do you take off your hat to horses?" said Grandcourt, with a slight

sneer.

"Why not?" said Deronda, covering himself. He had really taken off the

hat automatically, and if he had been an ugly man might doubtless have

done so with impunity; ugliness having naturally the air of involuntary

exposure, and beauty, of display.

Gwendolen's confusion was soon merged in the survey of the horses,

which Grandcourt politely abstained from appraising, languidly

assenting to Sir Hugo's alternate depreciation and eulogy of the same

animal, as one that he should not have bought when he was younger, and

piqued himself on his horses, but yet one that had better qualities

than many more expensive brutes.

"The fact is, stables dive deeper and deeper into the pocket nowadays,

and I am very glad to have got rid of that \_dÃ©mangeaison\_," said Sir

Hugo, as they were coming out.

"What is a man to do, though?" said Grandcourt. "He must ride. I don't

see what else there is to do. And I don't call it riding to sit astride

a set of brutes with every deformity under the sun."

This delicate diplomatic way of characterizing Sir Hugo's stud did not

require direct notice; and the baronet, feeling that the conversation

had worn rather thin, said to the party generally, "Now we are going to

see the cloister--the finest bit of all--in perfect preservation; the

monks might have been walking there yesterday."

But Gwendolen had lingered behind to look at the kenneled blood-hounds,

perhaps because she felt a little dispirited; and Grandcourt waited for

her.

"You had better take my arm," he said, in his low tone of command; and

she took it.

"It's a great bore being dragged about in this way, and no cigar," said

Grandcourt.

"I thought you would like it."

"Like it!--one eternal chatter. And encouraging those ugly

girls--inviting one to meet such monsters. How that \_fat\_ Deronda can

bear looking at her----"

"Why do you call him \_fat\_? Do you object to him so much?"

"Object? no. What do I care about his being a \_fat\_? It's of no

consequence to me. I'll invite him to Diplow again if you like."

"I don't think he would come. He is too clever and learned to care

about \_us\_," said Gwendolen, thinking it useful for her husband to be

told (privately) that it was possible for him to be looked down upon.

"I never saw that make much difference in a man. Either he is a

gentleman, or he is not," said Grandcourt.

That a new husband and wife should snatch, a moment's \_tete-Ã -tete\_ was

what could be understood and indulged; and the rest of the party left

them in the rear till, re-entering the garden, they all paused in that

cloistered court where, among the falling rose-petals thirteen years

before, we saw a boy becoming acquainted with his first sorrow. This

cloister was built of a harder stone than the church, and had been in

greater safety from the wearing weather. It was a rare example of a

northern cloister with arched and pillard openings not intended for

glazing, and the delicately-wrought foliage of the capitals seemed

still to carry the very touches of the chisel. Gwendolen had dropped

her husband's arm and joined the other ladies, to whom Deronda was

noticing the delicate sense which had combined freedom with accuracy in

the imitation of natural forms.

"I wonder whether one oftener learns to love real objects through their

representations, or the representations through the real objects," he

said, after pointing out a lovely capital made by the curled leaves of

greens, showing their reticulated under-side with the firm gradual

swell of its central rib. "When I was a little fellow these capitals

taught me to observe and delight in the structure of leaves."

"I suppose you can see every line of them with your eyes shut," said

Juliet Fenn.

"Yes. I was always repeating them, because for a good many years this

court stood for me as my only image of a convent, and whenever I read

of monks and monasteries, this was my scenery for them."

"You must love this place very much," said Miss Fenn, innocently, not

thinking of inheritance. "So many homes are like twenty others. But

this is unique, and you seem to know every cranny of it. I dare say you

could never love another home so well."

"Oh, I carry it with me," said Deronda, quietly, being used to all

possible thoughts of this kind. "To most men their early home is no

more than a memory of their early years, and I'm not sure but they have

the best of it. The image is never marred. There's no disappointment in

memory, and one's exaggerations are always on the good side."

Gwendolen felt sure that he spoke in that way out of delicacy to her

and Grandcourt--because he knew they must hear him; and that he

probably thought of her as a selfish creature who only cared about

possessing things in her own person. But whatever he might say, it must

have been a secret hardship to him that any circumstances of his birth

had shut him out from the inheritance of his father's position; and if

he supposed that she exulted in her husband's taking it, what could he

feel for her but scornful pity? Indeed it seemed clear to her that he

was avoiding her, and preferred talking to others--which nevertheless

was not kind in him.

With these thoughts in her mind she was prevented by a mixture of pride

and timidity from addressing him again, and when they were looking at

the rows of quaint portraits in the gallery above the cloisters, she

kept up her air of interest and made her vivacious remarks without any

direct appeal to Deronda. But at the end she was very weary of her

assumed spirits, and Grandcourt turned into the billiard-room, she went

to the pretty boudoir which had been assigned to her, and shut herself

up to look melancholy at her ease. No chemical process shows a more

wonderful activity than the transforming influence of the thoughts we

imagine to be going on in another. Changes in theory, religion,

admirations, may begin with a suspicion of dissent or disapproval, even

when the grounds of disapproval are but matter of searching conjecture.

Poor Gwendolen was conscious of an uneasy, transforming process--all

the old nature shaken to its depths, its hopes spoiled, its pleasures

perturbed, but still showing wholeness and strength in the will to

reassert itself. After every new shock of humiliation she tried to

adjust herself and seize her old supports--proud concealment, trust in

new excitements that would make life go by without much thinking; trust

in some deed of reparation to nullify her self-blame and shield her

from a vague, ever-visiting dread of some horrible calamity; trust in

the hardening effect of use and wont that would make her indifferent to

her miseries.

Yes--miseries. This beautiful, healthy young creature, with her

two-and-twenty years and her gratified ambition, no longer felt

inclined to kiss her fortunate image in the glass. She looked at it

with wonder that she could be so miserable. One belief which had

accompanied her through her unmarried life as a self-cajoling

superstition, encouraged by the subordination of every one about

her--the belief in her own power of dominating--was utterly gone.

Already, in seven short weeks, which seemed half her life, her husband

had gained a mastery which she could no more resist than she could have

resisted the benumbing effect from the touch of a torpedo. Gwendolen's

will had seemed imperious in its small girlish sway; but it was the

will of a creature with a large discourse of imaginative fears: a

shadow would have been enough to relax its hold. And she had found a

will like that of a crab or a boa-constrictor, which goes on pinching

or crushing without alarm at thunder. Not that Grandcourt was without

calculation of the intangible effects which were the chief means of

mastery; indeed, he had a surprising acuteness in detecting that

situation of feeling in Gwendolen which made her proud and rebellious

spirit dumb and helpless before him.

She had burned Lydia Glasher's letter with an instantaneous terror lest

other eyes should see it, and had tenaciously concealed from Grandcourt

that there was any other cause of her violent hysterics than the

excitement and fatigue of the day: she had been urged into an implied

falsehood. "Don't ask me--it was my feeling about everything--it was

the sudden change from home." The words of that letter kept repeating

themselves, and hung on her consciousness with the weight of a

prophetic doom. "I am the grave in which your chance of happiness is

buried as well as mine. You had your warning. You have chosen to injure

me and my children. He had meant to marry me. He would have married me

at last, if you had not broken your word. You will have your

punishment. I desire it with all my soul. Will you give him this letter

to set him against me and ruin us more--me and my children? Shall you

like to stand before your husband with these diamonds on you, and these

words of mine in his thoughts and yours? Will he think you have any

right to complain when he has made you miserable? You took him with

your eyes open. The willing wrong you have done me will be your curse."

The words had nestled their venomous life within her, and stirred

continually the vision of the scene at the Whispering Stones. That

scene was now like an accusing apparition: she dreaded that Grandcourt

should know of it--so far out of her sight now was that possibility she

had once satisfied herself with, of speaking to him about Mrs. Glasher

and her children, and making them rich amends. Any endurance seemed

easier than the mortal humiliation of confessing that she knew all

before she married him, and in marrying him had broken her word. For

the reasons by which she had justified herself when the marriage

tempted her, and all her easy arrangement of her future power over her

husband to make him do better than he might be inclined to do, were now

as futile as the burned-out lights which set off a child's pageant. Her

sense of being blameworthy was exaggerated by a dread both definite and

vague. The definite dread was lest the veil of secrecy should fall

between her and Grandcourt, and give him the right to taunt her. With

the reading of that letter had begun her husband's empire of fear.

And her husband all the while knew it. He had not, indeed, any distinct

knowledge of her broken promise, and would not have rated highly the

effect of that breach on her conscience; but he was aware not only of

what Lush had told him about the meeting at the Whispering Stones, but

also of Gwendolen's concealment as to the cause of her sudden illness.

He felt sure that Lydia had enclosed something with the diamonds, and

that this something, whatever it was, had at once created in Gwendolen

a new repulsion for him and a reason for not daring to manifest it. He

did not greatly mind, or feel as many men might have felt, that his

hopes in marriage were blighted: he had wanted to marry Gwendolen, and

he was not a man to repent. Why should a gentleman whose other

relations in life are carried on without the luxury of sympathetic

feeling, be supposed to require that kind of condiment in domestic

life? What he chiefly felt was that a change had come over the

conditions of his mastery, which, far from shaking it, might establish

it the more thoroughly. And it was established. He judged that he had

not married a simpleton unable to perceive the impossibility of escape,

or to see alternative evils: he had married a girl who had spirit and

pride enough not to make a fool of herself by forfeiting all the

advantages of a position which had attracted her; and if she wanted

pregnant hints to help her in making up her mind properly he would take

care not to withhold them.

Gwendolen, indeed, with all that gnawing trouble in her consciousness,

had hardly for a moment dropped the sense that it was her part to bear

herself with dignity, and appear what is called happy. In disclosure of

disappointment or sorrow she saw nothing but a humiliation which would

have been vinegar to her wounds. Whatever her husband might have come

at last to be to her, she meant to wear the yoke so as not to be

pitied. For she did think of the coming years with presentiment: she

was frightened at Grandcourt. The poor thing had passed from her

girlish sauciness of superiority over this inert specimen of personal

distinction into an amazed perception of her former ignorance about the

possible mental attitude of a man toward the woman he sought in

marriage--of her present ignorance as to what their life with each

other might turn into. For novelty gives immeasurableness to fear, and

fills the early time of all sad changes with phantoms of the future.

Her little coquetries, voluntary or involuntary, had told on Grandcourt

during courtship, and formed a medium of communication between them,

showing him in the light of a creature such as she could understand and

manage: But marriage had nulified all such interchange, and Grandcourt

had become a blank uncertainty to her in everything but this, that he

would do just what he willed, and that she had neither devices at her

command to determine his will, nor any rational means of escaping it.

What had occurred between them and her wearing the diamonds was

typical. One evening, shortly before they came to the Abbey, they were

going to dine at Brackenshaw Castle. Gwendolen had said to herself that

she would never wear those diamonds: they had horrible words clinging

and crawling about them, as from some bad dream, whose images lingered

on the perturbed sense. She came down dressed in her white, with only a

streak of gold and a pendant of emeralds, which Grandcourt had given

her, round her neck, and the little emerald stars in her ears.

Grandcourt stood with his back to the fire and looked at her as she

entered.

"Am I altogether as you like?" she said, speaking rather gaily. She was

not without enjoyment in this occasion of going to Brackenshaw Castle

with her new dignities upon her, as men whose affairs are sadly

involved will enjoy dining out among persons likely to be under a

pleasant mistake about them.

"No," said Grandcourt.

Gwendolen felt suddenly uncomfortable, wondering what was to come. She

was not unprepared for some struggle about the diamonds; but suppose he

were going to say, in low, contemptuous tones, "You are not in any way

what I like." It was very bad for her to be secretly hating him; but it

would be much worse when he gave the first sign of hating her.

"Oh, mercy!" she exclaimed, the pause lasting till she could bear it no

longer. "How am I to alter myself?"

"Put on the diamonds," said Grandcourt, looking straight at her with

his narrow glance.

Gwendolen paused in her turn, afraid of showing any emotion, and

feeling that nevertheless there was some change in her eyes as they met

his. But she was obliged to answer, and said as indifferently as she

could, "Oh, please not. I don't think diamonds suit me."

"What you think has nothing to do with it," said Grandcourt, his \_sotto

voce\_ imperiousness seeming to have an evening quietude and finish,

like his toilet. "I wish you to wear the diamonds."

"Pray excuse me; I like these emeralds," said Gwendolen, frightened in

spite of her preparation. That white hand of his which was touching his

whisker was capable, she fancied, of clinging round her neck and

threatening to throttle her; for her fear of him, mingling with the

vague foreboding of some retributive calamity which hung about her

life, had reached a superstitious point.

"Oblige me by telling me your reason for not wearing the diamonds when

I desire it," said Grandcourt. His eyes were still fixed upon her, and

she felt her own eyes narrowing under them as if to shut out an

entering pain.

Of what use was the rebellion within her? She could say nothing that

would not hurt her worse than submission. Turning slowing and covering

herself again, she went to her dressing-room. As she reached out the

diamonds it occurred to her that her unwillingness to wear them might

have already raised a suspicion in Grandcourt that she had some

knowledge about them which he had not given her. She fancied that his

eyes showed a delight in torturing her. How could she be defiant? She

had nothing to say that would touch him--nothing but what would give

him a more painful grasp on her consciousness.

"He delights in making the dogs and horses quail: that is half his

pleasure in calling them his," she said to herself, as she opened the

jewel-case with a shivering sensation.

"It will come to be so with me; and I shall quail. What else is there

for me? I will not say to the world, 'Pity me.'"

She was about to ring for her maid when she heard the door open behind

her. It was Grandcourt who came in.

"You want some one to fasten them," he said, coming toward her.

She did not answer, but simply stood still, leaving him to take out the

ornaments and fasten them as he would. Doubtless he had been used to

fasten them on some one else. With a bitter sort of sarcasm against

herself, Gwendolen thought, "What a privilege this is, to have robbed

another woman of!"

"What makes you so cold?" said Grandcourt, when he had fastened the

last ear-ring. "Pray put plenty of furs on. I hate to see a woman come

into a room looking frozen. If you are to appear as a bride at all,

appear decently."

This martial speech was not exactly persuasive, but it touched the

quick of Gwendolen's pride and forced her to rally. The words of the

bad dream crawled about the diamonds still, but only for her: to others

they were brilliants that suited her perfectly, and Grandcourt inwardly

observed that she answered to the rein.

"Oh, yes, mamma, quite happy," Gwendolen had said on her return to

Diplow. "Not at all disappointed in Ryelands. It is a much finer place

than this--larger in every way. But don't you want some more money?"

"Did you not know that Mr. Grandcourt left me a letter on your

wedding-day? I am to have eight hundred a year. He wishes me to keep

Offendene for the present, while you are at Diplow. But if there were

some pretty cottage near the park at Ryelands we might live there

without much expense, and I should have you most of the year, perhaps."

"We must leave that to Mr. Grandcourt, mamma."

"Oh, certainly. It is exceedingly handsome of him to say that he will

pay the rent for Offendene till June. And we can go on very

well--without any man-servant except Crane, just for out-of-doors. Our

good Merry will stay with us and help me to manage everything. It is

natural that Mr. Grandcourt should wish me to live in a good style of

house in your neighborhood, and I cannot decline. So he said nothing

about it to you?"

"No; he wished me to hear it from you, I suppose."

Gwendolen in fact had been very anxious to have some definite knowledge

of what would be done for her mother, but at no moment since her

marriage had she been able to overcome the difficulty of mentioning the

subject to Grandcourt. Now, however, she had a sense of obligation

which would not let her rest without saying to him, "It is very good of

you to provide for mamma. You took a great deal on yourself in marrying

a girl who had nothing but relations belonging to her."

Grandcourt was smoking, and only said carelessly, "Of course I was not

going to let her live like a gamekeeper's mother."

"At least he is not mean about money," thought Gwendolen, "and mamma is

the better off for my marriage."

She often pursued the comparison between what might have been, if she

had not married Grandcourt, and what actually was, trying to persuade

herself that life generally was barren of satisfaction, and that if she

had chosen differently she might now have been looking back with a

regret as bitter as the feeling she was trying to argue away. Her

mother's dullness, which used to irritate her, she was at present

inclined to explain as the ordinary result of woman's experience. True,

she still saw that she would "manage differently from mamma;" but her

management now only meant that she would carry her troubles with

spirit, and let none suspect them. By and by she promised herself that

she should get used to her heart-sores, and find excitements that would

carry her through life, as a hard gallop carried her through some of

the morning hours. There was gambling: she had heard stories at

Leubronn of fashionable women who gambled in all sorts of ways. It

seemed very flat to her at this distance, but perhaps if she began to

gamble again, the passion might awake. Then there was the pleasure of

producing an effect by her appearance in society: what did celebrated

beauties do in town when their husbands could afford display? All men

were fascinated by them: they had a perfect equipage and toilet, walked

into public places, and bowed, and made the usual answers, and walked

out again, perhaps they bought china, and practiced accomplishments. If

she could only feel a keen appetite for those pleasures--could only

believe in pleasure as she used to do! Accomplishments had ceased to

have the exciting quality of promising any pre-eminence to her; and as

for fascinated gentlemen--adorers who might hover round her with

languishment, and diversify married life with the romantic stir of

mystery, passion, and danger, which her French reading had given her

some girlish notion of--they presented themselves to her imagination

with the fatal circumstance that, instead of fascinating her in return,

they were clad in her own weariness and disgust. The admiring male,

rashly adjusting the expression of his features and the turn of his

conversation to her supposed tastes, had always been an absurd object

to her, and at present seemed rather detestable. Many courses are

actually pursued--follies and sins both convenient and

inconvenient--without pleasure or hope of pleasure; but to solace

ourselves with imagining any course beforehand, there must be some

foretaste of pleasure in the shape of appetite; and Gwendolen's

appetite had sickened. Let her wander over the possibilities of her

life as she would, an uncertain shadow dogged her. Her confidence in

herself and her destiny had turned into remorse and dread; she trusted

neither herself nor her future.

This hidden helplessness gave fresh force to the hold Deronda had from

the first taken on her mind, as one who had an unknown standard by

which he judged her. Had he some way of looking at things which might

be a new footing for her--an inward safeguard against possible events

which she dreaded as stored-up retribution? It is one of the secrets in

that change of mental poise which has been fitly named conversion, that

to many among us neither heaven nor earth has any revelation till some

personality touches theirs with a peculiar influence, subduing them

into receptiveness. It had been Gwendolen's habit to think of the

persons around her as stale books, too familiar to be interesting.

Deronda had lit up her attention with a sense of novelty: not by words

only, but by imagined facts, his influence had entered into the current

of that self-suspicion and self-blame which awakens a new consciousness.

"I wish he could know everything about me without my telling him," was

one of her thoughts, as she sat leaning over the end of a couch,

supporting her head with her hand, and looking at herself in a

mirror--not in admiration, but in a sad kind of companionship. "I wish

he knew that I am not so contemptible as he thinks me; that I am in

deep trouble, and want to be something better if I could." Without the

aid of sacred ceremony or costume, her feelings had turned this man,

only a few years older than herself, into a priest; a sort of trust

less rare than the fidelity that guards it. Young reverence for one who

is also young is the most coercive of all: there is the same level of

temptation, and the higher motive is believed in as a fuller force--not

suspected to be a mere residue from weary experience.

But the coercion is often stronger on the one who takes the reverence.

Those who trust us educate us. And perhaps in that ideal consecration

of Gwendolen's, some education was being prepared for Deronda.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

"Rien ne pese tant qu'un secret

Le porter loin est difficile aux dames:

Et je sÃ§ais mesme sur ce fait

Bon nombre d'hommes qui sont femmes."

--LA FONTAINE.

Meanwhile Deronda had been fastened and led off by Mr. Vandernoodt, who

wished for a brisker walk, a cigar, and a little gossip. Since we

cannot tell a man his own secrets, the restraint of being in his

company often breeds a desire to pair off in conversation with some

more ignorant person, and Mr. Vandernoodt presently said--

"What a washed-out piece of cambric Grandcourt is! But if he is a

favorite of yours, I withdraw the remark."

"Not the least in the world," said Deronda.

"I thought not. One wonders how he came to have a great passion again;

and he must have had--to marry in this way. Though Lush, his old chum,

hints that he married this girl out of obstinacy. By George! it was a

very accountable obstinacy. A man might make up his mind to marry her

without the stimulus of contradiction. But he must have made himself a

pretty large drain of money, eh?"

"I know nothing of his affairs."

"What! not of the other establishment he keeps up?"

"Diplow? Of course. He took that of Sir Hugo. But merely for the year."

"No, no; not Diplow: Gadsmere. Sir Hugo knows, I'll answer for it."

Deronda said nothing. He really began to feel some curiosity, but he

foresaw that he should hear what Mr. Vandernoodt had to tell, without

the condescension of asking.

"Lush would not altogether own to it, of course. He's a confident and

go-between of Grandcourt's. But I have it on the best authority. The

fact is, there's another lady with four children at Gadsmere. She has

had the upper hand of him these ten years and more, and by what I can

understand has it still--left her husband for him, and used to travel

with him everywhere. Her husband's dead now; I found a fellow who was

in the same regiment with him, and knew this Mrs. Glasher before she

took wing. A fiery dark-eyed woman--a noted beauty at that time--he

thought she was dead. They say she has Grandcourt under her thumb

still, and it's a wonder he didn't marry her, for there's a very fine

boy, and I understand Grandcourt can do absolutely as he pleases with

the estates. Lush told me as much as that."

"What right had he to marry this girl?" said Deronda, with disgust.

Mr. Vandernoodt, adjusting the end of his cigar, shrugged his shoulders

and put out his lips.

"\_She\_ can know nothing of it," said Deronda, emphatically. But that

positive statement was immediately followed by an inward query--"Could

she have known anything of it?"

"It's rather a piquant picture," said Mr. Vandernoodt--"Grandcourt

between two fiery women. For depend upon it this light-haired one has

plenty of devil in her. I formed that opinion of her at Leubronn. It's

a sort of Medea and CreÃ¼sa business. Fancy the two meeting! Grandcourt

is a new kind of Jason: I wonder what sort of a part he'll make of it.

It's a dog's part at best. I think I hear Ristori now, saying, 'Jasone!

Jasone!' These fine women generally get hold of a stick."

"Grandcourt can bite, I fancy," said Deronda. "He is no stick."

"No, no; I meant Jason. I can't quite make out Grandcourt. But he's a

keen fellow enough--uncommonly well built too. And if he comes into all

this property, the estates will bear dividing. This girl, whose friends

had come to beggary, I understand, may think herself lucky to get him.

I don't want to be hard on a man because he gets involved in an affair

of that sort. But he might make himself more agreeable. I was telling

him a capital story last night, and he got up and walked away in the

middle. I felt inclined to kick him. Do you suppose that is inattention

or insolence, now?"

"Oh, a mixture. He generally observes the forms: but he doesn't listen

much," said Deronda. Then, after a moment's pause, he went on, "I

should think there must be some exaggeration or inaccuracy in what you

have heard about this lady at Gadsmere."

"Not a bit, depend upon it; it has all lain snug of late years. People

have forgotten all about it. But there the nest is, and the birds are

in it. And I know Grandcourt goes there. I have good evidence that he

goes there. However, that's nobody's business but his own. The affair

has sunk below the surface."

"I wonder you could have learned so much about it," said Deronda,

rather drily.

"Oh, there are plenty of people who knew all about it; but such stories

get packed away like old letters. They interest me. I like to know the

manners of my time--contemporary gossip, not antediluvian. These

Dryasdust fellows get a reputation by raking up some small scandal

about Semiramis or Nitocris, and then we have a thousand and one poems

written upon it by all the warblers big and little. But I don't care a

straw about the \_faux pas\_ of the mummies. You do, though. You are one

of the historical men--more interested in a lady when she's got a rag

face and skeleton toes peeping out. Does that flatter your imagination?"

"Well, if she had any woes in her love, one has the satisfaction of

knowing that she's well out of them."

"Ah, you are thinking of the Medea, I see."

Deronda then chose to point to some giant oaks worth looking at in

their bareness. He also felt an interest in this piece of contemporary

gossip, but he was satisfied that Mr. Vandernoodt had no more to tell

about it.

Since the early days when he tried to construct the hidden story of his

own birth, his mind had perhaps never been so active in weaving

probabilities about any private affair as it had now begun to be about

Gwendolen's marriage. This unavowed relation of Grandcourt's--could she

have gained some knowledge of it, which caused her to shrink from the

match--a shrinking finally overcome by the urgence of poverty? He could

recall almost every word she had said to him, and in certain of these

words he seemed to discern that she was conscious of having done some

wrong--inflicted some injury. His own acute experience made him alive

to the form of injury which might affect the unavowed children and

their mother. Was Mrs. Grandcourt, under all her determined show of

satisfaction, gnawed by a double, a treble-headed grief--self-reproach,

disappointment, jealousy? He dwelt especially on all the slight signs

of self-reproach: he was inclined to judge her tenderly, to excuse, to

pity. He thought he had found a key now by which to interpret her more

clearly: what magnifying of her misery might not a young creature get

into who had wedded her fresh hopes to old secrets! He thought he saw

clearly enough now why Sir Hugo had never dropped any hint of this

affair to him; and immediately the image of this Mrs. Glasher became

painfully associated with his own hidden birth. Gwendolen knowing of

that woman and her children, marrying Grandcourt, and showing herself

contented, would have been among the most repulsive of beings to him;

but Gwendolen tasting the bitterness of remorse for having contributed

to their injury was brought very near to his fellow-feeling. If it were

so, she had got to a common plane of understanding with him on some

difficulties of life which a woman is rarely able to judge of with any

justice or generosity; for, according to precedent, Gwendolen's view of

her position might easily have been no other than that her husband's

marriage with her was his entrance on the path of virtue, while Mrs.

Glasher represented his forsaken sin. And Deronda had naturally some

resentment on behalf of the Hagars and Ishmaels.

Undeniably Deronda's growing solicitude about Gwendolen depended

chiefly on her peculiar manner toward him; and I suppose neither man

nor woman would be the better for an utter insensibility to such

appeals. One sign that his interest in her had changed its footing was

that he dismissed any caution against her being a coquette setting

snares to involve him in a vulgar flirtation, and determined that he

would not again evade any opportunity of talking to her. He had shaken

off Mr. Vandernoodt, and got into a solitary corner in the twilight;

but half an hour was long enough to think of those possibilities in

Gwendolen's position and state of mind; and on forming the

determination not to avoid her, he remembered that she was likely to be

at tea with the other ladies in the drawing-room. The conjecture was

true; for Gwendolen, after resolving not to go down again for the next

four hours, began to feel, at the end of one, that in shutting herself

up she missed all chances of seeing and hearing, and that her visit

would only last two days more. She adjusted herself, put on her little

air of self-possession, and going down, made herself resolutely

agreeable. Only ladies were assembled, and Lady Pentreath was amusing

them with a description of a drawing-room under the Regency, and the

figure that was cut by ladies and gentlemen in 1819, the year she was

presented--when Deronda entered.

"Shall I be acceptable?" he said. "Perhaps I had better go back and

look for the others. I suppose they are in the billiard-room."

"No, no; stay where you are," said Lady Pentreath. "They were all

getting tired of me; let us hear what \_you\_ have to say."

"That is rather an embarrassing appeal," said Deronda, drawing up a

chair near Lady Mallinger's elbow at the tea-table. "I think I had

better take the opportunity of mentioning our songstress," he added,

looking at Lady Mallinger--"unless you have done so."

"Oh, the little Jewess!" said Lady Mallinger. "No, I have not mentioned

her. It never entered my head that any one here wanted singing lessons."

"All ladies know some one else who wants singing lessons," said

Deronda. "I have happened to find an exquisite singer,"--here he turned

to Lady Pentreath. "She is living with some ladies who are friends of

mine--the mother and sisters of a man who was my chum at Cambridge. She

was on the stage at Vienna; but she wants to leave that life, and

maintain herself by teaching."

"There are swarms of those people, aren't there?" said the old lady.

"Are her lessons to be very cheap or very expensive? Those are the two

baits I know of."

"There is another bait for those who hear her," said Deronda. "Her

singing is something quite exceptional, I think. She has had such

first-rate teaching--or rather first-rate instinct with her

teaching--that you might imagine her singing all came by nature."

"Why did she leave the stage, then?" said Lady Pentreath. "I'm too old

to believe in first-rate people giving up first-rate chances."

"Her voice was too weak. It is a delicious voice for a room. You who

put up with my singing of Schubert would be enchanted with hers," said

Deronda, looking at Mrs. Raymond. "And I imagine she would not object

to sing at private parties or concerts. Her voice is quite equal to

that."

"I am to have her in my drawing-room when we go up to town," said Lady

Mallinger. "You shall hear her then. I have not heard her myself yet;

but I trust Daniel's recommendation. I mean my girls to have lessons of

her."

"Is it a charitable affair?" said Lady Pentreath. "I can't bear

charitable music."

Lady Mallinger, who was rather helpless in conversation, and felt

herself under an engagement not to tell anything of Mirah's story, had

an embarrassed smile on her face, and glanced at Deronda.

"It is a charity to those who want to have a good model of feminine

singing," said Deronda. "I think everybody who has ears would benefit

by a little improvement on the ordinary style. If you heard Miss

Lapidoth"--here he looked at Gwendolen--"perhaps you would revoke your

resolution to give up singing."

"I should rather think my resolution would be confirmed," said

Gwendolen. "I don't feel able to follow your advice of enjoying my own

middlingness."

"For my part," said Deronda, "people who do anything finely always

inspirit me to try. I don't mean that they make me believe I can do it

as well. But they make the thing, whatever it may be, seem worthy to be

done. I can bear to think my own music not good for much, but the world

would be more dismal if I thought music itself not good for much.

Excellence encourages one about life generally; it shows the spiritual

wealth of the world."

"But then, if we can't imitate it, it only makes our own life seem the

tamer," said Gwendolen, in a mood to resent encouragement founded on

her own insignificance.

"That depends on the point of view, I think," said Deronda. "We should

have a poor life of it if we were reduced for all our pleasure to our

own performances. A little private imitation of what is good is a sort

of private devotion to it, and most of us ought to practice art only in

the light of private study--preparation to understand and enjoy what

the few can do for us. I think Miss Lapidoth is one of the few."

"She must be a very happy person, don't you think?" said Gwendolen,

with a touch of sarcasm, and a turn of her neck toward Mrs. Raymond.

"I don't know," answered the independent lady; "I must hear more of her

before I say that."

"It may have been a bitter disappointment to her that her voice failed

her for the stage," said Juliet Fenn, sympathetically.

"I suppose she's past her best, though," said the deep voice of Lady

Pentreath.

"On the contrary, she has not reached it," said Deronda. "She is barely

twenty."

"And very pretty," interposed Lady Mallinger, with an amiable wish to

help Deronda. "And she has very good manners. I'm sorry she's a bigoted

Jewess; I should not like it for anything else, but it doesn't matter

in singing."

"Well, since her voice is too weak for her to scream much, I'll tell

Lady Clementina to set her on my nine granddaughters," said Lady

Pentreath; "and I hope she'll convince eight of them that they have not

voice enough to sing anywhere but at church. My notion is, that many of

our girls nowadays want lessons not to sing."

"I have had my lessons in that," said Gwendolen, looking at Deronda.

"You see Lady Pentreath is on my side."

While she was speaking, Sir Hugo entered with some of the other

gentlemen, including Grandcourt, and standing against the group at the

low tea-table said--

"What imposition is Deronda putting on you, ladies--slipping in among

you by himself?"

"Wanting to pass off an obscurity on us as better than any celebrity,"

said Lady Pentreath--"a pretty singing Jewess who is to astonish these

young people. You and I, who heard Catalani in her prime, are not so

easily astonished."

Sir Hugo listened with his good-humored smile as he took a cup of tea

from his wife, and then said, "Well, you know, a Liberal is bound to

think that there have been singers since Catalani's time."

"Ah, you are younger than I am. I dare say you are one of the men who

ran after Alcharisi. But she married off and left you all in the lurch."

"Yes, yes; it's rather too bad when these great singers marry

themselves into silence before they have a crack in their voices. And

the husband is a public robber. I remember Leroux saying, 'A man might

as well take down a fine peal of church bells and carry them off to the

steppes," said Sir Hugo, setting down his cup and turning away, while

Deronda, who had moved from his place to make room for others, and felt

that he was not in request, sat down a little apart. Presently he

became aware that, in the general dispersion of the group, Gwendolen

had extricated herself from the attentions of Mr. Vandernoodt and had

walked to the piano, where she stood apparently examining the music

which lay on the desk. Will any one be surprised at Deronda's

concluding that she wished him to join her? Perhaps she wanted to make

amends for the unpleasant tone of resistance with which she had met his

recommendation of Mirah, for he had noticed that her first impulse

often was to say what she afterward wished to retract. He went to her

side and said--

"Are you relenting about the music and looking for something to play or

sing?"

"I am not looking for anything, but I \_am\_ relenting," said Gwendolen,

speaking in a submissive tone.

"May I know the reason?"

"I should like to hear Miss Lapidoth and have lessons from her, since

you admire her so much,--that is, of course, when we go to town. I mean

lessons in rejoicing at her excellence and my own deficiency," said

Gwendolen, turning on him a sweet, open smile.

"I shall be really glad for you to see and hear her," said Deronda,

returning the smile in kind.

"Is she as perfect in every thing else as in her music?"

"I can't vouch for that exactly. I have not seen enough of her. But I

have seen nothing in her that I could wish to be different. She has had

an unhappy life. Her troubles began in early childhood, and she has

grown up among very painful surroundings. But I think you will say that

no advantages could have given her more grace and truer refinement."

"I wonder what sort of trouble hers were?"

"I have not any very precise knowledge. But I know that she was on the

brink of drowning herself in despair."

"And what hindered her?" said Gwendolen, quickly, looking at Deronda.

"Some ray or other came--which made her feel that she ought to

live--that it was good to live," he answered, quietly. "She is full of

piety, and seems capable of submitting to anything when it takes the

form of duty."

"Those people are not to be pitied," said Gwendolen, impatiently. "I

have no sympathy with women who are always doing right. I don't believe

in their great sufferings." Her fingers moved quickly among the edges

of the music.

"It is true," said Deronda, "that the consciousness of having done

wrong is something deeper, more bitter. I suppose we faulty creatures

can never feel so much for the irreproachable as for those who are

bruised in the struggle with their own faults. It is a very ancient

story, that of the lost sheep--but it comes up afresh every day."

"That is a way of speaking--it is not acted upon, it is not real," said

Gwendolen, bitterly. "You admire Miss Lapidoth because you think her

blameless, perfect. And you know you would despise a woman who had done

something you thought very wrong."

"That would depend entirely upon her own view of what she had done,"

said Deronda.

"You would be satisfied if she were very wretched, I suppose," said

Gwendolen, impetuously.

"No, not satisfied--full of sorrow for her. It was not a mere way of

speaking. I did not mean to say that the finer nature is not more

adorable; I meant that those who would be comparatively uninteresting

beforehand may become worthier of sympathy when they do something that

awakens in them a keen remorse. Lives are enlarged in different ways. I

dare say some would never get their eyes opened if it were not for a

violent shock from the consequences of their own actions. And when they

are suffering in that way one must care for them more than for the

comfortably self-satisfied." Deronda forgot everything but his vision

of what Gwendolen's experience had probably been, and urged by

compassion let his eyes and voice express as much interest as they

would.

Gwendolen had slipped on to the music-stool, and looked up at him with

pain in her long eyes, like a wounded animal asking for help.

"Are you persuading Mrs. Grandcourt to play to us, Dan?" said Sir Hugo,

coming up and putting his hand on Deronda's shoulder with a gentle,

admonitory pinch.

"I cannot persuade myself," said Gwendolen, rising.

Others had followed Sir Hugo's lead, and there was an end of any

liability to confidences for that day. But the next was New Year's Eve;

and a grand dance, to which the chief tenants were invited, was to be

held in the picture-gallery above the cloister--the sort of

entertainment in which numbers and general movement may create privacy.

When Gwendolen was dressing, she longed, in remembrance of Leubronn, to

put on the old turquoise necklace for her sole ornament; but she dared

not offend her husband by appearing in that shabby way on an occasion

when he would demand her utmost splendor. Determined to wear the

memorial necklace somehow, she wound it thrice round her wrist and made

a bracelet of it--having gone to her room to put it on just before the

time of entering the ball-room.

It was always a beautiful scene, this dance on New Year's Eve, which

had been kept up by the family tradition as nearly in the old fashion

as inexorable change would allow. Red carpet was laid down for the

occasion: hot-house plants and evergreens were arranged in bowers at

the extremities and in every recess of the gallery; and the old

portraits stretching back through generations, even to the

pre-portraying period, made a piquant line of spectators. Some

neighboring gentry, major and minor, were invited; and it was certainly

an occasion when a prospective master and mistress of Abbott's and

King's Topping might see their future glory in an agreeable light, as a

picturesque provincial supremacy with a rent-roll personified by the

most prosperous-looking tenants. Sir Hugo expected Grandcourt to feel

flattered by being asked to the Abbey at a time which included this

festival in honor of the family estate; but he also hoped that his own

hale appearance might impress his successor with the probable length of

time that would elapse before the succession came, and with the wisdom

of preferring a good actual sum to a minor property that must be waited

for. All present, down to the least important farmer's daughter, knew

that they were to see "young Grandcourt," Sir Hugo's nephew, the

presumptive heir and future baronet, now visiting the Abbey with his

bride after an absence of many years; any coolness between uncle and

nephew having, it is understood, given way to a friendly warmth. The

bride opening the ball with Sir Hugo was necessarily the cynosure of

all eyes; and less than a year before, if some magic mirror could have

shown Gwendolen her actual position, she would have imagined herself

moving in it with a glow of triumphant pleasure, conscious that she

held in her hands a life full of favorable chances which her cleverness

and spirit would enable her to make the best of. And now she was

wondering that she could get so little joy out of the exultation to

which she had been suddenly lifted, away from the distasteful petty

empire of her girlhood with its irksome lack of distinction and

superfluity of sisters. She would have been glad to be even

unreasonably elated, and to forget everything but the flattery of the

moment; but she was like one courting sleep, in whom thoughts insist

like willful tormentors.

Wondering in this way at her own dullness, and all the while longing

for an excitement that would deaden importunate aches, she was passing

through files of admiring beholders in the country-dance with which it

was traditional to open the ball, and was being generally regarded by

her own sex as an enviable woman. It was remarked that she carried

herself with a wonderful air, considering that she had been nobody in

particular, and without a farthing to her fortune. If she had been a

duke's daughter, or one of the royal princesses, she could not have

taken the honors of the evening more as a matter of course. Poor

Gwendolen! It would by-and-by become a sort of skill in which she was

automatically practiced to hear this last great gambling loss with an

air of perfect self-possession.

The next couple that passed were also worth looking at. Lady Pentreath

had said, "I shall stand up for one dance, but I shall choose my

partner. Mr. Deronda, you are the youngest man, I mean to dance with

you. Nobody is old enough to make a good pair with me. I must have a

contrast." And the contrast certainly set off the old lady to the

utmost. She was one of those women who are never handsome till they are

old, and she had had the wisdom to embrace the beauty of age as early

as possible. What might have seemed harshness in her features when she

was young, had turned now into a satisfactory strength of form and

expression which defied wrinkles, and was set off by a crown of white

hair; her well-built figure was well covered with black drapery, her

ears and neck comfortably caressed with lace, showing none of those

withered spaces which one would think it a pitiable condition of

poverty to expose. She glided along gracefully enough, her dark eyes

still with a mischievous smile in them as she observed the company. Her

partner's young richness of tint against the flattened hues and rougher

forms of her aged head had an effect something like that of a fine

flower against a lichenous branch. Perhaps the tenants hardly

appreciated this pair. Lady Pentreath was nothing more than a straight,

active old lady: Mr. Deronda was a familiar figure regarded with

friendliness; but if he had been the heir, it would have been regretted

that his face was not as unmistakably English as Sir Hugo's.

Grandcourt's appearance when he came up with Lady Mallinger was not

impeached with foreignness: still the satisfaction in it was not

complete. It would have been matter of congratulation if one who had

the luck to inherit two old family estates had had more hair, a fresher

color, and a look of greater animation; but that fine families dwindled

off into females, and estates ran together into the single heirship of

a mealy-complexioned male, was a tendency in things which seemed to be

accounted for by a citation of other instances. It was agreed that Mr.

Grandcourt could never be taken for anything but what he was--a born

gentleman; and that, in fact, he looked like an heir. Perhaps the

person least complacently disposed toward him at that moment was Lady

Mallinger, to whom going in procession up this country-dance with

Grandcourt was a blazonment of herself as the infelicitous wife who had

produced nothing but daughters, little better than no children, poor

dear things, except for her own fondness and for Sir Hugo's wonderful

goodness to them. But such inward discomfort could not prevent the

gentle lady from looking fair and stout to admiration, or her full blue

eyes from glancing mildly at her neighbors. All the mothers and fathers

held it a thousand pities that she had not had a fine boy, or even

several--which might have been expected, to look at her when she was

first married.

The gallery included only three sides of the quadrangle, the fourth

being shut off as a lobby or corridor: one side was used for dancing,

and the opposite side for the supper-table, while the intermediate part

was less brilliantly lit, and fitted with comfortable seats. Later in

the evening Gwendolen was in one of these seats, and Grandcourt was

standing near her. They were not talking to each other: she was leaning

backward in her chair, and he against the wall; and Deronda, happening

to observe this, went up to ask her if she had resolved not to dance

any more. Having himself been doing hard duty in this way among the

guests, he thought he had earned the right to sink for a little while

into the background, and he had spoken little to Gwendolen since their

conversation at the piano the day before. Grandcourt's presence would

only make it the easier to show that pleasure in talking to her even

about trivialities which would be a sign of friendliness; and he

fancied that her face looked blank. A smile beamed over it as she saw

him coming, and she raised herself from her leaning posture. Grandcourt

had been grumbling at the \_ennui\_ of staying so long in this stupid

dance, and proposing that they should vanish: she had resisted on the

ground of politeness--not without being a little frightened at the

probability that he was silently, angry with her. She had her reason

for staying, though she had begun to despair of the opportunity for the

sake of which she had put the old necklace on her wrist. But now at

last Deronda had come.

"Yes; I shall not dance any more. Are you not glad?" she said, with

some gayety, "you might have felt obliged humbly to offer yourself as a

partner, and I feel sure you have danced more than you like already."

"I will not deny that," said Deronda, "since you have danced as much as

you like."

"But will you take trouble for me in another way, and fetch me a glass

of that fresh water?"

It was but a few steps that Deronda had to go for the water. Gwendolen

was wrapped in the lightest, softest of white woolen burnouses, under

which her hands were hidden. While he was gone she had drawn off her

glove, which was finished with a lace ruffle, and when she put up her

hand to take the glass and lifted it to her mouth, the

necklace-bracelet, which in its triple winding adapted itself clumsily

to her wrist, was necessarily conspicuous. Grandcourt saw it, and saw

that it was attracting Deronda's notice.

"What is that hideous thing you have got on your wrist?" said the

husband.

"That?" said Gwendolen, composedly, pointing to the turquoises, while

she still held the glass; "it is an old necklace I like to wear. I lost

it once, and someone found it for me."

With that she gave the glass again to Deronda, who immediately carried

it away, and on returning said, in order to banish any consciousness

about the necklace--

"It is worth while for you to go and look out at one of the windows on

that side. You can see the finest possible moonlight on the stone

pillars and carving, and shadows waving across it in the wind."

"I should like to see it. Will you go?" said Gwendolen, looking up at

her husband.

He cast his eyes down at her, and saying, "No, Deronda will take you,"

slowly moved from his leaning attitude, and walked away.

Gwendolen's face for a moment showed a fleeting vexation: she resented

this show of indifference toward her. Deronda felt annoyed, chiefly for

her sake; and with a quick sense, that it would relieve her most to

behave as if nothing peculiar had occurred, he said, "Will you take my

arm and go, while only servants are there?" He thought that he

understood well her action in drawing his attention to the necklace:

she wished him to infer that she had submitted her mind to rebuke--her

speech and manner had from the first fluctuated toward that

submission--and that she felt no lingering resentment. Her evident

confidence in his interpretation of her appealed to him as a peculiar

claim.

When they were walking together, Gwendolen felt as if the annoyance

which had just happened had removed another film of reserve from

between them, and she had more right than before to be as open as she

wished. She did not speak, being filled with the sense of silent

confidence, until they were in front of the window looking out on the

moonlit court. A sort of bower had been made round the window, turning

it into a recess. Quitting his arm, she folded her hands in her

burnous, and pressed her brow against the glass. He moved slightly

away, and held the lapels of his coat with his thumbs under the collar

as his manner was: he had a wonderful power of standing perfectly

still, and in that position reminded one sometimes of Dante's \_spiriti

magni con occhi tardi e gravi\_. (Doubtless some of these danced in

their youth, doubted of their own vocation, and found their own times

too modern.) He abstained from remarking on the scene before them,

fearing that any indifferent words might jar on her: already the calm

light and shadow, the ancient steadfast forms, and aloofness enough

from those inward troubles which he felt sure were agitating her. And

he judged aright: she would have been impatient of polite conversation.

The incidents of the last minute or two had receded behind former

thoughts which she had imagined herself uttering to Deronda, which now

urged themselves to her lips. In a subdued voice, she said--

"Suppose I had gambled again, and lost the necklace again, what should

you have thought of me?"

"Worse than I do now."

"Then you are mistaken about me. You wanted me not to do that--not to

make my gain out of another's loss in that way--and I have done a great

deal worse."

"I can't imagine temptations," said Deronda. "Perhaps I am able to

understand what you mean. At least I understand self-reproach." In

spite of preparation he was almost alarmed at Gwendolen's precipitancy

of confidence toward him, in contrast with her habitual resolute

concealment.

"What should you do if you were like me--feeling that you were wrong

and miserable, and dreading everything to come?" It seemed that she was

hurrying to make the utmost use of this opportunity to speak as she

would.

"That is not to be amended by doing one thing only--but many," said

Deronda, decisively.

"What?" said Gwendolen, hastily, moving her brow from the glass and

looking at him.

He looked full at her in return, with what she thought was severity. He

felt that it was not a moment in which he must let himself be tender,

and flinch from implying a hard opinion.

"I mean there are many thoughts and habits that may help us to bear

inevitable sorrow. Multitudes have to bear it."

She turned her brow to the window again, and said impatiently, "You

must tell me then what to think and what to do; else why did you not

let me go on doing as I liked and not minding? If I had gone on

gambling I might have won again, and I might have got not to care for

anything else. You would not let me do that. Why shouldn't I do as I

like, and not mind? Other people do." Poor Gwendolen's speech expressed

nothing very clearly except her irritation.

"I don't believe you would ever get not to mind," said Deronda, with

deep-toned decision. "If it were true that baseness and cruelty made an

escape from pain, what difference would that make to people who can't

be quite base or cruel? Idiots escape some pain; but you can't be an

idiot. Some may do wrong to another without remorse; but suppose one

does feel remorse? I believe you could never lead an injurious

life--all reckless lives are injurious, pestilential--without feeling

remorse." Deronda's unconscious fervor had gathered as he went on: he

was uttering thoughts which he had used for himself in moments of

painful meditation.

"Then tell me what better I can do," said Gwendolen, insistently.

"Many things. Look on other lives besides your own. See what their

troubles are, and how they are borne. Try to care about something in

this vast world besides the gratification of small selfish desires. Try

to care for what is best in thought and action--something that is good

apart from the accidents of your own lot."

For an instant or two Gwendolen was mute. Then, again moving her brow

from the glass, she said--

"You mean that I am selfish and ignorant."

He met her fixed look in silence before he answered firmly--"You will

not go on being selfish and ignorant!"

She did not turn away her glance or let her eyelids fall, but a change

came over her face--that subtle change in nerve and muscle which will

sometimes give a childlike expression even to the elderly: it is the

subsidence of self-assertion.

"Shall I lead you back?" said Deronda, gently, turning and offering her

his arm again. She took it silently, and in that way they came in sight

of Grandcourt, who was walking slowly near their former place.

Gwendolen went up to him and said, "I am ready to go now. Mr. Deronda

will excuse us to Lady Mallinger."

"Certainly," said Deronda. "Lord and Lady Pentreath disappeared some

time ago."

Grandcourt gave his arm in silent compliance, nodding over his shoulder

to Deronda, and Gwendolen too only half turned to bow and say,

"Thanks." The husband and wife left the gallery and paced the corridors

in silence. When the door had closed on them in the boudoir, Grandcourt

threw himself into a chair and said, with undertoned peremptoriness,

"Sit down." She, already in the expectation of something unpleasant,

had thrown off her burnous with nervous unconsciousness, and

immediately obeyed. Turning his eyes toward her, he began--

"Oblige me in future by not showing whims like a mad woman in a play."

"What do you mean?" said Gwendolen.

"I suppose there is some understanding between you and Deronda about

that thing you have on your wrist. If you have anything to say to him,

say it. But don't carry on a telegraphing which other people are

supposed not to see. It's damnably vulgar."

"You can know all about the necklace," said Gwendolen, her angry pride

resisting the nightmare of fear.

"I don't want to know. Keep to yourself whatever you like." Grandcourt

paused between each sentence, and in each his speech seemed to become

more preternaturally distinct in its inward tones. "What I care to know

I shall know without your telling me. Only you will please to behave as

becomes my wife. And not make a spectacle of yourself."

"Do you object to my talking to Mr. Deronda?"

"I don't care two straws about Deronda, or any other conceited

hanger-on. You may talk to him as much as you like. He is not going to

take my place. You are my wife. And you will either fill your place

properly--to the world and to me--or you will go to the devil."

"I never intended anything but to fill my place properly," said

Gwendolen, with bitterest mortification in her soul.

"You put that thing on your wrist, and hid it from me till you wanted

him to see it. Only fools go into that deaf and dumb talk, and think

they're secret. You will understand that you are not to compromise

yourself. Behave with dignity. That's all I have to say."

With that last word Grandcourt rose, turned his back to the fire and

looked down on her. She was mute. There was no reproach that she dared

to fling back at him in return for these insulting admonitions, and the

very reason she felt them to be insulting was that their purport went

with the most absolute dictate of her pride. What she would least like

to incur was the making a fool of herself and being compromised. It was

futile and irrelevant to try and explain that Deronda too had only been

a monitor--the strongest of all monitors. Grandcourt was contemptuous,

not jealous; contemptuously certain of all the subjection he cared for.

Why could she not rebel and defy him? She longed to do it. But she

might as well have tried to defy the texture of her nerves and the

palpitation of her heart. Her husband had a ghostly army at his back,

that could close round her wherever she might turn. She sat in her

splendid attire, like a white image of helplessness, and he seemed to

gratify himself with looking at her. She could not even make a

passionate exclamation, or throw up her arms, as she would have done in

her maiden days. The sense of his scorn kept her still.

"Shall I ring?" he said, after what seemed to her a long while. She

moved her head in assent, and after ringing he went to his

dressing-room.

Certain words were gnawing within her. "The wrong you have done me will

be your own curse." As he closed the door, the bitter tears rose, and

the gnawing words provoked an answer: "Why did you put your fangs into

me and not into him?" It was uttered in a whisper, as the tears came up

silently. But she immediately pressed her handkerchief against her

eyes, and checked her tendency to sob.

The next day, recovered from the shuddering fit of this evening scene,

she determined to use the charter which Grandcourt had scornfully given

her, and to talk as much as she liked with Deronda; but no

opportunities occurred, and any little devices she could imagine for

creating them were rejected by her pride, which was now doubly active.

Not toward Deronda himself--she was singularly free from alarm lest he

should think her openness wanting in dignity: it was part of his power

over her that she believed him free from all misunderstanding as to the

way in which she appealed to him; or rather, that he should

misunderstand her had never entered into her mind. But the last morning

came, and still she had never been able to take up the dropped thread

of their talk, and she was without devices. She and Grandcourt were to

leave at three o'clock. It was too irritating that after a walk in the

grounds had been planned in Deronda's hearing, he did not present

himself to join in it. Grandcourt was gone with Sir Hugo to King's

Topping, to see the old manor-house; others of the gentlemen were

shooting; she was condemned to go and see the decoy and the waterfowl,

and everything else that she least wanted to see, with the ladies, with

old Lord Pentreath and his anecdotes, with Mr. Vandernoodt and his

admiring manners. The irritation became too strong for her; without

premeditation, she took advantage of the winding road to linger a

little out of sight, and then set off back to the house, almost running

when she was safe from observation. She entered by a side door, and the

library was on her left hand; Deronda, she knew, was often there; why

might she not turn in there as well as into any other room in the

house? She had been taken there expressly to see the illuminated family

tree, and other remarkable things--what more natural than that she

should like to look in again? The thing most to be feared was that the

room would be empty of Deronda, for the door was ajar. She pushed it

gently, and looked round it. He was there, writing busily at a distant

table, with his back toward the door (in fact, Sir Hugo had asked him

to answer some constituents' letters which had become pressing). An

enormous log fire, with the scent of Russia from the books, made the

great room as warmly odorous as a private chapel in which the censors

have been swinging. It seemed too daring to go in--too rude to speak

and interrupt him; yet she went in on the noiseless carpet, and stood

still for two or three minutes, till Deronda, having finished a letter,

pushed it aside for signature, and threw himself back to consider

whether there were anything else for him to do, or whether he could

walk out for the chance of meeting the party which included Gwendolen,

when he heard her voice saying, "Mr. Deronda."

It was certainly startling. He rose hastily, turned round, and pushed

away his chair with a strong expression of surprise.

"Am I wrong to come in?" said Gwendolen.

"I thought you were far on your walk," said Deronda.

"I turned back," said Gwendolen.

"Do you intend to go out again? I could join you now, if you would

allow me."

"No; I want to say something, and I can't stay long," said Gwendolen,

speaking quickly in a subdued tone, while she walked forward and rested

her arms and muff on the back of the chair he had pushed away from him.

"I want to tell you that it is really so--I can't help feeling remorse

for having injured others. That was what I meant when I said that I had

done worse than gamble again and pawn the necklace again--something

more injurious, as you called it. And I can't alter it. I am punished,

but I can't alter it. You said I could do many things. Tell me again.

What should you do--what should you feel if you were in my place?"

The hurried directness with which she spoke--the absence of all her

little airs, as if she were only concerned to use the time in getting

an answer that would guide her, made her appeal unspeakably touching.

Deronda said,--"I should feel something of what you feel--deep sorrow."

"But what would you try to do?" said Gwendolen, with urgent quickness.

"Order my life so as to make any possible amends, and keep away from

doing any sort of injury again," said Deronda, catching her sense that

the time for speech was brief.

"But I can't--I can't; I must go on," said Gwendolen, in a passionate

loud whisper. "I have thrust out others--I have made my gain out of

their loss--tried to make it--tried. And I must go on. I can't alter

it."

It was impossible to answer this instantaneously. Her words had

confirmed his conjecture, and the situation of all concerned rose in

swift images before him. His feeling for those who had been thrust out

sanctioned her remorse; he could not try to nullify it, yet his heart

was full of pity for her. But as soon as he could he answered--taking

up her last words--

"That is the bitterest of all--to wear the yoke of our own wrong-doing.

But if you submitted to that as men submit to maiming or life-long

incurable disease?--and made the unalterable wrong a reason for more

effort toward a good, that may do something to counterbalance the evil?

One who has committed irremediable errors may be scourged by that

consciousness into a higher course than is common. There are many

examples. Feeling what it is to have spoiled one life may well make us

long to save other lives from being spoiled."

"But you have not wronged any one, or spoiled their lives," said

Gwendolen, hastily. "It is only others who have wronged \_you\_."

Deronda colored slightly, but said immediately--"I suppose our keen

feeling for ourselves might end in giving us a keen feeling for others,

if, when we are suffering acutely, we were to consider that others go

through the same sharp experience. That is a sort of remorse before

commission. Can't you understand that?"

"I think I do--now," said Gwendolen. "But you were right--I \_am\_

selfish. I have never thought much of any one's feelings, except my

mother's. I have not been fond of people. But what can I do?" she went

on, more quickly. "I must get up in the morning and do what every one

else does. It is all like a dance set beforehand. I seem to see all

that can be--and I am tired and sick of it. And the world is all

confusion to me"--she made a gesture of disgust. "You say I am

ignorant. But what is the good of trying to know more, unless life were

worth more?"

"This good," said Deronda promptly, with a touch of indignant severity,

which he was inclined to encourage as his own safeguard; "life \_would\_

be worth more to you: some real knowledge would give you an interest in

the world beyond the small drama of personal desires. It is the curse

of your life--forgive me--of so many lives, that all passion is spent

in that narrow round, for want of ideas and sympathies to make a larger

home for it. Is there any single occupation of mind that you care about

with passionate delight or even independent interest?"

Deronda paused, but Gwendolen, looking startled and thrilled as by an

electric shock, said nothing, and he went on more insistently--

"I take what you said of music for a small example--it answers for all

larger things--you will not cultivate it for the sake of a private joy

in it. What sort of earth or heaven would hold any spiritual wealth in

it for souls pauperized by inaction? If one firmament has no stimulus

for our attention and awe, I don't see how four would have it. We

should stamp every possible world with the flatness of our own

inanity--which is necessarily impious, without faith or fellowship. The

refuge you are needing from personal trouble is the higher, the

religious life, which holds an enthusiasm for something more than our

own appetites and vanities. The few may find themselves in it simply by

an elevation of feeling; but for us who have to struggle for our

wisdom, the higher life must be a region in which the affections are

clad with knowledge."

The half-indignant remonstrance that vibrated in Deronda's voice came,

as often happens, from the habit of inward argument with himself rather

than from severity toward Gwendolen: but it had a more beneficial

effect on her than any soothings. Nothing is feebler than the indolent

rebellion of complaint; and to be roused into self-judgment is

comparative activity. For the moment she felt like a shaken

child--shaken out of its wailing into awe, and she said humbly--

"I will try. I will think."

They both stood silent for a minute, as if some third presence had

arrested them,--for Deronda, too, was under that sense of pressure

which is apt to come when our own winged words seem to be hovering

around us,--till Gwendolen began again--

"You said affection was the best thing, and I have hardly any--none

about me. If I could, I would have mamma; but that is impossible.

Things have changed to me so--in such a short time. What I used not to

like I long for now. I think I am almost getting fond of the old things

now they are gone." Her lip trembled.

"Take the present suffering as a painful letting in of light," said

Deronda, more gently. "You are conscious of more beyond the round of

your own inclinations--you know more of the way in which your life

presses on others, and their life on yours. I don't think you could

have escaped the painful process in some form or other."

"But it is a very cruel form," said Gwendolen, beating her foot on the

ground with returning agitation. "I am frightened at everything. I am

frightened at myself. When my blood is fired I can do daring

things--take any leap; but that makes me frightened at myself." She was

looking at nothing outside her; but her eyes were directed toward the

window, away from Deronda, who, with quick comprehension said--

"Turn your fear into a safeguard. Keep your dread fixed on the idea of

increasing that remorse which is so bitter to you. Fixed meditation may

do a great deal toward defining our longing or dread. We are not always

in a state of strong emotion, and when we are calm we can use our

memories and gradually change the bias of our fear, as we do our

tastes. Take your fear as a safeguard. It is like quickness of hearing.

It may make consequences passionately present to you. Try to take hold

of your sensibility, and use it as if it were a faculty, like vision."

Deronda uttered each sentence more urgently; he felt as if he were

seizing a faint chance of rescuing her from some indefinite danger.

"Yes, I know; I understand what you mean," said Gwendolen in her loud

whisper, not turning her eyes, but lifting up her small gloved hand and

waving it in deprecation of the notion that it was easy to obey that

advice. "But if feelings rose--there are some feelings--hatred and

anger--how can I be good when they keep rising? And if there came a

moment when I felt stifled and could bear it no longer----" She broke

off, and with agitated lips looked at Deronda, but the expression on

his face pierced her with an entirely new feeling. He was under the

baffling difficulty of discerning, that what he had been urging on her

was thrown into the pallid distance of mere thought before the outburst

of her habitual emotion. It was as if he saw her drowning while his

limbs were bound. The pained compassion which was spread over his

features as he watched her, affected her with a compunction unlike any

she had felt before, and in a changed and imploring tone she said--

"I am grieving you. I am ungrateful. You \_can\_ help me. I will think of

everything. I will try. Tell me--it will not be a pain to you that I

have dared to speak of my trouble to you? You began it, you know, when

you rebuked me." There was a melancholy smile on her lips as she said

that, but she added more entreatingly, "It will not be a pain to you?"

"Not if it does anything to save you from an evil to come," said

Deronda, with strong emphasis; "otherwise, it will be a lasting pain."

"No--no--it shall not be. It may be--it shall be better with me because

I have known you." She turned immediately, and quitted the room.

When she was on the first landing of the staircase, Sir Hugo passed

across the hall on his way to the library, and saw her. Grandcourt was

not with him.

Deronda, when the baronet entered, was standing in his ordinary

attitude, grasping his coat-collar, with his back to the table, and

with that indefinable expression by which we judge that a man is still

in the shadow of a scene which he has just gone through. He moved,

however, and began to arrange the letters.

"Has Mrs. Grandcourt been in here?" said Sir Hugo.

"Yes, she has."

"Where are the others?"

"I believe she left them somewhere in the grounds."

After a moment's silence, in which Sir Hugo looked at a letter without

reading it, he said "I hope you are not playing with fire, Dan--you

understand me?"

"I believe I do, sir," said Deronda, after a slight hesitation, which

had some repressed anger in it. "But there is nothing answering to your

metaphor--no fire, and therefore no chance of scorching."

Sir Hugo looked searchingly at him, and then said, "So much the better.

For, between ourselves, I fancy there may be some hidden gunpowder in

that establishment."

CHAPTER XXXVII.

\_Aspern.\_ Pardon, my lord--I speak for Sigismund.

\_Fronsberg.\_ For him? Oh, ay--for him I always hold

A pardon safe in bank, sure he will draw

Sooner or later on me. What his need?

Mad project broken? fine mechanic wings

That would not fly? durance, assault on watch,

Bill for Epernay, not a crust to eat?

\_Aspern.\_ Oh, none of these, my lord; he has escaped

From Circe's herd, and seeks to win the love

Of your fair ward Cecilia: but would win

First your consent. You frown.

\_Fronsberg.\_ Distinguish words.

I said I held a pardon, not consent.

In spite of Deronda's reasons for wishing to be in town again--reasons

in which his anxiety for Mirah was blent with curiosity to know more of

the enigmatic Mordecai--he did not manage to go up before Sir Hugo, who

preceded his family that he might be ready for the opening of

Parliament on the sixth of February. Deronda took up his quarters in

Park Lane, aware that his chambers were sufficiently tenanted by Hans

Meyrick. This was what he expected; but he found other things not

altogether according to his expectations.

Most of us remember Retzsch's drawing of destiny in the shape of

Mephistopheles playing at chess with man for his soul, a game in which

we may imagine the clever adversary making a feint of unintended moves

so as to set the beguiled mortal on carrying his defensive pieces away

from the true point of attack. The fiend makes preparation his favorite

object of mockery, that he may fatally persuade us against our taking

out waterproofs when he is well aware the sky is going to clear,

foreseeing that the imbecile will turn this delusion into a prejudice

against waterproofs instead of giving a closer study to the

weather-signs. It is a peculiar test of a man's metal when, after he

has painfully adjusted himself to what seems a wise provision, he finds

all his mental precaution a little beside the mark, and his excellent

intentions no better than miscalculated dovetails, accurately cut from

a wrong starting-point. His magnanimity has got itself ready to meet

misbehavior, and finds quite a different call upon it. Something of

this kind happened to Deronda.

His first impression was one of pure pleasure and amusement at finding

his sitting-room transformed into an \_atelier\_ strewed with

miscellaneous drawings and with the contents of two chests from Rome,

the lower half of the windows darkened with baize, and the blonde Hans

in his weird youth as the presiding genius of the littered place--his

hair longer than of old, his face more whimsically creased, and his

high voice as usual getting higher under the excitement of rapid talk.

The friendship of the two had been kept up warmly since the memorable

Cambridge time, not only by correspondence but by little episodes of

companionship abroad and in England, and the original relation of

confidence on one side and indulgence on the other had been developed

in practice, as is wont to be the case where such spiritual borrowing

and lending has been well begun.

"I knew you would like to see my casts and antiquities," said Hans,

after the first hearty greetings and inquiries, "so I didn't scruple to

unlade my chests here. But I've found two rooms at Chelsea not many

hundred yards from my mother and sisters, and I shall soon be ready to

hang out there--when they've scraped the walls and put in some new

lights. That's all I'm waiting for. But you see I don't wait to begin

work: you can't conceive what a great fellow I'm going to be. The seed

of immortality has sprouted within me."

"Only a fungoid growth, I dare say--a growing disease in the lungs,"

said Deronda, accustomed to treat Hans in brotherly fashion. He was

walking toward some drawings propped on the ledge of his bookcases;

five rapidly-sketched heads--different aspects of the same face. He

stood at a convenient distance from them, without making any remark.

Hans, too, was silent for a minute, took up his palette and began

touching the picture on his easel.

"What do you think of them?" he said at last.

"The full face looks too massive; otherwise the likenesses are good,"

said Deronda, more coldly than was usual with him.

"No, it is not too massive," said Hans, decisively. "I have noted that.

There is always a little surprise when one passes from the profile to

the full face. But I shall enlarge her scale for Berenice. I am making

a Berenice series--look at the sketches along there--and now I think of

it, you are just the model I want for the Agrippa." Hans, still with

pencil and palette in hand, had moved to Deronda's side while he said

this, but he added hastily, as if conscious of a mistake, "No, no, I

forgot; you don't like sitting for your portrait, confound you!

However, I've picked up a capital Titus. There are to be five in the

series. The first is Berenice clasping the knees of Gessius Florus and

beseeching him to spare her people; I've got that on the easel. Then,

this, where she is standing on the Xystus with Agrippa, entreating the

people not to injure themselves by resistance."

"Agrippa's legs will never do," said Deronda.

"The legs are good realistically," said Hans, his face creasing drolly;

"public men are often shaky about the legs--' Their legs, the emblem of

their various thought,' as somebody says in the 'Rehearsal.'"

"But these are as impossible as the legs of Raphael's Alcibiades," said

Deronda.

"Then they are good ideally," said Hans. "Agrippa's legs were possibly

bad; I idealize that and make them impossibly bad. Art, my Eugenius,

must intensify. But never mind the legs now: the third sketch in the

series is Berenice exulting in the prospects of being Empress of Rome,

when the news has come that Vespasian is declared Emperor and her lover

Titus his successor."

"You must put a scroll in her mouth, else people will not understand

that. You can't tell that in a picture."

"It will make them feel their ignorance then--an excellent Ã¦sthetic

effect. The fourth is, Titus sending Berenice away from Rome after she

has shared his palace for ten years--both reluctant, both sad--\_invitus

invitam\_, as Suetonius hath it. I've found a model for the Roman brute."

"Shall you make Berenice look fifty? She must have been that."

"No, no; a few mature touches to show the lapse of time. Dark-eyed

beauty wears well, hers particularly. But now, here is the fifth:

Berenice seated lonely on the ruins of Jerusalem. That is pure

imagination. That is what ought to have been--perhaps was. Now, see how

I tell a pathetic negative. Nobody knows what became of her--that is

finely indicated by the series coming to a close. There is no sixth

picture." Here Hans pretended to speak with a gasping sense of

sublimity, and drew back his head with a frown, as if looking for a

like impression on Deronda. "I break off in the Homeric style. The

story is chipped off, so to speak, and passes with a ragged edge into

nothing--\_le nÃ©ant\_; can anything be more sublime, especially in

French? The vulgar would desire to see her corpse and burial--perhaps

her will read and her linen distributed. But now come and look at this

on the easel. I have made some way there."

"That beseeching attitude is really good," said Deronda, after a

moment's contemplation. "You have been very industrious in the

Christmas holidays; for I suppose you have taken up the subject since

you came to London." Neither of them had yet mentioned Mirah.

"No," said Hans, putting touches to his picture, "I made up my mind to

the subject before. I take that lucky chance for an augury that I am

going to burst on the world as a great painter. I saw a splendid woman

in the Trastevere--the grandest women there are half Jewesses--and she

set me hunting for a fine situation of a Jewess at Rome. Like other men

of vast learning, I ended by taking what lay on the surface. I'll show

you a sketch of the Trasteverina's head when I can lay my hands on it."

"I should think she would be a more suitable model for Berenice," said

Deronda, not knowing exactly how to express his discontent.

"Not a bit of it. The model ought to be the most beautiful Jewess in

the world, and I have found her."

"Have you made yourself sure that she would like to figure in that

character? I should think no woman would be more abhorrent to her. Does

she quite know what you are doing?"

"Certainly. I got her to throw herself precisely into this attitude.

Little mother sat for Gessius Florus, and Mirah clasped her knees."

Here Hans went a little way off and looked at the effect of his touches.

"I dare say she knows nothing about Berenice's history," said Deronda,

feeling more indignation than he would have been able to justify.

"Oh, yes, she does--ladies' edition. Berenice was a fervid patriot, but

was beguiled by love and ambition into attaching herself to the

arch-enemy of her people. Whence the Nemesis. Mirah takes it as a

tragic parable, and cries to think what the penitent Berenice suffered

as she wandered back to Jerusalem and sat desolate amidst desolation.

That was her own phrase. I couldn't find it in my heart to tell her I

invented that part of the story."

"Show me your Trasteverina," said Deronda, chiefly in order to hinder

himself from saying something else.

"Shall you mind turning over that folio?" said Hans. "My studies of

heads are all there. But they are in confusion. You will perhaps find

her next to a crop-eared undergraduate."

After Deronda had been turning over the drawings a minute or two, he

said--

"These seem to be all Cambridge heads and bits of country. Perhaps I

had better begin at the other end."

"No; you'll find her about the middle. I emptied one folio into

another."

"Is this one of your undergraduates?" said Deronda, holding up a

drawing. "It's an unusually agreeable face."

"That! Oh, that's a man named Gascoigne--Rex Gascoigne. An uncommonly

good fellow; his upper lip, too, is good. I coached him before he got

his scholarship. He ought to have taken honors last Easter. But he was

ill, and has had to stay up another year. I must look him up. I want to

know how he's going on."

"Here she is, I suppose," said Deronda, holding up a sketch of the

Trasteverina.

"Ah," said Hans, looking at it rather contemptuously, "too coarse. I

was unregenerate then."

Deronda was silent while he closed the folio, leaving the Trasteverina

outside. Then clasping his coat-collar, and turning toward Hans, he

said, "I dare say my scruples are excessive, Meyrick, but I must ask

you to oblige me by giving up this notion."

Hans threw himself into a tragic attitude, and screamed, "What! my

series--my immortal Berenice series? Think of what you are saying,

man--destroying, as Milton says, not a life but an immortality. Wait

before you, answer, that I may deposit the implements of my art and be

ready to uproot my hair."

Here Hans laid down his pencil and palette, threw himself backward into

a great chair, and hanging limply over the side, shook his long hair

over his face, lifted his hooked fingers on each side his head, and

looked up with comic terror at Deronda, who was obliged to smile, as he

said--

"Paint as many Berenices as you like, but I wish you could feel with

me--perhaps you will, on reflection--that you should choose another

model."

"Why?" said Hans, standing up, and looking serious again.

"Because she may get into such a position that her face is likely to be

recognized. Mrs. Meyrick and I are anxious for her that she should be

known as an admirable singer. It is right, and she wishes it, that she

should make herself independent. And she has excellent chances. One

good introduction is secured already, and I am going to speak to

Klesmer. Her face may come to be very well known, and--well, it is

useless to attempt to explain, unless you feel as I do. I believe that

if Mirah saw the circumstances clearly, she would strongly object to

being exhibited in this way--to allowing herself to be used as a model

for a heroine of this sort."

As Hans stood with his thumbs in the belt of his blouse, listening to

this speech, his face showed a growing surprise melting into amusement,

that at last would have its way in an explosive laugh: but seeing that

Deronda looked gravely offended, he checked himself to say, "Excuse my

laughing, Deronda. You never gave me an advantage over you before. If

it had been about anything but my own pictures, I should have swallowed

every word because you said it. And so you actually believe that I

should get my five pictures hung on the line in a conspicuous position,

and carefully studied by the public? Zounds, man! cider-cup and conceit

never gave me half such a beautiful dream. My pictures are likely to

remain as private as the utmost hypersensitiveness could desire."

Hans turned to paint again as a way of filling up awkward pauses.

Deronda stood perfectly still, recognizing his mistake as to publicity,

but also conscious that his repugnance was not much diminished. He was

the reverse of satisfied either with himself or with Hans; but the

power of being quiet carries a man well through moments of

embarrassment. Hans had a reverence for his friend which made him feel

a sort of shyness at Deronda's being in the wrong; but it were not in

his nature to give up anything readily, though it were only a whim--or

rather, especially if it were a whim, and he presently went on,

painting the while--

"But even supposing I had a public rushing after my pictures as if they

were a railway series including nurses, babies and bonnet-boxes, I

can't see any justice in your objection. Every painter worth

remembering has painted the face he admired most, as often as he could.

It is a part of his soul that goes out into his pictures. He diffuses

its influence in that way. He puts what he hates into a caricature. He

puts what he adores into some sacred, heroic form. If a man could paint

the woman he loves a thousand times as the Stella Marts to put courage

into the sailors on board a thousand ships, so much the more honor to

her. Isn't that better than painting a piece of staring immodesty and

calling it by a worshipful name?"

"Every objection can be answered if you take broad ground enough, Hans:

no special question of conduct can be properly settled in that way,"

said Deronda, with a touch of peremptoriness. "I might admit all your

generalities, and yet be right in saying you ought not to publish

Mirah's face as a model for Berenice. But I give up the question of

publicity. I was unreasonable there." Deronda hesitated a moment.

"Still, even as a private affair, there might be good reasons for your

not indulging yourself too much in painting her from the point of view

you mention. You must feel that her situation at present is a very

delicate one; and until she is in more independence, she should be kept

as carefully as a bit of Venetian glass, for fear of shaking her out of

the safe place she is lodged in. Are you quite sure of your own

discretion? Excuse me, Hans. My having found her binds me to watch over

her. Do you understand me?"

"Perfectly," said Hans, turning his face into a good-humored smile.

"You have the very justifiable opinion of me that I am likely to

shatter all the glass in my way, and break my own skull into the

bargain. Quite fair. Since I got into the scrape of being born,

everything I have liked best has been a scrape either for myself or

somebody else. Everything I have taken to heartily has somehow turned

into a scrape. My painting is the last scrape; and I shall be all my

life getting out of it. You think now I shall get into a scrape at

home. No; I am regenerate. You think I must be over head and ears in

love with Mirah. Quite right; so I am. But you think I shall scream and

plunge and spoil everything. There you are mistaken--excusably, but

transcendently mistaken. I have undergone baptism by immersion. Awe

takes care of me. Ask the little mother."

"You don't reckon a hopeless love among your scrapes, then," said

Deronda, whose voice seemed to get deeper as Hans's went higher.

"I don't mean to call mine hopeless," said Hans, with provoking

coolness, laying down his tools, thrusting his thumbs into his belt,

and moving away a little, as if to contemplate his picture more

deliberately.

"My dear fellow, you are only preparing misery for yourself," said

Deronda, decisively. "She would not marry a Christian, even if she

loved him. Have you heard her--of course you have--heard her speak of

her people and her religion?"

"That can't last," said Hans. "She will see no Jew who is tolerable.

Every male of that race is insupportable,--'insupportably

advancing'--his nose."

"She may rejoin her family. That is what she longs for. Her mother and

brother are probably strict Jews."

"I'll turn proselyte, if she wishes it," said Hans, with a shrug and a

laugh.

"Don't talk nonsense, Hans. I thought you professed a serious love for

her," said Deronda, getting heated.

"So I do. You think it desperate, but I don't."

"I know nothing; I can't tell what has happened. We must be prepared

for surprises. But I can hardly imagine a greater surprise to me than

that there should have seemed to be anything in Mirah's sentiments for

you to found a romantic hope on." Deronda felt that he was too

contemptuous.

"I don't found my romantic hopes on a woman's sentiments," said Hans,

perversely inclined to be the merrier when he was addressed with

gravity. "I go to science and philosophy for my romance. Nature

designed Mirah to fall in love with me. The amalgamation of races

demands it--the mitigation of human ugliness demands it--the affinity

of contrasts assures it. I am the utmost contrast to Mirah--a bleached

Christian, who can't sing two notes in tune. Who has a chance against

me?"

"I see now; it was all \_persiflage\_. You don't mean a word you say,

Meyrick," said Deronda, laying his hand on Meyrick's shoulder, and

speaking in a tone of cordial relief. "I was a wiseacre to answer you

seriously."

"Upon my honor I do mean it, though," said Hans, facing round and

laying his left hand on Deronda's shoulder, so that their eyes fronted

each other closely. "I am at the confessional. I meant to tell you as

soon as you came. My mother says you are Mirah's guardian, and she

thinks herself responsible to you for every breath that falls on Mirah

in her house. Well, I love her--I worship her--I won't despair--I mean

to deserve her."

"My dear fellow, you can't do it," said Deronda, quickly.

"I should have said, I mean to try."

"You can't keep your resolve, Hans. You used to resolve what you would

do for your mother and sisters."

"You have a right to reproach me, old fellow," said Hans, gently.

"Perhaps I am ungenerous," said Deronda, not apologetically, however.

"Yet it can't be ungenerous to warn you that you are indulging mad,

Quixotic expectations."

"Who will be hurt but myself, then?" said Hans, putting out his lip. "I

am not going to say anything to her unless I felt sure of the answer. I

dare not ask the oracles: I prefer a cheerful caliginosity, as Sir

Thomas Browne might say. I would rather run my chance there and lose,

than be sure of winning anywhere else. And I don't mean to swallow the

poison of despair, though you are disposed to thrust it on me. I am

giving up wine, so let me get a little drunk on hope and vanity."

"With all my heart, if it will do you any good," said Deronda, loosing

Hans's shoulder, with a little push. He made his tone kindly, but his

words were from the lip only. As to his real feeling he was silenced.

He was conscious of that peculiar irritation which will sometimes

befall the man whom others are inclined to trust as a mentor--the

irritation of perceiving that he is supposed to be entirely off the

same plane of desire and temptation as those who confess to him. Our

guides, we pretend, must be sinless: as if those were not often the

best teachers who only yesterday got corrected for their mistakes.

Throughout their friendship Deronda had been used to Hans's egotism,

but he had never before felt intolerant of it: when Hans, habitually

pouring out his own feelings and affairs, had never cared for any

detail in return, and, if he chanced to know any, and soon forgotten

it. Deronda had been inwardly as well as outwardly indulgent--nay,

satisfied. But now he had noted with some indignation, all the stronger

because it must not be betrayed, Hans's evident assumption that for any

danger of rivalry or jealousy in relation to Mirah, Deronda was not as

much out of the question as the angel Gabriel. It is one thing to be

resolute in placing one's self out of the question, and another to

endure that others should perform that exclusion for us. He had

expected that Hans would give him trouble: what he had not expected was

that the trouble would have a strong element of personal feeling. And

he was rather ashamed that Hans's hopes caused him uneasiness in spite

of his well-warranted conviction that they would never be fulfilled.

They had raised an image of Mirah changing; and however he might

protest that the change would not happen, the protest kept up the

unpleasant image. Altogether poor Hans seemed to be entering into

Deronda's experience in a disproportionate manner--going beyond his

part of rescued prodigal, and rousing a feeling quite distinct from

compassionate affection.

When Deronda went to Chelsea he was not made as comfortable as he ought

to have been by Mrs. Meyrick's evident release from anxiety about the

beloved but incalculable son. Mirah seemed livelier than before, and

for the first time he saw her laugh. It was when they were talking of

Hans, he being naturally the mother's first topic. Mirah wished to know

if Deronda had seen Mr. Hans going through a sort of character piece

without changing his dress.

"He passes from one figure to another as if he were a bit of flame

where you fancied the figures without seeing them," said Mirah, full of

her subject; "he is so wonderfully quick. I used never to like comic

things on the stage--they were dwelt on too long; but all in one minute

Mr. Hans makes himself a blind bard, and then Rienzi addressing the

Romans, and then an opera-dancer, and then a desponding young

gentleman--I am sorry for them all, and yet I laugh, all in one"--here

Mirah gave a little laugh that might have entered into a song.

"We hardly thought that Mirah could laugh till Hans came," said Mrs.

Meyrick, seeing that Deronda, like herself, was observing the pretty

picture.

"Hans seems in great force just now," said Deronda in a tone of

congratulation. "I don't wonder at his enlivening you."

"He's been just perfect ever since he came back," said Mrs. Meyrick,

keeping to herself the next clause--"if it will but last."

"It is a great happiness," said Mirah, "to see the son and brother come

into this dear home. And I hear them all talk about what they did

together when they were little. That seems like heaven, and to have a

mother and brother who talk in that way. I have never had it."

"Nor I," said Deronda, involuntarily.

"No?" said Mirah, regretfully. "I wish you had. I wish you had had

every good." The last words were uttered with a serious ardor as if

they had been part of a litany, while her eyes were fixed on Deronda,

who with his elbow on the back of his chair was contemplating her by

the new light of the impression she had made on Hans, and the

possibility of her being attracted by that extraordinary contrast. It

was no more than what had happened on each former visit of his, that

Mirah appeared to enjoy speaking of what she felt very much as a little

girl fresh from school pours forth spontaneously all the long-repressed

chat for which she has found willing ears. For the first time in her

life Mirah was among those whom she entirely trusted, and her original

visionary impression that Deronda was a divinely-sent messenger hung

about his image still, stirring always anew the disposition to reliance

and openness. It was in this way she took what might have been the

injurious flattery of admiring attention into which her helpless

dependence had been suddenly transformed. Every one around her watched

for her looks and words, and the effect on her was simply that of

having passed from a trifling imprisonment into an exhilarating air

which made speech and action a delight. To her mind it was all a gift

from others' goodness. But that word of Deronda's implying that there

had been some lack in his life which might be compared with anything

she had known in hers, was an entirely new inlet of thought about him.

After her first expression of sorrowful surprise she went on--

"But Mr. Hans said yesterday that you thought so much of others you

hardly wanted anything for yourself. He told us a wonderful story of

Buddha giving himself to the famished tigress to save her and her

little ones from starving. And he said you were like Buddha. That is

what we all imagine of you."

"Pray don't imagine that," said Deronda, who had lately been finding

such suppositions rather exasperating. "Even if it were true that I

thought so much of others, it would not follow that I had no wants for

myself. When Buddha let the tigress eat him he might have been very

hungry himself."

"Perhaps if he was starved he would not mind so much about being

eaten," said Mab, shyly.

"Please don't think that, Mab; it takes away the beauty of the action,"

said Mirah.

"But if it were true, Mirah?" said the rational Amy, having a

half-holiday from her teaching; "you always take what is beautiful as

if it were true."

"So it is," said Mirah, gently. "If people have thought what is the

most beautiful and the best thing, it must be true. It is always there."

"Now, Mirah, what do you mean?" said Amy.

"I understand her," said Deronda, coming to the rescue.

"It is a truth in thought though it may never have been carried out in

action. It lives as an idea. Is that it?" He turned to Mirah, who was

listening with a blind look in her lovely eyes.

"It must be that, because you understand me, but I cannot quite

explain," said Mirah, rather abstractedly--still searching for some

expression.

"But \_was\_ it beautiful for Buddha to let the tiger eat him?" said Amy,

changing her ground. "It would be a bad pattern."

"The world would get full of fat tigers," said Mab.

Deronda laughed, but defended the myth. "It is like a passionate word,"

he said; "the exaggeration is a flash of fervor. It is an extreme image

of what is happening every day-the transmutation of self."

"I think I can say what I mean, now," said Mirah, who had not heard the

intermediate talk. "When the best thing comes into our thoughts, it is

like what my mother has been to me. She has been just as really with me

as all the other people about me--often more really with me."

Deronda, inwardly wincing under this illustration, which brought other

possible realities about that mother vividly before him, presently

turned the conversation by saying, "But we must not get too far away

from practical matters. I came, for one thing, to tell of an interview

I had yesterday, which I hope Mirah will find to have been useful to

her. It was with Klesmer, the great pianist."

"Ah?" said Mrs. Meyrick, with satisfaction. "You think he will help

her?"

"I hope so. He is very much occupied, but has promised to fix a time

for receiving and hearing Miss Lapidoth, as we must learn to call

her"--here Deronda smiled at Mirah--"If she consents to go to him."

"I shall be very grateful," said Mirah. "He wants to hear me sing,

before he can judge whether I ought to be helped."

Deronda was struck with her plain sense about these matters of

practical concern.

"It will not be at all trying to you, I hope, if Mrs. Meyrick will

kindly go with you to Klesmer's house."

"Oh, no, not at all trying. I have been doing that all my life--I mean,

told to do things that others may judge of me. And I have gone through

a bad trial of that sort. I am prepared to bear it, and do some very

small thing. Is Klesmer a severe man?"

"He is peculiar, but I have not had experience enough of him to know

whether he would be what you would call severe."

"I know he is kind-hearted--kind in action, if not in speech."

"I have been used to be frowned at and not praised," said Mirah.

"By the by, Klesmer frowns a good deal," said Deronda, "but there is

often a sort of smile in his eyes all the while. Unhappily he wears

spectacles, so you must catch him in the right light to see the smile."

"I shall not be frightened," said Mirah. "If he were like a roaring

lion, he only wants me to sing. I shall do what I can."

"Then I feel sure you will not mind being invited to sing in Lady

Mallinger's drawing-room," said Deronda. "She intends to ask you next

month, and will invite many ladies to hear you, who are likely to want

lessons from you for their daughters."

"How fast we are mounting!" said Mrs. Meyrick, with delight. "You never

thought of getting grand so quickly, Mirah."

"I am a little frightened at being called Miss Lapidoth," said Mirah,

coloring with a new uneasiness. "Might I be called Cohen?"

"I understand you," said Deronda, promptly. "But I assure you, you must

not be called Cohen. The name is inadmissible for a singer. This is one

of the trifles in which we must conform to vulgar prejudice. We could

choose some other name, however--such as singers ordinarily choose--an

Italian or Spanish name, which would suit your \_physique\_." To Deronda

just now the name Cohen was equivalent to the ugliest of yellow badges.

Mirah reflected a little, anxiously, then said, "No. If Cohen will not

do, I will keep the name I have been called by. I will not hide myself.

I have friends to protect me. And now--if my father were very miserable

and wanted help--no," she said, looking at Mrs. Meyrick, "I should

think, then, that he was perhaps crying as I used to see him, and had

nobody to pity him, and I had hidden myself from him. He had none

belonging to him but me. Others that made friends with him always left

him."

"Keep to what you feel right, my dear child," said Mrs. Meyrick. "\_I\_

would not persuade you to the contrary." For her own part she had no

patience or pity for that father, and would have left him to his crying.

Deronda was saying to himself, "I am rather base to be angry with Hans.

How can he help being in love with her? But it is too absurdly

presumptuous for him even to frame the idea of appropriating her, and a

sort of blasphemy to suppose that she could possibly give herself to

him."

What would it be for Daniel Deronda to entertain such thoughts? He was

not one who could quite naively introduce himself where he had just

excluded his friend, yet it was undeniable that what had just happened

made a new stage in his feeling toward Mirah. But apart from other

grounds for self-repression, reasons both definite and vague made him

shut away that question as he might have shut up a half-opened writing

that would have carried his imagination too far, and given too much

shape to presentiments. Might there not come a disclosure which would

hold the missing determination of his course? What did he really know

about his origin? Strangely in these latter months when it seemed right

that he should exert his will in the choice of a destination, the

passion of his nature had got more and more locked by this uncertainty.

The disclosure might bring its pain, indeed the likelihood seemed to

him to be all on that side; but if it helped him to make his life a

sequence which would take the form of duty--if it saved him from having

to make an arbitrary selection where he felt no preponderance of

desire? Still more, he wanted to escape standing as a critic outside

the activities of men, stiffened into the ridiculous attitude of

self-assigned superiority. His chief tether was his early inwrought

affection for Sir Hugo, making him gratefully deferential to wishes

with which he had little agreement: but gratitude had been sometimes

disturbed by doubts which were near reducing it to a fear of being

ungrateful. Many of us complain that half our birthright is sharp duty:

Deronda was more inclined to complain that he was robbed of this half;

yet he accused himself, as he would have accused another, of being

weakly self-conscious and wanting in resolve. He was the reverse of

that type painted for us in Faulconbridge and Edmund of Gloster, whose

coarse ambition for personal success is inflamed by a defiance of

accidental disadvantages. To Daniel the words Father and Mother had the

altar-fire in them; and the thought of all closest relations of our

nature held still something of the mystic power which had made his neck

and ears burn in boyhood. The average man may regard this sensibility

on the question of birth as preposterous and hardly credible; but with

the utmost respect for his knowledge as the rock from which all other

knowledge is hewn, it must be admitted that many well-proved facts are

dark to the average man, even concerning the action of his own heart

and the structure of his own retina. A century ago he and all his

forefathers had not had the slightest notion of that electric discharge

by means of which they had all wagged their tongues mistakenly; any

more than they were awake to the secluded anguish of exceptional

sensitiveness into which many a carelessly-begotten child of man is

born.

Perhaps the ferment was all the stronger in Deronda's mind because he

had never had a confidant to whom he could open himself on these

delicate subjects. He had always been leaned on instead of being

invited to lean. Sometimes he had longed for the sort of friend to whom

he might possibly unfold his experience: a young man like himself who

sustained a private grief and was not too confident about his own

career; speculative enough to understand every moral difficulty, yet

socially susceptible, as he himself was, and having every outward sign

of equality either in bodily or spiritual wrestling;--for he had found

it impossible to reciprocate confidences with one who looked up to him.

But he had no expectation of meeting the friend he imagined. Deronda's

was not one of those quiveringly-poised natures that lend themselves to

second-sight.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

There be who hold that the deeper tragedy were a Prometheus Bound not

\_after\_ but \_before\_ he had well got the celestial fire into

the \_narthex\_ whereby it might be conveyed to mortals: thrust by

the Kratos and Bia of instituted methods into a solitude of despised

ideas, fastened in throbbing helplessness by the fatal pressure of

poverty and disease--a solitude where many pass by, but none regard.

"Second-sight" is a flag over disputed ground. But it is matter of

knowledge that there are persons whose yearnings, conceptions--nay,

traveled conclusions--continually take the form of images which have a

foreshadowing power; the deed they would do starts up before them in

complete shape, making a coercive type; the event they hunger for or

dread rises into vision with a seed-like growth, feeding itself fast on

unnumbered impressions. They are not always the less capable of the

argumentative process, nor less sane than the commonplace calculators

of the market: sometimes it may be that their natures have manifold

openings, like the hundred-gated Thebes, where there may naturally be a

greater and more miscellaneous inrush than through a narrow

beadle-watched portal. No doubt there are abject specimens of the

visionary, as there is a minim mammal which you might imprison in the

finger of your glove. That small relative of the elephant has no harm

in him; but what great mental or social type is free from specimens

whose insignificance is both ugly and noxious? One is afraid to think

of all that the genus "patriot" embraces; or of the elbowing there

might be at the day of judgment for those who ranked as authors, and

brought volumes either in their hands or on trucks.

This apology for inevitable kinship is meant to usher in some facts

about Mordecai, whose figure had bitten itself into Deronda's mind as a

new question which he felt an interest in getting answered. But the

interest was no more than a vaguely-expectant suspense: the

consumptive-looking Jew, apparently a fervid student of some kind,

getting his crust by a quiet handicraft, like Spinoza, fitted into none

of Deronda's anticipations.

It was otherwise with the effect of their meeting on Mordecai. For many

winters, while he had been conscious of an ebbing physical life, and as

widening spiritual loneliness, all his passionate desire had

concentrated itself in the yearning for some young ear into which he

could pour his mind as a testament, some soul kindred enough to accept

the spiritual product of his own brief, painful life, as a mission to

be executed. It was remarkable that the hopefulness which is often the

beneficent illusion of consumptive patients, was in Mordecai wholly

diverted from the prospect of bodily recovery and carried into the

current of this yearning for transmission. The yearning, which had

panted upward from out of over-whelming discouragements, had grown into

a hope--the hope into a confident belief, which, instead of being

checked by the clear conception he had of his hastening decline, took

rather the intensity of expectant faith in a prophecy which has only

brief space to get fulfilled in.

Some years had now gone since he had first begun to measure men with a

keen glance, searching for a possibility which became more and more a

distinct conception. Such distinctness as it had at first was reached

chiefly by a method of contrast: he wanted to find a man who differed

from himself. Tracing reasons in that self for the rebuffs he had met

with and the hindrances that beset him, he imagined a man who would

have all the elements necessary for sympathy with him, but in an

embodiment unlike his own: he must be a Jew, intellectually cultured,

morally fervid--in all this a nature ready to be plenished from

Mordecai's; but his face and frame must be beautiful and strong, he

must have been used to all the refinements of social life, his voice

must flow with a full and easy current, his circumstances be free from

sordid need: he must glorify the possibilities of the Jew, not sit and

wonder as Mordecai did, bearing the stamp of his people amid the sign

of poverty and waning breath. Sensitive to physical characteristics, he

had, both abroad and in England, looked at pictures as well as men, and

in a vacant hour he had sometimes lingered in the National Gallery in

search of paintings which might feed his hopefulness with grave and

noble types of the human form, such as might well belong to men of his

own race. But he returned in disappointment. The instances are

scattered but thinly over the galleries of Europe, in which the fortune

or selection even of the chief masters has given to art a face at once

young, grand, and beautiful, where, if there is any melancholy, it is

no feeble passivity, but enters into the foreshadowed capability of

heroism.

Some observant persons may perhaps remember his emaciated figure, and

dark eyes deep in their sockets, as he stood in front of a picture that

had touched him either to new or habitual meditation: he commonly wore

a cloth cap with black fur round it, which no painter would have asked

him to take off. But spectators would be likely to think of him as an

odd-looking Jew who probably got money out of pictures; and Mordecai,

when he looked at them, was perfectly aware of the impression he made.

Experience had rendered him morbidly alive to the effect of a man's

poverty and other physical disadvantages in cheapening his ideas,

unless they are those of a Peter the Hermit who has a tocsin for the

rabble. But he was too sane and generous to attribute his spiritual

banishment solely to the excusable prejudices of others; certain

incapacities of his own had made the sentence of exclusion; and hence

it was that his imagination had constructed another man who would be

something more ample than the second soul bestowed, according to the

notion of the Cabbalists, to help out the insufficient first--who would

be a blooming human life, ready to incorporate all that was worthiest

in an existence whose visible, palpable part was burning itself fast

away. His inward need for the conception of this expanded, prolonged

self was reflected as an outward necessity. The thoughts of his heart

(that ancient phrase best shadows the truth) seemed to him too

precious, too closely interwoven with the growth of things not to have

a further destiny. And as the more beautiful, the stronger, the more

executive self took shape in his mind, he loved it beforehand with an

affection half identifying, half contemplative and grateful.

Mordecai's mind wrought so constantly in images, that his coherent

trains of thought often resembled the significant dreams attributed to

sleepers by waking persons in their most inventive moments: nay, they

often resembled genuine dreams in their way of breaking off the passage

from the known to the unknown. Thus, for a long while, he habitually

thought of the Being answering to his need as one distantly approaching

or turning his back toward him, darkly painted against a golden sky.

The reason of the golden sky lay in one of Mordecai's habits. He was

keenly alive to some poetic aspects of London; and a favorite resort of

his, when strength and leisure allowed, was to some of the bridges,

especially about sunrise or sunset. Even when he was bending over

watch-wheels and trinkets, or seated in a small upper room looking out

on dingy bricks and dingy cracked windows, his imagination

spontaneously planted him on some spot where he had a far-stretching

scene; his thoughts went on in wide spaces; and whenever he could, he

tried to have in reality the influences of a large sky. Leaning on the

parapet of Blackfriar's Bridge, and gazing meditatively, the breadth

and calm of the river, with its long vista half hazy, half luminous,

the grand dim masses of tall forms of buildings which were the signs of

world-commerce, the oncoming of boats and barges from the still

distance into sound and color, entered into his mood and blent

themselves indistinguishably with his thinking, as a fine symphony to

which we can hardly be said to listen, makes a medium that bears up our

spiritual wings. Thus it happened that the figure representative of

Mordecai's longing was mentally seen darkened by the excess of light in

the aerial background. But in the inevitable progress of his

imagination toward fuller detail, he ceased to see the figure with its

back toward him. It began to advance, and a face became discernible;

the words youth, beauty, refinement, Jewish birth, noble gravity,

turned into hardly individual but typical form and color: gathered from

his memory of faces seen among the Jews of Holland and Bohemia, and

from the paintings which revived that memory. Reverently let it be said

of this mature spiritual need that it was akin to the boy's and girl's

picturing of the future beloved; but the stirrings of such young desire

are feeble compared with the passionate current of an ideal life

straining to embody itself, made intense by resistance to imminent

dissolution. The visionary form became a companion and auditor; keeping

a place not only in the waking imagination, but in those dreams of

lighter slumber of which it is truest to say, "I sleep, but my heart

waketh"--when the disturbing trivial story of yesterday is charged with

the impassioned purpose of years.

Of late the urgency of irremediable time, measured by the gradual

choking of life, had turned Mordecai's trust into an agitated watch for

the fulfillment that must be at hand. Was the bell on the verge of

tolling, the sentence about to be executed? The deliverer's footstep

must be near--the deliverer who was to rescue Mordecai's spiritual

travail from oblivion, and give it an abiding-place in the best

heritage of his people. An insane exaggeration of his own value, even

if his ideas had been as true and precious as those of Columbus or

Newton, many would have counted this yearning, taking it as the

sublimer part for a man to say, "If not I, then another," and to hold

cheap the meaning of his own life. But the fuller nature desires to be

an agent, to create, and not merely to look on: strong love hungers to

bless, and not merely to behold blessing. And while there is warmth

enough in the sun to feed an energetic life, there will still be men to

feel, "I am lord of this moment's change, and will charge it with my

soul."

But with that mingling of inconsequence which belongs to us all, and

not unhappily, since it saves us from many effects of mistake,

Mordecai's confidence in the friend to come did not suffice to make him

passive, and he tried expedients, pathetically humble, such as happened

to be within his reach, for communicating something of himself. It was

now two years since he had taken up his abode under Ezra Cohen's roof,

where he was regarded with much good-will as a compound of workman,

dominie, vessel of charity, inspired idiot, man of piety, and (if he

were inquired into) dangerous heretic. During that time little Jacob

had advanced into knickerbockers, and into that quickness of

apprehension which has been already made manifest in relation to

hardware and exchange. He had also advanced in attachment to Mordecai,

regarding him as an inferior, but liking him none the worse, and taking

his helpful cleverness as he might have taken the services of an

enslaved Djinn. As for Mordecai, he had given Jacob his first lessons,

and his habitual tenderness easily turned into the teacher's

fatherhood. Though he was fully conscious of the spiritual distance

between the parents and himself, and would never have attempted any

communication to them from his peculiar world, the boy moved him with

that idealizing affection which merges the qualities of the individual

child in the glory of childhood and the possibilities of a long future.

And this feeling had drawn him on, at first without premeditation, and

afterward with conscious purpose, to a sort of outpouring in the ear of

the boy which might have seemed wild enough to any excellent man of

business who overheard it. But none overheard when Jacob went up to

Mordecai's room one day, for example, in which there was little work to

be done, or at an hour when the work was ended, and after a brief

lesson in English reading or in numeration, was induced to remain

standing at his teacher's knees, or chose to jump astride them, often

to the patient fatigue of the wasted limbs. The inducement was perhaps

the mending of a toy, or some little mechanical device in which

Mordecai's well-practiced finger-tips had an exceptional skill; and

with the boy thus tethered, he would begin to repeat a Hebrew poem of

his own, into which years before he had poured his first youthful

ardors for that conception of a blended past and future which was the

mistress of his soul, telling Jacob to say the words after him.

"The boy will get them engraved within him," thought Mordecai; "it is a

way of printing."

None readier than Jacob at this fascinating game of imitating

unintelligible words; and if no opposing diversion occurred he would

sometimes carry on his share in it as long as the teacher's breath

would last out. For Mordecai threw into each repetition the fervor

befitting a sacred occasion. In such instances, Jacob would show no

other distraction than reaching out and surveying the contents of his

pockets; or drawing down the skin of his cheeks to make his eyes look

awful, and rolling his head to complete the effect; or alternately

handling his own nose and Mordecai's as if to test the relation of

their masses. Under all this the fervid reciter would not pause,

satisfied if the young organs of speech would submit themselves. But

most commonly a sudden impulse sent Jacob leaping away into some antic

or active amusement, when, instead of following the recitation he would

return upon the foregoing words most ready to his tongue, and mouth or

gabble, with a see-saw suited to the action of his limbs, a verse on

which Mordecai had spent some of his too scanty heart's blood. Yet he

waited with such patience as a prophet needs, and began his strange

printing again undiscouraged on the morrow, saying inwardly--

"My words may rule him some day. Their meaning may flash out on him. It

is so with a nation--after many days."

Meanwhile Jacob's sense of power was increased and his time enlivened

by a store of magical articulation with which he made the baby crow, or

drove the large cat into a dark corner, or promised himself to frighten

any incidental Christian of his own years. One week he had

unfortunately seen a street mountebank, and this carried off his

muscular imitativeness in sad divergence from New Hebrew poetry, after

the model of Jehuda ha-Levi. Mordecai had arrived at a fresh passage in

his poem; for as soon as Jacob had got well used to one portion, he was

led on to another, and a fresh combination of sounds generally answered

better in keeping him fast for a few minutes. The consumptive voice,

generally a strong high baritone, with its variously mingling

hoarseness, like a haze amidst illuminations, and its occasional

incipient gasp had more than the usual excitement, while it gave forth

Hebrew verses with a meaning something like this:--

"Away from me the garment of forgetfulness.

Withering the heart;

The oil and wine from presses of the Goyim,

Poisoned with scorn.

Solitude is on the sides of Mount Nebo,

In its heart a tomb:

There the buried ark and golden cherubim

Make hidden light:

There the solemn gaze unchanged,

The wings are spread unbroken:

Shut beneath in silent awful speech

The Law lies graven.

Solitude and darkness are my covering,

And my heart a tomb;

Smite and shatter it, O Gabriel!

Shatter it as the clay of the founder

Around the golden image."

In the absorbing enthusiasm with which Mordecai had intoned rather than

spoken this last invocation, he was unconscious that Jacob had ceased

to follow him and had started away from his knees; but pausing he saw,

as by a sudden flash, that the lad had thrown himself on his hands with

his feet in the air, mountebank fashion, and was picking up with his

lips a bright farthing which was a favorite among his pocket treasures.

This might have been reckoned among the tricks Mordecai was used to,

but at this moment it jarred him horribly, as if it had been a Satanic

grin upon his prayer.

"Child! child!" he called out with a strange cry that startled Jacob to

his feet, and then he sank backward with a shudder, closing his eyes.

"What?" said Jacob, quickly. Then, not getting an immediate answer, he

pressed Mordecai's knees with a shaking movement, in order to rouse

him. Mordecai opened his eyes with a fierce expression in them, leaned

forward, grasped the little shoulders, and said in a quick, hoarse

whisper--

"A curse is on your generation, child. They will open the mountain and

drag forth the golden wings and coin them into money, and the solemn

faces they will break up into ear-rings for wanton women! And they

shall get themselves a new name, but the angel of ignominy, with the

fiery brand, shall know them, and their heart shall be the tomb of dead

desires that turn their life to rottenness."

The aspect and action of Mordecai were so new and mysterious to

Jacob--they carried such a burden of obscure threat--it was as if the

patient, indulgent companion had turned into something unknown and

terrific: the sunken dark eyes and hoarse accents close to him, the

thin grappling fingers, shook Jacob's little frame into awe, and while

Mordecai was speaking he stood trembling with a sense that the house

was tumbling in and they were not going to have dinner any more. But

when the terrible speech had ended and the pinch was relaxed, the shock

resolved itself into tears; Jacob lifted up his small patriarchal

countenance and wept aloud. This sign of childish grief at once

recalled Mordecai to his usual gentle self: he was not able to speak

again at present, but with a maternal action he drew the curly head

toward him and pressed it tenderly against his breast. On this Jacob,

feeling the danger well-nigh over, howled at ease, beginning to imitate

his own performance and improve upon it--a sort of transition from

impulse into art often observable. Indeed, the next day he undertook to

terrify Adelaide Rebekah in like manner, and succeeded very well.

But Mordecai suffered a check which lasted long, from the consciousness

of a misapplied agitation; sane as well as excitable, he judged

severely his moments of aberration into futile eagerness, and felt

discredited with himself. All the more his mind was strained toward the

discernment of that friend to come, with whom he would have a calm

certainty of fellowship and understanding.

It was just then that, in his usual midday guardianship of the old

book-shop, he was struck by the appearance of Deronda, and it is

perhaps comprehensible now why Mordecai's glance took on a sudden eager

interest as he looked at the new-comer: he saw a face and frame which

seemed to him to realize the long-conceived type. But the disclaimer of

Jewish birth was for the moment a backward thrust of double severity,

the particular disappointment tending to shake his confidence in the

more indefinite expectation. Nevertheless, when he found Deronda seated

at the Cohens' table, the disclaimer was for the moment nullified: the

first impression returned with added force, seeming to be guaranteed by

this second meeting under circumstance more peculiar than the former;

and in asking Deronda if he knew Hebrew, Mordecai was so possessed by

the new inrush of belief, that he had forgotten the absence of any

other condition to the fulfillment of his hopes. But the answering "No"

struck them all down again, and the frustration was more painful than

before. After turning his back on the visitor that Sabbath evening,

Mordecai went through days of a deep discouragement, like that of men

on a doomed ship, who having strained their eyes after a sail, and

beheld it with rejoicing, behold it never advance, and say, "Our sick

eyes make it." But the long-contemplated figure had come as an

emotional sequence of Mordecai's firmest theoretic convictions; it had

been wrought from the imagery of his most passionate life; and it

inevitably reappeared--reappeared in a more specific self-asserting

form than ever. Deronda had that sort of resemblance to the

preconceived type which a finely individual bust or portrait has to the

more generalized copy left in our minds after a long interval: we renew

our memory with delight, but we hardly know with how much correction.

And now, his face met Mordecai's inward gaze as it had always belonged

to the awaited friend, raying out, moreover, some of that influence

which belongs to breathing flesh; till by-and-by it seemed that

discouragement had turned into a new obstinacy of resistance, and the

ever-recurrent vision had the force of an outward call to disregard

counter-evidence, and keep expectation awake. It was Deronda now who

was seen in the often painful night-watches, when we are all liable to

be held with the clutch of a single thought--whose figure, never with

its back turned, was seen in moments of soothed reverie or soothed

dozing, painted on that golden sky which was the doubly blessed symbol

of advancing day and of approaching rest.

Mordecai knew that the nameless stranger was to come and redeem his

ring; and, in spite of contrary chances, the wish to see him again was

growing into a belief that he should see him. In the January weeks, he

felt an increasing agitation of that subdued hidden quality which

hinders nervous people from any steady occupation on the eve of an

anticipated change. He could not go on with his printing of Hebrew on

little Jacob's mind; or with his attendance at a weekly club, which was

another effort of the same forlorn hope: something else was coming. The

one thing he longed for was to get as far as the river, which he could

do but seldom and with difficulty. He yearned with a poet's yearning

for the wide sky, the far-reaching vista of bridges, the tender and

fluctuating lights on the water which seems to breathe with a life that

can shiver and mourn, be comforted and rejoice.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

"Vor den Wissenden sich stellen

Sicher ist's in alien FÃ¤llen!

Wenn du lange dich gequÃ¤let

Weiss er gleich wo dir es fehlet;

Auch auf Beifall darfst du hoffen,

Denn er weiss wo du's getroffen,"

--GOETHE: \_West-Ã¶stlicker Divan\_.

Momentous things happened to Deronda the very evening of that visit to

the small house at Chelsea, when there was the discussion about Mirah's

public name. But for the family group there, what appeared to be the

chief sequence connected with it occurred two days afterward. About

four o'clock wheels paused before the door, and there came one of those

knocks with an accompanying ring which serve to magnify the sense of

social existence in a region where the most enlivening signals are

usually those of the muffin-man. All the girls were at home, and the

two rooms were thrown together to make space for Kate's drawing, as

well as a great length of embroidery which had taken the place of the

satin cushions--a sort of \_piÃ¨ce de rÃ©sistance\_ in the courses of

needlework, taken up by any clever fingers that happened to be at

liberty. It stretched across the front room picturesquely enough, Mrs.

Meyrick bending over it on one corner, Mab in the middle, and Amy at

the other end. Mirah, whose performances in point of sewing were on the

make-shift level of the tailor-bird's, her education in that branch

having been much neglected, was acting as reader to the party, seated

on a camp-stool; in which position she also served Kate as model for a

title-page vignette, symbolizing a fair public absorbed in the

successive volumes of the family tea-table. She was giving forth with

charming distinctness the delightful Essay of Elia, "The Praise of

Chimney-Sweeps," and all were smiling over the "innocent blackness,"

when the imposing knock and ring called their thoughts to loftier

spheres, and they looked up in wonderment.

"Dear me!" said Mrs. Meyrick; "can it be Lady Mallinger? Is there a

grand carriage, Amy?"

"No--only a hansom cab. It must be a gentleman."

"The Prime Minister, I should think," said Kate dryly. "Hans says the

greatest man in London may get into a hansom cab."

"Oh, oh, oh!" cried Mab. "Suppose it should be Lord Russell!"

The five bright faces were all looking amused when the old maid-servant

bringing in a card distractedly left the parlor-door open, and there

was seen bowing toward Mrs. Meyrick a figure quite unlike that of the

respected Premier--tall and physically impressive even in his kid and

kerseymere, with massive face, flamboyant hair, and gold spectacles: in

fact, as Mrs. Meyrick saw from the card, \_Julius Klesmer\_.

Even embarrassment could hardly have made the "little mother" awkward,

but quick in her perceptions she was at once aware of the situation,

and felt well satisfied that the great personage had come to Mirah

instead of requiring her to come to him; taking it as a sign of active

interest. But when he entered, the rooms shrank into closets, the

cottage piano, Mab thought, seemed a ridiculous toy, and the entire

family existence as petty and private as an establishment of mice in

the Tuileries. Klesmer's personality, especially his way of glancing

round him, immediately suggested vast areas and a multitudinous

audience, and probably they made the usual scenery of his

consciousness, for we all of us carry on our thinking in some habitual

locus where there is a presence of other souls, and those who take in a

larger sweep than their neighbors are apt to seem mightily vain and

affected. Klesmer was vain, but not more so than many contemporaries of

heavy aspect, whose vanity leaps out and startles one like a spear out

of a walking-stick; as to his carriage and gestures, these were as

natural to him as the length of his fingers; and the rankest

affectation he could have shown would have been to look diffident and

demure. While his grandiose air was making Mab feel herself a

ridiculous toy to match the cottage piano, he was taking in the details

around him with a keen and thoroughly kind sensibility. He remembered a

home no longer than this on the outskirts of Bohemia; and in the

figurative Bohemia too he had had large acquaintance with the variety

and romance which belong to small incomes. He addressed Mrs. Meyrick

with the utmost deference.

"I hope I have not taken too great a freedom. Being in the

neighborhood, I ventured to save time by calling. Our friend, Mr.

Deronda, mentioned to me an understanding that I was to have the honor

of becoming acquainted with a young lady here--Miss Lapidoth."

Klesmer had really discerned Mirah in the first moment of entering,

but, with subtle politeness, he looked round bowingly at the three

sisters as if he were uncertain which was the young lady in question.

"Those are my daughters: this is Miss Lapidoth," said Mrs. Meyrick,

waving her hand toward Mirah.

"Ah," said Klesmer, in a tone of gratified expectation, turning a

radiant smile and deep bow to Mirah, who, instead of being in the least

taken by surprise, had a calm pleasure in her face. She liked the look

of Klesmer, feeling sure that he would scold her, like a great musician

and a kind man.

"You will not object to beginning our acquaintance by singing to me,"

he added, aware that they would all be relieved by getting rid of

preliminaries.

"I shall be very glad. It is good of you to be willing to listen to

me," said Mirah, moving to the piano. "Shall I accompany myself?"

"By all means," said Klesmer, seating himself, at Mrs. Meyrick's

invitation, where he could have a good view of the singer. The acute

little mother would not have acknowledged the weakness, but she really

said to herself, "He will like her singing better if he sees her."

All the feminine hearts except Mirah's were beating fast with anxiety,

thinking Klesmer terrific as he sat with his listening frown on, and

only daring to look at him furtively. If he did say anything severe it

would be so hard for them all. They could only comfort themselves with

thinking that Prince Camaralzaman, who had heard the finest things,

preferred Mirah's singing to any other:--also she appeared to be doing

her very best, as if she were more instead of less at ease than usual.

The song she had chosen was a fine setting of some words selected from

Leopardi's grand Ode to Italy:--

"\_O patria mia, vedo le mura c gli archi

E le colonne e i simula-cri e l'erme

Torridegli avi nostri\_"--

This was recitative: then followed--

"\_Ma la gloria--non vedo\_"--

a mournful melody, a rhythmic plaint. After this came a climax of

devout triumph--passing from the subdued adoration of a happy Andante

in the words--

"\_Beatissimi voi.

Che offriste il petto alle nemiche lance

Per amor di costei che al sol vi diede\_"--

to the joyous outburst of an exultant Allegro in--

"\_Oh viva, oh viva:

Beatissimi voi

Mentre nel monde si favelli o scriva.\_"

When she had ended, Klesmer said after a moment--

"That is Joseph Leo's music."

"Yes, he was my last master--at Vienna: so fierce and so good," said

Mirah, with a melancholy smile. "He prophesied that my voice would not

do for the stage. And he was right."

"\_Con\_tinue, if you please," said Klesmer, putting out his lips and

shaking his long fingers, while he went on with a smothered

articulation quite unintelligible to the audience.

The three girls detested him unanimously for not saying one word of

praise. Mrs. Meyrick was a little alarmed.

Mirah, simply bent on doing what Klesmer desired, and imagining that he

would now like to hear her sing some German, went through Prince

Radzivill's music to Gretchen's songs in the "Faust," one after the

other without any interrogatory pause. When she had finished he rose

and walked to the extremity of the small space at command, then walked

back to the piano, where Mirah had risen from her seat and stood

looking toward him with her little hands crossed before her, meekly

awaiting judgment; then with a sudden unknitting of his brow and with

beaming eyes, he stretched out his hand and said abruptly, "Let us

shake hands: you are a musician."

Mab felt herself beginning to cry, and all the three girls held Klesmer

adorable. Mrs. Meyrick took a long breath.

But straightway the frown came again, the long hand, back uppermost,

was stretched out in quite a different sense to touch with finger-tip

the back of Mirah's, and with protruded lip he said--

"Not for great tasks. No high roofs. We are no skylarks. We must be

modest." Klesmer paused here. And Mab ceased to think him adorable: "as

if Mirah had shown the least sign of conceit!"

Mirah was silent, knowing that there was a specific opinion to be

waited for, and Klesmer presently went on--"I would not advise--I would

not further your singing in any larger space than a private

drawing-room. But you will do there. And here in London that is one of

the best careers open. Lessons will follow. Will you come and sing at a

private concert at my house on Wednesday?"

"Oh, I shall be grateful," said Mirah, putting her hands together

devoutly. "I would rather get my bread in that way than by anything

more public. I will try to improve. What should I work at most?"

Klesmer made a preliminary answer in noises which sounded like words

bitten in two and swallowed before they were half out, shaking his

fingers the while, before he said, quite distinctly, "I shall introduce

you to Astorga: he is the foster-father of good singing and will give

you advice." Then addressing Mrs. Meyrick, he added, "Mrs. Klesmer will

call before Wednesday, with your permission."

"We shall feel that to be a great kindness," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"You will sing to her," said Klesmer, turning again to Mirah. "She is a

thorough musician, and has a soul with more ears to it than you will

often get in a musician. Your singing will satisfy her:--

'Vor den Wissenden sich stellen;'

you know the rest?"

"'Sicher ist's in alien FÃ¤llen.'"

said Mirah, promptly. And Klesmer saying "SchÃ¶n!" put out his hand

again as a good-bye.

He had certainly chosen the most delicate way of praising Mirah, and

the Meyrick girls had now given him all their esteem. But imagine Mab's

feeling when suddenly fixing his eyes on her, he said decisively, "That

young lady is musical, I see!" She was a mere blush and sense of

scorching.

"Yes," said Mirah, on her behalf. "And she has a touch."

"Oh, please, Mirah--a scramble, not a touch," said Mab, in anguish,

with a horrible fear of what the next thing might be: this dreadful

divining personage--evidently Satan in gray trousers--might order her

to sit down to the piano, and her heart was like molten wax in the

midst of her. But this was cheap payment for her amazed joy when

Klesmer said benignantly, turning to Mrs. Meyrick, "Will she like to

accompany Miss Lapidoth and hear the music on Wednesday?"

"There could hardly be a greater pleasure for her," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"She will be most glad and grateful."

Thereupon Klesmer bowed round to the three sisters more grandly than

they had ever been bowed to before. Altogether it was an amusing

picture--the little room with so much of its diagonal taken up in

Klesmer's magnificent bend to the small feminine figures like images a

little less than life-size, the grave Holbein faces on the walls, as

many as were not otherwise occupied, looking hard at this stranger who

by his face seemed a dignified contemporary of their own, but whose

garments seemed a deplorable mockery of the human form.

Mrs. Meyrick could not help going out of the room with Klesmer and

closing the door behind her. He understood her, and said with a

frowning nod--

"She will do: if she doesn't attempt too much and her voice holds out,

she can make an income. I know that is the great point: Deronda told

me. You are taking care of her. She looks like a good girl."

"She is an angel," said the warm-hearted woman.

"No," said Klesmer, with a playful nod; "she is a pretty Jewess: the

angels must not get the credit of her. But I think she has found a

guardian angel," he ended, bowing himself out in this amiable way.

The four young creatures had looked at each other mutely till the door

banged and Mrs. Meyrick re-entered. Then there was an explosion. Mab

clapped her hands and danced everywhere inconveniently; Mrs. Meyrick

kissed Mirah and blessed her; Amy said emphatically, "We can never get

her a new dress before Wednesday!" and Kate exclaimed, "Thank heaven my

table is not knocked over!"

Mirah had reseated herself on the music-stool without speaking, and the

tears were rolling down her cheeks as she looked at her friends.

"Now, now, Mab!" said Mrs. Meyrick; "come and sit down reasonably and

let us talk?"

"Yes, let us talk," said Mab, cordially, coming back to her low seat

and caressing her knees. "I am beginning to feel large again. Hans said

he was coming this afternoon. I wish he had been here--only there would

have been no room for him. Mirah, what are you looking sad for?"

"I am too happy," said Mirah. "I feel so full of gratitude to you all;

and he was so very kind."

"Yes, at last," said Mab, sharply. "But he might have said something

encouraging sooner. I thought him dreadfully ugly when he sat frowning,

and only said, '\_Con\_tinue.' I hated him all the long way from the top

of his hair to the toe of his polished boot."

"Nonsense, Mab; he has a splendid profile," said Kate.

"\_Now\_, but not \_then\_. I cannot bear people to keep their minds

bottled up for the sake of letting them off with a pop. They seem to

grudge making you happy unless they can make you miserable beforehand.

However, I forgive him everything," said Mab, with a magnanimous air,

"but he has invited me. I wonder why he fixed on me as the musical one?

Was it because I have a bulging forehead, ma, and peep from under it

like a newt from under a stone?"

"It was your way of listening to the singing, child," said Mrs.

Meyrick. "He has magic spectacles and sees everything through them,

depend upon it. But what was that German quotation you were so ready

with, Mirah--you learned puss?"

"Oh, that was not learning," said Mirah, her tearful face breaking into

an amused smile. "I said it so many times for a lesson. It means that

it is safer to do anything--singing or anything else--before those who

know and understand all about it."

"That was why you were not one bit frightened, I suppose," said Amy.

"But now, what we have to talk about is a dress for you on Wednesday."

"I don't want anything better than this black merino," said Mirah,

rising to show the effect. "Some white gloves and some new \_bottines\_."

She put out her little foot, clad in the famous felt slipper.

"There comes Hans," said Mrs. Meyrick. "Stand still, and let us hear

what he says about the dress. Artists are the best people to consult

about such things."

"You don't consult me, ma," said Kate, lifting up her eyebrow with a

playful complainingness. "I notice mothers are like the people I deal

with--the girls' doings are always priced low."

"My dear child, the boys are such a trouble--we could never put up with

them, if we didn't make believe they were worth more," said Mrs.

Meyrick, just as her boy entered. "Hans, we want your opinion about

Mirah's dress. A great event has happened. Klesmer has been here, and

she is going to sing at his house on Wednesday among grand people. She

thinks this dress will do."

"Let me see," said Hans. Mirah in her childlike way turned toward him

to be looked at; and he, going to a little further distance, knelt with

one knee on a hassock to survey her.

"This would be thought a very good stage-dress for me," she said,

pleadingly, "in a part where I was to come on as a poor Jewess and sing

to fashionable Christians."

"It would be effective," said Hans, with a considering air; "it would

stand out well among the fashionable \_chiffons\_."

"But you ought not to claim all the poverty on your side, Mirah," said

Amy. "There are plenty of poor Christians and dreadfully rich Jews and

fashionable Jewesses."

"I didn't mean any harm," said Mirah. "Only I have been used to

thinking about my dress for parts in plays. And I almost always had a

part with a plain dress."

"That makes me think it questionable," said Hans, who had suddenly

become as fastidious and conventional on this occasion as he had

thought Deronda was, apropos of the Berenice-pictures. "It looks a

little too theatrical. We must not make you a \_rÃ´le\_ of the poor

Jewess--or of being a Jewess at all." Hans had a secret desire to

neutralize the Jewess in private life, which he was in danger of not

keeping secret.

"But it is what I am really. I am not pretending anything. I shall

never be anything else," said Mirah. "I always feel myself a Jewess."

"But we can't feel that about you," said Hans, with a devout look.

"What does it signify whether a perfect woman is a Jewess or not?"

"That is your kind way of praising me; I never was praised so before,"

said Mirah, with a smile, which was rather maddening to Hans and made

him feel still more of a cosmopolitan.

"People don't think of me as a British Christian," he said, his face

creasing merrily. "They think of me as an imperfectly handsome young

man and an unpromising painter."

"But you are wandering from the dress," said Amy. "If that will not do,

how are we to get another before Wednesday? and to-morrow Sunday?"

"Indeed this will do," said Mirah, entreatingly. "It is all real, you

know," here she looked at Hans--"even if it seemed theatrical. Poor

Berenice sitting on the ruins--any one might say that was theatrical,

but I know that this is just what she would do."

"I am a scoundrel," said Hans, overcome by this misplaced trust. "That

is my invention. Nobody knows that she did that. Shall you forgive me

for not saying so before?"

"Oh, yes," said Mirah, after a momentary pause of surprise. "You knew

it was what she would be sure to do--a Jewess who had not been

faithful--who had done what she did and was penitent. She could have no

joy but to afflict herself; and where else would she go? I think it is

very beautiful that you should enter so into what a Jewess would feel."

"The Jewesses of that time sat on ruins," said Hans, starting up with a

sense of being checkmated. "That makes them convenient for pictures."

"But the dress--the dress," said Amy; "is it settled?"

"Yes; is it not?" said Mirah, looking doubtfully at Mrs. Meyrick, who

in her turn looked up at her son, and said, "What do you think, Hans?"

"That dress will not do," said Hans, decisively. "She is not going to

sit on ruins. You must jump into a cab with her, little mother, and go

to Regent Street. It's plenty of time to get anything you like--a black

silk dress such as ladies wear. She must not be taken for an object of

charity. She has talents to make people indebted to her."

"I think it is what Mr. Deronda would like--for her to have a handsome

dress," said Mrs. Meyrick, deliberating.

"Of course it is," said Hans, with some sharpness. "You may take my

word for what a gentleman would feel."

"I wish to do what Mr. Deronda would like me to do," said Mirah,

gravely, seeing that Mrs. Meyrick looked toward her; and Hans, turning

on his heel, went to Kate's table and took up one of her drawings as if

his interest needed a new direction.

"Shouldn't you like to make a study of Klesmer's head, Hans?" said

Kate. "I suppose you have often seen him?"

"Seen him!" exclaimed Hans, immediately throwing back his head and

mane, seating himself at the piano and looking round him as if he were

surveying an amphitheatre, while he held his fingers down

perpendicularly toward the keys. But then in another instant he wheeled

round on the stool, looked at Mirah and said, half timidly--"Perhaps

you don't like this mimicry; you must always stop my nonsense when you

don't like it."

Mirah had been smiling at the swiftly-made image, and she smiled still,

but with a touch of something else than amusement, as she said--"Thank

you. But you have never done anything I did not like. I hardly think he

could, belonging to you," she added, looking at Mrs. Meyrick.

In this way Hans got food for his hope. How could the rose help it when

several bees in succession took its sweet odor as a sign of personal

attachment?

CHAPTER XL.

"Within the soul a faculty abides,

That with interpositions, which would hide

And darken, so can deal, that they become

Contingencies of pomp; and serve to exalt

Her native brightness, as the ample moon.

In the deep stillness of a summer even.

Rising behind a thick and lofty grove.

Into a substance glorious as her own,

Yea, with her own incorporated, by power

Capacious and serene."

--WORDSWORTH: \_Excursion\_, B. IV.

Deronda came out of the narrow house at Chelsea in a frame of mind that

made him long for some good bodily exercise to carry off what he was

himself inclined to call the fumes of his temper. He was going toward

the city, and the sight of the Chelsea Stairs with the waiting boats at

once determined him to avoid the irritating inaction of being driven in

a cab, by calling a wherry and taking an oar.

His errand was to go to Ram's book-shop, where he had yesterday arrived

too late for Mordecai's midday watch, and had been told that he

invariably came there again between five and six. Some further

acquaintance with this remarkable inmate of the Cohens was particularly

desired by Deronda as a preliminary to redeeming his ring: he wished

that their conversation should not again end speedily with that drop of

Mordecai's interest which was like the removal of a drawbridge, and

threatened to shut out any easy communication in future. As he got

warmed with the use of the oar, fixing his mind on the errand before

him and the ends he wanted to achieve on Mirah's account, he

experienced, as was wont with him, a quick change of mental light,

shifting his point of view to that of the person whom he had been

thinking of hitherto chiefly as serviceable to his own purposes, and

was inclined to taunt himself with being not much better than an

enlisting sergeant, who never troubles himself with the drama that

brings him the needful recruits.

"I suppose if I got from this man the information I am most anxious

about," thought Deronda, "I should be contented enough if he felt no

disposition to tell me more of himself, or why he seemed to have some

expectation from me which was disappointed. The sort of curiosity he

stirs would die out; and yet it might be that he had neared and parted

as one can imagine two ships doing, each freighted with an exile who

would have recognized the other if the two could have looked out face

to face. Not that there is any likelihood of a peculiar tie between me

and this poor fellow, whose voyage, I fancy, must soon be over. But I

wonder whether there is much of that momentous mutual missing between

people who interchange blank looks, or even long for one another's

absence in a crowded place. However, one makes one's self chances of

missing by going on the recruiting sergeant's plan."

When the wherry was approaching Blackfriars Bridge, where Deronda meant

to land, it was half-past four, and the gray day was dying gloriously,

its western clouds all broken into narrowing purple strata before a

wide-spreading saffron clearness, which in the sky had a monumental

calm, but on the river, with its changing objects, was reflected as a

luminous movement, the alternate flash of ripples or currents, the

sudden glow of the brown sail, the passage of laden barges from

blackness into color, making an active response to that brooding glory.

Feeling well heated by this time, Deronda gave up the oar and drew over

him again his Inverness cape. As he lifted up his head while fastening

the topmost button his eyes caught a well-remembered face looking

toward him over the parapet of the bridge--brought out by the western

light into startling distinctness and brilliancy--an illuminated type

of bodily emaciation and spiritual eagerness. It was the face of

Mordecai, who also, in his watch toward the west, had caught sight of

the advancing boat, and had kept it fast within his gaze, at first

simply because it was advancing, then with a recovery of impressions

that made him quiver as with a presentiment, till at last the nearing

figure lifted up its face toward him--the face of his visions--and then

immediately, with white uplifted hand, beckoned again and again.

For Deronda, anxious that Mordecai should recognize and await him, had

lost no time before signaling, and the answer came straightway.

Mordecai lifted his cap and waved it--feeling in that moment that his

inward prophecy was fulfilled. Obstacles, incongruities, all melted

into the sense of completion with which his soul was flooded by this

outward satisfaction of his longing. His exultation was not widely

different from that of the experimenter, bending over the first

stirrings of change that correspond to what in the fervor of

concentrated prevision his thought has foreshadowed. The prefigured

friend had come from the golden background, and had signaled to him:

this actually was: the rest was to be.

In three minutes Deronda had landed, had paid his boatman, and was

joining Mordecai, whose instinct it was to stand perfectly still and

wait for him.

"I was very glad to see you standing here," said Deronda, "for I was

intending to go on to the book-shop and look for you again. I was there

yesterday--perhaps they mentioned it to you?"

"Yes," said Mordecai; "that was the reason I came to the bridge."

This answer, made with simple gravity, was startlingly mysterious to

Deronda. Were the peculiarities of this man really associated with any

sort of mental alienation, according to Cohen's hint?

"You knew nothing of my being at Chelsea?" he said, after a moment.

"No; but I expected you to come down the river. I have been waiting for

you these five years." Mordecai's deep-sunk eyes were fixed on those of

the friend who had at last arrived with a look of affectionate

dependence, at once pathetic and solemn. Deronda's sensitiveness was

not the less responsive because he could not but believe that this

strangely-disclosed relation was founded on an illusion.

"It will be a satisfaction to me if I can be of any real use to you,"

he answered, very earnestly. "Shall we get into a cab and drive

to--wherever you wish to go? You have probably had walking enough with

your short breath."

"Let us go to the book-shop. It will soon be time for me to be there.

But now look up the river," said Mordecai, turning again toward it and

speaking in undertones of what may be called an excited calm--so

absorbed by a sense of fulfillment that he was conscious of no barrier

to a complete understanding between him and Deronda. "See the sky, how

it is slowly fading. I have always loved this bridge: I stood on it

when I was a little boy. It is a meeting-place for the spiritual

messengers. It is true--what the Masters said--that each order of

things has its angel: that means the full message of each from what is

afar. Here I have listened to the messages of earth and sky; when I was

stronger I used to stay and watch for the stars in the deep heavens.

But this time just about sunset was always what I loved best. It has

sunk into me and dwelt with me--fading, slowly fading: it was my own

decline: it paused--it waited, till at last it brought me my new

life--my new self--who will live when this breath is all breathed out."

Deronda did not speak. He felt himself strangely wrought upon. The

first-prompted suspicion that Mordecai might be liable to

hallucinations of thought--might have become a monomaniac on some

subject which had given too severe a strain to his diseased

organism--gave way to a more submissive expectancy. His nature was too

large, too ready to conceive regions beyond his own experience, to rest

at once in the easy explanation, "madness," whenever a consciousness

showed some fullness and conviction where his own was blank. It

accorded with his habitual disposition that he should meet rather than

resist any claim on him in the shape of another's need; and this claim

brought with it a sense of solemnity which seemed a radiation from

Mordecai, as utterly nullifying his outward poverty and lifting him

into authority as if he had been that preternatural guide seen in the

universal legend, who suddenly drops his mean disguise and stands a

manifest Power. That impression was the more sanctioned by a sort of

resolved quietude which the persuasion of fulfillment had produced in

Mordecai's manner. After they had stood a moment in silence he said,

"Let us go now," and when they were riding he added, "We will get down

at the end of the street and walk to the shop. You can look at the

books, and Mr. Ram will be going away directly and leave us alone."

It seemed that this enthusiast was just as cautious, just as much alive

to judgments in other minds as if he had been that antipode of all

enthusiasm called "a man of the world."

While they were rattling along in the cab, Mirah was still present with

Deronda in the midst of this strange experience, but he foresaw that

the course of conversation would be determined by Mordecai, not by

himself: he was no longer confident what questions he should be able to

ask; and with a reaction on his own mood, he inwardly said, "I suppose

I am in a state of complete superstition, just as if I were awaiting

the destiny that could interpret the oracle. But some strong relation

there must be between me and this man, since he feels it strongly.

Great heaven! what relation has proved itself more potent in the world

than faith even when mistaken--than expectation even when perpetually

disappointed? Is my side of the relation to be disappointing or

fulfilling?--well, if it is ever possible for me to fulfill I will not

disappoint."

In ten minutes the two men, with as intense a consciousness as if they

had been two undeclared lovers, felt themselves alone in the small

gas-lit book-shop and turned face to face, each baring his head from an

instinctive feeling that they wished to see each other fully. Mordecai

came forward to lean his back against the little counter, while Deronda

stood against the opposite wall hardly more than four feet off. I wish

I could perpetuate those two faces, as Titian's "Tribute Money" has

perpetuated two types presenting another sort of contrast. Imagine--we

all of us can--the pathetic stamp of consumption with its brilliancy of

glance to which the sharply-defined structure of features reminding one

of a forsaken temple, give already a far-off look as of one getting

unwillingly out of reach; and imagine it on a Jewish face naturally

accentuated for the expression of an eager mind--the face of a man

little above thirty, but with that age upon it which belongs to time

lengthened by suffering, the hair and beard, still black, throwing out

the yellow pallor of the skin, the difficult breathing giving more

decided marking to the mobile nostril, the wasted yellow hands

conspicuous on the folded arms: then give to the yearning consumptive

glance something of the slowly dying mother's look, when her one loved

son visits her bedside, and the flickering power of gladness leaps out

as she says, "My boy!"--for the sense of spiritual perpetuation in

another resembles that maternal transference of self.

Seeing such a portrait you would see Mordecai. And opposite to him was

a face not more distinctively oriental than many a type seen among what

we call the Latin races; rich in youthful health, and with a forcible

masculine gravity in its repose, that gave the value of judgment to the

reverence with which he met the gaze of this mysterious son of poverty

who claimed him as a long-expected friend. The more exquisite quality

of Deronda's nature--that keenly perceptive sympathetic emotiveness

which ran along with his speculative tendency--was never more

thoroughly tested. He felt nothing that could be called belief in the

validity of Mordecai's impressions concerning him or in the probability

of any greatly effective issue: what he felt was a profound sensibility

to a cry from the depths of another and accompanying that, the summons

to be receptive instead of superciliously prejudging. Receptiveness is

a rare and massive power, like fortitude; and this state of mind now

gave Deronda's face its utmost expression of calm benignant force--an

expression which nourished Mordecai's confidence and made an open way

before him. He began to speak.

"You cannot know what has guided me to you and brought us together at

this moment. You are wondering."

"I am not impatient," said Deronda. "I am ready to listen to whatever

you may wish to disclose."

"You see some of the reasons why I needed you," said Mordecai, speaking

quietly, as if he wished to reserve his strength. "You see that I am

dying. You see that I am as one shut up behind bars by the wayside, who

if he spoke to any would be met only by head-shaking and pity. The day

is closing--the light is fading--soon we should not have been able to

discern each other. But you have come in time."

"I rejoice that I am come in time," said Deronda, feelingly. He would

not say, "I hope you are not mistaken in me,"--the very word

"mistaken," he thought, would be a cruelty at that moment.

"But the hidden reasons why I need you began afar off," said Mordecai;

"began in my early years when I was studying in another land. Then

ideas, beloved ideas, came to me, because I was a Jew. They were a

trust to fulfill, because I was a Jew. They were an inspiration,

because I was a Jew, and felt the heart of my race beating within me.

They were my life; I was not fully born till then. I counted this

heart, and this breath, and this right hand"--Mordecai had pathetically

pressed his hand upon his breast, and then stretched its wasted fingers

out before him--"I counted my sleep and my waking, and the work I fed

my body with, and the sights that fed my eyes--I counted them but as

fuel to the divine flame. But I had done as one who wanders and

engraves his thought in rocky solitudes, and before I could change my

course came care and labor and disease, and blocked the way before me,

and bound me with the iron that eats itself into the soul. Then I said,

'How shall I save the life within me from being stifled with this

stifled breath?'"

Mordecai paused to rest that poor breath which had been taxed by the

rising excitement of his speech. And also he wished to check that

excitement. Deronda dared not speak the very silence in the narrow

space seemed alive with mingled awe and compassion before this

struggling fervor. And presently Mordecai went on--

"But you may misunderstand me. I speak not as an ignorant dreamer--as

one bred up in the inland valleys, thinking ancient thoughts anew, and

not knowing them ancient, never having stood by the great waters where

the world's knowledge passes to and fro. English is my mother-tongue,

England is the native land of this body, which is but as a breaking pot

of earth around the fruit-bearing tree, whose seed might make the

desert rejoice. But my true life was nourished in Holland at the feet

of my mother's brother, a Rabbi skilled in special learning: and when

he died I went to Hamburg to study, and afterwards to GÃ¶ttingen, that I

might take a larger outlook on my people, and on the Gentile world, and

drank knowledge at all sources. I was a youth; I felt free; I saw our

chief seats in Germany; I was not then in utter poverty. And I had

possessed myself of a handicraft. For I said, I care not if my lot be

as that of Joshua ben Chananja: after the last destruction he earned

his bread by making needles, but in his youth he had been a singer on

the steps of the Temple, and had a memory of what was before the glory

departed. I said, let my body dwell in poverty, and my hands be as the

hands of the toiler: but let my soul be as a temple of remembrance

where the treasures of knowledge enter and the inner sanctuary is hope.

I knew what I chose. They said, 'He feeds himself on visions,' and I

denied not; for visions are the creators and feeders of the world. I

see, I measure the world as it is, which the vision will create anew.

You are not listening to one who raves aloof from the lives of his

fellows."

Mordecai paused, and Deronda, feeling that the pause was expectant,

said, "Do me the justice to believe that I was not inclined to call

your words raving. I listen that I may know, without prejudgment. I

have had experience which gives me a keen interest in the story of a

spiritual destiny embraced willingly, and embraced in youth."

"A spiritual destiny embraced willingly--in youth?" Mordecai repeated

in a corrective tone. "It was the soul fully born within me, and it

came in my boyhood. It brought its own world--a mediaeval world, where

there are men who made the ancient language live again in new psalms of

exile. They had absorbed the philosophy of the Gentile into the faith

of the Jew, and they still yearned toward a center for our race. One of

their souls was born again within me, and awakened amid the memories of

their world. It traveled into Spain and Provence; it debated with

Aben-Ezra; it took ship with Jehuda ha-Levi; it heard the roar of the

Crusaders and the shrieks of tortured Israel. And when its dumb tongue

was loosed, it spoke the speech they had made alive with the new blood

of their ardor, their sorrow, and their martyred trust: it sang with

the cadence of their strain."

Mordecai paused again, and then said in a loud, hoarse whisper--

"While it is imprisoned in me, it will never learn another."

"Have you written entirely in Hebrew, then?" said Deronda, remembering

with some anxiety the former question as to his own knowledge of that

tongue.

"Yes--yes," said Mordecai, in a tone of deep sadness: "in my youth I

wandered toward that solitude, not feeling that it was a solitude. I

had the ranks of the great dead around me; the martyrs gathered and

listened. But soon I found that the living were deaf to me. At first I

saw my life spread as a long future: I said part of my Jewish heritage

is an unbreaking patience; part is skill to seek divers methods and

find a rooting-place where the planters despair. But there came new

messengers from the Eternal. I had to bow under the yoke that presses

on the great multitude born of woman: family troubles called me--I had

to work, to care, not for myself alone. I was left solitary again; but

already the angel of death had turned to me and beckoned, and I felt

his skirts continually on my path. I loosed not my effort. I besought

hearing and help. I spoke; I went to men of our people--to the rich in

influence or knowledge, to the rich in other wealth. But I found none

to listen with understanding. I was rebuked for error; I was offered a

small sum in charity. No wonder. I looked poor; I carried a bundle of

Hebrew manuscript with me; I said, our chief teachers are misleading

the hope of our race. Scholar and merchant were both too busy to

listen. Scorn stood as interpreter between me and them. One said, 'The

book of Mormon would never have answered in Hebrew; and if you mean to

address our learned men, it is not likely you can teach them anything.'

He touched a truth there."

The last words had a perceptible irony in their hoarsened tone.

"But though you had accustomed yourself to write in Hebrew, few,

surely, can use English better," said Deronda, wanting to hint

consolation in a new effort for which he could smooth the way.

Mordecai shook his head slowly, and answered--

"Too late--too late. I can write no more. My writing would be like this

gasping breath. But the breath may wake the fount of pity--the writing

not. If I could write now and used English, I should be as one who

beats a board to summon those who have been used to no signal but a

bell. My soul has an ear to hear the faults of its own speech. New

writing of mine would be like this body"--Mordecai spread his

arms--"within it there might be the Ruach-ha-kodesh--the breath of

divine thought--but, men would smile at it and say, 'A poor Jew!' and

the chief smilers would be of my own people."

Mordecai let his hands fall, and his head sink in melancholy: for the

moment he had lost hold of his hope. Despondency, conjured up by his

own words, had floated in and hovered above him with eclipsing wings.

He had sunk into momentary darkness,

"I feel with you--I feel strongly with you," said Deronda, in a clear

deep voice which was itself a cordial, apart from the words of

sympathy. "But forgive me if I speak hastily--for what you have

actually written there need be no utter burial. The means of

publication are within reach. If you will rely on me, I can assure you

of all that is necessary to that end."

"That is not enough," said Mordecai, quickly, looking up again with the

flash of recovered memory and confidence. "That is not all my trust in

you. You must be not only a hand to me, but a soul--believing my

belief--being moved by my reasons--hoping my hope-seeing the vision I

point to--beholding a glory where I behold it!"--Mordecai had taken a

step nearer as he spoke, and now laid his hand on Deronda's arm with a

tight grasp; his face little more than a foot off had something like a

pale flame in it--an intensity of reliance that acted as a peremptory

claim, while he went on--"You will be my life: it will be planted

afresh; it will grow. You shall take the inheritance; it has been

gathering for ages. The generations are crowding on my narrow life as a

bridge: what has been and what is to be are meeting there; and the

bridge is breaking. But I have found you. You have come in time, You

will take the inheritance which the base son refuses because of the

tombs which the plow and harrow may not pass over or the gold-seeker

disturb: you will take the sacred inheritance of the Jew."

Deronda had become as pallid as Mordecai. Quick as an alarm of flood or

fire, there spread within him not only a compassionate dread of

discouraging this fellowman who urged a prayer as one in the last

agony, but also tie opposing dread of fatally feeding an illusion, and

being hurried on to a self-committal which might turn into a falsity.

The peculiar appeal to his tenderness overcame the repulsion that most

of us experience under a grasp and speech which assumed to dominate.

The difficulty to him was to inflict the accents of hesitation and

doubt on this ardent suffering creature, who was crowding too much of

his brief being into a moment of perhaps extravagant trust. With

exquisite instinct, Deronda, before he opened his lips, placed his palm

gently on Mordecai's straining hand--an act just then equal to many

speeches. And after that he said, without haste, as if conscious that

he might be wrong--

"Do you forget what I told you when we first saw each other? Do you

remember that I said I was not of your race?"

"It can't be true," Mordecai whispered immediately, with no sign of

shock. The sympathetic hand still upon him had fortified the feeling

which was stronger than those words of denial. There was a perceptible

pause, Deronda feeling it impossible to answer, conscious indeed that

the assertion "It can't be true"--had the pressure of argument for him.

Mordecai, too entirely possessed by the supreme importance of the

relation between himself and Deronda to have any other care in his

speech, followed up that assertion by a second, which came to his lips

as a mere sequence of his long-cherished conviction--"You are not sure

of your own origin."

"How do you know that?" said Daniel, with an habitual shrinking which

made him remove his hands from Mordecai's, who also relaxed his hold,

and fell back into his former leaning position.

"I know it--I know it; what is my life else?" said Mordecai, with a low

cry of impatience. "Tell me everything: tell me why you deny?"

He could have no conception what that demand was to the hearer--how

probingly it touched the hidden sensibility, the vividly conscious

reticence of years; how the uncertainty he was insisting on as part of

his own hope had always for Daniel been a threatening possibility of

painful revelation about his mother. But the moment had influences

which were not only new but solemn to Deronda; any evasion here might

turn out to be a hateful refusal of some task that belonged to him,

some act of due fellowship; in any case it would be a cruel rebuff to a

being who was appealing to him as a forlorn hope under the shadow of a

coming doom. After a few moments, he said, with a great effort over

himself--determined to tell all the truth briefly--

"I have never known my mother. I have no knowledge about her. I have

never called any man father. But I am convinced that my father is an

Englishman."

Deronda's deep tones had a tremor in them as he uttered this

confession; and all the while there was an undercurrent of amazement in

him at the strange circumstances under which he uttered it. It seemed

as if Mordecai were hardly overrating his own power to determine the

action of the friend whom he had mysteriously chosen.

"It will be seen--it will be declared," said Mordecai, triumphantly.

"The world grows, and its frame is knit together by the growing soul;

dim, dim at first, then clearer and more clear, the consciousness

discerns remote stirrings. As thoughts move within us darkly, and shake

us before they are fully discerned--so events--so beings: they are knit

with us in the growth of the world. You have risen within me like a

thought not fully spelled; my soul is shaken before the words are all

there. The rest will come--it will come.".

"We must not lose sight of the fact that the outward event has not

always been a fulfillment of the firmest faith," said Deronda, in a

tone that was made hesitating by the painfully conflicting desires, not

to give any severe blow to Mordecai, and not to give his confidence a

sanction which might have the severest of blows in reserve.

Mordecai's face, which had been illuminated to the utmost in that last

declaration of his confidence, changed under Deronda's words, not only

into any show of collapsed trust: the force did not disappear from the

expression, but passed from the triumphant into the firmly resistant.

"You would remind me that I may be under an illusion--that the history

of our people's trust has been full of illusion. I face it all." Here

Mordecai paused a moment. Then bending his head a little forward, he

said, in his hoarse whisper, "\_So if might be with my trust, if you

would make it an illusion. But you will not.\_"

The very sharpness with which these words penetrated Deronda made him

feel the more that here was a crisis in which he must be firm.

"What my birth was does not lie in my will," he answered. "My sense of

claims on me cannot be independent of my knowledge there. And I cannot

promise you that I will try to hasten a disclosure. Feelings which have

struck root through half my life may still hinder me from doing what I

have never been able to do. Everything must be waited for. I must know

more of the truth about my own life, and I must know more of what it

would become if it were made a part of yours."

Mordecai had folded his arms again while Deronda was speaking, and now

answered with equal firmness, though with difficult breathing--

"You \_shall\_ know. What are we met for, but that you should know. Your

doubts lie as light as dust on my belief. I know the philosophies of

this time and of other times; if I chose I could answer a summons

before their tribunals. I could silence the beliefs which are the

mother-tongue of my soul and speak with the rote-learned language of a

system, that gives you the spelling of all things, sure of its alphabet

covering them all. I could silence them: may not a man silence his awe

or his love, and take to finding reasons, which others demand? But if

his love lies deeper than any reasons to be found? Man finds his

pathways: at first they were foot tracks, as those of the beast in the

wilderness: now they are swift and invisible: his thought dives through

the ocean, and his wishes thread the air: has he found all the pathways

yet? What reaches him, stays with him, rules him: he must accept it,

not knowing its pathway. Say, my expectation of you has grown but as

false hopes grow. That doubt is in your mind? Well, my expectation was

there, and you are come. Men have died of thirst. But I was thirsty,

and the water is on my lips? What are doubts to me? In the hour when

you come to me and say, 'I reject your soul: I know that I am not a

Jew: we have no lot in common'--I shall not doubt. I shall be

certain--certain that I have been deluded. That hour will never come!"

Deronda felt a new chord sounding in his speech: it was rather

imperious than appealing--had more of conscious power than of the

yearning need which had acted as a beseeching grasp on him before. And

usually, though he was the reverse of pugnacious, such a change of

attitude toward him would have weakened his inclination to admit a

claim. But here there was something that balanced his resistance and

kept it aloof. This strong man whose gaze was sustainedly calm and his

finger-nails pink with health, who was exercised in all questioning,

and accused of excessive mental independence, still felt a subduing

influence over him in the tenacious certitude of the fragile creature

before him, whose pallid yellow nostril was tense with effort as his

breath labored under the burthen of eager speech. The influence seemed

to strengthen the bond of sympathetic obligation. In Deronda at this

moment the desire to escape what might turn into a trying embarrassment

was no more likely to determine action than the solicitations of

indolence are likely to determine it in one with whom industry is a

daily law. He answered simply--

"It is my wish to meet and satisfy your wishes wherever that is

possible to me. It is certain to me at least that I desire not to

undervalue your toil and your suffering. Let me know your thoughts. But

where can we meet?"

"I have thought of that," said Mordecai. "It is not hard for you to

come into this neighborhood later in the evening? You did so once."

"I can manage it very well occasionally," said Deronda. "You live under

the same roof with the Cohens, I think?"

Before Mordecai could answer, Mr. Ram re-entered to take his place

behind the counter. He was an elderly son of Abraham, whose childhood

had fallen on the evil times at the beginning of this century, and who

remained amid this smart and instructed generation as a preserved

specimen, soaked through and through with the effect of the poverty and

contempt which were the common heritage of most English Jews seventy

years ago. He had none of the oily cheerfulness observable in Mr.

Cohen's aspect: his very features--broad and chubby--showed that

tendency to look mongrel without due cause, which, in a miscellaneous

London neighborhood, may perhaps be compared with the marvels of

imitation in insects, and may have been nature's imperfect effort on

behalf of the pure Caucasian to shield him from the shame and spitting

to which purer features would have been exposed in the times of zeal.

Mr. Ram dealt ably in books, in the same way that he would have dealt

in tins of meat and other commodities--without knowledge or

responsibility as to the proportion of rottenness or nourishment they

might contain. But he believed in Mordecai's learning as something

marvellous, and was not sorry that his conversation should be sought by

a bookish gentleman, whose visits had twice ended in a purchase. He

greeted Deronda with a crabbed good-will, and, putting on large silver

spectacles, appeared at once to abstract himself in the daily accounts.

But Deronda and Mordecai were soon in the street together, and without

any explicit agreement as to their direction, were walking toward Ezra

Cohen's.

"We can't meet there: my room is too narrow," said Mordecai, taking up

the thread of talk where they had dropped it. "But there is a tavern

not far from here where I sometimes go to a club. It is the \_Hand and

Banner\_, in the street at the next turning, five doors down. We can

have the parlor there any evening."

"We can try that for once," said Deronda. "But you will perhaps let me

provide you with some lodging, which would give you more freedom and

comfort than where you are."

"No; I need nothing. My outer life is as nought. I will take nothing

less precious from you than your soul's brotherhood. I will think of

nothing else yet. But I am glad you are rich. You did not need money on

that diamond ring. You had some other motive for bringing it."

Deronda was a little startled by this clear-sightedness; but before he

could reply Mordecai added--"it is all one. Had you been in need of the

money, the great end would have been that we should meet again. But you

are rich?" he ended, in a tone of interrogation.

"Not rich, except in the sense that every one is rich who has more than

he needs for himself."

"I desired that your life should be free," said Mordecai,

dreamily--"mine has been a bondage."

It was clear that he had no interest in the fact of Deronda's

appearance at the Cohens' beyond its relation to his own ideal purpose.

Despairing of leading easily up to the question he wished to ask,

Deronda determined to put it abruptly, and said--

"Can you tell me why Mrs. Cohen, the mother, must not be spoken to

about her daughter?"

There was no immediate answer, and he thought that he should have to

repeat the question. The fact was that Mordecai had heard the words,

but had to drag his mind to a new subject away from his passionate

preoccupation. After a few moments, he replied with a careful effort

such as he would have used if he had been asked the road to Holborn---

"I know the reason. But I will not speak even of trivial family affairs

which I have heard in the privacy of the family. I dwell in their tent

as in a sanctuary. Their history, so far as they injure none other, is

their own possession."

Deronda felt the blood mounting to his cheeks as a sort of rebuke he

was little used to, and he also found himself painfully baffled where

he had reckoned with some confidence on getting decisive knowledge. He

became the more conscious of emotional strain from the excitements of

the day; and although he had the money in his pocket to redeem his

ring, he recoiled from the further task of a visit to the Cohens',

which must be made not only under the former uncertainty, but under a

new disappointment as to the possibility of its removal.

"I will part from you now," he said, just before they could reach

Cohen's door; and Mordecai paused, looking up at him with an anxious

fatigued face under the gaslight.

"When will you come back?" he said, with slow emphasis.

"May I leave that unfixed? May I ask for you at the Cohens' any evening

after your hour at the book-shop? There is no objection, I suppose, to

their knowing that you and I meet in private?"

"None," said Mordecai. "But the days I wait now are longer than the

years of my strength. Life shrinks: what was but a tithe is now the

half. My hope abides in you."

"I will be faithful," said Deronda--he could not have left those words

unuttered. "I will come the first evening I can after seven: on

Saturday or Monday, if possible. Trust me."

He put out his ungloved hand. Mordecai, clasping it eagerly, seemed to

feel a new instreaming of confidence, and he said with some recovered

energy--"This is come to pass, and the rest will come."

That was their good-bye.

BOOK VI---REVELATIONS

CHAPTER XLI.

"This, too is probable, according to that saying of Agathon: 'It is a

part of probability that many improbable things will happen.'"

--ARISTOTLE: \_Poetics\_.

Imagine the conflict in a mind like Deronda's given not only to feel

strongly but to question actively, on the evening after the interview

with Mordecai. To a young man of much duller susceptibilities the

adventure might have seemed enough out of the common way to divide his

thoughts; but it had stirred Deronda so deeply, that with the usual

reaction of his intellect he began to examine the grounds of his

emotion, and consider how far he must resist its guidance. The

consciousness that he was half dominated by Mordecai's energetic

certitude, and still more by his fervent trust, roused his alarm. It

was his characteristic bias to shrink from the moral stupidity of

valuing lightly what had come close to him, and of missing blindly in

his own life of to-day the crisis which he recognized as momentous and

sacred in the historic life of men. If he had read of this incident as

having happened centuries ago in Rome, Greece, Asia Minor, Palestine,

Cairo, to some man young as himself, dissatisfied with his neutral

life, and wanting some closer fellowship, some more special duty to

give him ardor for the possible consequences of his work, it would have

appeared to him quite natural that the incident should have created a

deep impression on that far-off man, whose clothing and action would

have been seen in his imagination as part of an age chiefly known to us

through its more serious effects. Why should he be ashamed of his own

agitated feeling merely because he dressed for dinner, wore a white

tie, and lived among people who might laugh at his owning any

conscience in the matter, as the solemn folly of taking himself too

seriously?--that bugbear of circles in which the lack of grave emotion

passes for wit. From such cowardice before modish ignorance and

obtuseness, Deronda shrank. But he also shrank from having his course

determined by mere contagion, without consent of reason; or from

allowing a reverential pity for spiritual struggle to hurry him along a

dimly-seen path.

What, after all, had really happened? He knew quite accurately the

answer Sir Hugo would have given: "A consumptive Jew, possessed by a

fanaticism which obstacles and hastening death intensified, had fixed

on Deronda as the antitype of some visionary image, the offspring of

wedded hope and despair: despair of his own life, irrepressible hope in

the propagation of his fanatical beliefs. The instance was perhaps odd,

exceptional in its form, but substantially it was not rare. Fanaticism

was not so common as bankruptcy, but taken in all its aspects it was

abundant enough. While Mordecai was waiting on the bridge for the

fulfillment of his visions, another man was convinced that he had the

mathematical key of the universe which would supersede Newton, and

regarded all known physicists as conspiring to stifle his discovery and

keep the universe locked; another, that he had the metaphysical key,

with just that hair's-breadth of difference from the old wards which

would make it fit exactly. Scattered here and there in every direction

you might find a terrible person, with more or less power of speech,

and with an eye either glittering or preternaturally dull, on the

look-out for the man who must hear him; and in most cases he had

volumes which it was difficult to get printed, or if printed to get

read. This Mordecai happened to have a more pathetic aspect, a more

passionate, penetrative speech than was usual with such monomaniacs; he

was more poetical than a social reformer with colored views of the new

moral world in parallelograms, or than an enthusiast in sewage; still

he came under the same class. It would be only right and kind to

indulge him a little, to comfort him with such help as was practicable;

but what likelihood was there that his notions had the sort of value he

ascribed to them? In such cases a man of the world knows what to think

beforehand. And as to Mordecai's conviction that he had found a new

executive self, it might be preparing for him the worst of

disappointments--that which presents itself as final."

Deronda's ear caught all these negative whisperings; nay, he repeated

them distinctly to himself. It was not the first but it was the most

pressing occasion on which he had had to face this question of the

family likeness among the heirs of enthusiasm, whether prophets or

dreamers of dreams, whether the

"Great benefactors of mankind, deliverers,"

or the devotees of phantasmal discovery--from the first believer in his

own unmanifested inspiration, down to the last inventor of an ideal

machine that will achieve perpetual motion. The kinship of human

passion, the sameness of mortal scenery, inevitably fill fact with

burlesque and parody. Error and folly have had their hecatombs of

martyrs. Reduce the grandest type of man hitherto known to an abstract

statement of his qualities and efforts, and he appears in dangerous

company: say that, like Copernicus and Galileo, he was immovably

convinced in the face of hissing incredulity; but so is the contriver

of perpetual motion. We cannot fairly try the spirits by this sort of

test. If we want to avoid giving the dose of hemlock or the sentence of

banishment in the wrong case, nothing will do but a capacity to

understand the subject-matter on which the immovable man is convinced,

and fellowship with human travail, both near and afar, to hinder us

from scanning and deep experience lightly. Shall we say, "Let the ages

try the spirits, and see what they are worth?" Why, we are the

beginning of the ages, which can only be just by virtue of just

judgments in separate human breasts--separate yet combined. Even

steam-engines could not have got made without that condition, but must

have stayed in the mind of James Watt.

This track of thinking was familiar enough to Deronda to have saved him

from any contemptuous prejudgment of Mordecai, even if their

communication had been free from that peculiar claim on himself

strangely ushered in by some long-growing preparation in the Jew's

agitated mind. This claim, indeed, considered in what is called a

rational way, might seem justifiably dismissed as illusory and even

preposterous; but it was precisely what turned Mordecai's hold on him

from an appeal to his ready sympathy into a clutch on his struggling

conscience. Our consciences are not all of the same pattern, an inner

deliverance of fixed laws: they are the voice of sensibilities as

various as our memories (which also have their kinship and likeness).

And Deronda's conscience included sensibilities beyond the common,

enlarged by his early habit of thinking himself imaginatively into the

experience of others.

What was the claim this eager soul made upon him?--"You must believe my

beliefs--be moved by my reasons--hope my hopes--see the vision I point

to--behold a glory where I behold it!" To take such a demand in the

light of an obligation in any direct sense would have been

preposterous--to have seemed to admit it would have been dishonesty;

and Deronda, looking on the agitation of those moments, felt thankful

that in the midst of his compassion he had preserved himself from the

bondage of false concessions. The claim hung, too, on a supposition

which might be--nay, probably was--in discordance with the full fact:

the supposition that he, Deronda, was of Jewish blood. Was there ever a

more hypothetic appeal?

But since the age of thirteen Deronda had associated the deepest

experience of his affections with what was a pure supposition, namely,

that Sir Hugo was his father: that was a hypothesis which had been the

source of passionate struggle within him; by its light he had been

accustomed to subdue feelings and to cherish them. He had been well

used to find a motive in a conception which might be disproved; and he

had been also used to think of some revelation that might influence his

view of the particular duties belonging to him. To be in a state of

suspense, which was also one of emotive activity and scruple, was a

familiar attitude of his conscience.

And now, suppose that wish-begotten belief in his Jewish birth, and

that extravagant demand of discipleship, to be the foreshadowing of an

actual discovery and a genuine spiritual result: suppose that

Mordecai's ideas made a real conquest over Deronda's conviction? Nay,

it was conceivable that as Mordecai needed and believed that, he had

found an active replenishment of himself, so Deronda might receive from

Mordecai's mind the complete ideal shape of that personal duty and

citizenship which lay in his own thought like sculptured fragments

certifying some beauty yearned after but not traceable by divination.

As that possibility presented itself in his meditations, he was aware

that it would be called dreamy, and began to defend it. If the

influence he imagined himself submitting to had been that of some

honored professor, some authority in a seat of learning, some

philosopher who had been accepted as a voice of the age, would a

thorough receptiveness toward direction have been ridiculed? Only by

those who hold it a sign of weakness to be obliged for an idea, and

prefer to hint that they have implicitly held in a more correct form

whatever others have stated with a sadly short-coming explicitness.

After all, what was there but vulgarity in taking the fact that

Mordecai was a poor Jewish workman, and that he was to be met perhaps

on a sanded floor in the parlor of the \_Hand and Banner\_ as a reason

for determining beforehand that there was not some spiritual force

within him that might have a determining effect on a white-handed

gentleman? There is a legend told of the Emperor Domitian, that having

heard of a Jewish family, of the house of David, whence the ruler of

the world was to spring, he sent for its members in alarm, but quickly

released them on observing that they had the hands of

work-people--being of just the opposite opinion with that Rabbi who

stood waiting at the gate of Rome in confidence that the Messiah would

be found among the destitute who entered there. Both Emperor and Rabbi

were wrong in their trust of outward signs: poverty and poor clothes

are no sign of inspiration, said Deronda to his inward objector, but

they have gone with it in some remarkable cases. And to regard

discipleship as out of the question because of them, would be mere

dullness of imagination.

A more plausible reason for putting discipleship out of the question

was the strain of visionary excitement in Mordecai, which turned his

wishes into overmastering impressions, and made him read outward facts

as fulfillment. Was such a temper of mind likely to accompany that wise

estimate of consequences which is the only safeguard from fatal error,

even to ennobling motive? But it remained to be seen whether that rare

conjunction existed or not in Mordecai: perhaps his might be one of the

natures where a wise estimate of consequences is fused in the fires of

that passionate belief which determines the consequences it believes

in. The inspirations of the world have come in that way too: even

strictly-measuring science could hardly have got on without that

forecasting ardor which feels the agitations of discovery beforehand,

and has a faith in its preconception that surmounts many failures of

experiment. And in relation to human motives and actions, passionate

belief has a fuller efficacy. Here enthusiasm may have the validity of

proof, and happening in one soul, give the type of what will one day be

general.

At least, Deronda argued, Mordecai's visionary excitability was hardly

a reason for concluding beforehand that he was not worth listening to

except for pity sake. Suppose he had introduced himself as one of the

strictest reasoners. Do they form a body of men hitherto free from

false conclusions and illusory speculations? The driest argument has

its hallucinations, too hastily concluding that its net will now at

last be large enough to hold the universe. Men may dream in

demonstrations, and cut out an illusory world in the shape of axioms,

definitions, and propositions, with a final exclusion of fact signed

Q.E.D. No formulas for thinking will save us mortals from mistake in

our imperfect apprehension of the matter to be thought about. And since

the unemotional intellect may carry us into a mathematical dreamland

where nothing is but what is not, perhaps an emotional intellect may

have absorbed into its passionate vision of possibilities some truth of

what will be--the more comprehensive massive life feeding theory with

new material, as the sensibility of the artist seizes combinations

which science explains and justifies. At any rate, presumptions to the

contrary are not to be trusted. We must be patient with the inevitable

makeshift of our human thinking, whether in its sum total or in the

separate minds that have made the sum. Columbus had some impressions

about himself which we call superstitions, and used some arguments

which we disapprove; but he had also some sound physical conceptions,

and he had the passionate patience of genius to make them tell on

mankind. The world has made up its mind rather contemptuously about

those who were deaf to Columbus.

"My contempt for them binds me to see that I don't adopt their mistake

on a small scale," said Deronda, "and make myself deaf with the

assumption that there cannot be any momentous relation between this Jew

and me, simply because he has clad it in illusory notions. What I can

be to him, or he to me, may not at all depend on his persuasion about

the way we came together. To me the way seems made up of plainly

discernible links. If I had not found Mirah, it is probable that I

should not have begun to be specially interested in the Jews, and

certainly I should not have gone on that loitering search after an Ezra

Cohen which made me pause at Ram's book-shop and ask the price of

\_Maimon\_. Mordecai, on his side, had his visions of a disciple, and he

saw me by their light; I corresponded well enough with the image his

longing had created. He took me for one of his race. Suppose that his

impression--the elderly Jew at Frankfort seemed to have something like

it--suppose in spite of all presumptions to the contrary, that his

impression should somehow be proved true, and that I should come

actually to share any of the ideas he is devoted to? This is the only

question which really concerns the effect of our meeting on my life.

"But if the issue should be quite different?--well, there will be

something painful to go through. I shall almost inevitably have to be

an active cause of that poor fellow's crushing disappointment. Perhaps

this issue is the one I had need prepare myself for. I fear that no

tenderness of mine can make his suffering lighter. Would the

alternative--that I should not disappoint him--be less painful to me?"

Here Deronda wavered. Feelings had lately been at work within him which

had very much modified the reluctance he would formerly have had to

think of himself as probably a Jew. And, if you like, he was romantic.

That young energy and spirit of adventure which have helped to create

the world-wide legions of youthful heroes going to seek the hidden

tokens of their birth and its inheritance of tasks, gave him a certain

quivering interest in the bare possibility that he was entering on a

track like--all the more because the track was one of thought as well

as action.

"The bare possibility." He could not admit it to be more. The belief

that his father was an Englishman only grew firmer under the weak

assaults of unwarranted doubt. And that a moment should ever come in

which that belief was declared a delusion, was something of which

Deronda would not say, "I should be glad." His life-long affection for

Sir Hugo, stronger than all his resentment, made him shrink from

admitting that wish.

Which way soever the truth might lie, he repeated to himself what he

had said to Mordecai--that he could not without farther reasons

undertake to hasten its discovery. Nay, he was tempted now to regard

his uncertainty as a condition to be cherished for the present. If

further intercourse revealed nothing but illusions as what he was

expected to share in, the want of any valid evidence that he was a Jew

might save Mordecai the worst shock in the refusal of fraternity. It

might even be justifiable to use the uncertainty on this point in

keeping up a suspense which would induce Mordecai to accept those

offices of friendship that Deronda longed to urge on him.

These were the meditations that busied Deronda in the interval of four

days before he could fulfill his promise to call for Mordecai at Ezra

Cohen's, Sir Hugo's demands on him often lasting to an hour so late as

to put the evening expedition to Holborn out of the question.

CHAPTER XLII.

"Wenn es eine Stutenleiter von Leiden giebt, so hat Israel die hÃ¶chste

Staffel erstiegen; wen die Dauer der Schmerzen und die Geduld, mit

welcher sie ertragen werden, adeln, so nehmen es die Juden mit den

Hochgeborenen aller LÃ¤nder auf; wenn eine Literatur reich genannt

wird, die wenige klassische Trauerspiele besitzt, welcher Platz

gebÃ¼hrt dann einer Tragodie die anderthalb Jahrtausende wahrt,

gedichtet und dargestellt von den Helden selber?"--ZUNZ: \_Die

Synagogale Poesie des Mittelalters.\_

"If there are ranks in suffering, Israel takes precedence of all the

nations--if the duration of sorrows and the patience with which they

are borne ennoble, the Jews are among the aristocracy of every land--if

a literature is called rich in the possession of a few classic

tragedies, what shall we say to a National Tragedy lasting for fifteen

hundred years, in which the poets and the actors were also the heroes?"

Deronda had lately been reading that passage of Zunz, and it occurred

to him by way of contrast when he was going to the Cohens, who

certainly bore no obvious stamp of distinction in sorrow or in any

other form of aristocracy. Ezra Cohen was not clad in the sublime

pathos of the martyr, and his taste for money-getting seemed to be

favored with that success which has been the most exasperating

difference in the greed of Jews during all the ages of their

dispersion. This Jeshurun of a pawnbroker was not a symbol of the great

Jewish tragedy; and yet was there not something typical in the fact

that a life like Mordecai's--a frail incorporation of the national

consciousness, breathing with difficult breath--was nested in the

self-gratulating ignorant prosperity of the Cohens?

Glistening was the gladness in their faces when Deronda reappeared

among them. Cohen himself took occasion to intimate that although the

diamond ring, let alone a little longer, would have bred more money, he

did not mind \_that\_--not a sixpence--when compared with the pleasure of

the women and children in seeing a young gentleman whose first visit

had been so agreeable that they had "done nothing but talk of it ever

since." Young Mrs. Cohen was very sorry that baby was asleep, and then

very glad that Adelaide was not yet gone to bed, entreating Deronda not

to stay in the shop, but to go forthwith into the parlor to see "mother

and the children." He willingly accepted the invitation, having

provided himself with portable presents; a set of paper figures for

Adelaide, and an ivory cup and ball for Jacob.

The grandmother had a pack of cards before her and was making "plates"

with the children. A plate had just been thrown down and kept itself

whole.

"Stop!" said Jacob, running to Deronda as he entered. "Don't tread on

my plate. Stop and see me throw it up again."

Deronda complied, exchanging a smile of understanding with the

grandmother, and the plate bore several tossings before it came to

pieces; then the visitor was allowed to come forward and seat himself.

He observed that the door from which Mordecai had issued on the former

visit was now closed, but he wished to show his interest in the Cohens

before disclosing a yet stronger interest in their singular inmate.

It was not until he had Adelaide on his knee, and was setting up the

paper figures in their dance on the table, while Jacob was already

practicing with the cup and ball, that Deronda said--

"Is Mordecai in just now?"

"Where is he, Addy?" said Cohen, who had seized an interval of business

to come and look on.

"In the workroom there," said his wife, nodding toward the closed door.

"The fact is, sir," said Cohen, "we don't know what's come to him this

last day or two. He's always what I may call a little touched, you

know"--here Cohen pointed to his own forehead--"not quite so rational

in all things, like you and me; but he's mostly wonderful regular and

industrious so far as a poor creature can be, and takes as much delight

in the boy as anybody could. But this last day or two he's been moving

about like a sleep-walker, or else sitting as still as a wax figure."

"It's the disease, poor dear creature," said the grandmother, tenderly.

"I doubt whether he can stand long against it."

"No; I think its only something he's got in his head." said Mrs. Cohen

the younger. "He's been turning over writing continually, and when I

speak to him it takes him ever so long to hear and answer."

"You may think us a little weak ourselves," said Cohen, apologetically.

"But my wife and mother wouldn't part with him if he was a still worse

encumbrance. It isn't that we don't know the long and short of matters,

but it's our principle. There's fools do business at a loss and don't

know it. I'm not one of 'em."

"Oh, Mordecai carries a blessing inside him," said the grandmother.

"He's got something the matter inside him," said Jacob, coming up to

correct this erratum of his grandmother's. "He said he couldn't talk to

me, and he wouldn't have a bit o' bun."

"So far from wondering at your feeling for him," said Deronda, "I

already feel something of the same sort myself. I have lately talked to

him at Ram's book-shop--in fact, I promised to call for him here, that

we might go out together."

"That's it, then!" said Cohen, slapping his knee. "He's been expecting

you, and it's taken hold of him. I suppose he talks about his learning

to you. It's uncommonly kind of \_you\_, sir; for I don't suppose there's

much to be got out of it, else it wouldn't have left him where he is.

But there's the shop." Cohen hurried out, and Jacob, who had been

listening inconveniently near to Deronda's elbow, said to him with

obliging familiarity, "I'll call Mordecai for you, if you like."

"No, Jacob," said his mother; "open the door for the gentleman, and let

him go in himself Hush! don't make a noise."

Skillful Jacob seemed to enter into the play, and turned the handle of

the door as noiselessly as possible, while Deronda went behind him and

stood on the threshold. The small room was lit only by a dying fire and

one candle with a shade over it. On the board fixed under the window,

various objects of jewelry were scattered: some books were heaped in

the corner beyond them. Mordecai was seated on a high chair at the

board with his back to the door, his hands resting on each other and on

the board, a watch propped on a stand before him. He was in a state of

expectation as sickening as that of a prisoner listening for the

delayed deliverance--when he heard Deronda's voice saying, "I am come

for you. Are you ready?"

Immediately he turned without speaking, seized his furred cap which lay

near, and moved to join Deronda. It was but a moment before they were

both in the sitting-room, and Jacob, noticing the change in his

friend's air and expression, seized him by the arm and said, "See my

cup and ball!" sending the ball up close to Mordecai's face, as

something likely to cheer a convalescent. It was a sign of the relieved

tension in Mordecai's mind that he could smile and say, "Fine, fine!"

"You have forgotten your greatcoat and comforter," said young Mrs.

Cohen, and he went back into the work-room and got them.

"He's come to life again, do you see?" said Cohen, who had

re-entered--speaking in an undertone. "I told you so: I'm mostly

right." Then in his usual voice, "Well, sir, we mustn't detain you now,

I suppose; but I hope this isn't the last time we shall see you."

"Shall you come again?" said Jacob, advancing. "See, I can catch the

ball; I'll bet I catch it without stopping, if you come again."

"He has clever hands," said Deronda, looking at the grandmother. "Which

side of the family does he get them from?"

But the grandmother only nodded towards her son, who said promptly, "My

side. My wife's family are not in that line. But bless your soul! ours

is a sort of cleverness as good as gutta percha; you can twist it which

way you like. There's nothing some old gentlemen won't do if you set

'em to it." Here Cohen winked down at Jacob's back, but it was doubtful

whether this judicious allusiveness answered its purpose, for its

subject gave a nasal whinnying laugh and stamped about singing, "Old

gentlemen, old gentlemen," in chiming cadence.

Deronda thought, "I shall never know anything decisive about these

people until I ask Cohen pointblank whether he lost a sister named

Mirah when she was six years old." The decisive moment did not yet seem

easy for him to face. Still his first sense of repulsion at the

commonness of these people was beginning to be tempered with kindlier

feeling. However unrefined their airs and speech might be, he was

forced to admit some moral refinement in their treatment of the

consumptive workman, whose mental distinction impressed them chiefly as

a harmless, silent raving.

"The Cohens seem to have an affection for you," said Deronda, as soon

as he and Mordecai were off the doorstep.

"And I for them," was the immediate answer. "They have the heart of the

Israelite within them, though they are as the horse and the mule,

without understanding beyond the narrow path they tread."

"I have caused you some uneasiness, I fear," said Deronda, "by my

slowness in fulfilling my promise. I wished to come yesterday, but I

found it impossible."

"Yes--yes, I trusted you. But it is true I have been uneasy, for the

spirit of my youth has been stirred within me, and this body is not

strong enough to bear the beating of its wings. I am as a man bound and

imprisoned through long years: behold him brought to speech of his

fellow and his limbs set free: he weeps, he totters, the joy within him

threatens to break and overthrow the tabernacle of flesh."

"You must not speak too much in this evening air," said Deronda,

feeling Mordecai's words of reliance like so many cords binding him

painfully. "Cover your mouth with the woolen scarf. We are going to the

\_Hand and Banner\_, I suppose, and shall be in private there?"

"No, that is my trouble that you did not come yesterday. For this is

the evening of the club I spoke of, and we might not have any minutes

alone until late, when all the rest are gone. Perhaps we had better

seek another place. But I am used to that only. In new places the outer

world presses on me and narrows the inward vision. And the people there

are familiar with my face."

"I don't mind the club if I am allowed to go in," said Deronda. "It is

enough that you like this place best. If we have not enough time I will

come again. What sort of club is it?"

"It is called 'The Philosophers.' They are few--like the cedars of

Lebanon--poor men given to thought. But none so poor as I am: and

sometimes visitors of higher worldly rank have been brought. We are

allowed to introduce a friend, who is interested in our topics. Each

orders beer or some other kind of drink, in payment for the room. Most

of them smoke. I have gone when I could, for there are other men of my

race who come, and sometimes I have broken silence. I have pleased

myself with a faint likeness between these poor philosophers and the

Masters who handed down the thought of our race--the great

Transmitters, who labored with their hands for scant bread, but

preserved and enlarged for us the heritage of memory, and saved the

soul of Israel alive as a seed among the tombs. The heart pleases

itself with faint resemblances."

"I shall be very glad to go and sit among them, if that will suit you.

It is a sort of meeting I should like to join in," said Deronda, not

without relief in the prospect of an interval before he went through

the strain of his next private conversation with Mordecai.

In three minutes they had opened the glazed door with the red curtain,

and were in the little parlor, hardly much more than fifteen feet

square, where the gaslight shone through a slight haze of smoke on what

to Deronda was a new and striking scene. Half-a-dozen men of various

ages, from between twenty and thirty to fifty, all shabbily dressed,

most of them with clay pipes in their mouths, were listening with a

look of concentrated intelligence to a man in a pepper-and-salt dress,

with blonde hair, short nose, broad forehead and general breadth, who,

holding his pipe slightly uplifted in the left hand, and beating his

knee with the right, was just finishing a quotation from Shelley (the

comparison of the avalanche in his "Prometheus Unbound")

"As thought by thought is piled, till some great truth

Is loosened, and the nations echo round."

The entrance of the new-comers broke the fixity of attention, and

called for re-arrangement of seats in the too narrow semicircle round

the fire-place and the table holding the glasses, spare pipes and

tobacco. This was the soberest of clubs; but sobriety is no reason why

smoking and "taking something" should be less imperiously needed as a

means of getting a decent status in company and debate. Mordecai was

received with welcoming voices which had a slight cadence of compassion

in them, but naturally all glances passed immediately to his companion.

"I have brought a friend who is interested in our subjects," said

Mordecai. "He has traveled and studied much."

"Is the gentlemen anonymous? Is he a Great 'Unknown?'" said the

broad-chested quoter of Shelley, with a humorous air.

"My name is Daniel Deronda. I am unknown, but not in any sense great."

The smile breaking over the stranger's grave face as he said this was

so agreeable that there was a general indistinct murmur, equivalent to

a "Hear, hear," and the broad man said--

"You recommend the name, sir, and are welcome. Here, Mordecai, come to

this corner against me," he added, evidently wishing to give the

coziest place to the one who most needed it.

Deronda was well satisfied to get a seat on the opposite side, where

his general survey of the party easily included Mordecai, who remained

an eminently striking object in this group of sharply-characterized

figures, more than one of whom, even to Daniel's little exercised

discrimination, seemed probably of Jewish descent.

In fact pure English blood (if leech or lancet can furnish us with the

precise product) did not declare itself predominantly in the party at

present assembled. Miller, the broad man, an exceptional second-hand

bookseller who knew the insides of books, had at least grand-parents

who called themselves German, and possibly far-away ancestors who

denied themselves to be Jews; Buchan, the saddler, was Scotch; Pash,

the watchmaker, was a small, dark, vivacious, triple-baked Jew; Gideon,

the optical instrument maker, was a Jew of the red-haired,

generous-featured type easily passing for Englishmen of unusually

cordial manners: and Croop, the dark-eyed shoemaker, was probably more

Celtic than he knew. Only three would have been discernable everywhere

as Englishman: the wood-inlayer Goodwin, well-built, open-faced,

pleasant-voiced; the florid laboratory assistant Marrables; and Lily,

the pale, neat-faced copying-clerk, whose light-brown hair was set up

in a small parallelogram above his well-filled forehead, and whose

shirt, taken with an otherwise seedy costume, had a freshness that

might be called insular, and perhaps even something narrower.

Certainly a company select of the select among poor men, being drawn

together by a taste not prevalent even among the privileged heirs of

learning and its institutions; and not likely to amuse any gentleman in

search of crime or low comedy as the ground of interest in people whose

weekly income is only divisible into shillings. Deronda, even if he had

not been more than usually inclined to gravity under the influence of

what was pending between him and Mordecai, would not have set himself

to find food for laughter in the various shades of departure from the

tone of polished society sure to be observable in the air and talk of

these men who had probably snatched knowledge as most of us snatch

indulgences, making the utmost of scant opportunity. He looked around

him with the quiet air of respect habitual to him among equals, ordered

whisky and water, and offered the contents of his cigar-case, which,

characteristically enough, he always carried and hardly ever used for

his own behoof, having reasons for not smoking himself, but liking to

indulge others. Perhaps it was his weakness to be afraid of seeming

straight-laced, and turning himself into a sort of diagram instead of a

growth which can exercise the guiding attraction of fellowship. That he

made a decidedly winning impression on the company was proved by their

showing themselves no less at ease than before, and desirous of quickly

resuming their interrupted talk.

"This is what I call one of our touch-and-go nights, sir," said Miller,

who was implicitly accepted as a sort of moderator--on addressing

Deronda by way of explanation, and nodding toward each person whose

name he mentioned. "Sometimes we stick pretty close to the point. But

tonight our friend Pash, there, brought up the law of progress; and we

got on statistics; then Lily, there, saying we knew well enough before

counting that in the same state of society the same sort of things

would happen, and it was no more wonder that quantities should remain

the same, than that qualities should remain the same, for in relation

to society numbers are qualities--the number of drunkards is a quality

in society--the numbers are an index to the qualities, and give us no

instruction, only setting us to consider the causes of difference

between different social states--Lily saying this, we went off on the

causes of social change, and when you came in I was going upon the

power of ideas, which I hold to be the main transforming cause."

"I don't hold with you there, Miller," said Goodwin, the inlayer, more

concerned to carry on the subject than to wait for a word from the new

guest. "For either you mean so many sorts of things by ideas that I get

no knowledge by what you say, any more than if you said light was a

cause; or else you mean a particular sort of ideas, and then I go

against your meaning as too narrow. For, look at it in one way, all

actions men put a bit of thought into are ideas--say, sowing seed, or

making a canoe, or baking clay; and such ideas as these work themselves

into life and go on growing with it, but they can't go apart from the

material that set them to work and makes a medium for them. It's the

nature of wood and stone yielding to the knife that raises the idea of

shaping them, and with plenty of wood and stone the shaping will go on.

I look at it, that such ideas as are mixed straight away with all the

other elements of life are powerful along with 'em. The slower the

mixing, the less power they have. And as to the causes of social

change, I look at it in this way--ideas are a sort of parliament, but

there's a commonwealth outside and a good deal of the commonwealth is

working at change without knowing what the parliament is doing."

"But if you take ready mixing as your test of power," said Pash, "some

of the least practical ideas beat everything. They spread without being

understood, and enter into the language without being thought of."

"They may act by changing the distribution of gases," said Marrables;

"instruments are getting so fine now, men may come to register the

spread of a theory by observed changes in the atmosphere and

corresponding changes in the nerves."

"Yes," said Pash, his dark face lighting up rather impishly, "there is

the idea of nationalities; I dare say the wild asses are snuffing it,

and getting more gregarious."

"You don't share that idea?" said Deronda, finding a piquant

incongruity between Pash's sarcasm and the strong stamp of race on his

features.

"Say, rather, he does not share that spirit," said Mordecai, who had

turned a melancholy glance on Pash. "Unless nationality is a feeling,

what force can it have as an idea?"

"Granted, Mordecai," said Pash, quite good-humoredly. "And as the

feeling of nationality is dying, I take the idea to be no better than a

ghost, already walking to announce the death."

"A sentiment may seem to be dying and yet revive into strong life,"

said Deronda. "Nations have revived. We may live to see a great

outburst of force in the Arabs, who are being inspired with a new zeal."

"Amen, amen," said Mordecai, looking at Deronda with a delight which

was the beginning of recovered energy: his attitude was more upright,

his face was less worn.

"That may hold with backward nations," said Pash, "but with us in

Europe the sentiment of nationality is destined to die out. It will

last a little longer in the quarters where oppression lasts, but

nowhere else. The whole current of progress is setting against it."

"Ay," said Buchan, in a rapid thin Scotch tone which was like the

letting in of a little cool air on the conversation, "ye've done well

to bring us round to the point. Ye're all agreed that societies

change--not always and everywhere--but on the whole and in the long

run. Now, with all deference, I would beg t' observe that we have got

to examine the nature of changes before we have a warrant to call them

progress, which word is supposed to include a bettering, though I

apprehend it to be ill-chosen for that purpose, since mere motion

onward may carry us to a bog or a precipice. And the questions I would

put are three: Is all change in the direction of progress? if not, how

shall we discern which change is progress and which not? and thirdly,

how far and in what way can we act upon the course of change so as to

promote it where it is beneficial, and divert it where it is injurious?"

But Buchan's attempt to impose his method on the talk was a failure.

Lily immediately said--

"Change and progress are merged in the idea of development. The laws of

development are being discovered, and changes taking place according to

them are necessarily progressive; that is to say, it we have any notion

of progress or improvement opposed to them, the notion is a mistake."

"I really can't see how you arrive at that sort of certitude about

changes by calling them development," said Deronda. "There will still

remain the degrees of inevitableness in relation to our own will and

acts, and the degrees of wisdom in hastening or retarding; there will

still remain the danger of mistaking a tendency which should be

resisted for an inevitable law that we must adjust ourselves to,--which

seems to me as bad a superstition or false god as any that has been set

up without the ceremonies of philosophising."

"That is a truth," said Mordecai. "Woe to the men who see no place for

resistance in this generation! I believe in a growth, a passage, and a

new unfolding of life whereof the seed is more perfect, more charged

with the elements that are pregnant with diviner form. The life of a

people grows, it is knit together and yet expanded, in joy and sorrow,

in thought and action; it absorbs the thought of other nations into its

own forms, and gives back the thought as new wealth to the world; it is

a power and an organ in the great body of the nations. But there may

come a check, an arrest; memories may be stifled, and love may be faint

for the lack of them; or memories may shrink into withered relics--the

soul of a people, whereby they know themselves to be one, may seem to

be dying for want of common action. But who shall say, 'The fountain of

their life is dried up, they shall forever cease to be a nation?' Who

shall say it? Not he who feels the life of his people stirring within

his own. Shall he say, 'That way events are wending, I will not

resist?' His very soul is resistance, and is as a seed of fire that may

enkindle the souls of multitudes, and make a new pathway for events."

"I don't deny patriotism," said Gideon, "but we all know you have a

particular meaning, Mordecai. You know Mordecai's way of thinking, I

suppose." Here Gideon had turned to Deronda, who sat next to him, but

without waiting for an answer he went on. "I'm a rational Jew myself. I

stand by my people as a sort of family relations, and I am for keeping

up our worship in a rational way. I don't approve of our people getting

baptised, because I don't believe in a Jew's conversion to the Gentile

part of Christianity. And now we have political equality, there's no

excuse for a pretense of that sort. But I am for getting rid of all of

our superstitions and exclusiveness. There's no reason now why we

shouldn't melt gradually into the populations we live among. That's the

order of the day in point of progress. I would as soon my children

married Christians as Jews. And I'm for the old maxim, 'A man's country

is where he's well off.'"

"That country's not so easy to find, Gideon," said the rapid Pash, with

a shrug and grimace. "You get ten shillings a-week more than I do, and

have only half the number of children. If somebody will introduce a

brisk trade in watches among the 'Jerusalem wares,' I'll go--eh,

Mordecai, what do you say?"

Deronda, all ear for these hints of Mordecai's opinion, was inwardly

wondering at his persistence in coming to this club. For an

enthusiastic spirit to meet continually the fixed indifference of men

familiar with the object of his enthusiasm is the acceptance of a slow

martyrdom, beside which the fate of a missionary tomahawked without any

considerate rejection of his doctrines seems hardly worthy of

compassion. But Mordecai gave no sign of shrinking: this was a moment

of spiritual fullness, and he cared more for the utterance of his faith

than for its immediate reception. With a fervor which had no temper in

it, but seemed rather the rush of feeling in the opportunity of speech,

he answered Pash:--

"What I say is, let every man keep far away from the brotherhood and

inheritance he despises. Thousands on thousands of our race have mixed

with the Gentiles as Celt with Saxon, and they may inherit the blessing

that belongs to the Gentile. You cannot follow them. You are one of the

multitudes over this globe who must walk among the nations and be known

as Jews, and with words on their lips which mean, 'I wish I had not

been born a Jew, I disown any bond with the long travail of my race, I

will outdo the Gentile in mocking at our separateness,' they all the

while feel breathing on them the breath of contempt because they are

Jews, and they will breathe it back poisonously. Can a fresh-made

garment of citizenship weave itself straightway into the flesh and

change the slow deposit of eighteen centuries? What is the citizenship

of him who walks among a people he has no hardy kindred and fellowship

with, and has lost the sense of brotherhood with his own race? It is a

charter of selfish ambition and rivalry in low greed. He is an alien of

spirit, whatever he may be in form; he sucks the blood of mankind, he

is not a man, sharing in no loves, sharing in no subjection of the

soul, he mocks it all. Is it not truth I speak, Pash?"

"Not exactly, Mordecai," said Pash, "if you mean that I think the worse

of myself for being a Jew. What I thank our fathers for is that there

are fewer blockheads among us than among other races. But perhaps you

are right in thinking the Christians don't like me so well for it."

"Catholics and Protestants have not liked each other much better," said

the genial Gideon. "We must wait patiently for prejudices to die out.

Many of our people are on a footing with the best, and there's been a

good filtering of our blood into high families. I am for making our

expectations rational."

"And so am I!" said Mordecai, quickly, leaning forward with the

eagerness of one who pleads in some decisive crisis, his long, thin

hands clasped together on his lap. "I, too, claim to be a rational Jew.

But what is it to be rational--what is it to feel the light of the

divine reason growing stronger within and without? It is to see more

and more of the hidden bonds that bind and consecrate change as a

dependent growth--yea, consecrate it with kinship: the past becomes my

parent and the future stretches toward me the appealing arms of

children. Is it rational to drain away the sap of special kindred that

makes the families of men rich in interchanged wealth, and various as

the forests are various with the glory of the cedar and the palm? When

it is rational to say, 'I know not my father or my mother, let my

children be aliens to me, that no prayer of mine may touch them,' then

it will be rational for the Jew to say, 'I will seek to know no

difference between me and the Gentile, I will not cherish the prophetic

consciousness of our nationality--let the Hebrew cease to be, and let

all his memorials be antiquarian trifles, dead as the wall-paintings of

a conjectured race. Yet let his child learn by rote the speech of the

Greek, where he abjures his fellow-citizens by the bravery of those who

fought foremost at Marathon--let him learn to say that was noble in the

Greek, that is the spirit of an immortal nation! But the Jew has no

memories that bind him to action; let him laugh that his nation is

degraded from a nation; let him hold the monuments of his law which

carried within its frame the breath of social justice, of charity, and

of household sanctities--let him hold the energy of the prophets, the

patient care of the Masters, the fortitude of martyred generations, as

mere stuff for a professorship. The business of the Jew in all things

is to be even as the rich Gentile."

Mordecai threw himself back in his chair, and there was a moment's

silence. Not one member of the club shared his point of view or his

emotion; but his whole personality and speech had on them the effect of

a dramatic representation which had some pathos in it, though no

practical consequences; and usually he was at once indulged and

contradicted. Deronda's mind went back upon what must have been the

tragic pressure of outward conditions hindering this man, whose force

he felt to be telling on himself, from making any world for his thought

in the minds of others--like a poet among people of a strange speech,

who may have a poetry of their own, but have no ear for his cadence, no

answering thrill to his discovery of the latent virtues in his mother

tongue.

The cool Buchan was the first to speak, and hint the loss of time. "I

submit," said he, "that ye're traveling away from the questions I put

concerning progress."

"Say they're levanting, Buchan," said Miller, who liked his joke, and

would not have objected to be called Voltairian. "Never mind. Let us

have a Jewish night; we've not had one for a long while. Let us take

the discussion on Jewish ground. I suppose we've no prejudice here;

we're all philosophers; and we like our friends Mordecai, Pash, and

Gideon, as well as if they were no more kin to Abraham than the rest of

us. We're all related through Adam, until further showing to the

contrary, and if you look into history we've all got some discreditable

forefathers. So I mean no offence when I say I don't think any great

things of the part the Jewish people have played in the world. What

then? I think they were iniquitously dealt by in past times. And I

suppose we don't want any men to be maltreated, white, black, brown, or

yellow--I know I've just given my half-crown to the contrary. And that

reminds me, I've a curious old German book--I can't read it myself, but

a friend of mine was reading out of it to me the other day--about the

prejudicies against the Jews, and the stories used to be told against

'em, and what do you think one was? Why, that they're punished with a

bad odor in their bodies; and \_that\_, says the author, date 1715 (I've

just been pricing and marking the book this very morning)--that is

true, for the ancients spoke of it. But then, he says, the other things

are fables, such as that the odor goes away all at once when they're

baptized, and that every one of the ten tribes, mind you, all the ten

being concerned in the crucifixion, has got a particular punishment

over and above the smell:--Asher, I remember, has the right arm a

handbreadth shorter than the left, and Naphthali has pig's ears and a

smell of live pork. What do you think of that? There's been a good deal

of fun made of rabbinical fables, but in point of fables my opinion is,

that all over the world it's six of one and half-a-dozen of the other.

However, as I said before, I hold with the philosophers of the last

century that the Jews have played no great part as a people, though

Pash will have it they're clever enough to beat all the rest of the

world. But if so, I ask, why haven't they done it?"

"For the same reason that the cleverest men in the country don't get

themselves or their ideas into Parliament," said the ready Pash;

"because the blockheads are too many for 'em."

"That is a vain question," said Mordecai, "whether our people would

beat the rest of the world. Each nation has its own work, and is a

member of the world, enriched by the work of each. But it is true, as

Jehuda-ha-Levi first said, that Israel is the heart of mankind, if we

mean by heart the core of affection which binds a race and its families

in dutiful love, and the reverence for the human body which lifts the

needs of our animal life into religion, and the tenderness which is

merciful to the poor and weak and to the dumb creature that wears the

yoke for us."

"They're not behind any nation in arrogance," said Lily; "and if they

have got in the rear, it has not been because they were over-modest."

"Oh, every nation brags in its turn," said Miller.

"Yes," said Pash, "and some of them in the Hebrew text."

"Well, whatever the Jews contributed at one time, they are a

stand-still people," said Lily. "They are the type of obstinate

adherence to the superannuated. They may show good abilities when they

take up liberal ideas, but as a race they have no development in them."

"That is false!" said Mordecai, leaning forward again with his former

eagerness. "Let their history be known and examined; let the seed be

sifted, let its beginning be traced to the weed of the wilderness--the

more glorious will be the energy that transformed it. Where else is

there a nation of whom it may be as truly said that their religion and

law and moral life mingled as the stream of blood in the heart and made

one growth--where else a people who kept and enlarged their spiritual

store at the very time when they are hated with a hatred as fierce as

the forest fires that chase the wild beast from his covert? There is a

fable of the Roman, that swimming to save his life he held the roll of

his writings between his teeth and saved them from the waters. But how

much more than that is true of our race? They struggled to keep their

place among the nations like heroes--yea, when the hand was hacked off,

they clung with their teeth; but when the plow and the harrow had

passed over the last visible signs of their national covenant, and the

fruitfulness of their land was stifled with the blood of the sowers and

planters, they said, 'The spirit is alive, let us make it a lasting

habitation--lasting because movable--so that it may be carried from

generation to generation, and our sons unborn may be rich in the things

that have been, and possess a hope built on an unchangeable

foundation.' They said it and they wrought it, though often breathing

with scant life, as in a coffin, or as lying wounded amid a heap of

slain. Hooted and scared like the unknown dog, the Hebrew made himself

envied for his wealth and wisdom, and was bled of them to fill the bath

of Gentile luxury; he absorbed knowledge, he diffused it; his dispersed

race was a new Phoenicia working the mines of Greece and carrying their

products to the world. The native spirit of our tradition was not to

stand still, but to use records as a seed and draw out the compressed

virtues of law and prophecy; and while the Gentile, who had said, 'What

is yours is ours, and no longer yours,' was reading the letter of our

law as a dark inscription, or was turning its parchments into

shoe-soles for an army rabid with lust and cruelty, our Masters were

still enlarging and illuminating with fresh-fed interpretation. But the

dispersion was wide, the yoke of oppression was a spiked torture as

well as a load; the exile was forced afar among brutish people, where

the consciousness of his race was no clearer to him than the light of

the sun to our fathers in the Roman persecution, who had their

hiding-place in a cave, and knew not that it was day save by the dimmer

burning of their candles. What wonder that multitudes of our people are

ignorant, narrow, superstitious? What wonder?"

Here Mordecai, whose seat was next the fireplace, rose and leaned his

arm on the little shelf; his excitement had risen, though his voice,

which had begun with unusual strength, was getting hoarser.

"What wonder? The night is unto them, that they have no vision; in

their darkness they are unable to divine; the sun is gone down over the

prophets, and the day is dark above them; their observances are as

nameless relics. But which among the chief of the Gentile nations has

not an ignorant multitude? They scorn our people's ignorant observance;

but the most accursed ignorance is that which has no observance--sunk

to the cunning greed of the fox, to which all law is no more than a

trap or the cry of the worrying hound. There is a degradation deep down

below the memory that has withered into superstition. In the multitudes

of the ignorant on three continents who observe our rites and make the

confession of the divine Unity, the soul of Judaism is not dead. Revive

the organic centre: let the unity of Israel which has made the growth

and form of its religion be an outward reality. Looking toward a land

and a polity, our dispersed people in all the ends of the earth may

share the dignity of a national life which has a voice among the

peoples of the East and the West--which will plant the wisdom and skill

of our race so that it may be, as of old, a medium of transmission and

understanding. Let that come to pass, and the living warmth will spread

to the weak extremities of Israel, and superstition will vanish, not in

the lawlessness of the renegade, but in the illumination of great facts

which widen feeling, and make all knowledge alive as the young

offspring of beloved memories."

Mordecai's voice had sunk, but with the hectic brilliancy of his gaze

it was not the less impressive. His extraordinary excitement was

certainly due to Deronda's presence: it was to Deronda that he was

speaking, and the moment had a testamentary solemnity for him which

rallied all his powers. Yet the presence of those other familiar men

promoted expression, for they embodied the indifference which gave a

resistant energy to his speech. Not that he looked at Deronda: he

seemed to see nothing immediately around him, and if any one had

grasped him he would probably not have known it. Again the former words

came back to Deronda's mind,--"You must hope my hopes--see the vision I

point to--behold a glory where I behold it." They came now with

gathered pathos. Before him stood, as a living, suffering reality, what

hitherto he had only seen as an effort of imagination, which, in its

comparative faintness, yet carried a suspicion, of being exaggerated: a

man steeped in poverty and obscurity, weakened by disease, consciously

within the shadow of advancing death, but living an intense life in an

invisible past and future, careless of his personal lot, except for its

possible making some obstruction to a conceived good which he would

never share except as a brief inward vision--a day afar off, whose sun

would never warm him, but into which he threw his soul's desire, with a

passion often wanting to the personal motives of healthy youth. It was

something more than a grandiose transfiguration of the parental love

that toils, renounces, endures, resists the suicidal promptings of

despair--all because of the little ones, whose future becomes present

to the yearning gaze of anxiety.

All eyes were fixed on Mordecai as he sat down again, and none with

unkindness; but it happened that the one who felt the most kindly was

the most prompted to speak in opposition. This was the genial and

rational Gideon, who also was not without a sense that he was

addressing the guest of the evening. He said--

"You have your own way of looking at things, Mordecai, and as you say,

your own way seems to you rational. I know you don't hold with the

restoration of Judea by miracle, and so on; but you are as well aware

as I am that the subject has been mixed with a heap of nonsense both by

Jews and Christians. And as to the connection of our race with

Palestine, it has been perverted by superstition till it's as

demoralizing as the old poor-law. The raff and scum go there to be

maintained like able-bodied paupers, and to be taken special care of by

the angel Gabriel when they die. It's no use fighting against facts. We

must look where they point; that's what I call rationality. The most

learned and liberal men among us who are attached to our religion are

for clearing our liturgy of all such notions as a literal fulfillment

of the prophecies about restoration, and so on. Prune it of a few

useless rites and literal interpretations of that sort, and our

religion is the simplest of all religions, and makes no barrier, but a

union, between us and the rest of the world."

"As plain as a pike-staff," said Pash, with an ironical laugh. "You

pluck it up by the roots, strip off the leaves and bark, shave off the

knots, and smooth it at top and bottom; put it where you will, it will

do no harm, it will never sprout. You may make a handle of it, or you

may throw it on the bonfire of scoured rubbish. I don't see why our

rubbish is to be held sacred any more than the rubbish of Brahmanism or

Buddhism."

"No," said Mordecai, "no, Pash, because you have lost the heart of the

Jew. Community was felt before it was called good. I praise no

superstition, I praise the living fountains of enlarging belief. What

is growth, completion, development? You began with that question, I

apply it to the history of our people. I say that the effect of our

separateness will not be completed and have its highest transformation

unless our race takes on again the character of a nationality. That is

the fulfillment of the religious trust that moulded them into a people,

whose life has made half the inspiration of the world. What is it to me

that the ten tribes are lost untraceably, or that multitudes of the

children of Judah have mixed themselves with the Gentile populations as

a river with rivers? Behold our people still! Their skirts spread afar;

they are torn and soiled and trodden on; but there is a jeweled

breastplate. Let the wealthy men, the monarchs of commerce, the learned

in all knowledge, the skilful in all arts, the speakers, the political

counselors, who carry in their veins the Hebrew blood which has

maintained its vigor in all climates, and the pliancy of the Hebrew

genius for which difficulty means new device--let them say, 'we will

lift up a standard, we will unite in a labor hard but glorious like

that of Moses and Ezra, a labor which shall be a worthy fruit of the

long anguish whereby our fathers maintained their separateness,

refusing the ease of falsehood.' They have wealth enough to redeem the

soil from debauched and paupered conquerors; they have the skill of the

statesman to devise, the tongue of the orator to persuade. And is there

no prophet or poet among us to make the ears of Christian Europe tingle

with shame at the hideous obloquy of Christian strife which the Turk

gazes at as at the fighting of beasts to which he has lent an arena?

There is store of wisdom among us to found a new Jewish polity, grand,

simple, just, like the old--a republic where there is equality of

protection, an equality which shone like a star on the forehead of our

ancient community, and gave it more than the brightness of Western

freedom amid the despotisms of the East. Then our race shall have an

organic centre, a heart and brain to watch and guide and execute; the

outraged Jew shall have a defense in the court of nations, as the

outraged Englishman of America. And the world will gain as Israel

gains. For there will be a community in the van of the East which

carries the culture and the sympathies of every great nation in its

bosom: there will be a land set for a halting-place of enmities, a

neutral ground for the East as Belgium is for the West. Difficulties? I

know there are difficulties. But let the spirit of sublime achievement

move in the great among our people, and the work will begin."

"Ay, we may safely admit that, Mordecai," said Pash. "When there are

great men on 'Change, and high-flying professors converted to your

doctrine, difficulties will vanish like smoke."

Deronda, inclined by nature to take the side of those on whom the

arrows of scorn were falling, could not help replying to Pash's

outfling, and said--

"If we look back to the history of efforts which have made great

changes, it is astonishing how many of them seemed hopeless to those

who looked on in the beginning.

"Take what we have all heard and seen something of--the effort after

the unity of Italy, which we are sure soon to see accomplished to the

very last boundary. Look into Mazzini's account of his first yearning,

when he was a boy, after a restored greatness and a new freedom to

Italy, and of his first efforts as a young man to rouse the same

feelings in other young men, and get them to work toward a united

nationality. Almost everything seemed against him; his countrymen were

ignorant or indifferent, governments hostile, Europe incredulous. Of

course the scorners often seemed wise. Yet you see the prophecy lay

with him. As long as there is a remnant of national consciousness, I

suppose nobody will deny that there may be a new stirring of memories

and hopes which may inspire arduous action."

"Amen," said Mordecai, to whom Deronda's words were a cordial. "What is

needed is the leaven--what is needed is the seed of fire. The heritage

of Israel is beating in the pulses of millions; it lives in their veins

as a power without understanding, like the morning exultation of herds;

it is the inborn half of memory, moving as in a dream among writings on

the walls, which it sees dimly but cannot divide into speech. Let the

torch of visible community be lit! Let the reason of Israel disclose

itself in a great outward deed, and let there be another great

migration, another choosing of Israel to be a nationality whose members

may still stretch to the ends of the earth, even as the sons of England

and Germany, whom enterprise carries afar, but who still have a

national hearth and a tribunal of national opinion. Will any say 'It

cannot be'? Baruch Spinoza had not a faithful Jewish heart, though he

had sucked the life of his intellect at the breasts of Jewish

tradition. He laid bare his father's nakedness and said, 'They who

scorn him have the higher wisdom.' Yet Baruch Spinoza confessed, he saw

not why Israel should not again be a chosen nation. Who says that the

history and literature of our race are dead? Are they not as living as

the history and literature of Greece and Rome, which have inspired

revolutions, enkindled the thought of Europe, and made the unrighteous

powers tremble? These were an inheritance dug from the tomb. Ours is an

inheritance that has never ceased to quiver in millions of human

frames."

Mordecai had stretched his arms upward, and his long thin hands

quivered in the air for a moment after he had ceased to speak. Gideon

was certainly a little moved, for though there was no long pause before

he made a remark in objection, his tone was more mild and deprecatory

than before; Pash, meanwhile, pressing his lips together, rubbing his

black head with both his hands and wrinkling his brow horizontally,

with the expression of one who differs from every speaker, but does not

think it worth while to say so. There is a sort of human paste that

when it comes near the fire of enthusiasm is only baked into harder

shape.

"It may seem well enough on one side to make so much of our memories

and inheritance as you do, Mordecai," said Gideon; "but there's another

side. It isn't all gratitude and harmless glory. Our people have

inherited a good deal of hatred. There's a pretty lot of curses still

flying about, and stiff settled rancor inherited from the times of

persecution. How will you justify keeping one sort of memory and

throwing away the other? There are ugly debts standing on both sides."

"I justify the choice as all other choice is justified," said Mordecai.

"I cherish nothing for the Jewish nation, I seek nothing for them, but

the good which promises good to all the nations. The spirit of our

religious life, which is one with our national life, is not hatred of

aught but wrong. The Master has said, an offence against man is worse

than an offence against God. But what wonder if there is hatred in the

breasts of Jews, who are children of the ignorant and oppressed--what

wonder, since there is hatred in the breasts of Christians? Our

national life was a growing light. Let the central fire be kindled

again, and the light will reach afar. The degraded and scorned of our

race will learn to think of their sacred land, not as a place for

saintly beggary to await death in loathsome idleness, but as a republic

where the Jewish spirit manifests itself in a new order founded on the

old, purified and enriched by the experience our greatest sons have

gathered from the life of the ages. How long is it?--only two centuries

since a vessel carried over the ocean the beginning of the great North

American nation. The people grew like meeting waters--they were various

in habit and sect--there came a time, a century ago, when they needed a

polity, and there were heroes of peace among them. What had they to

form a polity with but memories of Europe, corrected by the vision of a

better? Let our wise and wealthy show themselves heroes. They have the

memories of the East and West, and they have the full vision of a

better. A new Persia with a purified religion magnified itself in art

and wisdom. So will a new Judaea, poised between East and West--a

covenant of reconciliation. Will any say, the prophetic vision of your

race has been hopelessly mixed with folly and bigotry: the angel of

progress has no message for Judaism--it is a half-buried city for the

paid workers to lay open--the waters are rushing by it as a forsaken

field? I say that the strongest principle of growth lies in human

choice. The sons of Judah have to choose that God may again choose

them. The Messianic time is the time when Israel shall will the

planting of the national ensign. The Nile overflowed and rushed onward:

the Egyptian could not choose the overflow, but he chose to work and

make channels for the fructifying waters, and Egypt became the land of

corn. Shall man, whose soul is set in the royalty of discernment and

resolve, deny his rank and say, I am an onlooker, ask no choice or

purpose of me? That is the blasphemy of this time. The divine principle

of our race is action, choice, resolved memory. Let us contradict the

blasphemy, and help to will our own better future and the better future

of the world--not renounce our higher gift and say, 'Let us be as if we

were not among the populations;' but choose our full heritage, claim

the brotherhood of our nation, and carry into it a new brotherhood with

the nations of the Gentiles. The vision is there; it will be fulfilled."

With the last sentence, which was no more than a loud whisper, Mordecai

let his chin sink on his breast and his eyelids fall. No one spoke. It

was not the first time that he had insisted on the same ideas, but he

was seen to-night in a new phase. The quiet tenacity of his ordinary

self differed as much from his present exaltation of mood as a man in

private talk, giving reasons for a revolution of which no sign is

discernable, differs from one who feels himself an agent in a

revolution begun. The dawn of fulfillment brought to his hope by

Deronda's presence had wrought Mordecai's conception into a state of

impassioned conviction, and he had found strength in his excitement to

pour forth the unlocked floods of emotive argument, with a sense of

haste as at a crisis which must be seized. But now there had come with

the quiescence of fatigue a sort of thankful wonder that he had

spoken--a contemplation of his life as a journey which had come at last

to this bourne. After a great excitement, the ebbing strength of

impulse is apt to leave us in this aloofness from our active self. And

in the moments after Mordecai had sunk his head, his mind was wandering

along the paths of his youth, and all the hopes which had ended in

bringing him hither.

Every one felt that the talk was ended, and the tone of phlegmatic

discussion made unseasonable by Mordecai's high-pitched solemnity. It

was as if they had come together to hear the blowing of the \_shophar\_,

and had nothing to do now but to disperse. The movement was unusually

general, and in less than ten minutes the room was empty of all except

Mordecai and Deronda. "Good-nights" had been given to Mordecai, but it

was evident he had not heard them, for he remained rapt and motionless.

Deronda would not disturb this needful rest, but waited for a

spontaneous movement.

CHAPTER XLIII.

"My spirit is too weak; mortality

Weighs heavily on me like unwilling sleep,

And each imagined pinnacle and steep

Of godlike hardship tells me I must die

Like a sick eagle looking at the sky."

--KEATS.

After a few minutes the unwonted stillness had penetrated Mordecai's

consciousness, and he looked up at Deronda, not in the least with

bewilderment and surprise, but with a gaze full of reposing

satisfaction. Deronda rose and placed his chair nearer, where there

could be no imagined need for raising the voice. Mordecai felt the

action as a patient feels the gentleness that eases his pillow. He

began to speak in a low tone, as if he were only thinking articulately,

not trying to reach an audience.

"In the doctrine of the Cabbala, souls are born again and again in new

bodies till they are perfected and purified, and a soul liberated from

a worn-out body may join the fellow-soul that needs it, that they may

be perfected together, and their earthly work accomplished. Then they

will depart from the mortal region, and leave place for new souls to be

born out of the store in the eternal bosom. It is the lingering

imperfection of the souls already born into the mortal region that

hinders the birth of new souls and the preparation of the Messianic

time:--thus the mind has given shape to what is hidden, as the shadow

of what is known, and has spoken truth, though it were only in parable.

When my long-wandering soul is liberated from this weary body, it will

join yours, and its work will be perfected."

Mordecai's pause seemed an appeal which Deronda's feeling would not let

him leave unanswered. He tried to make it truthful; but for Mordecai's

ear it was inevitably filled with unspoken meaning. He only said--

"Everything I can in conscience do to make your life effective I will

do."

"I know it," said Mordecai, in a tone of quiet certainty which

dispenses with further assurance. "I heard it. You see it all--you are

by my side on the mount of vision, and behold the paths of fulfillment

which others deny."

He was silent a moment or two, and then went on meditatively--

"You will take up my life where it was broken. I feel myself back in

that day when my life was broken. The bright morning sun was on the

quay--it was at Trieste--the garments of men from all nations shone

like jewels--the boats were pushing off--the Greek vessel that would

land us at Beyrout was to start in an hour. I was going with a merchant

as his clerk and companion. I said, I shall behold the lands and people

of the East, and I shall speak with a fuller vision. I breathed then as

you do, without labor; I had the light step and the endurance of youth,

I could fast, I could sleep on the hard ground. I had wedded poverty,

and I loved my bride--for poverty to me was freedom. My heart exulted

as if it had been the heart of Moses ben Maimon, strong with the

strength of three score years, and knowing the work that was to fill

them. It was the first time I had been south; the soul within me felt

its former sun; and standing on the quay, where the ground I stood on

seemed to send forth light, and the shadows had an azure glory as of

spirits become visible, I felt myself in the flood of a glorious life,

wherein my own small year-counted existence seemed to melt, so that I

knew it not; and a great sob arose within me as at the rush of waters

that were too strong a bliss. So I stood there awaiting my companion;

and I saw him not till he said: 'Ezra, I have been to the post and

there is your letter.'"

"Ezra!" exclaimed Deronda, unable to contain himself.

"Ezra," repeated Mordecai, affirmatively, engrossed in memory. "I was

expecting a letter; for I wrote continually to my mother. And that

sound of my name was like the touch of a wand that recalled me to the

body wherefrom I had been released as it were to mingle with the ocean

of human existence, free from the pressure of individual bondage. I

opened the letter; and the name came again as a cry that would have

disturbed me in the bosom of heaven, and made me yearn to reach where

that sorrow was--'Ezra, my son!'"

Mordecai paused again, his imagination arrested by the grasp of that

long-passed moment. Deronda's mind was almost breathlessly suspended on

what was coming. A strange possibility had suddenly presented itself.

Mordecai's eyes were cast down in abstracted contemplation, and in a

few moments he went on--

"She was a mother of whom it might have come--yea, might have come to

be said, 'Her children arise up and call her blessed.' In her I

understood the meaning of that Master who, perceiving the footsteps of

his mother, rose up and said, 'The Majesty of the Eternal cometh near!'

And that letter was her cry from the depths of anguish and

desolation--the cry of a mother robbed of her little ones. I was her

eldest. Death had taken four babes one after the other. Then came,

late, my little sister, who was, more than all the rest, the desire of

my mother's eyes; and the letter was a piercing cry to me--'Ezra, my

son, I am robbed of her. He has taken her away and left disgrace

behind. They will never come again.'"--Here Mordecai lifted his eyes

suddenly, laid his hand on Deronda's arm, and said, "Mine was the lot

of Israel. For the sin of the father my soul must go into exile. For

the sin of the father the work was broken, and the day of fulfilment

delayed. She who bore me was desolate, disgraced, destitute. I turned

back. On the instant I turned--her spirit and the spirit of her

fathers, who had worthy Jewish hearts, moved within me, and drew me.

God, in whom dwells the universe, was within me as the strength of

obedience. I turned and traveled with hardship--to save the scant money

which she would need. I left the sunshine, and traveled into freezing

cold. In the last stage I spent a night in exposure to cold and snow.

And that was the beginning of this slow death."

Mordecai let his eyes wander again and removed his hand. Deronda

resolutely repressed the questions which urged themselves within him.

While Mordecai was in this state of emotion, no other confidence must

be sought than what came spontaneously: nay, he himself felt a kindred

emotion which made him dread his own speech as too momentous.

"But I worked. We were destitute--every thing had been seized. And she

was ill: the clutch of anguish was too strong for her, and wrought with

some lurking disease. At times she could not stand for the beating of

her heart, and the images in her brain became as chambers of terror,

where she beheld my sister reared in evil. In the dead of night I heard

her crying for her child. Then I rose, and we stretched forth our arms

together and prayed. We poured forth our souls in desire that Mirah

might be delivered from evil."

"Mirah?" Deronda repeated, wishing to assure, himself that his ears had

not been deceived by a forecasting imagination. "Did you say Mirah?"

"That was my little sister's name. After we had prayed for her, my

mother would rest awhile. It lasted hardly four years, and in the

minute before she died, we were praying the same prayer--I aloud, she

silently. Her soul went out upon its wings."

"Have you never since heard of your sister?" said Deronda, as quietly

as he could.

"Never. Never have I heard whether she was delivered according to our

prayer. I know not, I know not. Who shall say where the pathways lie?

The poisonous will of the wicked is strong. It poisoned my life--it is

slowly stifling this breath. Death delivered my mother, and I felt it a

blessedness that I was alone in the winters of suffering. But what are

the winters now?--they are far off"--here Mordecai again rested his

hand on Deronda's arm, and looked at him with that joy of the hectic

patient which pierces us to sadness--"there is nothing to wail in the

withering of my body. The work will be the better done. Once I said the

work of this beginning was mine, I am born to do it. Well, I shall do

it. I shall live in you. I shall live in you."

His grasp had become convulsive in its force, and Deronda, agitated as

he had never been before--the certainty that this was Mirah's brother

suffusing his own strange relation to Mordecai with a new solemnity and

tenderness--felt his strong young heart beating faster and his lips

paling. He shrank from speech. He feared, in Mordecai's present state

of exaltation (already an alarming strain on his feeble frame), to

utter a word of revelation about Mirah. He feared to make an answer

below that high pitch of expectation which resembled a flash from a

dying fire, making watchers fear to see it die the faster. His dominant

impulse was to do as he had once done before: he laid his firm, gentle

hand on the hand that grasped him. Mordecai's, as if it had a soul of

its own--for he was not distinctly willing to do what he did--relaxed

its grasp, and turned upward under Deronda's. As the two palms met and

pressed each other Mordecai recovered some sense of his surroundings,

and said--

"Let us go now. I cannot talk any longer."

And in fact they parted at Cohen's door without having spoken to each

other again--merely with another pressure of the hands.

Deronda felt a weight on him which was half joy, half anxiety. The joy

of finding in Mirah's brother a nature even more than worthy of that

relation to her, had the weight of solemnity and sadness; the reunion

of brother and sister was in reality the first stage of a supreme

parting--like that farewell kiss which resembles greeting, that last

glance of love which becomes the sharpest pang of sorrow. Then there

was the weight of anxiety about the revelation of the fact on both

sides, and the arrangements it would be desirable to make beforehand. I

suppose we should all have felt as Deronda did, without sinking into

snobbishness or the notion that the primal duties of life demand a

morning and an evening suit, that it was an admissible desire to free

Mirah's first meeting with her brother from all jarring outward

conditions. His own sense of deliverance from the dreaded relationship

of the other Cohens, notwithstanding their good nature, made him

resolve if possible to keep them in the background for Mirah, until her

acquaintance with them would be an unmarred rendering of gratitude for

any kindness they had shown to her brother. On all accounts he wished

to give Mordecai surroundings not only more suited to his frail bodily

condition, but less of a hindrance to easy intercourse, even apart from

the decisive prospect of Mirah's taking up her abode with her brother,

and tending him through the precious remnant of his life. In the heroic

drama, great recognitions are not encumbered with these details; and

certainly Deronda had as reverential an interest in Mordecai and Mirah

as he could have had in the offspring of Agamemnon; but he was caring

for destinies still moving in the dim streets of our earthly life, not

yet lifted among the constellations, and his task presented itself to

him as difficult and delicate, especially in persuading Mordecai to

change his abode and habits. Concerning Mirah's feeling and resolve he

had no doubt: there would be a complete union of sentiment toward the

departed mother, and Mirah would understand her brother's greatness.

Yes, greatness: that was the word which Deronda now deliberately chose

to signify the impression that Mordecai had made on him. He said to

himself, perhaps rather defiantly toward the more negative spirit

within him, that this man, however erratic some of his interpretations

might be--this consumptive Jewish workman in threadbare clothing,

lodged by charity, delivering himself to hearers who took his thoughts

without attaching more consequences to them than the Flemings to the

ethereal chimes ringing above their market-places--had the chief

elements of greatness; a mind consciously, energetically moving with

the larger march of human destinies, but not the less full of

conscience and tender heart for the footsteps that tread near and need

a leaning-place; capable of conceiving and choosing a life's task with

far-off issues, yet capable of the unapplauded heroism which turns off

the road of achievement at the call of the nearer duty whose effect

lies within the beatings of the hearts that are close to us, as the

hunger of the unfledged bird to the breast of its parent.

Deronda to-night was stirred with, the feeling that the brief remnant

of this fervid life had become his charge. He had been peculiarly

wrought on by what he had seen at the club of the friendly indifference

which Mordecai must have gone on encountering. His own experience of

the small room that ardor can make for itself in ordinary minds had had

the effect of increasing his reserve; and while tolerance was the

easiest attitude to him, there was another bent in him also capable of

becoming a weakness--the dislike to appear exceptional or to risk an

ineffective insistance on his own opinion. But such caution appeared

contemptible to him just now, when he, for the first time, saw in a

complete picture and felt as a reality the lives that burn themselves

out in solitary enthusiasm: martyrs of obscure circumstance, exiled in

the rarity of their own minds, whose deliverances in other ears are no

more than a long passionate soliloquy--unless perhaps at last, when

they are nearing the invisible shores, signs of recognition and

fulfilment may penetrate the cloud of loneliness; or perhaps it may be

with them as with the dying Copernicus made to touch the first printed

copy of his book when the sense of touch was gone, seeing it only as a

dim object through the deepening dusk.

Deronda had been brought near to one of those spiritual exiles, and it

was in his nature to feel the relation as a strong chain, nay, to feel

his imagination moving without repugnance in the direction of

Mordecai's desires. With all his latent objection to schemes only

definite in their generality and nebulous in detail--in the poise of

his sentiments he felt at one with this man who had made a visionary

selection of him: the lines of what may be called their emotional

theory touched. He had not the Jewish consciousness, but he had a

yearning, grown the stronger for the denial which had been his

grievance, after the obligation of avowed filial and social ties. His

feeling was ready for difficult obedience. In this way it came that he

set about his new task ungrudgingly; and again he thought of Mrs.

Meyrick as his chief helper. To her first he must make known the

discovery of Mirah's brother, and with her he must consult on all

preliminaries of bringing the mutually lost together. Happily the best

quarter for a consumptive patient did not lie too far off the small

house at Chelsea, and the first office Deronda had to perform for this

Hebrew prophet who claimed him as a spiritual inheritor, was to get him

a healthy lodging. Such is the irony of earthly mixtures, that the

heroes have not always had carpets and teacups of their own; and, seen

through the open window by the mackerel-vender, may have been invited

with some hopefulness to pay three hundred per cent, in the form of

fourpence. However, Deronda's mind was busy with a prospective

arrangement for giving a furnished lodging some faint likeness to a

refined home by dismantling his own chambers of his best old books in

vellum, his easiest chair, and the bas-reliefs of Milton and Dante.

But was not Mirah to be there? What furniture can give such finish to a

room as a tender woman's face?--and is there any harmony of tints that

has such stirrings of delight as the sweet modulation of her voice?

Here is one good, at least, thought Deronda, that comes to Mordecai

from his having fixed his imagination on me. He has recovered a perfect

sister, whose affection is waiting for him.

CHAPTER XLIV.

Fairy folk a-listening

Hear the seed sprout in the spring.

And for music to their dance

Hear the hedgerows wake from trance,

Sap that trembles into buds

Sending little rhythmic floods

Of fairy sound in fairy ears.

Thus all beauty that appears

Has birth as sound to finer sense

And lighter-clad intelligence.

And Gwendolen? She was thinking of Deronda much more than he was

thinking of her--often wondering what were his ideas "about things,"

and how his life was occupied. But a lap-dog would be necessarily at a

loss in framing to itself the motives and adventures of doghood at

large; and it was as far from Gwendolen's conception that Deronda's

life could be determined by the historical destiny of the Jews, as that

he could rise into the air on a brazen horse, and so vanish from her

horizon in the form of a twinkling star.

With all the sense of inferiority that had been forced upon her, it was

inevitable that she should imagine a larger place for herself in his

thoughts than she actually possessed. They must be rather old and wise

persons who are not apt to see their own anxiety or elation about

themselves reflected in other minds; and Gwendolen, with her youth and

inward solitude, may be excused for dwelling on signs of special

interest in her shown by the one person who had impressed her with the

feeling of submission, and for mistaking the color and proportion of

those signs in the mind of Deronda.

Meanwhile, what would he tell her that she ought to do? "He said, I

must get more interest in others, and more knowledge, and that I must

care about the best things--but how am I to begin?" She wondered what

books he would tell her to take up to her own room, and recalled the

famous writers that she had either not looked into or had found the

most unreadable, with a half-smiling wish that she could mischievously

ask Deronda if they were not the books called "medicine for the mind."

Then she repented of her sauciness, and when she was safe from

observation carried up a miscellaneous selection--Descartes, Bacon,

Locke, Butler, Burke, Guizot--knowing, as a clever young lady of

education, that these authors were ornaments of mankind, feeling sure

that Deronda had read them, and hoping that by dipping into them all in

succession, with her rapid understanding she might get a point of view

nearer to his level.

But it was astonishing how little time she found for these vast mental

excursions. Constantly she had to be on the scene as Mrs. Grandcourt,

and to feel herself watched in that part by the exacting eyes of a

husband who had found a motive to exercise his tenacity--that of making

his marriage answer all the ends he chose, and with the more

completeness the more he discerned any opposing will in her. And she

herself, whatever rebellion might be going on within her, could not

have made up her mind to failure in her representation. No feeling had

yet reconciled her for a moment to any act, word, or look that would be

a confession to the world: and what she most dreaded in herself was any

violent impulse that would make an involuntary confession: it was the

will to be silent in every other direction that had thrown the more

impetuosity into her confidences toward Deronda, to whom her thought

continually turned as a help against herself. Her riding, her hunting,

her visiting and receiving of visits, were all performed in a spirit of

achievement which served instead of zest and young gladness, so that

all around Diplow, in those weeks of the new year, Mrs. Grandcourt was

regarded as wearing her honors with triumph.

"She disguises it under an air of taking everything as a matter of

course," said Mrs. Arrowpoint. "A stranger might suppose that she had

condescended rather than risen. I always noticed that doubleness in

her."

To her mother most of all Gwendolen was bent on acting complete

satisfaction, and poor Mrs. Davilow was so far deceived that she took

the unexpected distance at which she was kept, in spite of what she

felt to be Grandcourt's handsome behavior in providing for her, as a

comparative indifference in her daughter, now that marriage had created

new interests. To be fetched to lunch and then to dinner along with the

Gascoignes, to be driven back soon after breakfast the next morning,

and to have brief calls from Gwendolen in which her husband waited for

her outside either on horseback or sitting in the carriage, was all the

intercourse allowed to her mother.

The truth was, that the second time Gwendolen proposed to invite her

mother with Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne, Grandcourt had at first been

silent, and then drawled, "We can't be having \_those people\_ always.

Gascoigne talks too much. Country clergy are always bores--with their

confounded fuss about everything."

That speech was full of foreboding for Gwendolen. To have her mother

classed under "those people" was enough to confirm the previous dread

of bringing her too near. Still, she could not give the true

reasons--she could not say to her mother, "Mr. Grandcourt wants to

recognize you as little as possible; and besides it is better you

should not see much of my married life, else you might find out that I

am miserable." So she waived as lightly as she could every allusion to

the subject; and when Mrs. Davilow again hinted the possibility of her

having a house close to Ryelands, Gwendolen said, "It would not be so

nice for you as being near the rectory here, mamma. We shall perhaps be

very little at Ryelands. You would miss my aunt and uncle."

And all the while this contemptuous veto of her husband's on any

intimacy with her family, making her proudly shrink from giving them

the aspect of troublesome pensioners, was rousing more inward

inclination toward them. She had never felt so kindly toward her uncle,

so much disposed to look back on his cheerful, complacent activity and

spirit of kind management, even when mistaken, as more of a comfort

than the neutral loftiness which was every day chilling her. And here

perhaps she was unconsciously finding some of that mental enlargement

which it was hard to get from her occasional dashes into difficult

authors, who instead of blending themselves with her daily agitations

required her to dismiss them.

It was a delightful surprise one day when Mr. and Mrs. Gascoigne were

at Offendene to see Gwendolen ride up without her husband--with the

groom only. All, including the four girls and Miss Merry, seated in the

dining-room at lunch, could see the welcome approach; and even the

elder ones were not without something of Isabel's romantic sense that

the beautiful sister on the splendid chestnut, which held its head as

if proud to bear her, was a sort of Harriet Byron or Miss Wardour

reappearing out of her "happiness ever after."

Her uncle went to the door to give her his hand, and she sprang from

her horse with an air of alacrity which might well encourage that

notion of guaranteed happiness; for Gwendolen was particularly bent

to-day on setting her mother's heart at rest, and her unusual sense of

freedom in being able to make this visit alone enabled her to bear up

under the pressure of painful facts which were urging themselves anew.

The seven family kisses were not so tiresome as they used to be.

"Mr. Grandcourt is gone out, so I determined to fill up the time by

coming to you, mamma," said Gwendolen, as she laid down her hat and

seated herself next to her mother; and then looking at her with a

playfully monitory air, "That is a punishment to you for not wearing

better lace on your head. You didn't think I should come and detect

you--you dreadfully careless-about-yourself mamma!" She gave a

caressing touch to the dear head.

"Scold me, dear," said Mrs. Davilow, her delicate worn face flushing

with delight. "But I wish there was something you could eat after your

ride--instead of these scraps. Let Jocosa make you a cup of chocolate

in your old way. You used to like that."

Miss Merry immediately rose and went out, though Gwendolen said, "Oh,

no, a piece of bread, or one of those hard biscuits. I can't think

about eating. I am come to say good-bye."

"What! going to Ryelands again?" said Mr. Gascoigne.

"No, we are going to town," said Gwendolen, beginning to break up a

piece of bread, but putting no morsel into her mouth.

"It is rather early to go to town," said Mrs. Gascoigne, "and Mr.

Grandcourt not in Parliament."

"Oh, there is only one more day's hunting to be had, and Henleigh has

some business in town with lawyers, I think," said Gwendolen. "I am

very glad. I shall like to go to town."

"You will see your house in Grosvenor Square," said Mrs. Davilow. She

and the girls were devouring with their eyes every movement of their

goddess, soon to vanish.

"Yes," said Gwendolen, in a tone of assent to the interest of that

expectation. "And there is so much to be seen and done in town."

"I wish, my dear Gwendolen," said Mr. Gascoigne, in a kind of cordial

advice, "that you would use your influence with Mr. Grandcourt to

induce him to enter Parliament. A man of his position should make his

weight felt in politics. The best judges are confident that the

ministry will have to appeal to the country on this question of further

Reform, and Mr. Grandcourt should be ready for the opportunity. I am

not quite sure that his opinions and mine accord entirely; I have not

heard him express himself very fully. But I don't look at the matter

from that point of view. I am thinking of your husband's standing in

the country. And he has now come to that stage of life when a man like

him should enter into public affairs. A wife has great influence with

her husband. Use yours in that direction, my dear."

The rector felt that he was acquitting himself of a duty here, and

giving something like the aspect of a public benefit to his niece's

match. To Gwendolen the whole speech had the flavor of bitter comedy.

If she had been merry, she must have laughed at her uncle's explanation

to her that he had not heard Grandcourt express himself very fully on

politics. And the wife's great influence! General maxims about husbands

and wives seemed now of a precarious usefulness. Gwendolen herself had

once believed in her future influence as an omnipotence in

managing--she did not know exactly what. But her chief concern at

present was to give an answer that would be felt appropriate.

"I should be very glad, uncle. But I think Mr. Grandcourt would not

like the trouble of an election--at least, unless it could be without

his making speeches. I thought candidates always made speeches."

"Not necessarily--to any great extent," said Mr. Gascoigne. "A man of

position and weight can get on without much of it. A county member need

have very little trouble in that way, and both out of the House and in

it is liked the better for not being a speechifier. Tell Mr. Grandcourt

that I say so."

"Here comes Jocosa with my chocolate after all," said Gwendolen,

escaping from a promise to give information that would certainly have

been received in a way inconceivable to the good rector, who, pushing

his chair a little aside from the table and crossing his leg, looked as

well as if he felt like a worthy specimen of a clergyman and magistrate

giving experienced advice. Mr. Gascoigne had come to the conclusion

that Grandcourt was a proud man, but his own self-love, calmed through

life by the consciousness of his general value and personal advantages,

was not irritable enough to prevent him from hoping the best about his

niece's husband because her uncle was kept rather haughtily at a

distance. A certain aloofness must be allowed to the representative of

an old family; you would not expect him to be on intimate terms even

with abstractions. But Mrs. Gascoigne was less dispassionate on her

husband's account, and felt Grandcourt's haughtiness as something a

little blameable in Gwendolen.

"Your uncle and Anna will very likely be in town about Easter," she

said, with a vague sense of expressing a slight discontent. "Dear Rex

hopes to come out with honors and a fellowship, and he wants his father

and Anna to meet him in London, that they may be jolly together, as he

says. I shouldn't wonder if Lord Brackenshaw invited them, he has been

so very kind since he came back to the Castle."

"I hope my uncle will bring Ann to stay in Grosvenor Square," said

Gwendolen, risking herself so far, for the sake of the present moment,

but in reality wishing that she might never be obliged to bring any of

her family near Grandcourt again. "I am very glad of Rex's good

fortune."

"We must not be premature, and rejoice too much beforehand," said the

rector, to whom this topic was the happiest in the world, and

altogether allowable, now that the issue of that little affair about

Gwendolen had been so satisfactory. "Not but that I am in

correspondence with impartial judges, who have the highest hopes about

my son, as a singularly clear-headed young man. And of his excellent

disposition and principle I have had the best evidence."

"We shall have him a great lawyer some time," said Mrs. Gascoigne.

"How very nice!" said Gwendolen, with a concealed scepticism as to

niceness in general, which made the word quite applicable to lawyers.

"Talking of Lord Brackenshaw's kindness," said Mrs. Davilow, "you don't

know how delightful he has been, Gwendolen. He has begged me to

consider myself his guest in this house till I can get another that I

like--he did it in the most graceful way. But now a house has turned

up. Old Mr. Jodson is dead, and we can have his house. It is just what

I want; small, but with nothing hideous to make you miserable thinking

about it. And it is only a mile from the Rectory. You remember the low

white house nearly hidden by the trees, as we turn up the lane to the

church?"

"Yes, but you have no furniture, poor mamma," said Gwendolen, in a

melancholy tone.

"Oh, I am saving money for that. You know who has made me rather rich,

dear," said Mrs. Davilow, laying her hand on Gwendolen's. "And Jocosa

really makes so little do for housekeeping--it is quite wonderful."

"Oh, please let me go up-stairs with you and arrange my hat, mamma,"

said Gwendolen, suddenly putting up her hand to her hair and perhaps

creating a desired disarrangement. Her heart was swelling, and she was

ready to cry. Her mother \_must\_ have been worse off, if it had not been

for Grandcourt. "I suppose I shall never see all this again," said

Gwendolen, looking round her, as they entered the black and yellow

bedroom, and then throwing herself into a chair in front of the glass

with a little groan as of bodily fatigue. In the resolve not to cry she

had become very pale.

"You are not well, dear?" said Mrs. Davilow.

"No; that chocolate has made me sick," said Gwendolen, putting up her

hand to be taken.

"I should be allowed to come to you if you were ill, darling," said

Mrs. Davilow, rather timidly, as she pressed the hand to her bosom.

Something had made her sure today that her child loved her--needed her

as much as ever.

"Oh, yes," said Gwendolen, leaning her head against her mother, though

speaking as lightly as she could. "But you know I never am ill. I am as

strong as possible; and you must not take to fretting about me, but

make yourself as happy as you can with the girls. They are better

children to you than I have been, you know." She turned up her face

with a smile.

"You have always been good, my darling. I remember nothing else."

"Why, what did I ever do that was good to you, except marry Mr.

Grandcourt?" said Gwendolen, starting up with a desperate resolve to be

playful, and keep no more on the perilous edge of agitation. "And I

should not have done that unless it had pleased myself." She tossed up

her chin, and reached her hat.

"God forbid, child! I would not have had you marry for my sake. Your

happiness by itself is half mine."

"Very well," said Gwendolen, arranging her hat fastidiously, "then you

will please to consider that you are half happy, which is more than I

am used to seeing you." With the last words she again turned with her

old playful smile to her mother. "Now I am ready; but oh, mamma, Mr.

Grandcourt gives me a quantity of money, and expects me to spend it,

and I can't spend it; and you know I can't bear charity children and

all that; and here are thirty pounds. I wish the girls would spend it

for me on little things for themselves when you go to the new house.

Tell them so." Gwendolen put the notes into her mother's hands and

looked away hastily, moving toward the door.

"God bless you, dear," said Mrs. Davilow. "It will please them so that

you should have thought of them in particular."

"Oh, they are troublesome things; but they don't trouble me now," said

Gwendolen, turning and nodding playfully. She hardly understood her own

feeling in this act toward her sisters, but at any rate she did not

wish it to be taken as anything serious. She was glad to have got out

of the bedroom without showing more signs of emotion, and she went

through the rest of her visit and all the good-byes with a quiet

propriety that made her say to herself sarcastically as she rode away,

"I think I am making a very good Mrs. Grandcourt."

She believed that her husband had gone to Gadsmere that day--had

inferred this, as she had long ago inferred who were the inmates of

what he had described as "a dog-hutch of a place in a black country;"

and the strange conflict of feeling within her had had the

characteristic effect of sending her to Offendene with a tightened

resolve--a form of excitement which was native to her.

She wondered at her own contradictions. Why should she feel it bitter

to her that Grandcourt showed concern for the beings on whose account

she herself was undergoing remorse? Had she not before her marriage

inwardly determined to speak and act on their behalf?--and since he had

lately implied that he wanted to be in town because he was making

arrangements about his will, she ought to have been glad of any sign

that he kept a conscience awake toward those at Gadsmere; and yet, now

that she was a wife, the sense that Grandcourt was gone to Gadsmere was

like red heat near a burn. She had brought on herself this indignity in

her own eyes--this humiliation of being doomed to a terrified silence

lest her husband should discover with what sort of consciousness she

had married him; and as she had said to Deronda, she "must go on."

After the intense moments of secret hatred toward this husband who from

the very first had cowed her, there always came back the spiritual

pressure which made submission inevitable. There was no effort at

freedoms that would not bring fresh and worse humiliation. Gwendolen

could dare nothing except an impulsive action--least of all could she

dare premeditatedly a vague future in which the only certain condition

was indignity. In spite of remorse, it still seemed the worst result of

her marriage that she should in any way make a spectacle of herself;

and her humiliation was lightened by her thinking that only Mrs.

Glasher was aware of the fact which caused it. For Gwendolen had never

referred the interview at the Whispering Stones to Lush's agency; her

disposition to vague terror investing with shadowy omnipresence any

threat of fatal power over her, and so hindering her from imagining

plans and channels by which news had been conveyed to the woman who had

the poisoning skill of a sorceress. To Gwendolen's mind the secret lay

with Mrs. Glasher, and there were words in the horrible letter which

implied that Mrs. Glasher would dread disclosure to the husband, as

much as the usurping Mrs. Grandcourt.

Something else, too, she thought of as more of a secret from her

husband than it really was--namely that suppressed struggle of

desperate rebellion which she herself dreaded. Grandcourt could not

indeed fully imagine how things affected Gwendolen: he had no

imagination of anything in her but what affected the gratification of

his own will; but on this point he had the sensibility which seems like

divination. What we see exclusively we are apt to see with some mistake

of proportions; and Grandcourt was not likely to be infallible in his

judgments concerning this wife who was governed by many shadowy powers,

to him nonexistent. He magnified her inward resistance, but that did

not lessen his satisfaction in the mastery of it.

CHAPTER XLV.

Behold my lady's carriage stop the way.

With powdered lacquey and with charming bay;

She sweeps the matting, treads the crimson stair.

Her arduous function solely "to be there."

Like Sirius rising o'er the silent sea.

She hides her heart in lustre loftily.

So the Grandcourts were in Grosvenor Square in time to receive a card

for the musical party at Lady Mallinger's, there being reasons of

business which made Sir Hugo know beforehand that his ill-beloved

nephew was coming up. It was only the third evening after their

arrival, and Gwendolen made rather an absent-minded acquaintance with

her new ceilings and furniture, preoccupied with the certainty that she

was going to speak to Deronda again, and also to see the Miss Lapidoth

who had gone through so much, and was "capable of submitting to

anything in the form of duty." For Gwendolen had remembered nearly

every word that Deronda had said about Mirah, and especially that

phrase, which she repeated to herself bitterly, having an ill-defined

consciousness that her own submission was something very different. She

would have been obliged to allow, if any one had said it to her, that

what she submitted to could not take the shape of duty, but was

submission to a yoke drawn on her by an action she was ashamed of, and

worn with a strength of selfish motives that left no weight for duty to

carry.

The drawing-rooms in Park Lane, all white, gold, and pale crimson, were

agreeably furnished, and not crowded with guests, before Mr. and Mrs.

Grandcourt entered; and more than half an hour of instrumental music

was being followed by an interval of movement and chat. Klesmer was

there with his wife, and in his generous interest for Mirah he proposed

to accompany her singing of Leo's "\_O patria mia\_," which he had before

recommended her to choose, as more distinctive of her than better known

music. He was already at the piano, and Mirah was standing there

conspicuously, when Gwendolen, magnificent in her pale green velvet and

poisoned diamonds, was ushered to a seat of honor well in view of them.

With her long sight and self-command she had the rare power of quickly

distinguishing persons and objects on entering a full room, and while

turning her glance toward Mirah she did not neglect to exchange a bow

with Klesmer as she passed. The smile seemed to each a lightning-flash

back on that morning when it had been her ambition to stand as the

"little Jewess" was standing, and survey a grand audience from the

higher rank of her talent--instead of which she was one of the ordinary

crowd in silk and gems, whose utmost performance it must be to admire

or find fault. "He thinks I am in the right road now," said the lurking

resentment within her.

Gwendolen had not caught sight of Deronda in her passage, and while she

was seated acquitting herself in chat with Sir Hugo, she glanced round

her with careful ease, bowing a recognition here and there, and fearful

lest an anxious-looking exploration in search of Deronda might be

observed by her husband, and afterward rebuked as something "damnably

vulgar." But all traveling, even that of a slow gradual glance round a

room, brings a liability to undesired encounters, and amongst the eyes

that met Gwendolen's, forcing her into a slight bow, were those of the

"amateur too fond of Meyerbeer," Mr. Lush, whom Sir Hugo continued to

find useful as a half-caste among gentlemen. He was standing near her

husband, who, however, turned a shoulder toward him, and was being

understood to listen to Lord Pentreath. How was it that at this moment,

for the first time, there darted through Gwendolen, like a disagreeable

sensation, the idea that this man knew all about her husband's life? He

had been banished from her sight, according to her will, and she had

been satisfied; he had sunk entirely into the background of her

thoughts, screened away from her by the agitating figures that kept up

an inward drama in which Lush had no place. Here suddenly he reappeared

at her husband's elbow, and there sprang up in her, like an

instantaneously fabricated memory in a dream, the sense of his being

connected with the secrets that made her wretched. She was conscious of

effort in turning her head away from him, trying to continue her

wandering survey as if she had seen nothing of more consequence than

the picture on the wall, till she discovered Deronda. But he was not

looking toward her, and she withdrew her eyes from him, without having

got any recognition, consoling herself with the assurance that he must

have seen her come in. In fact, he was not standing far from the door

with Hans Meyrick, whom he had been careful to bring into Lady

Mallinger's list. They were both a little more anxious than was

comfortable lest Mirah should not be heard to advantage. Deronda even

felt himself on the brink of betraying emotion, Mirah's presence now

being linked with crowding images of what had gone before and was to

come after--all centering in the brother he was soon to reveal to her;

and he had escaped as soon as he could from the side of Lady Pentreath,

who had said in her violoncello voice--

"Well, your Jewess is pretty--there's no denying that. But where is her

Jewish impudence? She looks as demure as a nun. I suppose she learned

that on the stage."

He was beginning to feel on Mirah's behalf something of what he had

felt for himself in his seraphic boyish time, when Sir Hugo asked him

if he would like to be a great singer--an indignant dislike to her

being remarked on in a free and easy way, as if she were an imported

commodity disdainfully paid for by the fashionable public, and he

winced the more because Mordecai, he knew, would feel that the name

"Jewess" was taken as a sort of stamp like the lettering of Chinese

silk. In this susceptible mood he saw the Grandcourts enter, and was

immediately appealed to by Hans about "that Vandyke duchess of a

beauty." Pray excuse Deronda that in this moment he felt a transient

renewal of his first repulsion from Gwendolen, as if she and her beauty

and her failings were to blame for the undervaluing of Mirah as a

woman--a feeling something like class animosity, which affection for

what is not fully recognized by others, whether in persons or in

poetry, rarely allows us to escape. To Hans admiring Gwendolen with his

habitual hyperbole, he answered, with a sarcasm that was not quite

good-natured--

"I thought you could admire no style of woman but your Berenice."

"That is the style I worship--not admire," said Hans. "Other styles of

women I might make myself wicked for, but for Berenice I could make

myself--well, pretty good, which is something much more difficult."

"Hush," said Deronda, under the pretext that the singing was going to

begin. He was not so delighted with the answer as might have been

expected, and was relieved by Hans's movement to a more advanced spot.

Deronda had never before heard Mirah sing "\_O patria mia\_." He knew

well Leopardi's fine Ode to Italy (when Italy sat like a disconsolate

mother in chains, hiding her face on her knees and weeping), and the

few selected words were filled for him with the grandeur of the whole,

which seemed to breath an inspiration through the music. Mirah singing

this, made Mordecai more than ever one presence with her. Certain words

not included in the song nevertheless rang within Deronda as harmonies

from the invisible--

"Non ti difende

Nessun dÃ¨ tuoi! L'armi, qua l'armi: io solo

CombatterÃ³, procomberÃ³ sol io"--

[Footnote: Do none of thy children defend thee? Arms! bring me arms!

alone I will fight, alone I will fall.]

they seemed the very voice of that heroic passion which is falsely said

to devote itself in vain when it achieves the god-like end of

manifesting unselfish love. And that passion was present to Deronda now

as the vivid image of a man dying helplessly away from the possibility

of battle.

Mirah was equal to his wishes. While the general applause was sounding,

Klesmer gave a more valued testimony, audible to her only--"Good,

good--the crescendo better than before." But her chief anxiety was to

know that she had satisfied Mr. Deronda: any failure on her part this

evening would have pained her as an especial injury to him. Of course

all her prospects were due to what he had done for her; still, this

occasion of singing in the house that was his home brought a peculiar

demand. She looked toward him in the distance, and he saw that she did;

but he remained where he was, and watched the streams of emulous

admirers closing round her, till presently they parted to make way for

Gwendolen, who was taken up to be introduced by Mrs. Klesmer. Easier

now about "the little Jewess," Daniel relented toward poor Gwendolen in

her splendor, and his memory went back, with some penitence for his

momentary hardness, over all the signs and confessions that she too

needed a rescue, and one much more difficult than that of the wanderer

by the river--a rescue for which he felt himself helpless. The silent

question--"But is it not cowardly to make that a reason for turning

away?" was the form in which he framed his resolve to go near her on

the first opportunity, and show his regard for her past confidence, in

spite of Sir Hugo's unwelcome hints.

Klesmer, having risen to Gwendolen as she approached, and being

included by her in the opening conversation with Mirah, continued near

them a little while, looking down with a smile, which was rather in his

eyes than on his lips, at the piquant contrast of the two charming

young creatures seated on the red divan. The solicitude seemed to be

all on the side of the splendid one.

"You must let me say how much I am obliged to you," said Gwendolen. "I

had heard from Mr. Deronda that I should have a great treat in your

singing, but I was too ignorant to imagine how great."

"You are very good to say so," answered Mirah, her mind chiefly

occupied in contemplating Gwendolen. It was like a new kind of

stage-experience to her to be close to genuine grand ladies with

genuine brilliants and complexions, and they impressed her vaguely as

coming out of some unknown drama, in which their parts perhaps got more

tragic as they went on.

"We shall all want to learn of you--I, at least," said Gwendolen. "I

sing very badly, as Herr Klesmer will tell you,"--here she glanced

upward to that higher power rather archly, and continued--"but I have

been rebuked for not liking to middling, since I can be nothing more. I

think that is a different doctrine from yours?" She was still looking

at Klesmer, who said quickly--

"Not if it means that it would be worth while for you to study further,

and for Miss Lapidoth to have the pleasure of helping you." With that

he moved away, and Mirah taking everything with \_naÃ¯ve\_ seriousness,

said--

"If you think I could teach you, I shall be very glad. I am anxious to

teach, but I have only just begun. If I do it well, it must be by

remembering how my master taught me."

Gwendolen was in reality too uncertain about herself to be prepared for

this simple promptitude of Mirah's, and in her wish to change the

subject, said, with some lapse from the good taste of her first

address--

"You have not been long in London, I think?--but you were perhaps

introduced to Mr. Deronda abroad?"

"No," said Mirah; "I never saw him before I came to England in the

summer."

"But he has seen you often and heard you sing a great deal, has he

not?" said Gwendolen, led on partly by the wish to hear anything about

Deronda, and partly by the awkwardness which besets the readiest

person, in carrying on a dialogue when empty of matter. "He spoke of

you to me with the highest praise. He seemed to know you quite well."

"Oh, I was poor and needed help," said Mirah, in a new tone of feeling,

"and Mr. Deronda has given me the best friends in the world. That is

the only way he came to know anything about me--because he was sorry

for me. I had no friends when I came. I was in distress. I owe

everything to him."

Poor Gwendolen, who had wanted to be a struggling artist herself, could

nevertheless not escape the impression that a mode of inquiry which

would have been rather rude toward herself was an amiable condescension

to this Jewess who was ready to give her lessons. The only effect on

Mirah, as always on any mention of Deronda, was to stir reverential

gratitude and anxiety that she should be understood to have the deepest

obligation to him.

But both he and Hans, who were noticing the pair from a distance, would

have felt rather indignant if they had known that the conversation had

led up to Mirah's representation of herself in this light of neediness.

In the movement that prompted her, however, there was an exquisite

delicacy, which perhaps she could not have stated explicitly--the

feeling that she ought not to allow any one to assume in Deronda a

relation of more equality or less generous interest toward her than

actually existed. Her answer was delightful to Gwendolen: she thought

of nothing but the ready compassion which in another form she had

trusted in and found herself; and on the signals that Klesmer was about

to play she moved away in much content, entirely without presentiment

that this Jewish \_protÃ©gÃ©\_ would ever make a more important difference

in her life than the possible improvement of her singing--if the

leisure and spirits of a Mrs. Grandcourt would allow of other lessons

than such as the world was giving her at rather a high charge.

With her wonted alternation from resolute care of appearances to some

rash indulgence of an impulse, she chose, under the pretext of getting

farther from the instrument, not to go again to her former seat, but

placed herself on a settee where she could only have one neighbor. She

was nearer to Deronda than before: was it surprising that he came up in

time to shake hands before the music began--then, that after he had

stood a little while by the elbow of the settee at the empty end, the

torrent-like confluences of bass and treble seemed, like a convulsion

of nature, to cast the conduct of petty mortals into insignificance,

and to warrant his sitting down?

But when at the end of Klesmer's playing there came the outburst of

talk under which Gwendolen had hoped to speak as she would to Deronda,

she observed that Mr. Lush was within hearing, leaning against the wall

close by them. She could not help her flush of anger, but she tried to

have only an air of polite indifference in saying--

"Miss Lapidoth is everything you described her to be."

"You have been very quick in discovering that," said Deronda,

ironically.

"I have not found out all the excellencies you spoke of--I don't mean

that," said Gwendolen; "but I think her singing is charming, and

herself, too. Her face is lovely--not in the least common; and she is

such a complete little person. I should think she will be a great

success."

This speech was grating on Deronda, and he would not answer it, but

looked gravely before him. She knew that he was displeased with her,

and she was getting so impatient under the neighborhood of Mr. Lush,

which prevented her from saying any word she wanted to say, that she

meditated some desperate step to get rid of it, and remained silent,

too. That constraint seemed to last a long while, neither Gwendolen nor

Deronda looking at the other, till Lush slowly relieved the wall of his

weight, and joined some one at a distance.

Gwendolen immediately said, "You despise me for talking artificially."

"No," said Deronda, looking at her coolly; "I think that is quite

excusable sometimes. But I did not think what you were last saying was

altogether artificial."

"There was something in it that displeased you," said Gwendolen. "What

was it?"

"It is impossible to explain such things," said Deronda. "One can never

communicate niceties of feeling about words and manner."

"You think I am shut out from understanding them," said Gwendolen, with

a slight tremor in her voice, which she was trying to conquer. "Have I

shown myself so very dense to everything you have said?" There was an

indescribable look of suppressed tears in her eyes, which were turned

on him.

"Not at all," said Deronda, with some softening of voice. "But

experience differs for different people. We don't all wince at the same

things. I have had plenty of proof that you are not dense." He smiled

at her.

"But one may feel things and are not able to do anything better for all

that," said Gwendolen, not smiling in return--the distance to which

Deronda's words seemed to throw her chilling her too much. "I begin to

think we can only get better by having people about us who raise good

feelings. You must not be surprised at anything in me. I think it is

too late for me to alter. I don't know how to set about being wise, as

you told me to be."

"I seldom find I do any good by my preaching. I might as well have kept

from meddling," said Deronda, thinking rather sadly that his

interference about that unfortunate necklace might end in nothing but

an added pain to him in seeing her after all hardened to another sort

of gambling than roulette.

"Don't say that," said Gwendolen, hurriedly, feeling that this might be

her only chance of getting the words uttered, and dreading the increase

of her own agitation. "If you despair of me, I shall despair. Your

saying that I should not go on being selfish and ignorant has been some

strength to me. If you say you wish you had not meddled--that means you

despair of me and forsake me. And then you will decide for me that I

shall not be good. It is you who will decide; because you might have

made me different by keeping as near to me as you could, and believing

in me."

She had not been looking at him as she spoke, but at the handle of the

fan which she held closed. With the last words she rose and left him,

returning to her former place, which had been left vacant; while every

one was settling into quietude in expectation of Mirah's voice, which

presently, with that wonderful, searching quality of subdued song in

which the melody seems simply an effect of the emotion, gave forth,

\_Per pietÃ  non dirmi addio\_.

In Deronda's ear the strain was for the moment a continuance of

Gwendolen's pleading--a painful urging of something vague and

difficult, irreconcilable with pressing conditions, and yet cruel to

resist. However strange the mixture in her of a resolute pride and a

precocious air of knowing the world, with a precipitate, guileless

indiscretion, he was quite sure now that the mixture existed. Sir

Hugo's hints had made him alive to dangers that his own disposition

might have neglected; but that Gwendolen's reliance on him was

unvisited by any dream of his being a man who could misinterpret her

was as manifest as morning, and made an appeal which wrestled with his

sense of present dangers, and with his foreboding of a growing

incompatible claim on him in her mind. There was a foreshadowing of

some painful collision: on the one side the grasp of Mordecai's dying

hand on him, with all the ideals and prospects it aroused; on the other

the fair creature in silk and gems, with her hidden wound and her

self-dread, making a trustful effort to lean and find herself

sustained. It was as if he had a vision of himself besought with

outstretched arms and cries, while he was caught by the waves and

compelled to mount the vessel bound for a far-off coast. That was the

strain of excited feeling in him that went along with the notes of

Mirah's song; but when it ceased he moved from his seat with the

reflection that he had been falling into an exaggeration of his own

importance, and a ridiculous readiness to accept Gwendolen's view of

himself, as if he could really have any decisive power over her.

"What an enviable fellow you are," said Hans to him, "sitting on a sofa

with that young duchess, and having an interesting quarrel with her!"

"Quarrel with her?" repeated Deronda, rather uncomfortably.

"Oh, about theology, of course; nothing personal. But she told you what

you ought to think, and then left you with a grand air which was

admirable. Is she an Antinomian--if so, tell her I am an Antinomian

painter, and introduce me. I should like to paint her and her husband.

He has the sort of handsome \_physique\_ that the Duke ought to have in

\_Lucrezia Borgia\_--if it could go with a fine baritone, which it can't."

Deronda devoutly hoped that Hans's account of the impression his

dialogue with Gwendolen had made on a distant beholder was no more than

a bit of fantastic representation, such as was common with him.

And Gwendolen was not without her after-thoughts that her husband's

eyes might have been on her, extracting something to reprove--some

offence against her dignity as his wife; her consciousness telling her

that she had not kept up the perfect air of equability in public which

was her own ideal. But Grandcourt made no observation on her behavior.

All he said as they were driving home was--

"Lush will dine with us among the other people to-morrow. You will

treat him civilly."

Gwendolen's heart began to beat violently. The words that she wanted to

utter, as one wants to return a blow, were. "You are breaking your

promise to me--the first promise you made me." But she dared not utter

them. She was as frightened at a quarrel as if she had foreseen that it

would end with throttling fingers on her neck. After a pause, she said

in the tone rather of defeat than resentment--

"I thought you did not intend him to frequent the house again."

"I want him just now. He is useful to me; and he must be treated

civilly."

Silence. There may come a moment when even an excellent husband who has

dropped smoking under more or less of a pledge during courtship, for

the first time will introduce his cigar-smoke between himself and his

wife, with the tacit understanding that she will have to put up with

it. Mr. Lush was, so to speak, a very large cigar.

If these are the sort of lovers' vows at which Jove laughs, he must

have a merry time of it.

CHAPTER XLVI.

"If any one should importune me to give a reason why I loved him, I

feel it could no otherwise be expressed than by making answer,

'Because it was he, because it was I.' There is, beyond what I am able

to say, I know not what inexplicable power that brought on this

union."--MONTAIGNE: \_On Friendship\_.

The time had come to prepare Mordecai for the revelation of the

restored sister and for the change of abode which was desirable before

Mirah's meeting with her brother. Mrs. Meyrick, to whom Deronda had

confided everything except Mordecai's peculiar relation to himself, had

been active in helping him to find a suitable lodging in Brompton, not

many minutes' walk from her own house, so that the brother and sister

would be within reach of her motherly care. Her happy mixture of

Scottish fervor and Gallic liveliness had enabled her to keep the

secret close from the girls as well as from Hans, any betrayal to them

being likely to reach Mirah in some way that would raise an agitating

suspicion, and spoil the important opening of that work which was to

secure her independence, as we rather arbitrarily call one of the more

arduous and dignified forms of our dependence. And both Mrs. Meyrick

and Deronda had more reasons than they could have expressed for

desiring that Mirah should be able to maintain herself. Perhaps "the

little mother" was rather helped in her secrecy by some dubiousness in

her sentiment about the remarkable brother described to her; and

certainly if she felt any joy and anticipatory admiration, it was due

to her faith in Deronda's judgment. The consumption was a sorrowful

fact that appealed to her tenderness; but how was she to be very glad

of an enthusiasm which, to tell the truth, she could only contemplate

as Jewish pertinacity, and as rather an undesirable introduction among

them all of a man whose conversation would not be more modern and

encouraging than that of Scott's Covenanters? Her mind was anything but

prosaic, and had her soberer share of Mab's delight in the romance of

Mirah's story and of her abode with them; but the romantic or unusual

in real life requires some adaptation. We sit up at night to read about

Sakya-Mouni, St. Francis, or Oliver Cromwell; but whether we should be

glad for any one at all like them to call on us the next morning, still

more, to reveal himself as a new relation, is quite another affair.

Besides, Mrs. Meyrick had hoped, as her children did, that the

intensity of Mirah's feeling about Judaism would slowly subside, and be

merged in the gradually deepening current of loving interchange with

her new friends. In fact, her secret favorite continuation of the

romance had been no discovery of Jewish relations, but something much

more favorable to the hopes she discerned in Hans. And now--here was a

brother who would dip Mirah's mind over again in the deepest dye of

Jewish sentiment. She could not help saying to Deronda--

"I am as glad as you are that the pawnbroker is not her brother: there

are Ezras and Ezras in the world; and really it is a comfort to think

that all Jews are not like those shopkeepers who \_will not\_ let you get

out of their shops: and besides, what he said to you about his mother

and sister makes me bless him. I am sure he's good. But I never did

like anything fanatical. I suppose I heard a little too much preaching

in my youth and lost my palate for it."

"I don't think you will find that Mordecai obtrudes any preaching,"

said Deronda. "He is not what I should call fanatical. I call a man

fanatical when his enthusiasm is narrow and hoodwinked, so that he has

no sense of proportions, and becomes unjust and unsympathetic to men

who are out of his own track. Mordecai is an enthusiast; I should like

to keep that word for the highest order of minds--those who care

supremely for grand and general benefits to mankind. He is not a

strictly orthodox Jew, and is full of allowances for others; his

conformity in many things is an allowance for the condition of other

Jews. The people he lives with are as fond of him as possible, and they

can't in the least understand his ideas."

"Oh, well, I can live up to the level of the pawnbroker's mother, and

like him for what I see to be good in him; and for what I don't see the

merits of I will take your word. According to your definition, I

suppose one might be fanatical in worshipping common-sense; for my poor

husband used to say the world would be a poor place if there were

nothing but common-sense in it. However, Mirah's brother will have good

bedding--that I have taken care of; and I shall have this extra window

pasted up with paper to prevent draughts." (The conversation was taking

place in the destined lodging.) "It is a comfort to think that the

people of the house are no strangers to me--no hypocritical harpies.

And when the children know, we shall be able to make the rooms much

prettier."

"The next stage of the affair is to tell all to Mordecai, and get him

to move--which may be a more difficult business," said Deronda.

"And will you tell Mirah before I say anything to the children?" said

Mrs. Meyrick. But Deronda hesitated, and she went on in a tone of

persuasive deliberation--"No, I think not. Let me tell Hans and the

girls the evening before, and they will be away the next morning?"

"Yes, that will be best. But do justice to my account of Mordecai--or

Ezra, as I suppose Mirah will wish to call him: don't assist their

imagination by referring to Habakkuk Mucklewrath," said Deronda,

smiling--Mrs. Meyrick herself having used the comparison of the

Covenanters.

"Trust me, trust me," said the little mother. "I shall have to persuade

them so hard to be glad, that I shall convert myself. When I am

frightened I find it a good thing to have somebody to be angry with for

not being brave: it warms the blood."

Deronda might have been more argumentative or persuasive about the view

to be taken of Mirah's brother, if he had been less anxiously

preoccupied with the more important task immediately before him, which

he desired to acquit himself of without wounding the Cohens. Mordecai,

by a memorable answer, had made it evident that he would be keenly

alive to any inadvertance in relation to their feelings. In the

interval, he had been meeting Mordecai at the \_Hand and Banner\_, but

now after due reflection he wrote to him saying that he had particular

reasons for wishing to see him in his own home the next evening, and

would beg to sit with him in his workroom for an hour, if the Cohens

would not regard it as an intrusion. He would call with the

understanding that if there were any objection, Mordecai would

accompany him elsewhere. Deronda hoped in this way to create a little

expectation that would have a preparatory effect.

He was received with the usual friendliness, some additional costume in

the women and children, and in all the elders a slight air of wondering

which even in Cohen was not allowed to pass the bounds of silence--the

guest's transactions with Mordecai being a sort of mystery which he was

rather proud to think lay outside the sphere of light which enclosed

his own understanding. But when Deronda said, "I suppose Mordecai is at

home and expecting me," Jacob, who had profited by the family remarks,

went up to his knee and said, "What do you want to talk to Mordecai

about?"

"Something that is very interesting to him," said Deronda, pinching the

lad's ear, "but that you can't understand."

"Can you say this?" said Jacob, immediately giving forth a string of

his rote-learned Hebrew verses with a wonderful mixture of the throaty

and the nasal, and nodding his small head at his hearer, with a sense

of giving formidable evidence which might rather alter their mutual

position.

"No, really," said Deronda, keeping grave; "I can't say anything like

it."

"I thought not," said Jacob, performing a dance of triumph with his

small scarlet legs, while he took various objects out of the deep

pockets of his knickerbockers and returned them thither, as a slight

hint of his resources; after which, running to the door of the

workroom, he opened it wide, set his back against it, and said,

"Mordecai, here's the young swell"--a copying of his father's phrase,

which seemed to him well fitted to cap the recitation of Hebrew.

He was called back with hushes by mother and grandmother, and Deronda,

entering and closing the door behind him, saw that a bit of carpet had

been laid down, a chair placed, and the fire and lights attended to, in

sign of the Cohens' respect. As Mordecai rose to greet him, Deronda was

struck with the air of solemn expectation in his face, such as would

have seemed perfectly natural if his letter had declared that some

revelation was to be made about the lost sister. Neither of them spoke,

till Deronda, with his usual tenderness of manner, had drawn the vacant

chair from the opposite side of the hearth and had seated himself near

to Mordecai, who then said, in a tone of fervid certainty--

"You are coming to tell me something that my soul longs for."

"It is true I have something very weighty to tell you--something I

trust that you will rejoice in," said Deronda, on his guard against the

probability that Mordecai had been preparing himself for something

quite different from the fact.

"It is all revealed--it is made clear to you," said Mordecai, more

eagerly, leaning forward with clasped hands. "You are even as my

brother that sucked the breasts of my mother--the heritage is

yours--there is no doubt to divide us."

"I have learned nothing new about myself," said Deronda. The

disappointment was inevitable: it was better not to let the feeling be

strained longer in a mistaken hope.

Mordecai sank back in his chair, unable for the moment to care what was

really coming. The whole day his mind had been in a state of tension

toward one fulfillment. The reaction was sickening and he closed his

eyes.

"Except," Deronda went on gently, after a pause,--"except that I had

really some time ago come into another sort of hidden connection with

you, besides what you have spoken of as existing in your own feeling."

The eyes were not opened, but there was a fluttering in the lids.

"I had made the acquaintance of one in whom you are interested."

"One who is closely related to your departed mother," Deronda went on

wishing to make the disclosure gradual; but noticing a shrinking

movement in Mordecai, he added--"whom she and you held dear above all

others."

Mordecai, with a sudden start, laid a spasmodic grasp on Deronda's

wrist; there was a great terror in him. And Deronda divined it. A

tremor was perceptible in his clear tones as he said--

"What was prayed for has come to pass: Mirah has been delivered from

evil."

Mordecai's grasp relaxed a little, but he was panting with a tearless

sob.

Deronda went on: "Your sister is worthy of the mother you honored."

He waited there, and Mordecai, throwing himself backward in his chair,

again closed his eyes, uttering himself almost inaudibly for some

minutes in Hebrew, and then subsiding into a happy-looking silence.

Deronda, watching the expression in his uplifted face, could have

imagined that he was speaking with some beloved object: there was a new

suffused sweetness, something like that on the faces of the beautiful

dead. For the first time Deronda thought he discerned a family

resemblance to Mirah.

Presently when Mordecai was ready to listen, the rest was told. But in

accounting for Mirah's flight he made the statement about the father's

conduct as vague as he could, and threw the emphasis on her yearning to

come to England as the place where she might find her mother. Also he

kept back the fact of Mirah's intention to drown herself, and his own

part in rescuing her; merely describing the home she had found with

friends of his, whose interest in her and efforts for her he had

shared. What he dwelt on finally was Mirah's feeling about her mother

and brother; and in relation to this he tried to give every detail.

"It was in search of them," said Deronda, smiling, "that I turned into

this house: the name Ezra Cohen was just then the most interesting name

in the world to me. I confess I had fear for a long while. Perhaps you

will forgive me now for having asked you that question about the elder

Mrs. Cohen's daughter. I cared very much what I should find Mirah's

friends to be. But I had found a brother worthy of her when I knew that

her Ezra was disguised under the name of Mordecai."

"Mordecai is really my name--Ezra Mordecai Cohen."

"Is there any kinship between this family and yours?" said Deronda.

"Only the kinship of Israel. My soul clings to these people, who have

sheltered me and given me succor out of the affection that abides in

Jewish hearts, as sweet odor in things long crushed and hidden from the

outer air. It is good for me to bear with their ignorance and be bound

to them in gratitude, that I may keep in mind the spiritual poverty of

the Jewish million, and not put impatient knowledge in the stead of

loving wisdom."

"But you don't feel bound to continue with them now there is a closer

tie to draw you?" said Deronda, not without fear that he might find an

obstacle to overcome. "It seems to me right now--is it not?--that you

should live with your sister; and I have prepared a home to take you to

in the neighborhood of her friends, that she may join you there. Pray

grant me this wish. It will enable me to be with you often in the hours

when Mirah is obliged to leave you. That is my selfish reason. But the

chief reason is, that Mirah will desire to watch over you, and that you

ought to give her the guardianship of a brother's presence. You shall

have books about you. I shall want to learn of you, and to take you out

to see the river and trees. And you will have the rest and comfort that

you will be more and more in need of--nay, that I need for you. This is

the claim I make on you, now that we have found each other."

Deronda spoke in a tone of earnest, affectionate pleading, such as he

might have used to a venerated elder brother. Mordecai's eyes were

fixed on him with a listening contemplation, and he was silent for a

little while after Deronda had ceased to speak. Then he said, with an

almost reproachful emphasis--

"And you would have me hold it doubtful whether you were born a Jew!

Have we not from the first touched each other with invisible

fibres--have we not quivered together like the leaves from a common

stem with stirring from a common root? I know what I am outwardly, I am

one among the crowd of poor--I am stricken, I am dying. But our souls

know each other. They gazed in silence as those who have long been

parted and meet again, but when they found voice they were assured, and

all their speech is understanding. The life of Israel is in your veins."

Deronda sat perfectly still, but felt his face tingling. It was

impossible either to deny or assent. He waited, hoping that Mordecai

would presently give him a more direct answer. And after a pause of

meditation he did say, firmly--

"What you wish of me I will do. And our mother--may the blessing of the

Eternal be with her in our souls!--would have wished it too. I will

accept what your loving kindness has prepared, and Mirah's home shall

be mine." He paused a moment, and then added in a more melancholy tone,

"But I shall grieve to part from these parents and the little ones. You

must tell them, for my heart would fail me."

"I felt that you would want me to tell them. Shall we go now at once?"

said Deronda, much relieved by this unwavering compliance.

"Yes; let us not defer it. It must be done," said Mordecai, rising with

the air of a man who has to perform a painful duty. Then came, as an

afterthought, "But do not dwell on my sister more than is needful."

When they entered the parlor he said to the alert Jacob, "Ask your

father to come, and tell Sarah to mind the shop. My friend has

something to say," he continued, turning to the elder Mrs. Cohen. It

seemed part of Mordecai's eccentricity that he should call this

gentleman his friend; and the two women tried to show their better

manners by warm politeness in begging Deronda to seat himself in the

best place.

When Cohen entered with a pen behind his ear, he rubbed his hands and

said with loud satisfaction, "Well, sir! I'm glad you're doing us the

honor to join our family party again. We are pretty comfortable, I

think."

He looked round with shiny gladness. And when all were seated on the

hearth the scene was worth peeping in upon: on one side Baby under her

scarlet quilt in the corner being rocked by the young mother, and

Adelaide Rebekah seated on the grandmother's knee; on the other, Jacob

between his father's legs; while the two markedly different figures of

Deronda and Mordecai were in the middle--Mordecai a little backward in

the shade, anxious to conceal his agitated susceptibility to what was

going on around him. The chief light came from the fire, which brought

out the rich color on a depth of shadow, and seemed to turn into speech

the dark gems of eyes that looked at each other kindly.

"I have just been telling Mordecai of an event that makes a great

change in his life," Deronda began, "but I hope you will agree with me

that it is a joyful one. Since he thinks of you as his best friends, he

wishes me to tell you for him at once."

"Relations with money, sir?" burst in Cohen, feeling a power of

divination which it was a pity to nullify by waiting for the fact.

"No; not exactly," said Deronda, smiling. "But a very precious relation

wishes to be reunited to him--a very good and lovely young sister, who

will care for his comfort in every way."

"Married, sir?"

"No, not married."

"But with a maintenance?"

"With talents which will secure her a maintenance. A home is already

provided for Mordecai."

There was silence for a moment or two before the grandmother said in a

wailing tone--

"Well, well! and so you're going away from us, Mordecai."

"And where there's no children as there is here," said the mother,

catching the wail.

"No Jacob, and no Adelaide, and no Eugenie!" wailed the grandmother

again.

"Ay, ay, Jacob's learning 'ill all wear out of him. He must go to

school. It'll be hard times for Jacob," said Cohen, in a tone of

decision.

In the wide-open ears of Jacob his father's words sounded like a doom,

giving an awful finish to the dirge-like effect of the whole

announcement. His face had been gathering a wondering incredulous

sorrow at the notion of Mordecai's going away: he was unable to imagine

the change as anything lasting; but at the mention of "hard times for

Jacob" there was no further suspense of feeling, and he broke forth in

loud lamentation. Adelaide Rebekah always cried when her brother cried,

and now began to howl with astonishing suddenness, whereupon baby

awaking contributed angry screams, and required to be taken out of the

cradle. A great deal of hushing was necessary, and Mordecai feeling the

cries pierce him, put out his arms to Jacob, who in the midst of his

tears and sobs was turning his head right and left for general

observation. His father, who had been--saying, "Never mind, old man;

you shall go to the riders," now released him, and he went to Mordecai,

who clasped him, and laid his cheek on the little black head without

speaking. But Cohen, sensible that the master of the family must make

some apology for all this weakness, and that the occasion called for a

speech, addressed Deronda with some elevation of pitch, squaring his

elbows and resting a hand on each knee:--

"It's not as we're the people to grudge anybody's good luck, sir, or

the portion of their cup being made fuller, as I may say. I'm not an

envious man, and if anybody offered to set up Mordecai in a shop of my

sort two doors lower down, \_I\_ shouldn't make wry faces about it. I'm

not one of them that had need have a poor opinion of themselves, and be

frightened at anybody else getting a chance. If I'm offal, let a wise

man come and tell me, for I've never heard it yet. And in point of

business, I'm not a class of goods to be in danger. If anybody takes to

rolling me, I can pack myself up like a caterpillar, and find my feet

when I'm let alone. And though, as I may say, you're taking some of our

good works from us, which is property bearing interest, I'm not saying

but we can afford that, though my mother and my wife had the good will

to wish and do for Mordecai to the last; and a Jew must not be like a

servant who works for reward--though I see nothing against a reward if

I can get it. And as to the extra outlay in schooling, I'm neither poor

nor greedy--I wouldn't hang myself for sixpence, nor half a crown

neither. But the truth of it is, the women and children are fond of

Mordecai. You may partly see how it is, sir, by your own sense. A

Jewish man is bound to thank God, day by day, that he was not made a

woman; but a woman has to thank God that He has made her according to

His will. And we all know what He has made her--a child-bearing,

tender-hearted thing is the woman of our people. Her children are

mostly stout, as I think you'll say Addy's are, and she's not mushy,

but her heart is tender. So you must excuse present company, sir, for

not being glad all at once. And as to this young lady--for by what you

say 'young lady' is the proper term"--Cohen here threw some additional

emphasis into his look and tone--"we shall all be glad for Mordecai's

sake by-and-by, when we cast up our accounts and see where we are."

Before Deronda could summon any answer to this oddly mixed speech,

Mordecai exclaimed--

"Friends, friends! For food and raiment and shelter I would not have

sought better than you have given me. You have sweetened the morsel

with love; and what I thought of as a joy that would be left to me even

in the last months of my waning strength was to go on teaching the lad.

But now I am as one who had clad himself beforehand in his shroud, and

used himself to making the grave his bed, when the divine command

sounded in his ears, 'Arise, and go forth; the night is not yet come.'

For no light matter would I have turned away from your kindness to take

another's. But it has been taught us, as you know, that \_the reward of

one duty is the power to fulfill another\_--so said Ben Azai. You have

made your duty to one of the poor among your brethren a joy to you and

me; and your reward shall be that you will not rest without the joy of

like deeds in the time to come. And may not Jacob come and visit me?"

Mordecai had turned with this question to Deronda, who said--

"Surely that can be managed. It is no further than Brompton."

Jacob, who had been gradually calmed by the need to hear what was going

forward, began now to see some daylight on the future, the word "visit"

having the lively charm of cakes and general relaxation at his

grandfather's, the dealer in knives. He danced away from Mordecai, and

took up a station of survey in the middle of the hearth with his hands

in his knickerbockers.

"Well," said the grandmother, with a sigh of resignation, "I hope

there'll be nothing in the way of your getting \_kosher\_ meat, Mordecai.

For you'll have to trust to those you live with."

"That's all right, that's all right, you may be sure, mother," said

Cohen, as if anxious to cut off inquiry on matters in which he was

uncertain of the guest's position. "So, sir," he added, turning with a

look of amused enlightenment to Deronda, "it was better than learning

you had to talk to Mordecai about! I wondered to myself at the time. I

thought somehow there was a something."

"Mordecai will perhaps explain to you how it was that I was seeking

him," said Deronda, feeling that he had better go, and rising as he

spoke.

It was agreed that he should come again and the final move be made on

the next day but one; but when he was going Mordecai begged to walk

with him to the end of the street, and wrapped himself in coat and

comforter. It was a March evening, and Deronda did not mean to let him

go far, but he understood the wish to be outside the house with him in

communicative silence, after the exciting speech that had been filling

the last hour. No word was spoken until Deronda had proposed parting,

when he said--

"Mirah would wish to thank the Cohens for their goodness. You would

wish her to do so--to come and see them, would you not?"

Mordecai did not answer immediately, but at length said--

"I cannot tell. I fear not. There is a family sorrow, and the sight of

my sister might be to them as the fresh bleeding of wounds. There is a

daughter and sister who will never be restored as Mirah is. But who

knows the pathways? We are all of us denying or fulfilling prayers--and

men in their careless deeds walk amidst invisible outstretched arms and

pleadings made in vain. In my ears I have the prayers of generations

past and to come. My life is as nothing to me but the beginning of

fulfilment. And yet I am only another prayer--which you will fulfil."

Deronda pressed his hand, and they parted.

CHAPTER XLVII.

"And you must love him ere to you

He will seem worthy of your love."

--WORDSWORTH.

One might be tempted to envy Deronda providing new clothes for

Mordecai, and pleasing himself as if he were sketching a picture in

imagining the effect of the fine gray flannel shirts and a

dressing-gown very much like a Franciscan's brown frock, with

Mordecai's head and neck above them. Half his pleasure was the sense of

seeing Mirah's brother through her eyes, and securing her fervid joy

from any perturbing impression. And yet, after he had made all things

ready, he was visited with doubt whether he were not mistaking her, and

putting the lower effect for the higher: was she not just as capable as

he himself had been of feeling the impressive distinction in her

brother all the more for that aspect of poverty which was among the

memorials of his past? But there were the Meyricks to be propitiated

toward this too Judaic brother; and Deronda detected himself piqued

into getting out of sight everything that might feed the ready

repugnance in minds unblessed with that precious "seeing," that bathing

of all objects in a solemnity as of sun-set glow, which is begotten of

a loving reverential emotion.

And his inclination would have been the more confirmed if he had heard

the dialogue round Mrs. Meyrick's fire late in the evening, after Mirah

had gone to her room. Hans, settled now in his Chelsea rooms, had

stayed late, and Mrs. Meyrick, poking the fire into a blaze, said--

"Now, Kate, put out your candle, and all come round the fire cosily.

Hans, dear, do leave off laughing at those poems for the ninety-ninth

time, and come too. I have something wonderful to tell."

"As if I didn't know that, ma. I have seen it in the corner of your eye

ever so long, and in your pretense of errands," said Kate, while the

girls came up to put their feet on the fender, and Hans, pushing his

chair near them, sat astride it, resting his fists and chin on the back.

"Well, then, if you are so wise, perhaps you know that Mirah's brother

is found!" said Mrs. Meyrick, in her clearest accents.

"Oh, confound it!" said Hans, in the same moment.

"Hans, that is wicked," said Mab. "Suppose we had lost you?"

"I \_cannot\_ help being rather sorry," said Kate. "And her

mother?--where is she?"

"Her mother is dead."

"I hope the brother is not a bad man," said Amy.

"Nor a fellow all smiles and jewelry--a Crystal Palace Assyrian with a

hat on," said Hans, in the worst humor.

"Were there ever such unfeeling children?" said Mrs. Meyrick, a little

strengthened by the need for opposition. "You don't think the least bit

of Mirah's joy in the matter."

"You know, ma, Mirah hardly remembers her brother," said Kate.

"People who are lost for twelve years should never come back again,"

said Hans. "They are always in the way."

"Hans!" said Mrs. Meyrick, reproachfully. "If you had lost me for

\_twenty\_ years, I should have thought--"

"I said twelve years," Hans broke in. "Anywhere about twelve years is

the time at which lost relations should keep out of the way."

"Well, but it's nice finding people--there is something to tell," said

Mab, clasping her knees. "Did Prince Camaralzaman find him?"

Then Mrs. Meyrick, in her neat, narrative way, told all she knew

without interruption. "Mr. Deronda has the highest admiration for him,"

she ended--"seems quite to look up to him. And he says Mirah is just

the sister to understand this brother."

"Deronda is getting perfectly preposterous about those Jews," said Hans

with disgust, rising and setting his chair away with a bang. "He wants

to do everything he can to encourage Mirah in her prejudices."

"Oh, for shame, Hans!--to speak in that way of Mr. Deronda," said Mab.

And Mrs. Meyrick's face showed something like an under-current of

expression not allowed to get to the surface.

"And now we shall never be all together," Hans went on, walking about

with his hands thrust into the pockets of his brown velveteen coat,

"but we must have this prophet Elijah to tea with us, and Mirah will

think of nothing but sitting on the ruins of Jerusalem. She will be

spoiled as an artist--mind that--she will get as narrow as a nun.

Everything will be spoiled--our home and everything. I shall take to

drinking."

"Oh, really, Hans," said Kate, impatiently. "I do think men are the

most contemptible animals in all creation. Every one of them must have

everything to his mind, else he is unbearable."

"Oh, oh, oh, it's very dreadful!" cried Mab. "I feel as if ancient

Nineveh were come again."

"I should like to know what is the good of having gone to the

university and knowing everything, if you are so childish, Hans," said

Amy. "You ought to put up with a man that Providence sends you to be

kind to. \_We\_ shall have to put up with him."

"I hope you will all of you like the new Lamentations of Jeremiah--'to

be continued in our next'--that's all," said Hans, seizing his

wide-awake. "It's no use being one thing more than another if one has

to endure the company of those men with a fixed idea, staring blankly

at you, and requiring all your remarks to be small foot-notes to their

text. If you're to be under a petrifying wall, you'd better be an old

boot. I don't feel myself an old boot." Then abruptly, "Good night,

little mother," bending to kiss her brow in a hasty, desperate manner,

and condescendingly, on his way to the door, "Good-night, girls."

"Suppose Mirah knew how you are behaving," said Kate. But her answer

was a slam of the door. "I \_should\_ like to see Mirah when Mr. Deronda

tells her," she went on to her mother. "I know she will look so

beautiful."

But Deronda, on second thoughts, had written a letter, which Mrs.

Meyrick received the next morning, begging her to make the revelation

instead of waiting for him, not giving the real reason--that he shrank

from going again through a narrative in which he seemed to be making

himself important and giving himself a character of general

beneficence--but saying that he wished to remain with Mordecai while

Mrs. Meyrick would bring Mirah on what was to be understood as a visit,

so that there might be a little interval before that change of abode

which he expected that Mirah herself would propose.

Deronda secretly felt some wondering anxiety how far Mordecai, after

years of solitary preoccupation with ideas likely to have become the

more exclusive from continual diminution of bodily strength, would

allow him to feel a tender interest in his sister over and above the

rendering of pious duties. His feeling for the Cohens, and especially

for little Jacob, showed a persistent activity of affection; but these

objects had entered into his daily life for years; and Deronda felt it

noticeable that Mordecai asked no new questions about Mirah,

maintaining, indeed, an unusual silence on all subjects, and appearing

simply to submit to the changes that were coming over his personal

life. He donned the new clothes obediently, but said afterward to

Deronda, with a faint smile, "I must keep my old garments by me for a

remembrance." And when they were seated, awaiting Mirah, he uttered no

word, keeping his eyelids closed, but yet showing restless feeling in

his face and hands. In fact, Mordecai was undergoing that peculiar

nervous perturbation only known to those whose minds, long and

habitually moving with strong impetus in one current, are suddenly

compelled into a new or reopened channel. Susceptible people, whose

strength has been long absorbed by dormant bias, dread an interview

that imperiously revives the past, as they would dread a threatening

illness. Joy may be there, but joy, too, is terrible.

Deronda felt the infection of excitement, and when he heard the ring at

the door, he went out, not knowing exactly why, that he might see and

greet Mirah beforehand. He was startled to find that she had on the hat

and cloak in which he had first seen her--the memorable cloak that had

once been wetted for a winding-sheet. She had come down-stairs equipped

in this way; and when Mrs. Meyrick said, in a tone of question, "You

like to go in that dress, dear?" she answered, "My brother is poor, and

I want to look as much like him as I can, else he may feel distant from

me"--imagining that she should meet him in the workman's dress. Deronda

could not make any remark, but felt secretly rather ashamed of his own

fastidious arrangements. They shook hands silently, for Mirah looked

pale and awed.

When Deronda opened the door for her, Mordecai had risen, and had his

eyes turned toward it with an eager gaze. Mirah took only two or three

steps, and then stood still. They looked at each other, motionless. It

was less their own presence that they felt than another's; they were

meeting first in memories, compared with which touch was no union.

Mirah was the first to break the silence, standing where she was.

"Ezra," she said, in exactly the same tone as when she was telling of

her mother's call to him.

Mordecai with a sudden movement advanced and laid his hand on her

shoulders. He was the head taller, and looked down at her tenderly

while he said, "That was our mother's voice. You remember her calling

me?"

"Yes, and how you answered her--'Mother!'--and I knew you loved her."

Mirah threw her arms round her brother's neck, clasped her little hands

behind it, and drew down his face, kissing it with childlike

lavishness, Her hat fell backward on the ground and disclosed all her

curls.

"Ah, the dear head, the dear head?" said Mordecai, in a low loving

tone, laying his thin hand gently on the curls.

"You are very ill, Ezra," said Mirah, sadly looking at him with more

observation.

"Yes, dear child, I shall not be long with you in the body," was the

quiet answer.

"Oh, I will love you and we will talk to each other," said Mirah, with

a sweet outpouring of her words, as spontaneous as bird-notes. "I will

tell you everything, and you will teach me:--you will teach me to be a

good Jewess--what she would have liked me to be. I shall always be with

you when I am not working. For I work now. I shall get money to keep

us. Oh, I have had such good friends."

Mirah until now had quite forgotten that any one was by, but here she

turned with the prettiest attitude, keeping one hand on her brother's

arm while she looked at Mrs. Meyrick and Deronda. The little mother's

happy emotion in witnessing this meeting of brother and sister had

already won her to Mordecai, who seemed to her really to have more

dignity and refinement than she had felt obliged to believe in from

Deronda's account.

"See this dear lady!" said Mirah. "I was a stranger, a poor wanderer,

and she believed in me, and has treated me as a daughter. Please give

my brother your hand," she added, beseechingly, taking Mrs. Meyrick's

hand and putting it in Mordecai's, then pressing them both with her own

and lifting them to her lips.

"The Eternal Goodness has been with you," said Mordecai. "You have

helped to fulfill our mother's prayer."

"I think we will go now, shall we?--and return later," said Deronda,

laying a gentle pressure on Mrs. Meyrick's arm, and she immediately

complied. He was afraid of any reference to the facts about himself

which he had kept back from Mordecai, and he felt no uneasiness now in

the thought of the brother and sister being alone together.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

'Tis hard and ill-paid task to order all things beforehand by the rule

of our own security, as is well hinted by Machiavelli concerning

Caesar Borgia, who, saith he, had thought of all that might occur on

his father's death, and had provided against every evil chance save

only one: it had never come into his mind that when his father died,

his own death would quickly follow.

Grandcourt's importance as a subject of this realm was of the grandly

passive kind which consists in the inheritance of land. Political and

social movements touched him only through the wire of his rental, and

his most careful biographer need not have read up on

Schleswig-Holstein, the policy of Bismarck, trade-unions, household

suffrage, or even the last commercial panic. He glanced over the best

newspaper columns on these topics, and his views on them can hardly be

said to have wanted breadth, since he embraced all Germans, all

commercial men, and all voters liable to use the wrong kind of soap,

under the general epithet of "brutes;" but he took no action on these

much-agitated questions beyond looking from under his eyelids at any

man who mentioned them, and retaining a silence which served to shake

the opinions of timid thinkers.

But Grandcourt, within his own sphere of interest, showed some of the

qualities which have entered into triumphal diplomacy of the wildest

continental sort.

No movement of Gwendolen in relation to Deronda escaped him. He would

have denied that he was jealous; because jealousy would have implied

some doubt of his own power to hinder what he had determined against.

That his wife should have more inclination to another man's society

than to his own would not pain him: what he required was that she

should be as fully aware as she would have been of a locked hand-cuff,

that her inclination was helpless to decide anything in contradiction

with his resolve. However much of vacillating whim there might have

been in his entrance on matrimony, there was no vacillating in his

interpretation of the bond. He had not repented of his marriage; it had

really brought more of aim into his life, new objects to exert his will

upon; and he had not repented of his choice. His taste was fastidious,

and Gwendolen satisfied it: he would not have liked a wife who had not

received some elevation of rank from him; nor one who did not command

admiration by her mien and beauty; nor one whose nails were not of the

right shape; nor one the lobe of whose ear was at all too large and

red; nor one who, even if her nails and ears were right, was at the

same time a ninny, unable to make spirited answers. These requirements

may not seem too exacting to refined contemporaries whose own ability

to fall in love has been held in suspense for lack of indispensable

details; but fewer perhaps may follow him in his contentment that his

wife should be in a temper which would dispose her to fly out if she

dared, and that she should have been urged into marrying him by other

feelings than passionate attachment. Still, for those who prefer

command to love, one does not see why the habit of mind should change

precisely at the point of matrimony.

Grandcourt did not feel that he had chosen the wrong wife; and having

taken on himself the part of husband, he was not going in any way to be

fooled, or allow himself to be seen in a light that could be regarded

as pitiable. This was his state of mind--not jealousy; still, his

behavior in some respects was as like jealousy as yellow is to yellow,

which color we know may be the effect of very different causes.

He had come up to town earlier than usual because he wished to be on

the spot for legal consultation as to the arrangements of his will, the

transference of mortgages, and that transaction with his uncle about

the succession to Diplow, which the bait of ready money, adroitly

dangled without importunity, had finally won him to agree upon. But

another acceptable accompaniment of his being in town was the

presentation of himself with the beautiful bride whom he had chosen to

marry in spite of what other people might have expected of him. It is

true that Grandcourt went about with the sense that he did not care a

languid curse for any one's admiration: but this state of not-caring,

just as much as desire, required its related object--namely, a world of

admiring or envying spectators: for if you are fond of looking stonily

at smiling persons--the persons must be and they must smile--a

rudimentary truth which is surely forgotten by those who complain of

mankind as generally contemptible, since any other aspect of the race

must disappoint the voracity of their contempt. Grandcourt, in town for

the first time with his wife, had his non-caring abstinence from curses

enlarged and diversified by splendid receptions, by conspicuous rides

and drives, by presentations of himself with her on all distinguished

occasions. He wished her to be sought after; he liked that "fellows"

should be eager to talk with her and escort her within his observation;

there was even a kind of lofty coquetry on her part that he would not

have objected to. But what he did not like were her ways in relation to

Deronda.

After the musical party at Lady Mallinger's, when Grandcourt had

observed the dialogue on the settee as keenly as Hans had done, it was

characteristic of him that he named Deronda for invitation along with

the Mallinger's, tenaciously avoiding the possible suggestion to

anybody concerned that Deronda's presence or absence could be of the

least importance to him; and he made no direct observation to Gwendolen

on her behavior that evening, lest the expression of his disgust should

be a little too strong to satisfy his own pride. But a few days

afterward he remarked, without being careful of the \_Ã  propos\_--

"Nothing makes a woman more of a gawky than looking out after people

and showing tempers in public. A woman ought to have good manners. Else

it's intolerable to appear with her."

Gwendolen made the expected application, and was not without alarm at

the notion of being a gawky. For she, too, with her melancholy distaste

for things, preferred that her distaste should include admirers. But

the sense of overhanging rebuke only intensified the strain of

expectation toward any meeting with Deronda. The novelty and excitement

of her town life was like the hurry and constant change of foreign

travel; whatever might be the inward despondency, there was a programme

to be fulfilled, not without gratification to many-sided self. But, as

always happens with a deep interest, the comparatively rare occasions

on which she could exchange any words with Deronda had a diffusive

effect in her consciousness, magnifying their communication with each

other, and therefore enlarging the place she imagined it to have in his

mind. How could Deronda help this? He certainly did not avoid her;

rather he wished to convince her by every delicate indirect means that

her confidence in him had not been indiscreet since it had not lowered

his respect. Moreover he liked being near her--how could it be

otherwise? She was something more than a problem: she was a lovely

woman, for the turn of whose mind and fate he had a care which, however

futile it might be, kept soliciting him as a responsibility, perhaps

all the more that, when he dared to think of his own future, he saw it

lying far away from this splendid sad-hearted creature, who, because he

had once been impelled to arrest her attention momentarily, as he might

have seized her arm with warning to hinder her from stepping where

there was danger, had turned to him with a beseeching persistent need.

One instance in which Grandcourt stimulated a feeling in Gwendolen that

he would have liked to suppress without seeming to care about it, had

relation to Mirah. Gwendolen's inclination lingered over the project of

the singing lessons as a sort of obedience to Deronda's advice, but day

followed day with that want of perceived leisure which belongs to lives

where there is no work to mark off intervals; and the continual

liability to Grandcourt's presence and surveillance seemed to flatten

every effort to the level of the boredom which his manner expressed;

his negative mind was as diffusive as fog, clinging to all objects, and

spoiling all contact.

But one morning when they were breakfasting, Gwendolen, in a recurrent

fit of determination to exercise the old spirit, said, dallying

prettily over her prawns without eating them--

"I think of making myself accomplished while we are in town, and having

singing lessons."

"Why?" said Grandcourt, languidly.

"Why?" echoed Gwendolen, playing at sauciness; "because I can't eat

\_pÃ¢tÃ© de foie gras\_ to make me sleepy, and I can't smoke, and I can't

go to the club to make me like to come away again--I want a variety of

\_ennui\_. What would be the most convenient time, when you are busy with

your lawyers and people, for me to have lessons from that little

Jewess, whose singing is getting all the rage."

"Whenever you like," said Grandcourt, pushing away his plate, and

leaning back in his chair while he looked at her with his most

lizard-like expression and, played with the ears of the tiny spaniel on

his lap (Gwendolen had taken a dislike to the dogs because they fawned

on him).

Then he said, languidly, "I don't see why a lady should sing. Amateurs

make fools of themselves. A lady can't risk herself in that way in

company. And one doesn't want to hear squalling in private."

"I like frankness: that seems to me a husband's great charm," said

Gwendolen, with her little upward movement of her chin, as she turned

her eyes away from his, and lifting a prawn before her, looked at the

boiled ingenuousness of its eyes as preferable to the lizard's. "But;"

she added, having devoured her mortification, "I suppose you don't

object to Miss Lapidoth's singing at our party on the fourth? I thought

of engaging her. Lady Brackenshaw had her, you know: and the Raymonds,

who are very particular about their music. And Mr. Deronda, who is a

musician himself and a first-rate judge, says there is no singing in

such good taste as hers for a drawing-room. I think his opinion is an

authority."

She meant to sling a small stone at her husband in that way.

"It's very indecent of Deronda to go about praising that girl," said

Grandcourt in a tone of indifference.

"Indecent!" exclaimed Gwendolen, reddening and looking at him again,

overcome by startled wonder, and unable to reflect on the probable

falsity of the phrase--"to go about praising."

"Yes; and especially when she is patronized by Lady Mallinger. He ought

to hold his tongue about her. Men can see what is his relation to her."

"Men who judge of others by themselves," said Gwendolen, turning white

after her redness, and immediately smitten with a dread of her own

words.

"Of course. And a woman should take their judgment--else she is likely

to run her head into the wrong place," said Grandcourt, conscious of

using pinchers on that white creature. "I suppose you take Deronda for

a saint."

"Oh dear no?" said Gwendolen, summoning desperately her almost

miraculous power of self-control, and speaking in a high hard tone.

"Only a little less of a monster."

She rose, pushed her chair away without hurry, and walked out of the

room with something like the care of a man who is afraid of showing

that he has taken more wine than usual. She turned the keys inside her

dressing-room doors, and sat down for some time looking pale and quiet

as when she was leaving the breakfast-room. Even in the moments after

reading the poisonous letter she had hardly had more cruel sensations

than now; for emotion was at the acute point, where it is not

distinguishable from sensation. Deronda unlike what she had believed

him to be, was an image which affected her as a hideous apparition

would have done, quite apart from the way in which it was produced. It

had taken hold of her as pain before she could consider whether it were

fiction or truth; and further to hinder her power of resistance came

the sudden perception, how very slight were the grounds of her faith in

Deronda--how little she knew of his life--how childish she had been in

her confidence. His rebukes and his severity to her began to seem

odious, along with all the poetry and lofty doctrine in the world,

whatever it might be; and the grave beauty of his face seemed the most

unpleasant mask that the common habits of men could put on.

All this went on in her with the rapidity of a sick dream; and her

start into resistance was very much like a waking. Suddenly from out

the gray sombre morning there came a stream of sunshine, wrapping her

in warmth and light where she sat in stony stillness. She moved gently

and looked round her--there was a world outside this bad dream, and the

dream proved nothing; she rose, stretching her arms upward and clasping

her hands with her habitual attitude when she was seeking relief from

oppressive feeling, and walked about the room in this flood of sunbeams.

"It is not true! What does it matter whether \_he\_ believes it or not?"

This is what she repeated to herself--but this was not her faith come

back again; it was only the desperate cry of faith, finding suffocation

intolerable. And how could she go on through the day in this state?

With one of her impetuous alternations, her imagination flew to wild

actions by which she would convince herself of what she wished: she

would go to Lady Mallinger and question her about Mirah; she would

write to Deronda and upbraid him with making the world all false and

wicked and hopeless to her--to him she dared pour out all the bitter

indignation of her heart. No; she would go to Mirah. This last form

taken by her need was more definitely practicable, and quickly became

imperious. No matter what came of it. She had the pretext of asking

Mirah to sing at her party on the fourth. What was she going to say

beside? How satisfy? She did not foresee--she could not wait to

foresee. If that idea which was maddening her had been a living thing,

she would have wanted to throttle it without waiting to foresee what

would come of the act. She rang her bell and asked if Mr. Grandcourt

were gone out: finding that he was, she ordered the carriage, and began

to dress for the drive; then she went down, and walked about the large

drawing-room like an imprisoned dumb creature, not recognizing herself

in the glass panels, not noting any object around her in the painted

gilded prison. Her husband would probably find out where she had been,

and punish her in some way or other--no matter--she could neither

desire nor fear anything just now but the assurance that she had not

been deluding herself in her trust.

She was provided with Mirah's address. Soon she was on the way with all

the fine equipage necessary to carry about her poor uneasy heart,

depending in its palpitations on some answer or other to questioning

which she did not know how she should put. She was as heedless of what

happened before she found that Miss Lapidoth was at home, as one is of

lobbies and passages on the way to a court of justice--heedless of

everything till she was in a room where there were folding-doors, and

she heard Deronda's voice behind it. Doubtless the identification was

helped by forecast, but she was as certain of it as if she had seen

him. She was frightened at her own agitation, and began to unbutton her

gloves that she might button them again, and bite her lips over the

pretended difficulty, while the door opened, and Mirah presented

herself with perfect quietude and a sweet smile of recognition. There

was relief in the sight of her face, and Gwendolen was able to smile in

return, while she put out her hand in silence; and as she seated

herself, all the while hearing the voice, she felt some reflux of

energy in the confused sense that the truth could not be anything that

she dreaded. Mirah drew her chair very near, as if she felt that the

sound of the conversation should be subdued, and looked at her visitor

with placid expectation, while Gwendolen began in a low tone, with

something that seemed like bashfulness--

"Perhaps you wonder to see me--perhaps I ought to have written--but I

wished to make a particular request."

"I am glad to see you instead of having a letter," said Mirah,

wondering at the changed expression and manner of the "Vandyke

duchess," as Hans had taught her to call Gwendolen. The rich color and

the calmness of her own face were in strong contrast with the pale

agitated beauty under the plumed hat.

"I thought," Gwendolen went on--"at least I hoped, you would not object

to sing at our house on the 4th--in the evening--at a party like Lady

Brackenshaw's. I should be so much obliged."

"I shall be very happy to sing for you. At ten?" said Mirah, while

Gwendolen seemed to get more instead of less embarrassed.

"At ten, please," she answered; then paused, and felt that she had

nothing more to say. She could not go. It was impossible to rise and

say good-bye. Deronda's voice was in her ears. She must say it--she

could contrive no other sentence--

"Mr. Deronda is in the next room."

"Yes," said Mirah, in her former tone. "He is reading Hebrew with my

brother."

"You have a brother?" said Gwendolen, who had heard this from Lady

Mallinger, but had not minded it then.

"Yes, a dear brother who is ill-consumptive, and Mr. Deronda is the

best of friends to him, as he has been to me," said Mirah, with the

impulse that will not let us pass the mention of a precious person

indifferently.

"Tell me," said Gwendolen, putting her hand on Mirah's, and speaking

hardly above a whisper--"tell me--tell me the truth. You are sure he is

quite good. You know no evil of him. Any evil that people say of him is

false."

Could the proud-spirited woman have behaved more like a child? But the

strange words penetrated Mirah with nothing but a sense of solemnity

and indignation. With a sudden light in her eyes and a tremor in her

voice, she said--

"Who are the people that say evil of him? I would not believe any evil

of him, if an angel came to tell it me. He found me when I was so

miserable--I was going to drown myself; I looked so poor and forsaken;

you would have thought I was a beggar by the wayside. And he treated me

as if I had been a king's daughter. He took me to the best of women. He

found my brother for me. And he honors my brother--though he too was

poor--oh, almost as poor as he could be. And my brother honors him.

That is no light thing to say"--here Mirah's tone changed to one of

profound emphasis, and she shook her head backward: "for my brother is

very learned and great-minded. And Mr. Deronda says there are few men

equal to him." Some Jewish defiance had flamed into her indignant

gratitude and her anger could not help including Gwendolen since she

seemed to have doubted Deronda's goodness.

But Gwendolen was like one parched with thirst, drinking the fresh

water that spreads through the frame as a sufficient bliss. She did not

notice that Mirah was angry with her; she was not distinctly conscious

of anything but of the penetrating sense that Deronda and his life were

no more like her husband's conception than the morning in the horizon

was like the morning mixed with street gas. Even Mirah's words sank

into the indefiniteness of her relief. She could hardly have repeated

them, or said how her whole state of feeling was changed. She pressed

Mirah's hand, and said, "Thank you, thank you," in a hurried whisper,

then rose, and added, with only a hazy consciousness, "I must go, I

shall see you--on the fourth--I am so much obliged"--bowing herself out

automatically, while Mirah, opening the door for her, wondered at what

seemed a sudden retreat into chill loftiness.

Gwendolen, indeed, had no feeling to spare in any effusiveness toward

the creature who had brought her relief. The passionate need of

contradiction to Grandcourt's estimate of Deronda, a need which had

blunted her sensibility to everything else, was no sooner satisfied

than she wanted to be gone. She began to be aware that she was out of

place, and to dread Deronda's seeing her. And once in the carriage

again, she had the vision of what awaited her at home. When she drew up

before the door in Grosvenor Square, her husband was arriving with a

cigar between his fingers. He threw it away and handed her out,

accompanying her up-stairs. She turned into the drawing-room, lest he

should follow her farther and give her no place to retreat to; then she

sat down with a weary air, taking off her gloves, rubbing her hand over

her forehead, and making his presence as much of a cipher as possible.

But he sat, too, and not far from her--just in front, where to avoid

looking at him must have the emphasis of effort.

"May I ask where you have been at this extraordinary hour?" said

Grandcourt.

"Oh, yes; I have been to Miss Lapidoth's, to ask her to come and sing

for us," said Gwendolen, laying her gloves on the little table beside

her, and looking down at them.

"And to ask her about her relations with Deronda?" said Grandcourt,

with the coldest possible sneer in his low voice which in poor

Gwendolen's ear was diabolical.

For the first time since their marriage she flashed out upon him

without inward check. Turning her eyes full on his she said, in a

biting tone--

"Yes; and what you said is false--a low, wicked falsehood."

"She told you so--did she?" returned Grandcourt, with a more thoroughly

distilled sneer.

Gwendolen was mute. The daring anger within her was turned into the

rage of dumbness. What reasons for her belief could she give? All the

reasons that seemed so strong and living within her--she saw them

suffocated and shrivelled up under her husband's breath. There was no

proof to give, but her own impression, which would seem to him her own

folly. She turned her head quickly away from him and looked angrily

toward the end of the room: she would have risen, but he was in her way.

Grandcourt saw his advantage. "It's of no consequence so far as her

singing goes," he said, in his superficial drawl. "You can have her to

sing, if you like." Then, after a pause, he added in his lowest

imperious tone, "But you will please to observe that you are not to go

near that house again. As my wife, you must take my word about what is

proper for you. When you undertook to be Mrs. Grandcourt, you undertook

not to make a fool of yourself. You have been making a fool of yourself

this morning; and if you were to go on as you have begun, you might

soon get yourself talked of at the clubs in a way you would not like.

What do \_you\_ know about the world? You have married \_me\_, and must be

guided by my opinion."

Every slow sentence of that speech had a terrific mastery in it for

Gwendolen's nature. If the low tones had come from a physician telling

her that her symptoms were those of a fatal disease, and

prognosticating its course, she could not have been more helpless

against the argument that lay in it. But she was permitted to move now,

and her husband never again made any reference to what had occurred

this morning. He knew the force of his own words. If this white-handed

man with the perpendicular profile had been sent to govern a difficult

colony, he might have won reputation among his contemporaries. He had

certainly ability, would have understood that it was safer to

exterminate than to cajole superseded proprietors, and would not have

flinched from making things safe in that way.

Gwendolen did not, for all this, part with her recovered

faith;--rather, she kept it with a more anxious tenacity, as a

Protestant of old kept his bible hidden or a Catholic his crucifix,

according to the side favored by the civil arm; and it was

characteristic of her that apart from the impression gained concerning

Deronda in that visit, her imagination was little occupied with Mirah

or the eulogised brother. The one result established for her was, that

Deronda had acted simply as a generous benefactor, and the phrase

"reading Hebrew" had fleeted unimpressively across her sense of

hearing, as a stray stork might have made its peculiar flight across

her landscape without rousing any surprised reflection on its natural

history.

But the issue of that visit, as it regarded her husband, took a

strongly active part in the process which made an habitual conflict

within her, and was the cause of some external change perhaps not

observed by any one except Deronda. As the weeks went on bringing

occasional transient interviews with her, he thought that he perceived

in her an intensifying of her superficial hardness and resolute

display, which made her abrupt betrayals of agitation the more marked

and disturbing to him.

In fact, she was undergoing a sort of discipline for the refractory

which, as little as possible like conversion, bends half the self with

a terrible strain, and exasperates the unwillingness of the other half.

Grandcourt had an active divination rather than discernment of

refractoriness in her, and what had happened about Mirah quickened his

suspicion that there was an increase of it dependent on the occasions

when she happened to see Deronda: there was some "confounded nonsense"

between them: he did not imagine it exactly as flirtation, and his

imagination in other branches was rather restricted; but it was

nonsense that evidently kept up a kind of simmering in her mind--an

inward action which might become disagreeable outward. Husbands in the

old time are known to have suffered from a threatening devoutness in

their wives, presenting itself first indistinctly as oddity, and ending

in that mild form of lunatic asylum, a nunnery: Grandcourt had a vague

perception of threatening moods in Gwendolen which the unity between

them in his views of marriage required him peremptorily to check. Among

the means he chose, one was peculiar, and was less ably calculated than

the speeches we have just heard.

He determined that she should know the main purport of the will he was

making, but he could not communicate this himself, because it involved

the fact of his relation to Mrs. Glasher and her children; and that

there should be any overt recognition of this between Gwendolen and

himself was supremely repugnant to him. Like all proud, closely-wrapped

natures, he shrank from explicitness and detail, even on trivialities,

if they were personal: a valet must maintain a strict reserve with him

on the subject of shoes and stockings. And clashing was intolerable to

him; his habitual want was to put collision out of the question by the

quiet massive pressure of his rule. But he wished Gwendolen to know

that before he made her an offer it was no secret to him that she was

aware of his relations with Lydia, her previous knowledge being the

apology for bringing the subject before her now. Some men in his place

might have thought of writing what he wanted her to know, in the form

of a letter. But Grandcourt hated writing: even writing a note was a

bore to him, and he had long been accustomed to have all his writing

done by Lush. We know that there are persons who will forego their own

obvious interest rather than do anything so disagreeable as to write

letters; and it is not probable that these imperfect utilitarians would

rush into manuscript and syntax on a difficult subject in order to save

another's feelings. To Grandcourt it did not even occur that he should,

would, or could write to Gwendolen the information in question; and the

only medium of communication he could use was Lush, who, to his mind,

was as much of an implement as pen and paper. But here too Grandcourt

had his reserves, and would not have uttered a word likely to encourage

Lush in an impudent sympathy with any supposed grievance in a marriage

which had been discommended by him. Who that has a confidant escapes

believing too little in his penetration, and too much in his

discretion? Grandcourt had always allowed Lush to know his external

affairs indiscriminately--irregularities, debts, want of ready money;

he had only used discrimination about what he would allow his confidant

to say to him; and he had been so accustomed to this human tool, that

the having him at call in London was a recovery of lost ease. It

followed that Lush knew all the provisions of the will more exactly

than they were known to the testator himself.

Grandcourt did not doubt that Gwendolen, since she was a woman who

could put two and two together, knew or suspected Lush to be the

contriver of her interview with Lydia, and that this was the reason why

her first request was for his banishment. But the bent of a woman's

inferences on mixed subjects which excites mixed passions is not

determined by her capacity for simple addition; and here Grandcourt

lacked the only organ of thinking that could have saved him from

mistake--namely, some experience of the mixed passions concerned. He

had correctly divined one-half of Gwendolen's dread--all that related

to her personal pride, and her perception that his will must conquer

hers; but the remorseful half, even if he had known of her broken

promise, was as much out of his imagination as the other side of the

moon. What he believed her to feel about Lydia was solely a tongue-tied

jealousy, and what he believed Lydia to have written with the jewels

was the fact that she had once been used to wearing them, with other

amenities such as he imputed to the intercourse with jealous women. He

had the triumphant certainty that he could aggravate the jealousy and

yet smite it with a more absolute dumbness. His object was to engage

all his wife's egoism on the same side as his own, and in his

employment of Lush he did not intend an insult to her: she ought to

understand that he was the only possible envoy. Grandcourt's view of

things was considerably fenced in by his general sense, that what

suited him others must put up with. There is no escaping the fact that

want of sympathy condemns us to corresponding stupidity. Mephistopheles

thrown upon real life, and obliged to manage his own plots, would

inevitably make blunders.

One morning he went to Gwendolen in the boudoir beyond the back

drawing-room, hat and gloves in hand, and said with his best-tempered,

most persuasive drawl, standing before her and looking down on her as

she sat with a book on her lap--

"A--Gwendolen, there's some business about property to be explained. I

have told Lush to come and explain it to you. He knows all about these

things. I am going out. He can come up now. He's the only person who

can explain. I suppose you'll not mind."

"You know that I do mind," said Gwendolen, angrily, starting up. "I

shall not see him." She showed the intention to dart away to the door.

Grandcourt was before her, with his back toward it. He was prepared for

her anger, and showed none in return, saying, with the same sort of

remonstrant tone that he might have used about an objection to dining

out--

"It's no use making a fuss. There are plenty of brutes in the world

that one has to talk to. People with any \_savoir vivre\_ don't make a

fuss about such things. Some business must be done. You can't expect

agreeable people to do it. If I employ Lush, the proper thing for you

is to take it as a matter of course. Not to make a fuss about it. Not

to toss your head and bite your lips about people of that sort."

The drawling and the pauses with which this speech was uttered gave

time for crowding reflections in Gwendolen, quelling her resistance.

What was there to be told her about property? This word had certain

dominant associations for her, first with her mother, then with Mrs.

Glasher and her children. What would be the use if she refused to see

Lush? Could she ask Grandcourt to tell her himself? That might be

intolerable, even if he consented, which it was certain he would not,

if he had made up his mind to the contrary. The humiliation of standing

an obvious prisoner, with her husband barring the door, was not to be

borne any longer, and she turned away to lean against a cabinet, while

Grandcourt again moved toward her.

"I have arranged for Lush to come up now, while I am out," he said,

after a long organ stop, during which Gwendolen made no sign. "Shall I

tell him he may come?"

Yet another pause before she could say "Yes"--her face turned obliquely

and her eyes cast down.

"I shall come back in time to ride, if you like to get ready," said

Grandcourt. No answer. "She is in a desperate rage," thought he. But

the rage was silent, and therefore not disagreeable to him. It followed

that he turned her chin and kissed her, while she still kept her

eyelids down, and she did not move them until he was on the other side

of the door.

What was she to do? Search where she would in her consciousness, she

found no plea to justify a plaint. Any romantic illusions she had had

in marrying this man had turned on her power of using him as she liked.

He was using her as he liked.

She sat awaiting the announcement of Lush as a sort of searing

operation that she had to go through. The facts that galled her

gathered a burning power when she thought of their lying in his mind.

It was all a part of that new gambling, in which the losing was not

simply a \_minus\_, but a terrible \_plus\_ that had never entered into her

reckoning.

Lush was neither quite pleased nor quite displeased with his task.

Grandcourt had said to him by way of conclusion, "Don't make yourself

more disagreeable than nature obliges you."

"That depends," thought Lush. But he said, "I will write a brief

abstract for Mrs. Grandcourt to read." He did not suggest that he

should make the whole communication in writing, which was a proof that

the interview did not wholly displease him.

Some provision was being made for himself in the will, and he had no

reason to be in a bad humor, even if a bad humor had been common with

him. He was perfectly convinced that he had penetrated all the secrets

of the situation; but he had no diabolical delight in it. He had only

the small movements of gratified self-loving resentment in discerning

that this marriage had fulfilled his own foresight in not being as

satisfactory as the supercilious young lady had expected it to be, and

as Grandcourt wished to feign that it was. He had no persistent spite

much stronger than what gives the seasoning of ordinary scandal to

those who repeat it and exaggerate it by their conjectures. With no

active compassion or good-will, he had just as little active

malevolence, being chiefly occupied in liking his particular pleasures,

and not disliking anything but what hindered those

pleasures--everything else ranking with the last murder and the last

\_opÃ©ra bouffe\_, under the head of things to talk about. Nevertheless,

he was not indifferent to the prospect of being treated uncivilly by a

beautiful woman, or to the counter-balancing fact that his present

commission put into his hands an official power of humiliating her. He

did not mean to use it needlessly; but there are some persons so gifted

in relation to us that their "How do you do?" seems charged with

offense.

By the time that Mr. Lush was announced, Gwendolen had braced herself

to a bitter resolve that he should not witness the slightest betrayal

of her feeling, whatever he might have to tell. She invited him to sit

down with stately quietude. After all, what was this man to her? He was

not in the least like her husband. Her power of hating a coarse,

familiar-mannered man, with clumsy hands, was now relaxed by the

intensity with which she hated his contrast.

He held a small paper folded in his hand while he spoke.

"I need hardly say that I should not have presented myself if Mr.

Grandcourt had not expressed a strong wish to that effect--as no doubt

he has mentioned to you."

From some voices that speech might have sounded entirely reverential,

and even timidly apologetic. Lush had no intention to the contrary, but

to Gwendolen's ear his words had as much insolence in them as his

prominent eyes, and the pronoun "you" was too familiar. He ought to

have addressed the folding-screen, and spoke of her as Mrs. Grandcourt.

She gave the smallest sign of a bow, and Lush went on, with a little

awkwardness, getting entangled in what is elegantly called tautology.

"My having been in Mr. Grandcourt's confidence for fifteen years or

more--since he was a youth, in fact--of course gives me a peculiar

position. He can speak to me of affairs that he could not mention to

any one else; and, in fact, he could not have employed any one else in

this affair. I have accepted the task out of friendship for him. Which

is my apology for accepting the task--if you would have preferred some

one else."

He paused, but she made no sign, and Lush, to give himself a

countenance in an apology which met no acceptance, opened the folded

paper, and looked at it vaguely before he began to speak again.

"This paper contains some information about Mr. Grandcourt's will, an

abstract of a part he wished you to know--if you'll be good enough to

cast your eyes over it. But there is something I had to say by way of

introduction--which I hope you'll pardon me for, if it's not quite

agreeable." Lush found that he was behaving better than he had

expected, and had no idea how insulting he made himself with his "not

quite agreeable."

"Say what you have to say without apologizing, please," said Gwendolen,

with the air she might have bestowed on a dog-stealer come to claim a

reward for finding the dog he had stolen.

"I have only to remind you of something that occurred before your

engagement to Mr. Grandcourt," said Lush, not without the rise of some

willing insolence in exchange for her scorn. "You met a lady in Cardell

Chase, if you remember, who spoke to you of her position with regard to

Mr. Grandcourt. She had children with her--one a very fine boy."

Gwendolen's lips were almost as pale as her cheeks; her passion had no

weapons--words were no better than chips. This man's speech was like a

sharp knife-edge drawn across her skin: but even her indignation at the

employment of Lush was getting merged in a crowd of other feelings, dim

and alarming as a crowd of ghosts.

"Mr. Grandcourt was aware that you were acquainted with this

unfortunate affair beforehand, and he thinks it only right that his

position and intentions should be made quite clear to you. It is an

affair of property and prospects; and if there were any objection you

had to make, if you would mention it to me--it is a subject which of

course he would rather not speak about himself--if you will be good

enough just to read this." With the last words Lush rose and presented

the paper to her.

When Gwendolen resolved that she would betray no feeling in the

presence of this man, she had not prepared herself to hear that her

husband knew the silent consciousness, the silently accepted terms on

which she had married him. She dared not raise her hand to take the

paper, least it should visibly tremble. For a moment Lush stood holding

it toward her, and she felt his gaze on her as ignominy, before she

could say even with low-toned haughtiness--

"Lay it on the table. And go into the next room, please."

Lush obeyed, thinking as he took an easy-chair in the back

drawing-room, "My lady winces considerably. She didn't know what would

be the charge for that superfine article, Henleigh Grandcourt." But it

seemed to him that a penniless girl had done better than she had any

right to expect, and that she had been uncommonly knowing for her years

and opportunities: her words to Lydia meant nothing, and her running

away had probably been part of her adroitness. It had turned out a

master-stroke.

Meanwhile Gwendolen was rallying her nerves to the reading of the

paper. She must read it. Her whole being--pride, longing for rebellion,

dreams of freedom, remorseful conscience, dread of fresh

visitation--all made one need to know what the paper contained. But at

first it was not easy to take in the meaning of the words. When she had

succeeded, she found that in the case of there being no son as issue of

her marriage, Grandcourt had made the small Henleigh his heir; that was

all she cared to extract from the paper with any distinctness. The

other statement as to what provision would be made for her in the same

case, she hurried over, getting only a confused perception of thousands

and Gadsmere. It was enough. She could dismiss the man in the next room

with the defiant energy which had revived in her at the idea that this

question of property and inheritance was meant as a finish to her

humiliations and her thraldom.

She thrust the paper between the leaves of her book, which she took in

her hand, and walked with her stateliest air into the next room, where

Lush immediately arose, awaiting her approach. When she was four yards

from him, it was hardly an instant that she paused to say in a high

tone, while she swept him with her eyelashes--

"Tell Mr. Grandcourt that his arrangements are just what I

desired"--passing on without haste, and leaving Lush time to mingle

some admiration of her graceful back with that half-amused sense of her

spirit and impertinence, which he expressed by raising his eyebrows and

just thrusting his tongue between his teeth. He really did not want her

to be worse punished, and he was glad to think that it was time to go

and lunch at the club, where he meant to have a lobster salad.

What did Gwendolen look forward to? When her husband returned he found

her equipped in her riding-dress, ready to ride out with him. She was

not again going to be hysterical, or take to her bed and say she was

ill. That was the implicit resolve adjusting her muscles before she

could have framed it in words, as she walked out of the room, leaving

Lush behind her. She was going to act in the spirit of her message, and

not to give herself time to reflect. She rang the bell for her maid,

and went with the usual care through her change of toilet. Doubtless

her husband had meant to produce a great effect on her: by-and-by

perhaps she would let him see an effect the very opposite of what he

intended; but at present all that she could show was a defiant

satisfaction in what had been presumed to be disagreeable. It came as

an instinct rather than a thought, that to show any sign which could be

interpreted as jealousy, when she had just been insultingly reminded

that the conditions were what she had accepted with her eyes open,

would be the worst self-humiliation. She said to herself that she had

not time to-day to be clear about her future actions; all she could be

clear about was that she would match her husband in ignoring any ground

for excitement. She not only rode, but went out with him to dine,

contributing nothing to alter their mutual manner, which was never that

of rapid interchange in discourse; and curiously enough she rejected a

handkerchief on which her maid had by mistake put the wrong scent--a

scent that Grandcourt had once objected to. Gwendolen would not have

liked to be an object of disgust to this husband whom she hated: she

liked all disgust to be on her side.

But to defer thought in this way was something like trying to talk

without singing in her own ears. The thought that is bound up with our

passion is as penetrative as air--everything is porous to it; bows,

smiles, conversation, repartee, are mere honeycombs where such thoughts

rushes freely, not always with a taste of honey. And without shutting

herself up in any solitude, Gwendolen seemed at the end of nine or ten

hours to have gone through a labyrinth of reflection, in which already

the same succession of prospects had been repeated, the same fallacious

outlets rejected, the same shrinking from the necessities of every

course. Already she was undergoing some hardening effect from feeling

that she was under eyes which saw her past actions solely in the light

of her lowest motives. She lived back in the scenes of her courtship,

with the new bitter consciousness of what had been in Grandcourt's

mind--certain now, with her present experience of him, that he had a

peculiar triumph in conquering her dumb repugnance, and that ever since

their marriage he had had a cold exultation in knowing her fancied

secret. Her imagination exaggerated every tyrannical impulse he was

capable of. "I will insist on being separated from him"--was her first

darting determination; then, "I will leave him whether he consents or

not. If this boy becomes his heir, I have made an atonement." But

neither in darkness nor in daylight could she imagine the scenes which

must carry out those determinations with the courage to feel them

endurable. How could she run away to her own family--carry distress

among them, and render herself an object of scandal in the society she

had left behind her? What future lay before her as Mrs. Grandcourt gone

back to her mother, who would be made destitute again by the rupture of

the marriage for which one chief excuse had been that it had brought

that mother a maintenance? She had lately been seeing her uncle and

Anna in London, and though she had been saved from any difficulty about

inviting them to stay in Grosvenor Square by their wish to be with Rex,

who would not risk a meeting with her, the transient visit she had had

from them helped now in giving stronger color to the picture of what it

would be for her to take refuge in her own family. What could she say

to justify her flight? Her uncle would tell her to go back. Her mother

would cry. Her aunt and Anna would look at her with wondering alarm.

Her husband would have power to compel her. She had absolutely nothing

that she could allege against him in judicious or judicial ears. And to

"insist on separation!" That was an easy combination of words; but

considered as an action to be executed against Grandcourt, it would be

about as practicable as to give him a pliant disposition and a dread of

other people's unwillingness. How was she to begin? What was she to say

that would not be a condemnation of herself? "If I am to have misery

anyhow," was the bitter refrain of her rebellious dreams, "I had better

have the misery that I can keep to myself." Moreover, her capability of

rectitude told her again and again that she had no right to complain of

her contract, or to withdraw from it.

And always among the images that drove her back to submission was

Deronda. The idea of herself separated from her husband, gave Deronda a

changed, perturbing, painful place in her consciousness: instinctively

she felt that the separation would be from him too, and in the

prospective vision of herself as a solitary, dubiously-regarded woman,

she felt some tingling bashfulness at the remembrance of her behavior

towards him. The association of Deronda with a dubious position for

herself was intolerable. And what would he say if he knew everything?

Probably that she ought to bear what she had brought on herself, unless

she were sure that she could make herself a better woman by taking any

other course. And what sort of woman was she to be--solitary, sickened

of life, looked at with a suspicious kind of pity?--even if she could

dream of success in getting that dreary freedom. Mrs. Grandcourt "run

away" would be a more pitiable creature than Gwendolen Harleth

condemned to teach the bishop's daughters, and to be inspected by Mrs.

Mompert.

One characteristic trait in her conduct is worth mentioning. She would

not look a second time at the paper Lush had given her; and before

ringing for her maid she locked it up in a traveling-desk which was at

hand, proudly resolved against curiosity about what was allotted to

herself in connection with Gadsmere--feeling herself branded in the

minds of her husband and his confidant with the meanness that would

accept marriage and wealth on any conditions, however dishonorable and

humiliating.

Day after day the same pattern of thinking was repeated. There came

nothing to change the situation--no new elements in the sketch--only a

recurrence which engraved it. The May weeks went on into June, and

still Mrs. Grandcourt was outwardly in the same place, presenting

herself as she was expected to do in the accustomed scenes, with the

accustomed grace, beauty, and costume; from church at one end of the

week, through all the scale of desirable receptions, to opera at the

other. Church was not markedly distinguished in her mind from the other

forms of self-presentation, for marriage had included no instruction

that enabled her to connect liturgy and sermon with any larger order of

the world than that of unexplained and perhaps inexplicable social

fashions. While a laudable zeal was laboring to carry the light of

spiritual law up the alleys where law is chiefly known as the

policeman, the brilliant Mrs. Grandcourt, condescending a little to a

fashionable rector and conscious of a feminine advantage over a learned

dean, was, so far as pastoral care and religious fellowship were

concerned, in as complete a solitude as a man in a lighthouse.

Can we wonder at the practical submission which hid her constructive

rebellion? The combination is common enough, as we know from the number

of persons who make us aware of it in their own case by a clamorous

unwearied statement of the reasons against their submitting to a

situation which, on inquiry, we discover to be the least disagreeable

within their reach. Poor Gwendolen had both too much and too little

mental power and dignity to make herself exceptional. No wonder that

Deronda now marked some hardening in a look and manner which were

schooled daily to the suppression of feeling.

For example. One morning, riding in Rotten Row with Grandcourt by her

side, she saw standing against the railing at the turn, just facing

them, a dark-eyed lady with a little girl and a blonde boy, whom she at

once recognized as the beings in all the world the most painful for her

to behold. She and Grandcourt had just slackened their pace to a walk;

he being on the outer side was the nearer to the unwelcome vision, and

Gwendolen had not presence of mind to do anything but glance away from

the dark eyes that met hers piercingly toward Grandcourt, who wheeled

past the group with an unmoved face, giving no sign of recognition.

Immediately she felt a rising rage against him mingling with her shame

for herself, and the words, "You might at least have raised your hat to

her," flew impetuously to her lips--but did not pass them. If as her

husband, in her company, he chose to ignore these creatures whom she

herself had excluded from the place she was filling, how could she be

the person to reproach him? She was dumb.

It was not chance, but her own design, that had brought Mrs. Glasher

there with her boy. She had come to town under the pretext of making

purchases--really wanting educational apparatus for her children, and

had had interviews with Lush in which she had not refused to soothe her

uneasy mind by representing the probabilities as all on the side of her

ultimate triumph. Let her keep quiet, and she might live to see the

marriage dissolve itself in one way or other--Lush hinted at several

ways--leaving the succession assured to her boy. She had had an

interview with Grandcourt, too, who had as usual told her to behave

like a reasonable woman, and threatened punishment if she were

troublesome; but had, also as usual, vindicated himself from any wish

to be stingy, the money he was receiving from Sir Hugo on account of

Diplow encouraging him to be lavish. Lydia, feeding on the

probabilities in her favor, devoured her helpless wrath along with that

pleasanter nourishment; but she could not let her discretion go

entirely without the reward of making a Medusa-apparition before

Gwendolen, vindictiveness and jealousy finding relief in an outlet of

venom, though it were as futile as that of a viper already flung on the

other side of the hedge. Hence, each day, after finding out from Lush

the likely time for Gwendolen to be riding, she had watched at that

post, daring Grandcourt so far. Why should she not take little Henleigh

into the Park?

The Medusa-apparition was made effective beyond Lydia's conception by

the shock it gave Gwendolen actually to see Grandcourt ignoring this

woman who had once been the nearest in the world to him, along with the

children she had borne him. And all the while the dark shadow thus cast

on the lot of a woman destitute of acknowledged social dignity, spread

itself over her visions of a future that might be her own, and made

part of her dread on her own behalf. She shrank all the more from any

lonely action. What possible release could there be for her from this

hated vantage ground, which yet she dared not quit, any more than if

fire had been raining outside it? What release, but death? Not her own

death. Gwendolen was not a woman who could easily think of her own

death as a near reality, or front for herself the dark entrance on the

untried and invisible. It seemed more possible that Grandcourt should

die:--and yet not likely. The power of tyranny in him seemed a power of

living in the presence of any wish that he should die. The thought that

his death was the only possible deliverance for her was one with the

thought that deliverance would never come--the double deliverance from

the injury with which other beings might reproach her and from the yoke

she had brought on her own neck. No! she foresaw him always living, and

her own life dominated by him; the "always" of her young experience not

stretching beyond the few immediate years that seemed immeasurably long

with her passionate weariness. The thought of his dying would not

subsist: it turned as with a dream-change into the terror that she

should die with his throttling fingers on her neck avenging that

thought. Fantasies moved within her like ghosts, making no break in her

more acknowledged consciousness and finding no obstruction in it: dark

rays doing their work invisibly in the broad light.

Only an evening or two after that encounter in the Park, there was a

grand concert at Klesmer's, who was living rather magnificently now in

one of the large houses in Grosvenor Place, a patron and prince among

musical professors. Gwendolen had looked forward to this occasion as

one on which she was sure to meet Deronda, and she had been meditating

how to put a question to him which, without containing a word that she

would feel a dislike to utter, would yet be explicit enough for him to

understand it. The struggle of opposite feelings would not let her

abide by her instinct that the very idea of Deronda's relation to her

was a discouragement to any desperate step towards freedom. The next

wave of emotion was a longing for some word of his to enforce a

resolve. The fact that her opportunities of conversation with him had

always to be snatched in the doubtful privacy of large parties, caused

her to live through them many times beforehand, imagining how they

would take place and what she would say. The irritation was

proportionate when no opportunity came; and this evening at Klesmer's

she included Deronda in her anger, because he looked as calm as

possible at a distance from her, while she was in danger of betraying

her impatience to every one who spoke to her. She found her only safety

in a chill haughtiness which made Mr. Vandernoodt remark that Mrs.

Grandcourt was becoming a perfect match for her husband. When at last

the chances of the evening brought Deronda near her, Sir Hugo and Mrs.

Raymond were close by and could hear every word she said. No matter:

her husband was not near, and her irritation passed without check into

a fit of daring which restored the security of her self-possession.

Deronda was there at last, and she would compel him to do what she

pleased. Already and without effort rather queenly in her air as she

stood in her white lace and green leaves she threw a royal

permissiveness into her way of saying, "I wish you would come and see

me to-morrow between five and six, Mr. Deronda."

There could be but one answer at that moment: "Certainly," with a tone

of obedience.

Afterward it occurred to Deronda that he would write a note to excuse

himself. He had always avoided making a call at Grandcourt's. He could

not persuade himself to any step that might hurt her, and whether his

excuse were taken for indifference or for the affectation of

indifference it would be equally wounding. He kept his promise.

Gwendolen had declined to ride out on the plea of not feeling well

enough having left her refusal to the last moment when the horses were

soon to be at the door--not without alarm lest her husband should say

that he too would stay at home. Become almost superstitious about his

power of suspicious divination, she had a glancing forethought of what

she would do in that case--namely, have herself denied as not well. But

Grandcourt accepted her excuse without remark, and rode off.

Nevertheless when Gwendolen found herself alone, and had sent down the

order that only Mr. Deronda was to be admitted, she began to be alarmed

at what she had done, and to feel a growing agitation in the thought

that he would soon appear, and she should soon be obliged to speak: not

of trivialities, as if she had no serious motive in asking him to come:

and yet what she had been for hours determining to say began to seem

impossible. For the first time the impulse of appeal to him was being

checked by timidity, and now that it was too late she was shaken by the

possibility that he might think her invitation unbecoming. If so, she

would have sunk in his esteem. But immediately she resisted this

intolerable fear as an infection from her husband's way of thinking.

That \_he\_ would say she was making a fool of herself was rather a

reason why such a judgment would be remote from Deronda's mind. But

that she could not rid herself from this sudden invasion of womanly

reticence was manifest in a kind of action which had never occurred to

her before. In her struggle between agitation and the effort to

suppress it, she was walking up and down the length of the two

drawing-rooms, where at one end a long mirror reflected her in her

black dress, chosen in the early morning with a half-admitted reference

to this hour. But above this black dress her head on its white pillar

of a neck showed to advantage. Some consciousness of this made her turn

hastily and hurry to the boudoir, where again there was a glass, but

also, tossed over a chair, a large piece of black lace which she

snatched and tied over her crown of hair so as completely to conceal

her neck, and leave only her face looking out from the black frame. In

this manifest contempt of appearance, she thought it possible to be

freer from nervousness, but the black lace did not take away the

uneasiness from her eyes and lips.

She was standing in the middle of the room when Deronda was announced,

and as he approached her she perceived that he too for some reason was

not his usual self. She could not have defined the change except by

saying that he looked less happy than usual, and appeared to be under

some effort in speaking to her. And yet the speaking was the slightest

possible. They both said, "How do you do?" quite curtly; and Gwendolen,

instead of sitting down, moved to a little distance, resting her arms

slightly on the tall back of a chair, while Deronda stood where he

was,--both feeling it difficult to say any more, though the

preoccupation in his mind could hardly have been more remote than it

was from Gwendolen's conception. She naturally saw in his embarrassment

some reflection of her own. Forced to speak, she found all her training

in concealment and self-command of no use to her and began with timid

awkwardness--

"You will wonder why I begged you to come. I wanted to ask you

something. You said I was ignorant. That is true. And what can I do but

ask you?"

And at this moment she was feeling it utterly impossible to put the

questions she had intended. Something new in her nervous manner roused

Deronda's anxiety lest there might be a new crisis. He said with the

sadness of affection in his voice--

"My only regret is, that I can be of so little use to you." The words

and the tone touched a new spring in her, and she went on with more

sense of freedom, yet still not saying anything she had designed to

say, and beginning to hurry, that she might somehow arrive at the right

words.

"I wanted to tell you that I have always been thinking of your advice,

but is it any use?--I can't make myself different, because things about

me raise bad feelings--and I must go on--I can alter nothing--it is no

use."

She paused an instant, with the consciousness that she was not finding

the right words, but began again hurriedly, "But if I go on I shall get

worse. I want not to get worse. I should like to be what you wish.

There are people who are good and enjoy great things--I know there are.

I am a contemptible creature. I feel as if I should get wicked with

hating people. I have tried to think that I would go away from

everybody. But I can't. There are so many things to hinder me. You

think, perhaps, that I don't mind. But I do mind. I am afraid of

everything. I am afraid of getting wicked. Tell me what I can do."

She had forgotten everything but that image of her helpless misery

which she was trying to make present to Deronda in broken allusive

speech--wishing to convey but not express all her need. Her eyes were

tearless, and had a look of smarting in their dilated brilliancy; there

was a subdued sob in her voice which was more and more veiled, till it

was hardly above a whisper. She was hurting herself with the jewels

that glittered on her tightly-clasped fingers pressed against her heart.

The feeling Deronda endured in these moments he afterward called

horrible. Words seemed to have no more rescue in them than if he had

been beholding a vessel in peril of wreck--the poor ship with its

many-lived anguish beaten by the inescapable storm. How could he grasp

the long-growing process of this young creature's wretchedness?--how

arrest and change it with a sentence? He was afraid of his own voice.

The words that rushed into his mind seemed in their feebleness nothing

better than despair made audible, or than that insensibility to

another's hardship which applies precept to soothe pain. He felt

himself holding a crowd of words imprisoned within his lips, as if the

letting them escape would be a violation of awe before the mysteries of

our human lot. The thought that urged itself foremost was--"Confess

everything to your husband; have nothing concealed:"--the words carried

in his mind a vision of reasons which would have needed much fuller

expressions for Gwendolen to apprehend them, but before he had begun

those brief sentences, the door opened and the husband entered.

Grandcourt had deliberately gone out and turned back to satisfy a

suspicion. What he saw was Gwendolen's face of anguish framed black

like a nun's, and Deronda standing three yards from her with a look of

sorrow such as he might have bent on the last struggle of life in a

beloved object. Without any show of surprise Grandcourt nodded to

Deronda, gave a second look at Gwendolen, passed on, and seated himself

easily at a little distance crossing his legs, taking out his

handkerchief and trifling with it elegantly.

Gwendolen had shrunk and changed her attitude on seeing him, but she

did not turn or move from her place. It was not a moment in which she

could feign anything, or manifest any strong revulsion of feeling: the

passionate movement of her last speech was still too strong within her.

What she felt beside was a dull despairing sense that her interview

with Deronda was at an end: a curtain had fallen. But he, naturally,

was urged into self-possession and effort by susceptibility to what

might follow for her from being seen by her husband in this betrayal of

agitation; and feeling that any pretence of ease in prolonging his

visit would only exaggerate Grandcourt's possible conjectures of

duplicity, he merely said--

"I will not stay longer now. Good bye."

He put out his hand, and she let him press her poor little chill

fingers; but she said no good-bye.

When he had left the room, Gwendolen threw herself into a seat, with an

expectation as dull as her despair--the expectation that she was going

to be punished. But Grandcourt took no notice: he was satisfied to have

let her know that she had not deceived him, and to keep a silence which

was formidable with omniscience. He went out that evening, and her plea

of feeling ill was accepted without even a sneer.

The next morning at breakfast he said, "I am going yachting to the

Mediterranean."

"When?" said Gwendolen, with a leap of heart which had hope in it.

"The day after to-morrow. The yacht is at Marseilles. Lush is gone to

get everything ready."

"Shall I have mamma to stay with me, then?" said Gwendolen, the new

sudden possibility of peace and affection filling her mind like a burst

of morning light.

"No; you will go with me."

CHAPTER XLIX.

Ever in his soul

That larger justice which makes gratitude

Triumphed above resentment. 'Tis the mark

Of regal natures, with the wider life.

And fuller capability of joy:--

Not wits exultant in the strongest lens

To show you goodness vanished into pulp

Never worth "thank you"--they're the devil's friars,

Vowed to be poor as he in love and trust,

Yet must go begging of a world that keeps

Some human property.

Deronda, in parting from Gwendolen, had abstained from saying, "I shall

not see you again for a long while: I am going away," lest Grandcourt

should understand him to imply that the fact was of importance to her.

He was actually going away under circumstances so momentous to himself

that when he set out to fulfill his promise of calling on her, he was

already under the shadow of a solemn emotion which revived the deepest

experience of his life.

Sir Hugo had sent for him to his chambers with the note--"Come

immediately. Something has happened:" a preparation that caused him

some relief when, on entering the baronet's study, he was received with

grave affection instead of the distress which he had apprehended.

"It is nothing to grieve you, sir?" said Deronda, in a tone rather of

restored confidence than question, as he took the hand held out to him.

There was an unusual meaning in Sir Hugo's look, and a subdued emotion

in his voice, as he said--

"No, Dan, no. Sit down. I have something to say."

Deronda obeyed, not without presentiment. It was extremely rare for Sir

Hugo to show so much serious feeling.

"Not to grieve me, my boy, no. At least, if there is nothing in it that

will grieve you too much. But I hardly expected that this--just

this--would ever happen. There have been reasons why I have never

prepared you for it. There have been reasons why I have never told you

anything about your parentage. But I have striven in every way not to

make that an injury to you."

Sir Hugo paused, but Deronda could not speak. He could not say, "I have

never felt it an injury." Even if that had been true, he could not have

trusted his voice to say anything. Far more than any one but himself

could know of was hanging on this moment when the secrecy was to be

broken. Sir Hugo had never seen the grand face he delighted in so

pale--the lips pressed together with such a look of pain. He went on

with a more anxious tenderness, as if he had a new fear of wounding.

"I have acted in obedience to your mother's wishes. The secrecy was her

wish. But now she desires to remove it. She desires to see you. I will

put this letter into your hands, which you can look at by-and-by. It

will merely tell you what she wishes you to do, and where you will find

her."

Sir Hugo held out a letter written on foreign paper, which Deronda

thrust into his breast-pocket, with a sense of relief that he was not

called on to read anything immediately. The emotion on Daniel's face

had gained on the baronet, and was visibly shaking his composure. Sir

Hugo found it difficult to say more. And Deronda's whole soul was

possessed by a question which was the hardest in the world to utter.

Yet he could not bear to delay it. This was a sacramental moment. If he

let it pass, he could not recover the influences under which it was

possible to utter the words and meet the answer. For some moments his

eyes were cast down, and it seemed to both as if thoughts were in the

air between them. But at last Deronda looked at Sir Hugo, and said,

with a tremulous reverence in his voice--dreading to convey indirectly

the reproach that affection had for years been stifling--

"Is my father also living?"

The answer came immediately in a low emphatic tone--"No."

In the mingled emotions which followed that answer it was impossible to

distinguish joy from pain.

Some new light had fallen on the past for Sir Hugo too in this

interview. After a silence in which Deronda felt like one whose creed

is gone before he has religiously embraced another, the baronet said,

in a tone of confession--

"Perhaps I was wrong, Dan, to undertake what I did. And perhaps I liked

it a little too well--having you all to myself. But if you have had any

pain which I might have helped, I ask you to forgive me."

"The forgiveness has long been there," said Deronda "The chief pain has

always been on account of some one else--whom I never knew--whom I am

now to know. It has not hindered me from feeling an affection for you

which has made a large part of all the life I remember."

It seemed one impulse that made the two men clasp each other's hand for

a moment.

BOOK VII.--THE MOTHER AND THE SON

CHAPTER L.

"If some mortal, born too soon,

Were laid away in some great trance--the ages

Coming and going all the while--till dawned

His true time's advent; and could then record

The words they spoke who kept watch by his bed,

Then I might tell more of the breath so light

Upon my eyelids, and the fingers warm

Among my hair. Youth is confused; yet never

So dull was I but, when that spirit passed,

I turned to him, scarce consciously, as turns

A water-snake when fairies cross his sleep."

--BROWNING: \_Paracelsus\_.

This was the letter which Sir Hugo put into Deronda's hands:--

TO MY SON, DANIEL DERONDA.

My good friend and yours, Sir Hugo Mallinger, will have told you that

I wish to see you. My health is shaken, and I desire there should be

no time lost before I deliver to you what I have long withheld. Let

nothing hinder you from being at the \_Albergo dell' Italia\_ in

Genoa by the fourteenth of this month. Wait for me there. I am

uncertain when I shall be able to make the journey from Spezia, where

I shall be staying. That will depend on several things. Wait for

me--the Princess Halm-Eberstein. Bring with you the diamond ring that

Sir Hugo gave you. I shall like to see it again.--Your unknown mother,

LEONORA HALM-EBERSTEIN.

This letter with its colorless wording gave Deronda no clue to what was

in reserve for him; but he could not do otherwise than accept Sir

Hugo's reticence, which seemed to imply some pledge not to anticipate

the mother's disclosures; and the discovery that his life-long

conjectures had been mistaken checked further surmise. Deronda could

not hinder his imagination from taking a quick flight over what seemed

possibilities, but he refused to contemplate any of them as more likely

than another, lest he should be nursing it into a dominant desire or

repugnance, instead of simply preparing himself with resolve to meet

the fact bravely, whatever it might turn out to be.

In this state of mind he could not have communicated to any one the

reason for the absence which in some quarters he was obliged to mention

beforehand, least of all to Mordecai, whom it would affect as

powerfully as it did himself, only in rather a different way. If he

were to say, "I am going to learn the truth about my birth," Mordecai's

hope would gather what might prove a painful, dangerous excitement. To

exclude suppositions, he spoke of his journey as being undertaken by

Sir Hugo's wish, and threw as much indifference as he could into his

manner of announcing it, saying he was uncertain of its duration, but

it would perhaps be very short.

"I will ask to have the child Jacob to stay with me," said Mordecai,

comforting himself in this way, after the first mournful glances.

"I will drive round and ask Mrs. Cohen to let him come," said Mirah.

"The grandmother will deny you nothing," said Deronda. "I'm glad you

were a little wrong as well as I," he added, smiling at Mordecai. "You

thought that old Mrs. Cohen would not bear to see Mirah."

"I undervalued her heart," said Mordecai. "She is capable of rejoicing

that another's plant blooms though her own be withered."

"Oh, they are dear good people; I feel as if we all belonged to each

other," said Mirah, with a tinge of merriment in her smile.

"What should you have felt if that Ezra had been your brother?" said

Deronda, mischievously--a little provoked that she had taken kindly at

once to people who had caused him so much prospective annoyance on her

account.

Mirah looked at him with a slight surprise for a moment, and then said,

"He is not a bad man--I think he would never forsake any one." But when

she uttered the words she blushed deeply, and glancing timidly at

Mordecai, turned away to some occupation. Her father was in her mind,

and this was a subject on which she and her brother had a painful

mutual consciousness. "If he should come and find us!" was a thought

which to Mirah sometimes made the street daylight as shadowy as a

haunted forest where each turn screened for her an imaginary apparition.

Deronda felt what was her involuntary allusion, and understood the

blush. How could he be slow to understand feelings which now seemed

nearer than ever to his own? for the words of his mother's letter

implied that his filial relation was not to be freed from painful

conditions; indeed, singularly enough that letter which had brought his

mother nearer as a living reality had thrown her into more remoteness

for his affections. The tender yearning after a being whose life might

have been the worse for not having his care and love, the image of a

mother who had not had all her dues, whether of reverence or

compassion, had long been secretly present with him in his observation

of all the women he had come near. But it seemed now that this

picturing of his mother might fit the facts no better than his former

conceptions about Sir Hugo. He wondered to find that when this mother's

very hand-writing had come to him with words holding her actual

feeling, his affections had suddenly shrunk into a state of comparative

neutrality toward her. A veiled figure with enigmatic speech had thrust

away that image which, in spite of uncertainty, his clinging thought

had gradually modeled and made the possessor of his tenderness and

duteous longing. When he set off to Genoa, the interest really

uppermost in his mind had hardly so much relation to his mother as to

Mordecai and Mirah.

"God bless you, Dan!" Sir Hugo had said, when they shook hands.

"Whatever else changes for you, it can't change my being the oldest

friend you have known, and the one who has all along felt the most for

you. I couldn't have loved you better if you'd been my own-only I

should have been better pleased with thinking of you always as the

future master of the Abbey instead of my fine nephew; and then you

would have seen it necessary for you to take a political line.

However--things must be as they may." It was a defensive movement of

the baronet's to mingle purposeless remarks with the expression of

serious feeling.

When Deronda arrived at the \_Italia\_ in Genoa, no Princess

Halm-Eberstein was there; but on the second day there was a letter for

him, saying that her arrival might happen within a week, or might be

deferred a fortnight and more; she was under circumstances which made

it impossible for her to fix her journey more precisely, and she

entreated him to wait as patiently as he could.

With this indefinite prospect of suspense on matters of supreme moment

to him, Deronda set about the difficult task of seeking amusement on

philosophic grounds, as a means of quieting excited feeling and giving

patience a lift over a weary road. His former visit to the superb city

had been only cursory, and left him much to learn beyond the prescribed

round of sight-seeing, by spending the cooler hours in observant

wandering about the streets, the quay, and the environs; and he often

took a boat that he might enjoy the magnificent view of the city and

harbor from the sea. All sights, all subjects, even the expected

meeting with his mother, found a central union in Mordecai and Mirah,

and the ideas immediately associated with them; and among the thoughts

that most filled his mind while his boat was pushing about within view

of the grand harbor was that of the multitudinous Spanish Jews

centuries ago driven destitute from their Spanish homes, suffered to

land from the crowded ships only for a brief rest on this grand quay of

Genoa, overspreading it with a pall of famine and plague--dying mothers

and dying children at their breasts--fathers and sons a-gaze at each

other's haggardness, like groups from a hundred Hunger-towers turned

out beneath the midday sun. Inevitably dreamy constructions of a

possible ancestry for himself would weave themselves with historic

memories which had begun to have a new interest for him on his

discovery of Mirah, and now, under the influence of Mordecai, had

become irresistibly dominant. He would have sealed his mind against

such constructions if it had been possible, and he had never yet fully

admitted to himself that he wished the facts to verify Mordecai's

conviction: he inwardly repeated that he had no choice in the matter,

and that wishing was folly--nay, on the question of parentage, wishing

seemed part of that meanness which disowns kinship: it was a disowning

by anticipation. What he had to do was simply to accept the fact; and

he had really no strong presumption to go upon, now that he was assured

of his mistake about Sir Hugo. There had been a resolved concealment

which made all inference untrustworthy, and the very name he bore might

be a false one. If Mordecai was wrong--if he, the so-called Daniel

Deronda, were held by ties entirely aloof from any such course as his

friend's pathetic hope had marked out?--he would not say "I wish"; but

he could not help feeling on which side the sacrifice lay.

Across these two importunate thoughts, which he resisted as much as one

can resist anything in that unstrung condition which belongs to

suspense, there came continually an anxiety which he made no effort to

banish--dwelling on it rather with a mournfulness, which often seems to

us the best atonement we can make to one whose need we have been unable

to meet. The anxiety was for Gwendolen. In the wonderful mixtures of

our nature there is a feeling distinct from that exclusive passionate

love of which some men and women (by no means all) are capable, which

yet is not the same with friendship, nor with a merely benevolent

regard, whether admiring or compassionate: a man, say--for it is a man

who is here concerned--hardly represents to himself this shade of

feeling toward a woman more nearly than in words, "I should have loved

her, if----": the "if" covering some prior growth in the inclinations,

or else some circumstances which have made an inward prohibitory law as

a stay against the emotions ready to quiver out of balance. The "if" in

Deronda's case carried reasons of both kinds; yet he had never

throughout his relations with Gwendolen been free from the nervous

consciousness that there was something to guard against not only on her

account but on his own--some precipitancy in the manifestations of

impulsive feeling--some ruinous inroad of what is but momentary on the

permanent chosen treasure of the heart--some spoiling of her trust,

which wrought upon him now as if it had been the retreating cry of a

creature snatched and carried out of his reach by swift horsemen or

swifter waves, while his own strength was only a stronger sense of

weakness. How could his feelings for Gwendolen ever be exactly like his

feelings for other women, even when there was one by whose side he

desired to stand apart from them? Strangely the figure entered into the

pictures of his present and future; strangely (and now it seemed sadly)

their two lots had come in contact, hers narrowly personal, his charged

with far-reaching sensibilities, perhaps with durable purposes, which

were hardly more present to her than the reasons why men migrate are

present to the birds that come as usual for the crumbs and find them no

more. Not that Deronda was too ready to imagine himself of supreme

importance to a woman; but her words of insistance that he must "remain

near her--must not forsake her"--continually recurred to him with the

clearness and importunity of imagined sounds, such as Dante has said

pierce us like arrows whose points carry the sharpness of pity--

"Lamenti saettaron me diversi

CÃ  che di piefermti avean gli strali?"

Day after day passed, and the very air of Italy seemed to carry the

consciousness that war had been declared against Austria, and every day

was a hurrying march of crowded Time toward the world-changing battle

of Sadowa. Meanwhile, in Genoa, the noons were getting hotter, the

converging outer roads getting deeper with white dust, the oleanders in

the tubs along the wayside gardens looking more and more like fatigued

holiday-makers, and the sweet evening changing her office--scattering

abroad those whom the midday had sent under shelter, and sowing all

paths with happy social sounds, little tinklings of mule-bells and

whirrings of thrumbed strings, light footsteps and voices, if not

leisurely, then with the hurry of pleasure in them; while the

encircling heights, crowned with forts, skirted with fine dwellings and

gardens, seemed also to come forth and gaze in fullness of beauty after

their long siesta, till all strong color melted in the stream of

moonlight which made the Streets a new spectacle with shadows, both

still and moving, on cathedral steps and against the faÃ§ades of massive

palaces; and then slowly with the descending moon all sank in deep

night and silence, and nothing shone but the port lights of the great

Lanterna in the blackness below, and the glimmering stars in the

blackness above. Deronda, in his suspense, watched this revolving of

the days as he might have watched a wonderful clock where the striking

of the hours was made solemn with antique figures advancing and

retreating in monitory procession, while he still kept his ear open for

another kind of signal which would have its solemnity too: He was

beginning to sicken of occupation, and found himself contemplating all

activity with the aloofness of a prisoner awaiting ransom. In his

letters to Mordecai and Hans, he had avoided writing about himself, but

he was really getting into that state of mind to which all subjects

become personal; and the few books he had brought to make him a refuge

in study were becoming unreadable, because the point of view that life

would make for him was in that agitating moment of uncertainty which is

close upon decision.

Many nights were watched through by him in gazing from the open window

of his room on the double, faintly pierced darkness of the sea and the

heavens; often in struggling under the oppressive skepticism which

represented his particular lot, with all the importance he was allowing

Mordecai to give it, as of no more lasting effect than a dream--a set

of changes which made passion to him, but beyond his consciousness were

no more than an imperceptible difference of mass and shadow; sometimes

with a reaction of emotive force which gave even to sustained

disappointment, even to the fulfilled demand of sacrifice, the nature

of a satisfied energy, and spread over his young future, whatever it

might be, the attraction of devoted service; sometimes with a sweet

irresistible hopefulness that the very best of human possibilities

might befall him--the blending of a complete personal love in one

current with a larger duty; and sometimes again in a mood of rebellion

(what human creature escapes it?) against things in general because

they are thus and not otherwise, a mood in which Gwendolen and her

equivocal fate moved as busy images of what was amiss in the world

along with the concealments which he had felt as a hardship in his own

life, and which were acting in him now under the form of an afflicting

doubtfulness about the mother who had announced herself coldly and

still kept away.

But at last she was come. One morning in his third week of waiting

there was a new kind of knock at the door. A servant in Chasseurs

livery entered and delivered in French the verbal message that, the

Princess Halm-Eberstein had arrived, that she was going to rest during

the day, but would be obliged if Monsieur would dine early, so as to be

at liberty at seven, when she would be able to receive him.

CHAPTER LI.

She held the spindle as she sat,

Errina with the thick-coiled mat

Of raven hair and deepest agate eyes,

Gazing with a sad surprise

At surging visions of her destiny--

To spin the byssus drearily

In insect-labor, while the throng

Of gods and men wrought deeds that poets wrought in song.

When Deronda presented himself at the door of his mother's apartment in

the \_Italia\_ he felt some revival of his boyhood with its premature

agitations. The two servants in the antechamber looked at him markedly,

a little surprised that the doctor their lady had come to consult was

this striking young gentleman whose appearance gave even the severe

lines of an evening dress the credit of adornment. But Deronda could

notice nothing until, the second door being opened, he found himself in

the presence of a figure which at the other end of the large room stood

awaiting his approach.

She was covered, except as to her face and part of her arms, with black

lace hanging loosely from the summit of her whitening hair to the long

train stretching from her tall figure. Her arms, naked to the elbow,

except for some rich bracelets, were folded before her, and the fine

poise of her head made it look handsomer than it really was. But

Deronda felt no interval of observation before he was close in front of

her, holding the hand she had put out and then raising it to his lips.

She still kept her hand in his and looked at him examiningly; while his

chief consciousness was that her eyes were piercing and her face so

mobile that the next moment she might look like a different person. For

even while she was examining him there was a play of the brow and

nostril which made a tacit language. Deronda dared no movement, not

able to conceive what sort of manifestation her feeling demanded; but

he felt himself changing color like a girl, and yet wondering at his

own lack of emotion; he had lived through so many ideal meetings with

his mother, and they had seemed more real than this! He could not even

conjecture in what language she would speak to him. He imagined it

would not be English. Suddenly, she let fall his hand, and placed both

hers on his shoulders, while her face gave out a flash of admiration in

which every worn line disappeared and seemed to leave a restored youth.

"You are a beautiful creature!" she said, in a low melodious voice,

with syllables which had what might be called a foreign but agreeable

outline. "I knew you would be." Then she kissed him on each cheek, and

he returned the kisses. But it was something like a greeting between

royalties.

She paused a moment while the lines were coming back into her face, and

then said in a colder tone, "I am your mother. But you can have no love

for me."

"I have thought of you more than of any other being in the world," said

Deronda, his voice trembling nervously.

"I am not like what you thought I was," said the mother decisively,

withdrawing her hands from his shoulders, and folding her arms as

before, looking at him as if she invited him to observe her. He had

often pictured her face in his imagination as one which had a likeness

to his own: he saw some of the likeness now, but amidst more striking

differences. She was a remarkable looking being. What was it that gave

her son a painful sense of aloofness?--Her worn beauty had a

strangeness in it as if she were not quite a human mother, but a

Melusina, who had ties with some world which is independent of ours.

"I used to think that you might be suffering," said Deronda, anxious

above all not to wound her. "I used to wish that I could be a comfort

to you."

"I \_am\_ suffering. But with a suffering that you can't comfort," said

the Princess, in a harder voice than before, moving to a sofa where

cushions had been carefully arranged for her. "Sit down." She pointed

to a seat near her; and then discerning some distress in Deronda's

face, she added, more gently, "I am not suffering at this moment. I am

at ease now. I am able to talk."

Deronda seated himself and waited for her to speak again. It seemed as

if he were in the presence of a mysterious Fate rather than of the

longed-for mother. He was beginning to watch her with wonder, from the

spiritual distance to which she had thrown him.

"No," she began: "I did not send for you to comfort me. I could not

know beforehand--I don't know now--what you will feel toward me. I have

not the foolish notion that you can love me merely because I am your

mother, when you have never seen or heard of me in all your life. But I

thought I chose something better for you than being with me. I did not

think I deprived you of anything worth having."

"You cannot wish me to believe that your affection would not have been

worth having," said Deronda, finding that she paused as if she expected

him to make some answer.

"I don't mean to speak ill of myself," said the princess, with proud

impetuosity, "But I had not much affection to give you. I did not want

affection. I had been stifled with it. I wanted to live out the life

that was in me, and not to be hampered with other lives. You wonder

what I was. I was no princess then." She rose with a sudden movement,

and stood as she had done before. Deronda immediately rose too; he felt

breathless.

"No princess in this tame life that I live in now. I was a great

singer, and I acted as well as I sang. All the rest were poor beside

me. Men followed me from one country to another. I was living a myriad

lives in one. I did not want a child."

There was a passionate self-defence in her tone. She had cast all

precedent out of her mind. Precedent had no excuse for her and she

could only seek a justification in the intensest words she could find

for her experience. She seemed to fling out the last words against some

possible reproach in the mind of her son, who had to stand and hear

them--clutching his coat-collar as if he were keeping himself above

water by it, and feeling his blood in the sort of commotion that might

have been excited if he had seen her going through some strange rite of

a religion which gave a sacredness to crime. What else had she to tell

him? She went on with the same intensity and a sort of pale

illumination in her face.

"I did not want to marry. I was forced into marrying your

father--forced, I mean, by my father's wishes and commands; and

besides, it was my best way of getting some freedom. I could rule my

husband, but not my father. I had a right to be free. I had a right to

seek my freedom from a bondage that I hated."

She seated herself again, while there was that subtle movement in her

eyes and closed lips which is like the suppressed continuation of

speech. Deronda continued standing, and after a moment or two she

looked up at him with a less defiant pleading as she said--

"And the bondage I hated for myself I wanted to keep you from. What

better could the most loving mother have done? I relieved you from the

bondage of having been born a Jew."

"Then I \_am\_ a Jew?" Deronda burst out with a deep-voiced energy that

made his mother shrink a little backward against her cushions. "My

father was a Jew, and you are a Jewess?"

"Yes, your father was my cousin," said the mother, watching him with a

change in her look, as if she saw something that she might have to be

afraid of.

"I am glad of it," said Deronda, impetuously, in the veiled voice of

passion. He could not have imagined beforehand how he would have come

to say that which he had never hitherto admitted. He could not have

dreamed that it would be in impulsive opposition to his mother. He was

shaken by a mixed anger which no reflection could come soon enough to

check, against this mother who it seemed had borne him unwillingly, had

willingly made herself a stranger to him, and--perhaps--was now making

herself known unwillingly. This last suspicion seemed to flash some

explanation over her speech.

But the mother was equally shaken by an anger differently mixed, and

her frame was less equal to any repression. The shaking with her was

visibly physical, and her eyes looked the larger for her pallid

excitement as she said violently--

"Why do you say you are glad? You are an English gentleman. I secured

you that."

"You did not know what you secured me. How could you choose my

birthright for me?" said Deronda, throwing himself sideways into his

chair again, almost unconsciously, and leaning his arm over the back,

while he looked away from his mother.

He was fired with an intolerance that seemed foreign to him. But he was

now trying hard to master himself and keep silence. A horror had swept

in upon his anger lest he should say something too hard in this moment

which made an epoch never to be recalled. There was a pause before his

mother spoke again, and when she spoke her voice had become more firmly

resistant in its finely varied tones:

"I chose for you what I would have chosen for myself. How could I know

that you would have the spirit of my father in you? How could I know

that you would love what I hated?--if you really love to be a Jew." The

last words had such bitterness in them that any one overhearing might

have supposed some hatred had arisen between the mother and son.

But Deronda had recovered his fuller self. He was recalling his

sensibilities to what life had been and actually was for her whose best

years were gone, and who with the signs of suffering in her frame was

now exerting herself to tell him of a past which was not his alone but

also hers. His habitual shame at the acceptance of events as if they

were his only, helped him even here. As he looked at his mother

silently after her last words, his face regained some of its

penetrative calm; yet it seemed to have a strangely agitating influence

over her: her eyes were fixed on him with a sort of fascination, but

not with any repose of maternal delight.

"Forgive me, if I speak hastily," he said, with diffident gravity. "Why

have you resolved now on disclosing to me what you took care to have me

brought up in ignorance of? Why--since you seem angry that I should be

glad?"

"Oh--the reasons of our actions!" said the Princess, with a ring of

something like sarcastic scorn. "When you are as old as I am, it will

not seem so simple a question--'Why did you do this?' People talk of

their motives in a cut and dried way. Every woman is supposed to have

the same set of motives, or else to be a monster. I am not a monster,

but I have not felt exactly what other women feel--or say they feel,

for fear of being thought unlike others. When you reproach me in your

heart for sending you away from me, you mean that I ought to say I felt

about you as other women say they feel about their children. I did

\_not\_ feel that. I was glad to be freed from you. But I did well for

you, and I gave you your father's fortune. Do I seem now to be revoking

everything?--Well, there are reasons. I feel many things that I cannot

understand. A fatal illness has been growing in me for a year. I shall

very likely not live another year. I will not deny anything I have

done. I will not pretend to love where I have no love. But shadows are

rising round me. Sickness makes them. If I have wronged the dead--I

have but little time to do what I left undone."

The varied transitions of tone with which this speech was delivered

were as perfect as the most accomplished actress could have made them.

The speech was in fact a piece of what may be called sincere acting;

this woman's nature was one in which all feeling--and all the more when

it was tragic as well as real--immediately became matter of conscious

representation: experience immediately passed into drama, and she acted

her own emotions. In a minor degree this is nothing uncommon, but in

the Princess the acting had a rare perfection of physiognomy, voice,

and gesture. It would not be true to say that she felt less because of

this double consciousness: she felt--that is, her mind went

through--all the more, but with a difference; each nucleus of pain or

pleasure had a deep atmosphere of the excitement or spiritual

intoxication which at once exalts and deadens. But Deronda made no

reflection of this kind. All his thoughts hung on the purport of what

his mother was saying; her tones and her wonderful face entered into

his agitation without being noted. What he longed for with an awed

desire was to know as much as she would tell him of the strange mental

conflict under which it seemed he had been brought into the world; what

his compassionate nature made the controlling idea within him were the

suffering and the confession that breathed through her later words, and

these forbade any further question, when she paused and remained

silent, with her brow knit, her head turned a little away from him, and

her large eyes fixed as if on something incorporeal. He must wait for

her to speak again. She did so with strange abruptness, turning her

eyes upon him suddenly, and saying more quickly--

"Sir Hugo has written much about you. He tells me you have a wonderful

mind--you comprehend everything--you are wiser than he is with all his

sixty years. You say you are glad to know that you were born a Jew. I

am not going to tell you that I have changed my mind about that. Your

feelings are against mine. You don't thank me for what I did. Shall you

comprehend your mother, or only blame her?"

"There is not a fibre within me but makes me wish to comprehend her,"

said Deronda, meeting her sharp gaze solemnly. "It is a bitter reversal

of my longing to think of blaming her. What I have been most trying to

do for fifteen years is to have some understanding of those who differ

from myself."

"Then you have become unlike your grandfather in that." said the

mother, "though you are a young copy of him in your face. He never

comprehended me, or if he did, he only thought of fettering me into

obedience. I was to be what he called 'the Jewish woman' under pain of

his curse. I was to feel everything I did not feel, and believe

everything I did not believe. I was to feel awe for the bit of

parchment in the \_mezuza\_ over the door; to dread lest a bit of butter

should touch a bit of meat; to think it beautiful that men should bind

the \_tephillin\_ on them, and women not,--to adore the wisdom of such

laws, however silly they might seem to me. I was to love the long

prayers in the ugly synagogue, and the howling, and the gabbling, and

the dreadful fasts, and the tiresome feasts, and my father's endless

discoursing about our people, which was a thunder without meaning in my

ears. I was to care forever about what Israel had been; and I did not

care at all. I cared for the wide world, and all that I could represent

in it. I hated living under the shadow of my father's strictness.

Teaching, teaching for everlasting--'this you must be,' 'that you must

not be'--pressed on me like a frame that got tighter and tighter as I

grew. I wanted to live a large life, with freedom to do what every one

else did, and be carried along in a great current, not obliged to care.

Ah!"--here her tone changed to one of a more bitter incisiveness--"you

are glad to have been born a Jew. You say so. That is because you have

not been brought up as a Jew. That separateness seems sweet to you

because I saved you from it."

"When you resolved on that, you meant that I should never know my

origin?" said Deronda, impulsively. "You have at least changed in your

feeling on that point."

"Yes, that was what I meant. That is what I persevered in. And it is

not true to say that I have changed. Things have changed in spite of

me. I am still the same Leonora"--she pointed with her forefinger to

her breast--"here within me is the same desire, the same will, the same

choice, \_but\_"--she spread out her hands, palm upward, on each side of

her, as she paused with a bitter compression of her lip, then let her

voice fall into muffled, rapid utterance--"events come upon us like

evil enchantments: and thoughts, feelings, apparitions in the darkness

are events--are they not? I don't consent. We only consent to what we

love. I obey something tyrannic"--she spread out her hands again--"I am

forced to be withered, to feel pain, to be dying slowly. Do I love

that? Well, I have been forced to obey my dead father. I have been

forced to tell you that you are a Jew, and deliver to you what he

commanded me to deliver."

"I beseech you to tell me what moved you--when you were young, I

mean--to take the course you did," said Deronda, trying by this

reference to the past to escape from what to him was the heart-rending

piteousness of this mingled suffering and defiance. "I gather that my

grandfather opposed your bent to be an artist. Though my own experience

has been quite different, I enter into the painfulness of your

struggle. I can imagine the hardship of an enforced renunciation."

"No," said the Princess, shaking her head and folding her arms with an

air of decision. "You are not a woman. You may try--but you can never

imagine what it is to have a man's force of genius in you, and yet to

suffer the slavery of being a girl. To have a pattern cut out--'this is

the Jewish woman; this is what you must be; this is what you are wanted

for; a woman's heart must be of such a size and no larger, else it must

be pressed small, like Chinese feet; her happiness is to be made as

cakes are, by a fixed receipt.' That was what my father wanted. He

wished I had been a son; he cared for me as a make-shift link. His

heart was set on his Judaism. He hated that Jewish women should be

thought of by the Christian world as a sort of ware to make public

singers and actresses of. As if we were not the more enviable for that!

That is a chance of escaping from bondage."

"Was my grandfather a learned man?" said Deronda, eager to know

particulars that he feared his mother might not think of.

She answered impatiently, putting up her hand, "Oh, yes,--and a clever

physician--and good: I don't deny that he was good. A man to be admired

in a play--grand, with an iron will. Like the old Foscari before he

pardons. But such men turn their wives and daughters into slaves. They

would rule the world if they could; but not ruling the world, they

throw all the weight of their will on the necks and souls of women. But

nature sometimes thwarts them. My father had no other child than his

daughter, and she was like himself."

She had folded her arms again, and looked as if she were ready to face

some impending attempt at mastery.

"Your father was different. Unlike me--all lovingness and affection. I

knew I could rule him; and I made him secretly promise me, before I

married him, that he would put no hindrance in the way of my being an

artist. My father was on his deathbed when we were married: from the

first he had fixed his mind on my marrying my cousin Ephraim. And when

a woman's will is as strong as the man's who wants to govern her, half

her strength must be concealment. I meant to have my will in the end,

but I could only have it by seeming to obey. I had an awe of my

father--always I had had an awe of him: it was impossible to help it. I

hated to feel awed--I wished I could have defied him openly; but I

never could. It was what I could not imagine: I could not act it to

myself that I should begin to defy my father openly and succeed. And I

never would risk failure."

This last sentence was uttered with an abrupt emphasis, and she paused

after it as if the words had raised a crowd of remembrances which

obstructed speech. Her son was listening to her with feelings more and

more highly mixed; the first sense of being repelled by the frank

coldness which had replaced all his preconceptions of a mother's tender

joy in the sight of him; the first impulses of indignation at what

shocked his most cherished emotions and principles--all these busy

elements of collision between them were subsiding for a time, and

making more and more room for that effort at just allowance and that

admiration of a forcible nature whose errors lay along high pathways,

which he would have felt if, instead of being his mother, she had been

a stranger who had appealed to his sympathy. Still it was impossible to

be dispassionate: he trembled lest the next thing she had to say would

be more repugnant to him than what had gone before: he was afraid of

the strange coÃ«rcion she seemed to be under to lay her mind bare: he

almost wished he could say, "Tell me only what is necessary," and then

again he felt the fascination which made him watch her and listen to

her eagerly. He tried to recall her to particulars by asking--

"Where was my grandfather's home?"

"Here in Genoa, where I was married; and his family had lived here

generations ago. But my father had been in various countries."

"You must surely have lived in England?"

"My mother was English--a Jewess of Portuguese descent. My father

married her in England. Certain circumstances of that marriage made all

the difference in my life: through that marriage my father thwarted his

own plans. My mother's sister was a singer, and afterward she married

the English partner of a merchant's house here in Genoa, and they came

and lived here eleven years. My mother died when I was eight years old,

and my father allowed me to be continually with my Aunt Leonora and be

taught under her eyes, as if he had not minded the danger of her

encouraging my wish to be a singer, as she had been. But this was it--I

saw it again and again in my father:--he did not guard against

consequences, because he felt sure he could hinder them if he liked.

Before my aunt left Genoa, I had had enough teaching to bring out the

born singer and actress within me: my father did not know everything

that was done; but he knew that I was taught music and singing--he knew

my inclination. That was nothing to him: he meant that I should obey

his will. And he was resolved that I should marry my cousin Ephraim,

the only one left of my father's family that he knew. I wanted not to

marry. I thought of all plans to resist it, but at last I found that I

could rule my cousin, and I consented. My father died three weeks after

we were married, and then I had my way!" She uttered these words almost

exultantly; but after a little pause her face changed, and she said in

a biting tone, "It has not lasted, though. My father is getting his way

now."

She began to look more contemplatively again at her son, and presently

said--

"You are like him--but milder--there is something of your own father in

you; and he made it the labor of his life to devote himself to me:

wound up his money-changing and banking, and lived to wait upon me--he

went against his conscience for me. As I loved the life of my art, so

he loved me. Let me look at your hand again: the hand with the ring on.

It was your father's ring."

He drew his chair nearer to her and gave her his hand. We know what

kind of a hand it was: her own, very much smaller, was of the same

type. As he felt the smaller hand holding his, as he saw nearer to him

the face that held the likeness of his own, aged not by time but by

intensity, the strong bent of his nature toward a reverential

tenderness asserted itself above every other impression and in his most

fervent tone he said--

"Mother! take us all into your heart--the living and the dead. Forgive

every thing that hurts you in the past. Take my affection."

She looked at him admiringly rather than lovingly, then kissed him on

the brow, and saying sadly, "I reject nothing, but I have nothing to

give," she released his hand and sank back on her cushions. Deronda

turned pale with what seems always more of a sensation than an

emotion--the pain of repulsed tenderness. She noticed the expression of

pain, and said, still with melodious melancholy in her tones--

"It is better so. We must part again soon and you owe me no duties. I

did not wish you to be born. I parted with you willingly. When your

father died I resolved that I would have no more ties, but such as I

could free myself from. I was the Alcharisi you have heard of: the name

had magic wherever it was carried. Men courted me. Sir Hugo Mallinger

was one who wished to marry me. He was madly in love with me. One day I

asked him, 'Is there a man capable of doing something for love of me,

and expecting nothing in return?' He said: 'What is it you want done?'

I said, 'Take my boy and bring him up as an Englishman, and never let

him know anything about his parents.' You were little more than two

years old, and were sitting on his foot. He declared that he would pay

money to have such a boy. I had not meditated much on the plan

beforehand, but as soon as I had spoken about it, it took possession of

me as something I could not rest without doing. At first he thought I

was not serious, but I convinced him, and he was never surprised at

anything. He agreed that it would be for your good, and the finest

thing for you. A great singer and actress is a queen, but she gives no

royalty to her son. All that happened at Naples. And afterward I made

Sir Hugo the trustee of your fortune. That is what I did; and I had a

joy in doing it. My father had tyrannized over me--he cared more about

a grandson to come than he did about me: I counted as nothing. You were

to be such a Jew as he; you were to be what he wanted. But you were my

son, and it was my turn to say what you should be. I said you should

not know you were a Jew."

"And for months events have been preparing me to be glad that I am a

Jew," said Deronda, his opposition roused again. The point touched the

quick of his experience. "It would always have been better that I

should have known the truth. I have always been rebelling against the

secrecy that looked like shame. It is no shame to have Jewish

parents--the shame is to disown it."

"You say it was a shame to me, then, that I used that secrecy," said

his mother, with a flash of new anger. "There is no shame attaching to

me. I have no reason to be ashamed. I rid myself of the Jewish tatters

and gibberish that make people nudge each other at sight of us, as if

we were tattooed under our clothes, though our faces are as whole as

theirs. I delivered you from the pelting contempt that pursues Jewish

separateness. I am not ashamed that I did it. It was the better for

you."

"Then why have you now undone the secrecy?--no, not undone it--the

effects will never be undone. But why have you now sent for me to tell

me that I am a Jew?" said Deronda, with an intensity of opposition in

feeling that was almost bitter. It seemed as if her words had called

out a latent obstinacy of race in him.

"Why?--ah, why?" said the Princess, rising quickly and walking to the

other side of the room, where she turned round and slowly approached

him, as he, too, stood up. Then she began to speak again in a more

veiled voice. "I can't explain; I can only say what is. I don't love my

father's religion now any more than I did then. Before I married the

second time I was baptized; I made myself like the people I lived

among. I had a right to do it; I was not like a brute, obliged to go

with my own herd. I have not repented; I will not say that I have

repented. But yet"--here she had come near to her son, and paused; then

again retreated a little and stood still, as if resolute not to give

way utterly to an imperious influence; but, as she went on speaking,

she became more and more unconscious of anything but the awe that

subdued her voice. "It is illness, I don't doubt that it has been

gathering illness--my mind has gone back: more than a year ago it

began. You see my gray hair, my worn look: it has all come fast.

Sometimes I am in an agony of pain--I dare say I shall be to-night.

Then it is as if all the life I have chosen to live, all thoughts, all

will, forsook me and left me alone in spots of memory, and I can't get

away: my pain seems to keep me there. My childhood--my girlhood--the

day of my marriage--the day of my father's death--there seems to be

nothing since. Then a great horror comes over me: what do I know of

life or death? and what my father called 'right' may be a power that is

laying hold of me--that is clutching me now. Well, I will satisfy him.

I cannot go into the darkness without satisfying him. I have hidden

what was his. I thought once I would burn it. I have not burned it. I

thank God I have not burned it!"

She threw herself on her cushions again, visibly fatigued. Deronda,

moved too strongly by her suffering for other impulses to act within

him, drew near her, and said, entreatingly--

"Will you not spare yourself this evening? Let us leave the rest till

to-morrow."

"No," she said decisively. "I will confess it all, now that I have come

up to it. Often when I am at ease it all fades away; my whole self

comes quite back; but I know it will sink away again, and the other

will come--the poor, solitary, forsaken remains of self, that can

resist nothing. It was my nature to resist, and say, 'I have a right to

resist.' Well, I say so still when I have any strength in me. You have

heard me say it, and I don't withdraw it. But when my strength goes,

some other right forces itself upon me like iron in an inexorable hand;

and even when I am at ease, it is beginning to make ghosts upon the

daylight. And now you have made it worse for me," she said, with a

sudden return of impetuosity; "but I shall have told you everything.

And what reproach is there against me," she added bitterly, "since I

have made you glad to be a Jew? Joseph Kalonymos reproached me: he said

you had been turned into a proud Englishman, who resented being touched

by a Jew. I wish you had!" she ended, with a new marvelous alternation.

It was as if her mind were breaking into several, one jarring the other

into impulsive action.

"Who is Joseph Kalonymos?" said Deronda, with a darting recollection of

that Jew who touched his arm in the Frankfort synagogue.

"Ah! some vengeance sent him back from the East, that he might see you

and come to reproach me. He was my father's friend. He knew of your

birth: he knew of my husband's death, and once, twenty years ago, after

he had been away in the Levant, he came to see me and inquire about

you. I told him that you were dead: I meant you to be dead to all the

world of my childhood. If I had said that your were living, he would

have interfered with my plans: he would have taken on him to represent

my father, and have tried to make me recall what I had done. What could

I do but say you were dead? The act was done. If I had told him of it

there would have been trouble and scandal--and all to conquer me, who

would not have been conquered. I was strong then, and I would have had

my will, though there might have been a hard fight against me. I took

the way to have it without any fight. I felt then that I was not really

deceiving: it would have come to the same in the end; or if not to the

same, to something worse. He believed me and begged that I would give

up to him the chest that my father had charged me and my husband to

deliver to our eldest son. I knew what was in the chest--things that

had been dinned in my ears since I had had any understanding--things

that were thrust on my mind that I might feel them like a wall around

my life--my life that was growing like a tree. Once, after my husband

died, I was going to burn the chest. But it was difficult to burn; and

burning a chest and papers looks like a shameful act. I have committed

no shameful act--except what Jews would call shameful. I had kept the

chest, and I gave it to Joseph Kalonymos. He went away mournful, and

said, 'If you marry again, and if another grandson is born to him who

is departed, I will deliver up the chest to him.' I bowed in silence. I

meant not to marry again--no more than I meant to be the shattered

woman that I am now."

She ceased speaking, and her head sank back while she looked vaguely

before her. Her thought was traveling through the years, and when she

began to speak again her voice had lost its argumentative spirit, and

had fallen into a veiled tone of distress.

"But months ago this Kalonymos saw you in the synagogue at Frankfort.

He saw you enter the hotel, and he went to ask your name. There was

nobody else in the world to whom the name would have told anything

about me."

"Then it is not my real name?" said Deronda, with a dislike even to

this trifling part of the disguise which had been thrown round him.

"Oh, as real as another," said his mother, indifferently. "The Jews

have always been changing their names. My father's family had kept the

name of Charisi: my husband was a Charisi. When I came out as a singer,

we made it Alcharisi. But there had been a branch of the family my

father had lost sight of who called themselves Deronda, and when I

wanted a name for you, and Sir Hugo said, 'Let it be a foreign name,' I

thought of Deronda. But Joseph Kalonymos had heard my father speak of

the Deronda branch, and the name confirmed his suspicion. He began to

suspect what had been done. It was as if everything had been whispered

to him in the air. He found out where I was. He took a journey into

Russia to see me; he found me weak and shattered. He had come back

again, with his white hair, and with rage in his soul against me. He

said I was going down to the grave clad in falsehood and

robbery--falsehood to my father and robbery of my own child. He accused

me of having kept the knowledge of your birth from you, and having

brought you up as if you had been the son of an English gentleman.

Well, it was true; and twenty years before I would have maintained that

I had a right to do it. But I can maintain nothing now. No faith is

strong within me. My father may have God on his side. This man's words

were like lion's teeth upon me. My father's threats eat into me with my

pain. If I tell everything--if I deliver up everything--what else can

be demanded of me? I cannot make myself love the people I have never

loved--is it not enough that I lost the life I did love?"

She had leaned forward a little in her low-toned pleading, that seemed

like a smothered cry: her arms and hands were stretched out at full

length, as if strained in beseeching, Deronda's soul was absorbed in

the anguish of compassion. He could not mind now that he had been

repulsed before. His pity made a flood of forgiveness within him. His

single impulse was to kneel by her and take her hand gently, between

his palms, while he said in that exquisite voice of soothing which

expresses oneness with the sufferer--

"Mother, take comfort!"

She did not seem inclined to repulse him now, but looked down at him

and let him take both her hands to fold between his. Gradually tears

gathered, but she pressed her handkerchief against her eyes and then

leaned her cheek against his brow, as if she wished that they should

not look at each other.

"Is it not possible that I could be near you often and comfort you?"

said Deronda. He was under that stress of pity that propels us on

sacrifices.

"No, not possible," she answered, lifting up her head again and

withdrawing her hand as if she wished him to move away. "I have a

husband and five children. None of them know of your existence."

Deronda felt painfully silenced. He rose and stood at a little distance.

"You wonder why I married," she went on presently, under the influence

of a newly-recurring thought. "I meant never to marry again. I meant to

be free and to live for my art. I had parted with you. I had no bonds.

For nine years I was a queen. I enjoyed the life I had longed for. But

something befell me. It was like a fit of forgetfulness. I began to

sing out of tune. They told me of it. Another woman was thrusting

herself in my place. I could not endure the prospect of failure and

decline. It was horrible to me." She started up again, with a shudder,

and lifted screening hands like one who dreads missiles. "It drove me

to marry. I made believe that I preferred being the wife of a Russian

noble to being the greatest lyric actress of Europe; I made believe--I

acted that part. It was because I felt my greatness sinking away from

me, as I feel my life sinking now. I would not wait till men said, 'She

had better go.'"

She sank into her seat again, and looked at the evening sky as she went

on: "I repented. It was a resolve taken in desperation. That singing

out of tune was only like a fit of illness; it went away. I repented;

but it was too late. I could not go back. All things hindered, me--all

things."

A new haggardness had come in her face, but her son refrained from

again urging her to leave further speech till the morrow: there was

evidently some mental relief for her in an outpouring such as she could

never have allowed herself before. He stood still while she maintained

silence longer than she knew, and the light was perceptibly fading. At

last she turned to him and said--

"I can bear no more now." She put out her hand, but then quickly

withdrew it saying, "Stay. How do I know that I can see you again? I

cannot bear to be seen when I am in pain."

She drew forth a pocket-book, and taking out a letter said, "This is

addressed to the banking-house in Mainz, where you are to go for your

grandfather's chest. It is a letter written by Joseph Kalonymos: if he

is not there himself, this order of his will be obeyed."

When Deronda had taken the letter, she said, with effort but more

gently than before, "Kneel again, and let me kiss you."

He obeyed, and holding his head between her hands, she kissed him

solemnly on the brow. "You see, I had no life left to love you with,"

she said, in a low murmur. "But there is more fortune for you. Sir Hugo

was to keep it in reserve. I gave you all your father's fortune. They

can never accuse me of robbery there."

"If you had needed anything I would have worked for you," said Deronda,

conscious of disappointed yearning--a shutting out forever from long

early vistas of affectionate imagination.

"I need nothing that the skill of man can give me," said his mother,

still holding his head, and perusing his features. "But perhaps now I

have satisfied my father's will, your face will come instead of

his--your young, loving face."

"But you will see me again?" said Deronda, anxiously.

"Yes--perhaps. Wait, wait. Leave me now."

CHAPTER LII.

"La mÃªme fermetÃ© qui sert Ã  rÃ©sister Ã  l'amour sert aussi Ã  le rendre

violent et durable; et les personnes faibles qui sont toujours

agitÃ©es des passions n'en sont presque jamais vÃ©ritablement remplies."

--LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

Among Deronda's letters the next morning was one from Hans Meyrick of

four quarto pages, in the small, beautiful handwriting which ran in the

Meyrick family.

MY DEAR DERONDA,--In return for your sketch of Italian movements and

your view of the world's affairs generally, I may say that here at

home the most judicious opinion going as to the effects of present

causes is that "time will show." As to the present causes of past

effects, it is now seen that the late swindling telegrams account for

the last year's cattle plague--which is a refutation of philosophy

falsely so called, and justifies the compensation to the farmers. My

own idea that a murrain will shortly break out in the commercial

class, and that the cause will subsequently disclose itself in the

ready sale of all rejected pictures, has been called an unsound use of

analogy; but there are minds that will not hesitate to rob even the

neglected painter of his solace. To my feeling there is great beauty

in the conception that some bad judge might give a high price for my

Berenice series, and that the men in the city would have already been

punished for my ill-merited luck.

Meanwhile I am consoling myself for your absence by finding my

advantage in it--shining like Hesperus when Hyperion has departed;

sitting with our Hebrew prophet, and making a study of his head, in

the hours when he used to be occupied with you--getting credit with

him as a learned young Gentile, who would have been a Jew if he could

--and agreeing with him in the general principle, that whatever is

best is for that reason Jewish. I never held it my \_forte\_ to be

a severe reasoner, but I can see that if whatever is best is A, and B

happens to be best, B must be A, however little you might have

expected it beforehand. On that principle I could see the force of a

pamphlet I once read to prove that all good art was Protestant.

However, our prophet is an uncommonly interesting sitter--a better

model than Rembrandt had for his Rabbi--and I never come away from him

without a new discovery. For one thing, it is a constant wonder to me

that, with all his fiery feeling for his race and their traditions, he

is no straight-laced Jew, spitting after the word Christian, and

enjoying the prospect that the Gentile mouth will water in vain for a

slice of the roasted Leviathan, while Israel will be sending up plates

for more, \_ad libitum\_, (You perceive that my studies had taught

me what to expect from the orthodox Jew.) I confess that I have always

held lightly by your account of Mordecai, as apologetic, and merely

part of your disposition to make an antedeluvian point of view lest

you should do injustice to the megatherium. But now I have given ear

to him in his proper person, I find him really a sort of

philosophical-allegorical-mystical believer, and yet with a sharp

dialectic point, so that any argumentative rattler of peas in a

bladder might soon be pricked in silence by him. The mixture may be

one of the Jewish prerogatives, for what I know. In fact, his mind

seems so broad that I find my own correct opinions lying in it quite

commodiously, and how they are to be brought into agreement with the

vast remainder is his affair, not mine. I leave it to him to settle

our basis, never yet having seen a basis which is not a

world-supporting elephant, more or less powerful and expensive to keep.

My means will not allow me to keep a private elephant. I go into mystery

instead, as cheaper and more lasting--a sort of gas which is likely to

be continually supplied by the decomposition of the elephants. And if

I like the look of an opinion, I treat it civilly, without suspicious

inquiries. I have quite a friendly feeling toward Mordecai's notion

that a whole Christian is three-fourths a Jew, and that from the

Alexandrian time downward the most comprehensive minds have been

Jewish; for I think of pointing out to Mirah that, Arabic and other

incidents of life apart, there is really little difference between me

and--Maimonides. But I have lately been finding out that it is your

shallow lover who can't help making a declaration. If Mirah's ways

were less distracting, and it were less of a heaven to be in her

presence and watch her, I must long ago have flung myself at her feet,

and requested her to tell me, with less indirectness, whether she

wished me to blow my brains out. I have a knack of hoping, which is as

good as an estate in reversion, if one can keep from the temptation of

turning it into certainty, which may spoil all. My Hope wanders among

the orchard blossoms, feels the warm snow falling on it through the

sunshine, and is in doubt of nothing; but, catching sight of Certainty

in the distance, sees an ugly Janus-faced deity, with a dubious wink

on the hither side of him, and turns quickly away. But you, with your

supreme reasonableness, and self-nullification, and preparation for

the worst--you know nothing about Hope, that immortal, delicious

maiden forever courted forever propitious, whom fools have called

deceitful, as if it were Hope that carried the cup of disappointment,

whereas it is her deadly enemy, Certainty, whom she only escapes by

transformation. (You observe my new vein of allegory?) Seriously,

however, I must be permitted to allege that truth will prevail, that

prejudice will melt before it, that diversity, accompanied by merit,

will make itself felt as fascination, and that no virtuous aspiration

will be frustrated--all which, if I mistake not, are doctrines of the

schools, and they imply that the Jewess I prefer will prefer me. Any

blockhead can cite generalities, but the mind-master discerns the

particular cases they represent.

I am less convinced that my society makes amends to Mordecai for your

absence, but another substitute occasionally comes in the form of

Jacob Cohen. It is worth while to catch our prophet's expression when

he has that remarkable type of young Israel on his knee, and pours

forth some Semitic inspiration with a sublime look of melancholy

patience and devoutness. Sometimes it occurs to Jacob that Hebrew will

be more edifying to him if he stops his ears with his palms, and

imitates the venerable sounds as heard through that muffled medium.

When Mordecai gently draws down the little fists and holds them fast,

Jacob's features all take on an extraordinary activity, very much as

if he was walking through a menagerie and trying to imitate every

animal in turn, succeeding best with the owl and the peccary. But I

dare say you have seen something of this. He treats me with the

easiest familiarity, and seems in general to look at me as a second-hand

Christian commodity, likely to come down in price; remarking on

my disadvantages with a frankness which seems to imply some thoughts

of future purchase. It is pretty, though, to see the change in him if

Mirah happens to come in. He turns child suddenly--his age usually

strikes one as being like the Israelitish garments in the desert,

perhaps near forty, yet with an air of recent production. But, with

Mirah, he reminds me of the dogs that have been brought up by women,

and remain manageable by them only. Still, the dog is fond of Mordecai

too, and brings sugar-plums to share with him, filling his own mouth

to rather an embarrassing extent, and watching how Mordecai deals with

a smaller supply. Judging from this modern Jacob at the age of six, my

astonishment is that his race has not bought us all up long ago, and

pocketed our feebler generations in the form of stock and scrip, as so

much slave property. There is one Jewess I should not mind being slave

to. But I wish I did not imagine that Mirah gets a little sadder, and

tries all the while to hide it. It is natural enough, of course, while

she has to watch the slow death of this brother, whom she has taken to

worshipping with such looks of loving devoutness that I am ready to

wish myself in his place.

For the rest, we are a little merrier than usual. Rex Gascoigne--you

remember a head you admired among my sketches, a fellow with a good

upper lip, reading law--has got some rooms in town now not far off us,

and has had a neat sister (upper lip also good) staying with him the

last fortnight. I have introduced them both to my mother and the

girls, who have found out from Miss Gascoigne that she is cousin to

your Vandyke duchess!!! I put the notes of exclamation to mark the

surprise that the information at first produced on my feeble

understanding. On reflection I discovered that there was not the least

ground for surprise, unless I had beforehand believed that nobody

could be anybody's cousin without my knowing it. This sort of

surprise, I take it, depends on a liveliness of the spine, with a more

or less constant nullity of brain. There was a fellow I used to meet

at Rome who was in an effervescence of surprise at contact with the

simplest information. Tell him what you would--that you were fond of

easy boots--he would always say, "No! are you?" with the same energy

of wonder: the very fellow of whom pastoral Browne wrote

prophetically--

"A wretch so empty that if e'er there be

In nature found the least vacuity

'Twill be in him."

I have accounted for it all--he had a lively spine.

However, this cousinship with the duchess came out by chance one day

that Mirah was with them at home and they were talking about the

Mallingers. \_Apropos\_; I am getting so important that I have

rival invitations. Gascoigne wants me to go down with him to his

father's rectory in August and see the country round there. But I

think self-interest well understood will take me to Topping Abbey, for

Sir Hugo has invited me, and proposes--God bless him for his rashness!

--that I should make a picture of his three daughters sitting on a

bank--as he says, in the Gainsborough style. He came to my studio the

other day and recommended me to apply myself to portrait. Of course I

know what that means.--"My good fellow, your attempts at the historic

and poetic are simply pitiable. Your brush is just that of a

successful portrait-painter--it has a little truth and a great

facility in falsehood--your idealism will never do for gods and

goddesses and heroic story, but it may fetch a high price as flattery.

Fate, my friend, has made you the hinder wheel--\_rota posterior

curras, et in axe secundo\_--run behind, because you can't help it."

--What great effort it evidently costs our friends to give us these

candid opinions! I have even known a man to take the trouble to call,

in order to tell me that I had irretrievably exposed my want of

judgment in treating my subject, and that if I had asked him we would

have lent me his own judgment. Such was my ingratitude and my

readiness at composition, that even while he was speaking I inwardly

sketched a Last Judgment with that candid friend's physiognomy on the

left. But all this is away from Sir Hugo, whose manner of implying

that one's gifts are not of the highest order is so exceedingly

good-natured and comfortable that I begin to feel it an advantage not

to be among those poor fellows at the tip-top. And his kindness to me

tastes all the better because it comes out of his love for you, old

boy. His chat is uncommonly amusing. By the way, he told me that your

Vandyke duchess is gone with her husband yachting to the Mediterranean.

I bethink me that it is possible to land from a yacht, or to be taken

on to a yacht from the land. Shall you by chance have an opportunity of

continuing your theological discussion with the fair Supralapsarian--I

think you said her tenets were of that complexion? Is Duke Alphonso

also theological?--perhaps an Arian who objects to triplicity. (Stage

direction. While D. is reading, a profound scorn gathers in his face

till at the last word he flings down the letter, grasps his coat-collar

in a statuesque attitude and so remains with a look generally

tremendous, throughout the following soliloquy, "O night, O blackness,

etc., etc.")

Excuse the brevity of this letter. You are not used to more from me

than a bare statement of facts, without comment or digression. One

fact I have omitted--that the Klesmers on the eve of departure have

behaved magnificently, shining forth as might be expected from the

planets of genius and fortune in conjunction. Mirah is rich with their

oriental gifts.

What luck it will be if you come back and present yourself at the

Abbey while I am there! I am going to behave with consummate

discretion and win golden opinions, But I shall run up to town now and

then, just for a peep into Gad Eden. You see how far I have got in

Hebrew lore--up with my Lord Bolingbroke, who knew no Hebrew, but

"understood that sort of learning and what is writ about it." If Mirah

commanded, I would go to a depth below the tri-literal roots. Already

it makes no difference to me whether the points are there or not. But

while her brother's life lasts I suspect she would not listen to a

lover, even one whose "hair is like a flock of goats on Mount

Gilead"--and I flatter myself that few heads would bear that trying

comparison better than mine. So I stay with my hope among the

orchard-blossoms.

Your devoted,

HANS MEYRICK.

Some months before, this letter from Hans would have divided Deronda's

thoughts irritatingly: its romancing, about Mirah would have had an

unpleasant edge, scarcely anointed with any commiseration for his

friend's probable disappointment. But things had altered since March.

Mirah was no longer so critically placed with regard to the Meyricks,

and Deronda's own position had been undergoing a change which had just

been crowned by the revelation of his birth. The new opening toward the

future, though he would not trust in any definite visions, inevitably

shed new lights, and influenced his mood toward past and present;

hence, what Hans called his hope now seemed to Deronda, not a

mischievous unreasonableness which roused his indignation, but an

unusually persistent bird-dance of an extravagant fancy, and he would

have felt quite able to pity any consequent suffering of his friend's,

if he had believed in the suffering as probable. But some of the busy

thought filling that long day, which passed without his receiving any

new summons from his mother, was given to the argument that Hans

Meyrick's nature was not one in which love could strike the deep roots

that turn disappointment into sorrow: it was too restless, too readily

excitable by novelty, too ready to turn itself into imaginative

material, and wear its grief as a fantastic costume. "Already he is

beginning to play at love: he is taking the whole affair as a comedy,"

said Deronda to himself; "he knows very well that there is no chance

for him. Just like him--never opening his eyes on any possible

objection I could have to receive his outpourings about Mirah. Poor old

Hans! If we were under a fiery hail together he would howl like a

Greek, and if I did not howl too it would never occur to him that I was

as badly off as he. And yet he is tender-hearted and affectionate in

intention, and I can't say that he is not active in imagining what goes

on in other people--but then he always imagines it to fit his own

inclination."

With this touch of causticity Deronda got rid of the slight heat at

present raised by Hans's naive expansiveness. The nonsense about

Gwendolen, conveying the fact that she was gone yachting with her

husband, only suggested a disturbing sequel to his own strange parting

with her. But there was one sentence in the letter which raised a more

immediate, active anxiety. Hans's suspicion of a hidden sadness in

Mirah was not in the direction of his wishes, and hence, instead of

distrusting his observation here, Deronda began to conceive a cause for

the sadness. Was it some event that had occurred during his absence, or

only the growing fear of some event? Was it something, perhaps

alterable, in the new position which had been made for her? Or--had

Mordecai, against his habitual resolve, communicated to her those

peculiar cherished hopes about him, Deronda, and had her quickly

sensitive nature been hurt by the discovery that her brother's will or

tenacity of visionary conviction had acted coercively on their

friendship--been hurt by the fear that there was more of pitying

self-suppression than of equal regard in Deronda's relation to him? For

amidst all Mirah's quiet renunciation, the evident thirst of soul with

which she received the tribute of equality implied a corresponding pain

if she found that what she had taken for a purely reverential regard

toward her brother had its mixture of condescension.

In this last conjecture of Deronda's he was not wrong as to the quality

in Mirah's nature on which he was founding--the latent protest against

the treatment she had all her life being subject to until she met him.

For that gratitude which would not let her pass by any notice of their

acquaintance without insisting on the depth of her debt to him, took

half its fervor from the keen comparison with what others had thought

enough to render to her. Deronda's affinity in feeling enabled him to

penetrate such secrets. But he was not near the truth in admitting the

idea that Mordecai had broken his characteristic reticence. To no soul

but Deronda himself had he yet breathed the history of their relation

to each other, or his confidence about his friend's origin: it was not

only that these subjects were for him too sacred to be spoken of

without weighty reason, but that he had discerned Deronda's shrinking

at any mention of his birth; and the severity of reserve which had

hindered Mordecai from answering a question on a private affair of the

Cohen family told yet more strongly here.

"Ezra, how is it?" Mirah one day said to him--"I am continually going

to speak to Mr. Deronda as if he were a Jew?"

He smiled at her quietly, and said, "I suppose it is because he treats

us as if he were our brother. But he loves not to have the difference

of birth dwelt upon."

"He has never lived with his parents, Mr. Hans, says," continued Mirah,

to whom this was necessarily a question of interest about every one for

whom she had a regard.

"Seek not to know such things from Mr. Hans," said Mordecai, gravely,

laying his hand on her curls, as he was wont. "What Daniel Deronda

wishes us to know about himself is for him to tell us."

And Mirah felt herself rebuked, as Deronda had done. But to be rebuked

in this way by Mordecai made her rather proud.

"I see no one so great as my brother," she said to Mrs. Meyrick one day

that she called at the Chelsea house on her way home, and, according to

her hope, found the little mother alone. "It is difficult to think that

he belongs to the same world as those people I used to live amongst. I

told you once that they made life seem like a madhouse; but when I am

with Ezra he makes me feel that his life is a great good, though he has

suffered so much; not like me, who wanted to die because I had suffered

a little, and only for a little while. His soul is so full, it is

impossible for him to wish for death as I did. I get the same sort of

feeling from him that I got yesterday, when I was tired, and came home

through the park after the sweet rain had fallen and the sunshine lay

on the grass and flowers. Everything in the sky and under the sky

looked so pure and beautiful that the weariness and trouble and folly

seemed only a small part of what is, and I became more patient and

hopeful."

A dove-like note of melancholy in this speech caused Mrs. Meyrick to

look at Mirah with new examination. After laying down her hat and

pushing her curls flat, with an air of fatigue, she placed herself on a

chair opposite her friend in her habitual attitude, her feet and hands

just crossed; and at a distance she might have seemed a colored statue

of serenity. But Mrs. Meyrick discerned a new look of suppressed

suffering in her face, which corresponded to the hint that to be

patient and hopeful required some extra influence.

"Is there any fresh trouble on your mind, my dear?" said Mrs. Meyrick,

giving up her needlework as a sign of concentrated attention.

Mirah hesitated before she said, "I am too ready to speak of troubles,

I think. It seems unkind to put anything painful into other people's

minds, unless one were sure it would hinder something worse. And

perhaps I am too hasty and fearful."

"Oh, my dear, mothers are made to like pain and trouble for the sake of

their children. Is it because the singing lessons are so few, and are

likely to fall off when the season comes to an end? Success in these

things can't come all at once." Mrs. Meyrick did not believe that she

was touching the real grief; but a guess that could be corrected would

make an easier channel for confidence.

"No, not that," said Mirah, shaking her head gently. "I have been a

little disappointed because so many ladies said they wanted me to give

them or their daughters lessons, and then I never heard of them again,

But perhaps after the holidays I shall teach in some schools. Besides,

you know, I am as rich as a princess now. I have not touched the

hundred pounds that Mrs. Klesmer gave me; and I should never be afraid

that Ezra would be in want of anything, because there is Mr. Deronda,"

and he said, 'It is the chief honor of my life that your brother will

share anything with me.' Oh, no! Ezra and I can have no fears for each

other about such things as food and clothing."

"But there is some other fear on your mind," said Mrs. Meyrick not

without divination--"a fear of something that may disturb your peace;

Don't be forecasting evil, dear child, unless it is what you can guard

against. Anxiety is good for nothing if we can't turn it into a

defense. But there's no defense against all the things that might be.

Have you any more reason for being anxious now than you had a month

ago?"

"Yes, I have," said Mirah. "I have kept it from Ezra. I have not dared

to tell him. Pray forgive me that I can't do without telling you. I

\_have\_ more reason for being anxious. It is five days ago now. I am

quite sure I saw my father."

Mrs. Meyrick shrank into a smaller space, packing her arms across her

chest and leaning forward--to hinder herself from pelting that father

with her worst epithets.

"The year has changed him," Mirah went on. "He had already been much

altered and worn in the time before I left him. You remember I said how

he used sometimes to cry. He was always excited one way or the other. I

have told Ezra everything that I told you, and he says that my father

had taken to gambling, which makes people easily distressed, and then

again exalted. And now--it was only a moment that I saw him--his face

was more haggard, and his clothes were shabby. He was with a much

worse-looking man, who carried something, and they were hurrying along

after an omnibus."

"Well, child, he did not see you, I hope?"

"No. I had just come from Mrs. Raymond's, and I was waiting to cross

near the Marble Arch. Soon he was on the omnibus and gone out of sight.

It was a dreadful moment. My old life seemed to have come back again,

and it was worse than it had ever been before. And I could not help

feeling it a new deliverance that he was gone out of sight without

knowing that I was there. And yet it hurt me that I was feeling so--it

seemed hateful in me--almost like words I once had to speak in a play,

that 'I had warmed my hands in the blood of my kindred.' For where

might my father be going? What may become of him? And his having a

daughter who would own him in spite of all, might have hindered the

worst. Is there any pain like seeing what ought to be the best things

in life turned into the worst? All those opposite feelings were meeting

and pressing against each other, and took up all my strength. No one

could act that. Acting is slow and poor to what we go through within. I

don't know how I called a cab. I only remember that I was in it when I

began to think, 'I cannot tell Ezra; he must not know.'"

"You are afraid of grieving him?" Mrs. Meyrick asked, when Mirah had

paused a little.

"Yes--and there is something more," said Mirah, hesitatingly, as if she

were examining her feeling before she would venture to speak of it. "I

want to tell you; I cannot tell any one else. I could not have told my

own mother: I should have closed it up before her. I feel shame for my

father, and it is perhaps strange--but the shame is greater before Ezra

than before any one else in the world. He desired me to tell him all

about my life, and I obeyed him. But it is always like a smart to me to

know that those things about my father are in Ezra's mind. And--can you

believe it? when the thought haunts me how it would be if my father

were to come and show himself before us both, what seems as if it would

scorch me most is seeing my father shrinking before Ezra. That is the

truth. I don't know whether it is a right feeling. But I can't help

thinking that I would rather try to maintain my father in secret, and

bear a great deal in that way, if I could hinder him from meeting my

brother."

"You must not encourage that feeling, Mirah," said Mrs. Meyrick,

hastily. "It would be very dangerous; it would be wrong. You must not

have concealment of that sort."

"But ought I now to tell Ezra that I have seen my father?" said Mirah,

with deprecation in her tone.

"No," Mrs. Meyrick answered, dubitatively. "I don't know that it is

necessary to do that. Your father may go away with the birds. It is not

clear that he came after you; you may never see him again. And then

your brother will have been spared a useless anxiety. But promise me

that if your father sees you--gets hold of you in any way again--and

you will let us all know. Promise me that solemnly, Mirah. I have a

right to ask it."

Mirah reflected a little, then leaned forward to put her hands in Mrs.

Meyrick's, and said, "Since you ask it, I do promise. I will bear this

feeling of shame. I have been so long used to think that I must bear

that sort of inward pain. But the shame for my father burns me more

when I think of his meeting Ezra." She was silent a moment or two, and

then said, in a new tone of yearning compassion, "And we are his

children--and he was once young like us--and my mother loved him. Oh! I

cannot help seeing it all close, and it hurts me like a cruelty."

Mirah shed no tears: the discipline of her whole life had been against

indulgence in such manifestation, which soon falls under the control of

strong motives; but it seemed that the more intense expression of

sorrow had entered into her voice. Mrs. Meyrick, with all her quickness

and loving insight, did not quite understand that filial feeling in

Mirah which had active roots deep below her indignation for the worst

offenses. She could conceive that a mother would have a clinging pity

and shame for a reprobate son, but she was out of patience with what

she held an exaggerated susceptibility on behalf of this father, whose

reappearance inclined her to wish him under the care of a turnkey.

Mirah's promise, however, was some security against her weakness.

That incident was the only reason that Mirah herself could have stated

for the hidden sadness which Hans had divined. Of one element in her

changed mood she could have given no definite account: it was something

as dim as the sense of approaching weather-change, and had extremely

slight external promptings, such as we are often ashamed to find all we

can allege in support of the busy constructions that go on within us,

not only without effort, but even against it, under the influence of

any blind emotional stirring. Perhaps the first leaven of uneasiness

was laid by Gwendolen's behavior on that visit which was entirely

superfluous as a means of engaging Mirah to sing, and could have no

other motive than the excited and strange questioning about Deronda.

Mirah had instinctively kept the visit a secret, but the active

remembrance of it had raised a new susceptibility in her, and made her

alive as she had never been before to the relations Deronda must have

with that society which she herself was getting frequent glimpses of

without belonging to it. Her peculiar life and education had produced

in her an extraordinary mixture of unworldliness, with knowledge of the

world's evil, and even this knowledge was a strange blending of direct

observation with the effects of reading and theatrical study. Her

memory was furnished with abundant passionate situation and intrigue,

which she never made emotionally her own, but felt a repelled aloofness

from, as she had done from the actual life around her. Some of that

imaginative knowledge began now to weave itself around Mrs. Grandcourt;

and though Mirah would admit no position likely to affect her reverence

for Deronda, she could not avoid a new painfully vivid association of

his general life with a world away from her own, where there might be

some involvement of his feeling and action with a woman like Gwendolen,

who was increasingly repugnant to her--increasingly, even after she had

ceased to see her; for liking and disliking can grow in meditation as

fast as in the more immediate kind of presence. Any disquietude

consciously due to the idea that Deronda's deepest care might be for

something remote not only from herself but even from his friendship for

her brother, she would have checked with rebuking questions:--What was

she but one who had shared his generous kindness with many others? and

his attachment to her brother, was it not begun late to be soon ended?

Other ties had come before, and others would remain after this had been

cut by swift-coming death. But her uneasiness had not reached that

point of self-recognition in which she would have been ashamed of it as

an indirect, presumptuous claim on Deronda's feeling. That she or any

one else should think of him as her possible lover was a conception

which had never entered her mind; indeed it was equally out of the

question with Mrs. Meyrick and the girls, who with Mirah herself

regarded his intervention in her life as something exceptional, and

were so impressed by his mission as her deliverer and guardian that

they would have held it an offense to him at his holding any other

relation toward her: a point of view which Hans also had readily

adopted. It is a little hard upon some men that they appear to sink for

us in becoming lovers. But precisely to this innocence of the Meyricks

was owing the disturbance of Mirah's unconsciousness. The first

occasion could hardly have been more trivial, but it prepared her

emotive nature for a deeper effect from what happened afterward.

It was when Anna Gascoigne, visiting the Meyricks; was led to speak of

her cousinship with Gwendolen. The visit had been arranged that Anna

might see Mirah; the three girls were at home with their mother, and

there was naturally a flux of talk among six feminine creatures, free

from the presence of a distorting male standard. Anna Gascoigne felt

herself much at home with the Meyrick girls, who knew what it was to

have a brother, and to be generally regarded as of minor importance in

the world; and she had told Rex that she thought the University very

nice, because brothers made friends there whose families were not rich

and grand, and yet (like the University) were very nice. The Meyricks

seemed to her almost alarmingly clever, and she consulted them much on

the best mode of teaching Lotta, confiding to them that she herself was

the least clever of her family. Mirah had lately come in, and there was

a complete bouquet of young faces around the tea-table--Hafiz, seated a

little aloft with large eyes on the alert, regarding the whole scene as

an apparatus for supplying his allowance of milk.

"Think of our surprise, Mirah," said Kate. "We were speaking of Mr.

Deronda and the Mallingers, and it turns out that Miss Gascoigne knows

them."

"I only knew about them," said Anna, a little flushed with excitement,

what she had heard and now saw of the lovely Jewess being an almost

startling novelty to her. "I have not even seen them. But some months

ago, my cousin married Sir Hugo Mallinger's nephew, Mr. Grandcourt, who

lived in Sir Hugo's place at Diplow, near us."

"There!" exclaimed Mab, clasping her hands. "Something must come of

that. Mrs. Grandcourt, the Vandyke duchess, is your cousin?"

"Oh, yes; I was her bridesmaid," said Anna. "Her mamma and mine are

sisters. My aunt was much richer before last year, but then she and

mamma lost all their fortune. Papa is a clergyman, you know, so it

makes very little difference to us, except that we keep no carriage,

and have no dinner parties--and I like it better. But it was very sad

for poor Aunt Davilow, for she could not live with us, because she has

four daughters besides Gwendolen; but then, when she married Mr.

Grandcourt, it did not signify so much, because of his being so rich."

"Oh, this finding out relationships is delightful!" said Mab. "It is

like a Chinese puzzle that one has to fit together. I feel sure

something wonderful may be made of it, but I can't tell what."

"Dear me, Mab," said Amy, "relationships must branch out. The only

difference is, that we happen to know some of the people concerned.

Such things are going on every day."

"And pray, Amy, why do you insist on the number nine being so

wonderful?" said Mab. "I am sure that is happening every day. Never

mind, Miss Gascoigne; please go on. And Mr. Deronda?--have you never

seen Mr. Deronda? You \_must\_ bring him in."

"No, I have not seen him," said Anna; "but he was at Diplow before my

cousin was married, and I have heard my aunt speaking of him to papa.

She said what you have been saying about him--only not so much: I mean,

about Mr. Deronda living with Sir Hugo Mallinger, and being so nice,

she thought. We talk a great deal about every one who comes near

Pennicote, because it is so seldom there is any one new. But I

remember, when I asked Gwendolen what she thought of Mr. Deronda, she

said, 'Don't mention it, Anna: but I think his hair is dark.' That was

her droll way of answering: she was always so lively. It is really

rather wonderful that I should come to hear so much about him, all

through Mr. Hans knowing Rex, and then my having the pleasure of

knowing you," Anna ended, looking at Mrs. Meyrick with a shy grace.

"The pleasure is on our side too; but the wonder would have been, if

you had come to this house without hearing of Mr. Deronda--wouldn't it,

Mirah?" said Mrs. Meyrick.

Mirah smiled acquiescently, but had nothing to say. A confused

discontent took possession of her at the mingling of names and images

to which she had been listening.

"My son calls Mrs. Grandcourt the Vandyke duchess," continued Mrs.

Meyrick, turning again to Anna; "he thinks her so striking and

picturesque."

"Yes," said Anna. "Gwendolen was always so beautiful--people fell

dreadfully in love with her. I thought it a pity, because it made them

unhappy."

"And how do you like Mr. Grandcourt, the happy lover?" said Mrs.

Meyrick, who, in her way, was as much interested as Mab in the hints

she had been hearing of vicissitude in in the life of a widow with

daughters.

"Papa approved of Gwendolen's accepting him, and my aunt says he is

very generous," said Anna, beginning with a virtuous intention of

repressing her own sentiments; but then, unable to resist a rare

occasion for speaking them freely, she went on--"else I should have

thought he was not very nice--rather proud, and not at all lively, like

Gwendolen. I should have thought some one younger and more lively would

have suited her better. But, perhaps, having a brother who seems to us

better than any one makes us think worse of others."

"Wait till you see Mr. Deronda," said Mab, nodding significantly.

"Nobody's brother will do after him."

"Our brothers \_must\_ do for people's husbands," said Kate, curtly,

"because they will not get Mr. Deronda. No woman will do for him to

marry."

"No woman ought to want him to marry him," said Mab, with indignation.

"\_I\_ never should. Fancy finding out that he had a tailor's bill, and

used boot-hooks, like Hans. Who ever thought of his marrying?"

"I have," said Kate. "When I drew a wedding for a frontispiece to

'Hearts and Diamonds,' I made a sort of likeness to him for the

bridegroom, and I went about looking for a grand woman who would do for

his countess, but I saw none that would not be poor creatures by the

side of him."

"You should have seen this Mrs. Grandcourt then," said Mrs. Meyrick.

"Hans says that she and Mr. Deronda set each other off when they are

side by side. She is tall and fair. But you know her, Mirah--you can

always say something descriptive. What do \_you\_ think of Mrs.

Grandcourt?"

"I think she is the \_Princess of Eboli\_ in \_Don Carlos\_," said Mirah,

with a quick intensity. She was pursuing an association in her own mind

not intelligible to her hearers--an association with a certain actress

as well as the part she represented.

"Your comparison is a riddle for me, my dear," said Mrs. Meyrick,

smiling.

"You said that Mrs. Grandcourt was tall and fair," continued Mirah,

slightly paler. "That is quite true."

Mrs. Meyrick's quick eye and ear detected something unusual, but

immediately explained it to herself. Fine ladies had often wounded

Mirah by caprices of manner and intention.

"Mrs. Grandcourt had thought of having lessons of Mirah," she said

turning to Anna. "But many have talked of having lessons, and then have

found no time. Fashionable ladies have too much work to do."

And the chat went on without further insistance on the \_Princess of

Eboli\_. That comparison escaped Mirah's lips under the urgency of a

pang unlike anything she had felt before. The conversation from the

beginning had revived unpleasant impressions, and Mrs. Meyrick's

suggestion of Gwendolen's figure by the side of Deronda's had the

stinging effect of a voice outside her, confirming her secret

conviction that this tall and fair woman had some hold on his lot. For

a long while afterward she felt as if she had had a jarring shock

through her frame.

In the evening, putting her cheek against her brother's shoulder as she

was sitting by him, while he sat propped up in bed under a new

difficulty of breathing, she said--

"Ezra, does it ever hurt your love for Mr. Deronda that so much of his

life was all hidden away from you--that he is amongst persons and cares

about persons who are all so unlike us--I mean unlike you?"

"No, assuredly no," said Mordecai. "Rather it is a precious thought to

me that he has a preparation which I lacked, and is an accomplished

Egyptian." Then, recollecting that his words had reference which his

sister must not yet understand, he added. "I have the more to give him,

since his treasure differs from mine. That is a blessedness in

friendship."

Mirah mused a little.

"Still," she said, "it would be a trial to your love for him if that

other part of his life were like a crowd in which he had got entangled,

so that he was carried away from you--I mean in his thoughts, and not

merely carried out of sight as he is now--and not merely for a little

while, but continually. How should you bear that! Our religion commands

us to bear. But how should you bear it?"

"Not well, my sister--not well; but it will never happen," said

Mordecai, looking at her with a tender smile. He thought that her heart

needed comfort on his account.

Mirah said no more. She mused over the difference between her own state

of mind and her brother's, and felt her comparative pettiness. Why

could she not be completely satisfied with what satisfied his larger

judgment? She gave herself no fuller reason than a painful sense of

unfitness--in what? Airy possibilities to which she could give no

outline, but to which one name and one figure gave the wandering

persistency of a blot in her vision. Here lay the vaguer source of the

hidden sadness rendered noticeable to Hans by some diminution of that

sweet ease, that ready joyousness of response in her speech and smile,

which had come with the new sense of freedom and safety, and had made

her presence like the freshly-opened daisies and clear bird-notes after

the rain. She herself regarded her uneasiness as a sort of ingratitude

and dullness of sensibility toward the great things that had been given

her in her new life; and whenever she threw more energy than usual into

her singing, it was the energy of indignation against the shallowness

of her own content. In that mood she once said, "Shall I tell you what

is the difference between you and me, Ezra? You are a spring in the

drought, and I am an acorn-cup; the waters of heaven fill me, but the

least little shake leaves me empty."

"Why, what has shaken thee?" said Mordecai. He fell into this antique

form of speech habitually in talking to his sister and to the Cohen

children.

"Thoughts," said Mirah; "thoughts that come like the breeze and shake

me--bad people, wrong things, misery--and how they might touch our

life."

"We must take our portion, Mirah. It is there. On whose shoulder would

we lay it, that we might be free?"

The one voluntary sign she made of her inward care was this distant

allusion.

CHAPTER LIII.

"My desolation does begin to make

A better life."

--SHAKESPEARE: \_Antony and Cleopatra.\_

Before Deronda was summoned to a second interview with his mother, a

day had passed in which she had only sent him a message to say that she

was not yet well enough to receive him again; but on the third morning

he had a note saying, "I leave to-day. Come and see me at once."

He was shown into the same room as before; but it was much darkened

with blinds and curtains. The Princess was not there, but she presently

entered, dressed in a loose wrap of some soft silk, in color a dusky

orange, her head again with black lace floating about it, her arms

showing themselves bare from under her wide sleeves. Her face seemed

even more impressive in the sombre light, the eyes larger, the lines

more vigorous. You might have imagined her a sorceress who would

stretch forth her wonderful hand and arm to mix youth-potions for

others, but scorned to mix them for herself, having had enough of youth.

She put her arms on her son's shoulders at once, and kissed him on both

cheeks, then seated herself among her cushions with an air of assured

firmness and dignity unlike her fitfulness in their first interview,

and told Deronda to sit down by her. He obeyed, saying, "You are quite

relieved now, I trust?"

"Yes, I am at ease again. Is there anything more that you would like to

ask me?" she said, with the matter of a queen rather than of a mother.

"Can I find the house in Genoa where you used to live with my

grandfather?" said Deronda.

"No," she answered, with a deprecating movement of her arm, "it is

pulled down--not to be found. But about our family, and where my father

lived at various times--you will find all that among the papers in the

chest, better than I can tell you. My father, I told you, was a

physician. My mother was a Morteira. I used to hear all those things

without listening. You will find them all. I was born amongst them

without my will. I banished them as soon as I could."

Deronda tried to hide his pained feeling, and said, "Anything else that

I should desire to know from you could only be what it is some

satisfaction to your own feeling to tell me."

"I think I have told you everything that could be demanded of me," said

the Princess, looking coldly meditative. It seemed as if she had

exhausted her emotion in their former interview. The fact was, she had

said to herself, "I have done it all. I have confessed all. I will not

go through it again. I will save myself from agitation." And she was

acting out that scheme.

But to Deronda's nature the moment was cruel; it made the filial

yearning of his life a disappointed pilgrimage to a shrine where there

were no longer the symbols of sacredness. It seemed that all the woman

lacking in her was present in him, as he said, with some tremor in his

voice--

"Then are we to part and I never be anything to you?"

"It is better so," said the Princess, in a softer, mellower voice.

"There could be nothing but hard duty for you, even if it were possible

for you to take the place of my son. You would not love me. Don't deny

it," she said, abruptly, putting up her hand. "I know what is the

truth. You don't like what I did. You are angry with me. You think I

robbed you of something. You are on your grandfather's side, and you

will always have a condemnation of me in your heart."

Deronda felt himself under a ban of silence. He rose from his seat by

her, preferring to stand, if he had to obey that imperious prohibition

of any tenderness. But his mother now looked up at him with a new

admiration in her glance, saying--

"You are wrong to be angry with me. You are the better for what I did."

After pausing a little, she added, abruptly, "And now tell me what you

shall do?"

"Do you mean now, immediately," said Deronda; "or as to the course of

my future life?"

"I mean in the future. What difference will it make to you that I have

told you about your birth?"

"A very great difference," said Deronda, emphatically. "I can hardly

think of anything that would make a greater difference."

"What shall you do then?" said the Princess, with more sharpness. "Make

yourself just like your grandfather--be what he wished you--turn

yourself into a Jew like him?"

"That is impossible. The effect of my education can never be done away

with. The Christian sympathies in which my mind was reared can never

die out of me," said Deronda, with increasing tenacity of tone. "But I

consider it my duty--it is the impulse of my feeling--to identify

myself, as far as possible, with my hereditary people, and if I can see

any work to be done for them that I can give my soul and hand to I

shall choose to do it."

His mother had her eyes fixed on him with a wondering speculation,

examining his face as if she thought that by close attention she could

read a difficult language there. He bore her gaze very firmly,

sustained by a resolute opposition, which was the expression of his

fullest self. She bent toward him a little, and said, with a decisive

emphasis--

"You are in love with a Jewess."

Deronda colored and said, "My reasons would be independent of any such

fact."

"I know better. I have seen what men are," said the Princess,

peremptorily. "Tell me the truth. She is a Jewess who will not accept

any one but a Jew. There \_are\_ a few such," she added, with a touch of

scorn.

Deronda had that objection to answer which we all have known in

speaking to those who are too certain of their own fixed

interpretations to be enlightened by anything we may say. But besides

this, the point immediately in question was one on which he felt a

repugnance either to deny or affirm. He remained silent, and she

presently said--

"You love her as your father loved me, and she draws you after her as I

drew him."

Those words touched Deronda's filial imagination, and some tenderness

in his glance was taken by his mother as an assent. She went on with

rising passion: "But I was leading him the other way. And now your

grandfather is getting his revenge."

"Mother," said Deronda, remonstrantly, "don't let us think of it in

that way. I will admit that there may come some benefit from the

education you chose for me. I prefer cherishing the benefit with

gratitude, to dwelling with resentment on the injury. I think it would

have been right that I should have been brought up with the

consciousness that I was a Jew, but it must always have been a good to

me to have as wide an instruction and sympathy as possible. And now,

you have restored me my inheritance--events have brought a fuller

restitution than you could have made--you have been saved from robbing

my people of my service and me of my duty: can you not bring your whole

soul to consent to this?"

Deronda paused in his pleading: his mother looked at him listeningly,

as if the cadence of his voice were taking her ear, yet she shook her

head slowly. He began again, even more urgently.

"You have told me that you sought what you held the best for me: open

your heart to relenting and love toward my grandfather, who sought what

he held the best for you."

"Not for me, no," she said, shaking her head with more absolute denial,

and folding her arms tightly. "I tell you, he never thought of his

daughter except as an instrument. Because I had wants outside his

purpose, I was to be put in a frame and tortured. If that is the right

law for the world, I will not say that I love it. If my acts were

wrong--if it is God who is exacting from me that I should deliver up

what I withheld--who is punishing me because I deceived my father and

did not warn him that I should contradict his trust--well, I have told

everything. I have done what I could. And \_your\_ soul consents. That is

enough. I have after all been the instrument my father wanted.--'I

desire a grandson who shall have a true Jewish heart. Every Jew should

rear his family as if he hoped that a Deliverer might spring from it.'"

In uttering these last sentences the Princess narrowed her eyes, waved

her head up and down, and spoke slowly with a new kind of chest-voice,

as if she were quoting unwillingly.

"Were those my grandfather's words?" said Deronda.

"Yes, yes; and you will find them written. I wanted to thwart him,"

said the Princess, with a sudden outburst of the passion she had shown

in the former interview. Then she added more slowly, "You would have me

love what I have hated from the time I was so high"--here she held her

left hand a yard from the floor.--"That can never be. But what does it

matter? His yoke has been on me, whether I loved it or not. You are the

grandson he wanted. You speak as men do--as if you felt yourself wise.

What does it all mean?"

Her tone was abrupt and scornful. Deronda, in his pained feeling, and

under the solemn urgency of the moment, had to keep a clutching

remembrance of their relationship, lest his words should become cruel.

He began in a deep entreating tone:

"Mother, don't say that I feel myself wise. We are set in the midst of

difficulties. I see no other way to get any clearness than by being

truthful--not by keeping back facts which may--which should carry

obligation within them--which should make the only guidance toward

duty. No wonder if such facts come to reveal themselves in spite of

concealments. The effects prepared by generations are likely to triumph

over a contrivance which would bend them all to the satisfaction of

self. Your will was strong, but my grandfather's trust which you

accepted and did not fulfill--what you call his yoke--is the expression

of something stronger, with deeper, farther-spreading roots, knit into

the foundations of sacredness for all men. You renounced me--you still

banish me--as a son"--there was an involuntary movement of indignation

in Deronda's voice--"But that stronger Something has determined that I

shall be all the more the grandson whom also you willed to annihilate."

His mother was watching him fixedly, and again her face gathered

admiration. After a moment's silence she said, in a low, persuasive

tone--

"Sit down again," and he obeyed, placing himself beside her. She laid

her hand on his shoulder and went on--

"You rebuke me. Well--I am the loser. And you are angry because I

banish you. What could you do for me but weary your own patience? Your

mother is a shattered woman. My sense of life is little more than a

sense of what was--except when the pain is present. You reproach me

that I parted with you. I had joy enough without you then. Now you are

come back to me, and I cannot make you a joy. Have you the cursing

spirit of the Jew in you? Are you not able to forgive me? Shall you be

glad to think that I am punished because I was not a Jewish mother to

you?"

"How can you ask me that?" said Deronda, remonstrantly. "Have I not

besought you that I might now at least be a son to you? My grief is

that you have declared me helpless to comfort you. I would give up much

that is dear for the sake of soothing your anguish."

"You shall give up nothing," said his mother, with the hurry of

agitation. "You shall be happy. You shall let me think of you as happy.

I shall have done you no harm. You have no reason to curse me. You

shall feel for me as they feel for the dead whom they say prayers

for--you shall long that I may be freed from all suffering--from all

punishment. And I shall see you instead of always seeing your

grandfather. Will any harm come to me because I broke his trust in the

daylight after he was gone into darkness? I cannot tell:--if you think

\_Kaddish\_ will help me--say it, say it. You will come between me and

the dead. When I am in your mind, you will look as you do now--always

as if you were a tender son--always--as if I had been a tender mother."

She seemed resolved that her agitation should not conquer her, but he

felt her hand trembling on his shoulder. Deep, deep compassion hemmed

in all words. With a face of beseeching he put his arm around her and

pressed her head tenderly under his. They sat so for some moments. Then

she lifted her head again and rose from her seat with a great sigh, as

if in that breath she were dismissing a weight of thoughts. Deronda,

standing in front of her, felt that the parting was near. But one of

her swift alternations had come upon his mother.

"Is she beautiful?" she said, abruptly.

"Who?" said Deronda, changing color.

"The woman you love."

It was not a moment for deliberate explanation. He was obliged to say,

"Yes."

"Not ambitious?"

"No, I think not."

"Not one who must have a path of her own?"

"I think her nature is not given to make great claims."

"She is not like that?" said the Princess, taking from her wallet a

miniature with jewels around it, and holding it before her son. It was

her own in all the fire of youth, and as Deronda looked at it with

admiring sadness, she said, "Had I not a rightful claim to be something

more than a mere daughter and mother? The voice and the genius matched

the face. Whatever else was wrong, acknowledge that I had a right to be

an artist, though my father's will was against it. My nature gave me a

charter."

"I do acknowledge that," said Deronda, looking from the miniature to

her face, which even in its worn pallor had an expression of living

force beyond anything that the pencil could show.

"Will you take the portrait?" said the Princess, more gently. "If she

is a kind woman, teach her to think of me kindly."

"I shall be grateful for the portrait," said Deronda, "but--I ought to

say, I have no assurance that she whom I love will have any love for

me. I have kept silence."

"Who and what is she?" said the mother. The question seemed a command.

"She was brought up as a singer for the stage," said Deronda, with

inward reluctance. "Her father took her away early from her mother, and

her life has been unhappy. She is very young--only twenty. Her father

wished to bring her up in disregard--even in dislike of her Jewish

origin, but she has clung with all her affection to the memory of her

mother and the fellowship of her people."

"Ah, like you. She is attached to the Judaism she knows nothing of,"

said the Princess, peremptorily. "That is poetry--fit to last through

an opera night. Is she fond of her artist's life--is her singing worth

anything?"

"Her singing is exquisite. But her voice is not suited to the stage. I

think that the artist's life has been made repugnant to her."

"Why, she is made for you then. Sir Hugo said you were bitterly against

being a singer, and I can see that you would never have let yourself be

merged in a wife, as your father was."

"I repeat," said Deronda, emphatically--"I repeat that I have no

assurance of her love for me, of the possibility that we can ever be

united. Other things--painful issues may lie before me. I have always

felt that I should prepare myself to renounce, not cherish that

prospect. But I suppose I might feel so of happiness in general.

Whether it may come or not, one should try and prepare one's self to do

without it."

"Do you feel in that way?" said his mother, laying her hands on his

shoulders, and perusing his face, while she spoke in a low meditative

tone, pausing between her sentences. "Poor boy!----I wonder how it

would have been if I had kept you with me----whether you would have

turned your heart to the old things against mine----and we should have

quarreled----your grandfather would have been in you----and you would

have hampered my life with your young growth from the old root."

"I think my affection might have lasted through all our quarreling,"

said Deronda, saddened more and more, "and that would not have

hampered--surely it would have enriched your life."

"Not then, not then----I did not want it then----I might have been glad

of it now," said the mother, with a bitter melancholy, "if I could have

been glad of anything."

"But you love your other children, and they love you?" said Deronda,

anxiously.

"Oh, yes," she answered, as to a question about a matter of course,

while she folded her arms again. "But,"----she added in a deeper

tone,----"I am not a loving woman. That is the truth. It is a talent to

love--I lack it. Others have loved me--and I have acted their love. I

know very well what love makes of men and women--it is subjection. It

takes another for a larger self, enclosing this one,"--she pointed to

her own bosom. "I was never willingly subject to any man. Men have been

subject to me."

"Perhaps the man who was subject was the happier of the two," said

Deronda--not with a smile, but with a grave, sad sense of his mother's

privation.

"Perhaps--but I \_was\_ happy--for a few years I was happy. If I had not

been afraid of defeat and failure, I might have gone on. I

miscalculated. What then? It is all over. Another life! Men talk of

'another life,' as if it only began on the other side of the grave. I

have long entered on another life." With the last words she raised her

arms till they were bare to the elbow, her brow was contracted in one

deep fold, her eyes were closed, her voice was smothered: in her dusky

flame-colored garment, she looked like a dreamed visitant from some

region of departed mortals.

Deronda's feeling was wrought to a pitch of acuteness in which he was

no longer quite master of himself. He gave an audible sob. His mother,

opened her eyes, and letting her hands again rest on his shoulders,

said--

"Good-bye, my son, good-bye. We shall hear no more of each other. Kiss

me."

He clasped his arms round her neck, and they kissed each other.

Deronda did not know how he got out of the room. He felt an older man.

All his boyish yearnings and anxieties about his mother had vanished.

He had gone through a tragic experience which must forever solemnize

his life and deepen the significance of the acts by which he bound

himself to others.

CHAPTER LIV.

"The unwilling brain

Feigns often what it would not; and we trust

Imagination with such phantasies

As the tongue dares not fashion into words;

Which have no words, their horror makes them dim

To the mind's eye."

--SHELLEY.

Madonna Pia, whose husband, feeling himself injured by her, took her to

his castle amid the swampy flats of the Maremma and got rid of her

there, makes a pathetic figure in Dante's Purgatory, among the sinners

who repented at the last and desire to be remembered compassionately by

their fellow-countrymen. We know little about the grounds of mutual

discontent between the Siennese couple, but we may infer with some

confidence that the husband had never been a very delightful companion,

and that on the flats of the Maremma his disagreeable manners had a

background which threw them out remarkably; whence in his desire to

punish his wife to the unmost, the nature of things was so far against

him that in relieving himself of her he could not avoid making the

relief mutual. And thus, without any hardness to the poor Tuscan lady,

who had her deliverance long ago, one may feel warranted in thinking of

her with a less sympathetic interest than of the better known Gwendolen

who, instead of being delivered from her errors or earth and cleansed

from their effect in purgatory, is at the very height of her

entanglement in those fatal meshes which are woven within more closely

than without, and often make the inward torture disproportionate to

what is discernable as outward cause.

In taking his wife with him on a yachting expedition, Grandcourt had no

intention to get rid of her; on the contrary, he wanted to feel more

securely that she was his to do as he liked with, and to make her feel

it also. Moreover, he was himself very fond of yachting: its dreamy

do-nothing absolutism, unmolested by social demands, suited his

disposition, and he did not in the least regard it as an equivalent for

the dreariness of the Maremma. He had his reasons for carrying

Gwendolen out of reach, but they were not reasons that can seem black

in the mere statement. He suspected a growing spirit of opposition in

her, and his feeling about the sentimental inclination she betrayed for

Deronda was what in another man he would have called jealously. In

himself it seemed merely a resolution to put an end to such foolery as

must have been going on in that prearranged visit of Deronda's which he

had divined and interrupted.

And Grandcourt might have pleaded that he was perfectly justified in

taking care that his wife should fulfill the obligations she had

accepted. Her marriage was a contract where all the ostensible

advantages were on her side, and it was only of those advantages that

her husband should use his power to hinder her from any injurious self

committal or unsuitable behavior. He knew quite well that she had not

married him--had not overcome her repugnance to certain facts--out of

love to him personally; he had won her by the rank and luxuries he had

to give her, and these she had got: he had fulfilled his side of the

contract.

And Gwendolen, we know, was thoroughly aware of the situation. She

could not excuse herself by saying that there had been a tacit part of

the contract on her side--namely, that she meant to rule and have her

own way. With all her early indulgence in the disposition to dominate,

she was not one of the narrow-brained women who through life regard all

their own selfish demands as rights, and every claim upon themselves as

an injury. She had a root of conscience in her, and the process of

purgatory had begun for her on the green earth: she knew that she had

been wrong.

But now enter into the soul of this young creature as she found

herself, with the blue Mediterranean dividing her from the world, on

the tiny plank-island of a yacht, the domain of the husband to whom she

felt that she had sold herself, and had been paid the strict

price--nay, paid more than she had dared to ask in the handsome

maintenance of her mother:--the husband to whom she had sold her

truthfulness and sense of justice, so that he held them throttled into

silence, collared and dragged behind him to witness what he would,

without remonstrance.

What had she to complain of? The yacht was of the prettiest; the cabin

fitted up to perfection, smelling of cedar, soft-cushioned, hung with

silk, expanded with mirrors; the crew such as suited an elegant toy,

one of them having even ringlets, as well as a bronze complexion and

fine teeth; and Mr. Lush was not there, for he had taken his way back

to England as soon as he had seen all and everything on board.

Moreover, Gwendolen herself liked the sea: it did not make her ill; and

to observe the rigging of the vessel and forecast the necessary

adjustments was a sort of amusement that might have gratified her

activity and enjoyment of imaginary rule; the weather was fine, and

they were coasting southward, where even the rain-furrowed,

heat-cracked clay becomes gem-like with purple shadows, and where one

may float between blue and blue in an open-eyed dream that the world

has done with sorrow.

But what can still that hunger of the heart which sickens the eye for

beauty, and makes sweet-scented ease an oppression? What sort of Moslem

paradise would quiet the terrible fury of moral repulsion and cowed

resistance which, like an eating pain intensifying into torture,

concentrates the mind in that poisonous misery? While Gwendolen,

throned on her cushions at evening, and beholding the glory of sea and

sky softening as if with boundless love around her, was hoping that

Grandcourt in his march up and down was not going to pause near her,

not going to look at her or speak to her, some woman, under a smoky

sky, obliged to consider the price of eggs in arranging her dinner, was

listening for the music of a footstep that would remove all risk from

her foretaste of joy; some couple, bending cheek by cheek, over a bit

of work done by the one and delighted in by the other, were reckoning

the earnings that would make them rich enough for a holiday among the

furze and heather.

Had Grandcourt the least conception of what was going on in the breast

of his wife? He conceived that she did not love him; but was that

necessary? She was under his power, and he was not accustomed to soothe

himself, as some cheerfully-disposed persons are, with the conviction

that he was very generally and justly beloved. But what lay quite away

from his conception was, that she could have any special repulsion for

him personally. How could she? He himself knew what personal repulsion

was--nobody better; his mind was much furnished with a sense of what

brutes his fellow-creatures were, both masculine and feminine; what

odious familiarities they had, what smirks, what modes of flourishing

their handkerchiefs, what costume, what lavender water, what bulging

eyes, and what foolish notions of making themselves agreeable by

remarks which were not wanted. In this critical view of mankind there

was an affinity between him and Gwendolen before their marriage, and we

know that she had been attractingly wrought upon by the refined

negations he presented to her. Hence he understood her repulsion for

Lush. But how was he to understand or conceive her present repulsion

for Henleigh Grandcourt? Some men bring themselves to believe, and not

merely maintain, the non-existence of an external world; a few others

believe themselves objects of repulsion to a woman without being told

so in plain language. But Grandcourt did not belong to this eccentric

body of thinkers. He had all his life had reason to take a flattering

view of his own attractiveness, and to place himself in fine antithesis

to the men who, he saw at once, must be revolting to a woman of taste.

He had no idea of moral repulsion, and could not have believed, if he

had been told it, that there may be a resentment and disgust which will

gradually make beauty more detestable than ugliness, through

exasperation at that outward virtue in which hateful things can flaunt

themselves or find a supercilious advantage.

How, then, could Grandcourt divine what was going on in Gwendolen's

breast?

For their behavior to each other scandalized no observer--not even the

foreign maid, warranted against sea-sickness; nor Grandcourt's own

experienced valet: still less the picturesque crew, who regarded them

as a model couple in high life. Their companionship consisted chiefly

in a well-bred silence. Grandcourt had no humorous observations at

which Gwendolen could refuse to smile, no chit-chat to make small

occasions of dispute. He was perfectly polite in arranging an

additional garment over her when needful, and in handing her any object

that he perceived her to need, and she could not fall into the

vulgarity of accepting or rejecting such politeness rudely.

Grandcourt put up his telescope and said, "There's a plantation of

sugar-canes at the foot of that rock; should you like to look?"

Gwendolen said, "Yes, please," remembering that she must try and

interest herself in sugar-canes as something outside her personal

affairs. Then Grandcourt would walk up and down and smoke for a long

while, pausing occasionally to point out a sail on the horizon, and at

last would seat himself and look at Gwendolen with his narrow immovable

gaze, as if she were part of the complete yacht; while she, conscious

of being looked at was exerting her ingenuity not to meet his eyes. At

dinner he would remark that the fruit was getting stale, and they must

put in somewhere for more; or, observing that she did not drink the

wine, he asked her if she would like any other kind better. A lady was

obliged to respond to these things suitably; and even if she had not

shrunk from quarrelling on other grounds, quarreling with Grandcourt

was impossible; she might as well have made angry remarks to a

dangerous serpent ornamentally coiled in her cabin without invitation.

And what sort of dispute could a woman of any pride and dignity begin

on a yacht?

Grandcourt had intense satisfaction in leading his wife captive after

this fashion; it gave their life on a small scale a royal

representation and publicity in which every thing familiar was got rid

of, and every body must do what was expected of them whatever might be

their private protest--the protest (kept strictly private) adding to

the piquancy of despotism.

To Gwendolen, who even in the freedom of her maiden time, had had very

faint glimpses of any heroism or sublimity, the medium that now thrust

itself everywhere before her view was this husband and her relation to

him. The beings closest to us, whether in love or hate, are often

virtually our interpreters of the world, and some feather-headed

gentleman or lady whom in passing we regret to take as legal tender for

a human being, may be acting as a melancholy theory of life in the

minds of those who live with them--like a piece of yellow and wavy

glass that distorts form and makes color an affliction. Their trivial

sentences, their petty standards, their low suspicions, their loveless

\_ennui\_, may be making somebody else's life no better than a promenade

through a pantheon of ugly idols. Gwendolen had that kind of window

before her, affecting the distant equally with the near. Some unhappy

wives are soothed by the possibility that they may become mothers; but

Gwendolen felt that to desire a child for herself would have been a

consenting to the completion of the injury she had been guilty of. She

was reduced to dread lest she should become a mother. It was not the

image of a new sweetly-budding life that came as a vision of

deliverance from the monotony of distaste: it was an image of another

sort. In the irritable, fluctuating stages of despair, gleams of hope

came in the form of some possible accident. To dwell on the benignity

of accident was a refuge from worse temptation.

The embitterment of hatred is often as unaccountable to onlookers as

the growth of devoted love, and it not only seems but is really out of

direct relation with any outward causes to be alleged. Passion is of

the nature of seed, and finds nourishment within, tending to a

predominance which determines all currents toward itself, and makes the

whole life its tributary. And the intensest form of hatred is that

rooted in fear, which compels to silence and drives vehemence into a

constructive vindictiveness, an imaginary annihilation of the detested

object, something like the hidden rites of vengeance with which the

persecuted have made a dark vent for their rage, and soothed their

suffering into dumbness. Such hidden rites went on in the secrecy of

Gwendolen's mind, but not with soothing effect--rather with the effect

of a struggling terror. Side by side with the dread of her husband had

grown the self-dread, which urged her to flee from the pursuing images

wrought by her pent-up impulse. The vision of her past wrong-doing, and

what it had brought on her, came with a pale ghastly illumination over

every imagined deed that was a rash effort at freedom, such as she had

made in her marriage. Moreover, she had learned to see all her acts

through the impression they would make on Deronda: whatever relief

might come to her, she could not sever it from the judgment of her that

would be created in his mind. Not one word of flattery, of indulgence,

of dependence on her favor, could be fastened on by her in all their

intercourse, to weaken his restraining power over her (in this way

Deronda's effort over himself was repaid); and amid the dreary

uncertainties of her spoiled life the possible remedies that lay in his

mind, nay, the remedy that lay in her feeling for him, made her only

hope. He seemed to her a terrible-browed angel, from whom she could not

think of concealing any deed so as to win an ignorant regard from him:

it belonged to the nature of their relation that she should be

truthful, for his power over her had begun in the raising of a

self-discontent which could be satisfied only by genuine change. But in

no concealment had she now any confidence: her vision of what she had

to dread took more decidedly than ever the form of some fiercely

impulsive deed, committed as in a dream that she would instantaneously

wake from to find the effects real though the images had been false: to

find death under her hands, but instead of darkness, daylight; instead

of satisfied hatred, the dismay of guilt; instead of freedom, the palsy

of a new terror--a white dead face from which she was forever trying to

flee and forever held back. She remembered Deronda's words: they were

continually recurring in her thought--

"Turn your fear into a safeguard. Keep your dread fixed on the idea of

increasing your remorse. \* \* \* Take your fear as a safeguard. It is

like quickness of hearing. It may make consequences passionately

present to you."

And so it was. In Gwendolen's consciousness temptation and dread met

and stared like two pale phantoms, each seeing itself in the

other--each obstructed by its own image; and all the while her fuller

self beheld the apparitions and sobbed for deliverance from them.

Inarticulate prayers, no more definite than a cry, often swept out from

her into the vast silence, unbroken except by her husband's breathing

or the plash of the wave or the creaking of the masts; but if ever she

thought of definite help, it took the form of Deronda's presence and

words, of the sympathy he might have for her, of the direction he might

give her. It was sometimes after a white-lipped fierce-eyed temptation

with murdering fingers had made its demon-visit that these best moments

of inward crying and clinging for rescue would come to her, and she

would lie with wide-open eyes in which the rising tears seemed a

blessing, and the thought, "I will not mind if I can keep from getting

wicked," seemed an answer to the indefinite prayer.

So the days passed, taking with them light breezes beyond and about the

Balearic Isles, and then to Sardinia, and then with gentle change

persuading them northward again toward Corsica. But this floating,

gentle-wafted existence, with its apparently peaceful influences, was

becoming as bad as a nightmare to Gwendolen.

"How long are we to be yachting?" she ventured to ask one day after

they had been touching at Ajaccio, and the mere fact of change in going

ashore had given her a relief from some of the thoughts which seemed

now to cling about the very rigging of the vessel, mix with the air in

the red silk cabin below, and make the smell of the sea odious.

"What else should we do?" said Grandcourt. "I'm not tired of it. I

don't see why we shouldn't stay out any length of time. There's less to

bore one in this way. And where would you go to? I'm sick of foreign

places. And we shall have enough of Ryelands. Would you rather be at

Ryeland's?"

"Oh, no," said Gwendolen, indifferently, finding all places alike

undescribable as soon as she imagined herself and her husband in them.

"I only wondered how long you would like this."

"I like yachting longer than anything else," said Grandcourt; "and I

had none last year. I suppose you are beginning to tire of it. Women

are so confoundedly whimsical. They expect everything to give way to

them."

"Oh, dear, no!" said Gwendolen, letting out her scorn in a flute-like

tone. "I never expect you to give way."

"Why should I?" said Grandcourt, with his inward voice, looking at her,

and then choosing an orange--for they were at table.

She made up her mind to a length of yatching that she could not see

beyond; but the next day, after a squall which had made her rather ill

for the first time, he came down to her and said--

"There's been the devil's own work in the night. The skipper says we

shall have to stay at Genoa for a week while things are set right."

"Do you mind that?" said Gwendolen, who lay looking very white amidst

her white drapery.

"I should think so. Who wants to be broiling at Genoa?"

"It will be a change," said Gwendolen, made a little incautious by her

languor.

"\_I\_ don't want any change. Besides, the place is intolerable; and one

can't move along the roads. I shall go out in a boat, as I used to do,

and manage it myself. One can get a few hours every day in that way

instead of striving in a damnable hotel."

Here was a prospect which held hope in it. Gwendolen thought of hours

when she would be alone, since Grandcourt would not want to take her in

the said boat, and in her exultation at this unlooked-for relief, she

had wild, contradictory fancies of what she might do with her

freedom--that "running away" which she had already innumerable times

seen to be a worse evil than any actual endurance, now finding new

arguments as an escape from her worse self. Also, visionary relief on a

par with the fancy of a prisoner that the night wind may blow down the

wall of his prison and save him from desperate devices, insinuated

itself as a better alternative, lawful to wish for.

The fresh current of expectation revived her energies, and enabled her

to take all things with an air of cheerfulness and alacrity that made a

change marked enough to be noticed by her husband. She watched through

the evening lights to the sinking of the moon with less of awed

loneliness than was habitual to her--nay, with a vague impression that

in this mighty frame of things there might be some preparation of

rescue for her. Why not?--since the weather had just been on her side.

This possibility of hoping, after her long fluctuation amid fears, was

like a first return of hunger to the long-languishing patient.

She was waked the next morning by the casting of the anchor in the port

of Genoa--waked from a strangely-mixed dream in which she felt herself

escaping over the Mont Cenis, and wondering to find it warmer even in

the moonlight on the snow, till suddenly she met Deronda, who told her

to go back.

In an hour or so from that dream she actually met Deronda. But is was

on the palatial staircase of the \_Italia\_, where she was feeling warm

in her light woolen dress and straw hat; and her husband was by her

side.

There was a start of surprise in Deronda before he could raise his hat

and pass on. The moment did not seem to favor any closer greeting, and

the circumstances under which they had last parted made him doubtful

whether Grandcourt would be civilly inclined to him.

The doubt might certainly have been changed into a disagreeable

certainty, for Grandcourt on this unaccountable appearance of Deronda

at Genoa of all places, immediately tried to conceive how there could

have been an arrangement between him and Gwendolen. It is true that

before they were well in their rooms, he had seen how difficult it was

to shape such an arrangement with any probability, being too

cool-headed to find it at once easily credible that Gwendolen had not

only while in London hastened to inform Deronda of the yachting

project, but had posted a letter to him from Marseilles or Barcelona,

advising him to travel to Genoa in time for the chance of meeting her

there, or of receiving a letter from her telling of some other

destination--all which must have implied a miraculous foreknowledge in

her, and in Deronda a bird-like facility in flying about and perching

idly. Still he was there, and though Grandcourt would not make a fool

of himself by fabrications that others might call preposterous, he was

not, for all that, disposed to admit fully that Deronda's presence was,

so far as Gwendolen was concerned, a mere accident. It was a disgusting

fact; that was enough; and no doubt she was well pleased. A man out of

temper does not wait for proofs before feeling toward all things

animate and inanimate as if they were in a conspiracy against him, but

at once threshes his horse or kicks his dog in consequence. Grandcourt

felt toward Gwendolen and Deronda as if he knew them to be in a

conspiracy against him, and here was an event in league with them. What

he took for clearly certain--and so far he divined the truth--was that

Gwendolen was now counting on an interview with Deronda whenever her

husband's back was turned.

As he sat taking his coffee at a convenient angle for observing her, he

discerned something which he felt sure was the effect of a secret

delight--some fresh ease in moving and speaking, some peculiar meaning

in her eyes, whatever she looked on. Certainly her troubles had not

marred her beauty. Mrs. Grandcourt was handsomer than Gwendolen

Harleth: her grace and expression were informed by a greater variety of

inward experience, giving new play to her features, new attitudes in

movement and repose; her whole person and air had the nameless

something which often makes a woman more interesting after marriage

than before, less confident that all things are according to her

opinion, and yet with less of deer-like shyness--more fully a human

being.

This morning the benefits of the voyage seemed to be suddenly revealing

themselves in a new elasticity of mien. As she rose from the table and

put her two heavily-jewelled hands on each side of her neck, according

to her wont, she had no art to conceal that sort of joyous expectation

which makes the present more bearable than usual, just as when a man

means to go out he finds it easier to be amiable to the family for a

quarter of an hour beforehand. It is not impossible that a terrier

whose pleasure was concerned would perceive those amiable signs and

know their meaning--know why his master stood in a peculiar way, talked

with alacrity, and even had a peculiar gleam in his eye, so that on the

least movement toward the door, the terrier would scuttle to be in

time. And, in dog fashion, Grandcourt discerned the signs of

Gwendolen's expectation, interpreting them with the narrow correctness

which leaves a world of unknown feeling behind.

"A--just ring, please, and tell Gibbs to order some dinner for us at

three," said Grandcourt, as he too rose, took out a cigar, and then

stretched his hand toward the hat that lay near. "I'm going to send

Angus to find a little sailing-boat for us to go out in; one that I can

manage, with you at the tiller. It's uncommonly pleasant these fine

evenings--the least boring of anything we can do."

Gwendolen turned cold. There was not only the cruel disappointment;

there was the immediate conviction that her husband had determined to

take her because he would not leave her out of his sight; and probably

this dual solitude in a boat was the more attractive to him because it

would be wearisome to her. They were not on the plank-island; she felt

it the more possible to begin a contest. But the gleaming content had

died out of her. There was a change in her like that of a glacier after

sunset.

"I would rather not go in the boat," she said. "Take some one else with

you."

"Very well; if you don't go, I shall not go," said Grandcourt. "We

shall stay suffocating here, that's all."

"I can't bear to go in a boat," said Gwendolen, angrily.

"That is a sudden change," said Grandcourt, with a slight sneer. "But,

since you decline, we shall stay indoors."

He laid down his hat again, lit his cigar, and walked up and down the

room, pausing now and then to look out of the windows. Gwendolen's

temper told her to persist. She knew very well now that Grandcourt

would not go without her; but if he must tyrannize over her, he should

not do it precisely in the way he would choose. She would oblige him to

stay in the hotel. Without speaking again, she passed into the

adjoining bedroom and threw herself into a chair with her anger, seeing

no purpose or issue--only feeling that the wave of evil had rushed back

upon her, and dragged her away from her momentary breathing-place.

Presently Grandcourt came in with his hat on, but threw it off and sat

down sideways on a chair nearly in front of her, saying, in his

superficial drawl--

"Have you come round yet? or do you find it agreeable to be out of

temper. You make things uncommonly pleasant for me."

"Why do you want to make them unpleasant for \_me\_?" said Gwendolen,

getting helpless again, and feeling the hot tears rise.

"Now, will you be good enough to say what it is you have to complain

of?" said Grandcourt, looking into her eyes, and using his most inward

voice. "Is it that I stay indoors when you stay?"

She could give no answer. The sort of truth that made any excuse for

her anger could not be uttered. In the conflict of despair and

humiliation she began to sob, and the tears rolled down her cheeks--a

form of agitation which she had never shown before in her husband's

presence.

"I hope this is useful," said Grandcourt, after a moment or two. "All I

can say is, it's most confoundedly unpleasant. What the devil women can

see in this kind of thing, I don't know. \_You\_ see something to be got

by it, of course. All I can see is, that we shall be shut up here when

we might have been having a pleasant sail."

"Let us go, then," said Gwendolen, impetuously. "Perhaps we shall be

drowned." She began to sob again.

This extraordinary behavior, which had evidently some relation to

Deronda, gave more definiteness to Grandcourt's conclusions. He drew

his chair quite close in front of her, and said, in a low tone, "Just

be quiet and listen, will you?"

There seemed to be a magical effect in this close vicinity. Gwendolen

shrank and ceased to sob. She kept her eyelids down and clasped her

hands tightly.

"Let us understand each other," said Grandcourt, in the same tone. "I

know very well what this nonsense means. But if you suppose I am going

to let you make a fool of me, just dismiss that notion from your mind.

What are you looking forward to, if you can't behave properly as my

wife? There is disgrace for you, if you like to have it, but I don't

know anything else; and as to Deronda, it's quite clear that he hangs

back from you."

"It's all false!" said Gwendolen, bitterly. "You don't in the least

imagine what is in my mind. I have seen enough of the disgrace that

comes in that way. And you had better leave me at liberty to speak with

any one I like. It will be better for you."

"You will allow me to judge of that," said Grandcourt, rising and

moving to a little distance toward the window, but standing there

playing with his whiskers as if he were awaiting something.

Gwendolen's words had so clear and tremendous a meaning for herself

that she thought they must have expressed it to Grandcourt, and had no

sooner uttered them than she dreaded their effect. But his soul was

garrisoned against presentiments and fears: he had the courage and

confidence that belong to domination, and he was at that moment feeling

perfectly satisfied that he held his wife with bit and bridle. By the

time they had been married a year she would cease to be restive. He

continued standing with his air of indifference, till she felt her

habitual stifling consciousness of having an immovable obstruction in

her life, like the nightmare of beholding a single form that serves to

arrest all passage though the wide country lies open.

"What decision have you come to?" he said, presently looking at her.

"What orders shall I give?"

"Oh, let us go," said Gwendolen. The walls had begun to be an

imprisonment, and while there was breath in this man he would have the

mastery over her. His words had the power of thumb-screws and the cold

touch of the rock. To resist was to act like a stupid animal unable to

measure results.

So the boat was ordered. She even went down to the quay again with him

to see it before midday. Grandcourt had recovered perfect quietude of

temper, and had a scornful satisfaction in the attention given by the

nautical groups to the \_milord\_, owner of the handsome yacht which had

just put in for repairs, and who being an Englishman was naturally so

at home on the sea that he could manage a sail with the same ease that

he could manage a horse. The sort of exultation he had discerned in

Gwendolen this morning she now thought that she discerned in him; and

it was true that he had set his mind on this boating, and carried out

his purpose as something that people might not expect him to do, with

the gratified impulse of a strong will which had nothing better to

exert itself upon. He had remarkable physical courage, and was proud of

it--or rather he had a great contempt for the coarser, bulkier men who

generally had less. Moreover, he was ruling that Gwendolen should go

with him.

And when they came down again at five o'clock, equipped for their

boating, the scene was as good as a theatrical representation for all

beholders. This handsome, fair-skinned English couple, manifesting the

usual eccentricity of their nation, both of them proud, pale, and calm,

without a smile on their faces, moving like creatures who were

fulfilling a supernatural destiny--it was a thing to go out and see, a

thing to paint. The husband's chest, back, and arms, showed very well

in his close-fitting dress, and the wife was declared to be a statue.

Some suggestions were proffered concerning a possible change in the

breeze, and the necessary care in putting about, but Grandcourt's

manner made the speakers understand that they were too officious, and

that he knew better than they.

Gwendolen, keeping her impassable air, as they moved away from the

strand, felt her imagination obstinately at work. She was not afraid of

any outward dangers--she was afraid of her own wishes which were taking

shapes possible and impossible, like a cloud of demon-faces. She was

afraid of her own hatred, which under the cold iron touch that had

compelled her to-day had gathered a fierce intensity. As she sat

guiding the tiller under her husband's eyes, doing just what he told

her, the strife within her seemed like her own effort to escape from

herself. She clung to the thought of Deronda: she persuaded herself

that he would not go away while she was there--he knew that she needed

help. The sense that he was there would save her from acting out the

evil within. And yet quick, quick, came images, plans of evil that

would come again and seize her in the night, like furies preparing the

deed that they would straightway avenge.

They were taken out of the port and carried eastward by a gentle

breeze. Some clouds tempered the sunlight, and the hour was always

deepening toward the supreme beauty of evening. Sails larger and

smaller changed their aspect like sensitive things, and made a cheerful

companionship, alternately near and far. The grand city shone more

vaguely, the mountains looked out above it, and there was stillness as

in an island sanctuary. Yet suddenly Gwendolen let her hands fall, and

said in a scarcely audible tone, "God help me!"

"What is the matter?" said Grandcourt, not distinguishing the words.

"Oh, nothing," said Gwendolen, rousing herself from her momentary

forgetfulness and resuming the ropes.

"Don't you find this pleasant?" said Grandcourt.

"Very."

"You admit now we couldn't have done anything better?"

"No--I see nothing better. I think we shall go on always, like the

Flying Dutchman," said Gwendolen wildly.

Grandcourt gave her one of his narrow examining glances, and then said,

"If you like, we can go to Spezia in the morning, and let them take us

up there."

"No; I shall like nothing better than this."

"Very well: we'll do the same to-morrow. But we must be turning in

soon. I shall put about."

CHAPTER LV.

"Ritorna a tua scienza

Che vuoi, quanto la cosa e piÃ¹ perfetta

PiÃ¹ senta if bene, e cosi la doglienza."

--DANTE.

When Deronda met Gwendolen and Grandcourt on the staircase, his mind

was seriously preoccupied. He had just been summoned to the second

interview with his mother.

In two hours after his parting from her he knew that the Princess

Halm-Eberstein had left the hotel, and so far as the purpose of his

journey to Genoa was concerned, he might himself have set off on his

way to Mainz, to deliver the letter from Joseph Kalonymos, and get

possession of the family chest. But mixed mental conditions, which did

not resolve themselves into definite reasons, hindered him from

departure. Long after the farewell he was kept passive by a weight of

retrospective feeling. He lived again, with the new keenness of emotive

memory, through the exciting scenes which seemed past only in the sense

of preparation for their actual presence in his soul. He allowed

himself in his solitude to sob, with perhaps more than a woman's

acuteness of compassion, over that woman's life so near to his, and yet

so remote. He beheld the world changed for him by the certitude of ties

that altered the poise of hopes and fears, and gave him a new sense of

fellowship, as if under cover of the night he had joined the wrong band

of wanderers, and found with the rise of morning that the tents of his

kindred were grouped far off. He had a quivering imaginative sense of

close relation to the grandfather who had been animated by strong

impulses and beloved thoughts, which were now perhaps being roused from

their slumber within himself. And through all this passionate

meditation Mordecai and Mirah were always present, as beings who

clasped hands with him in sympathetic silence.

Of such quick, responsive fibre was Deronda made, under that mantle of

self-controlled reserve into which early experience had thrown so much

of his young strength.

When the persistent ringing of a bell as a signal reminded him of the

hour he thought of looking into \_Bradshaw\_, and making the brief

necessary preparations for starting by the next train--thought of it,

but made no movement in consequence. Wishes went to Mainz and what he

was to get possession of there--to London and the beings there who made

the strongest attachments of his life; but there were other wishes that

clung in these moments to Genoa, and they kept him where he was by that

force which urges us to linger over an interview that carries a

presentiment of final farewell or of overshadowing sorrow. Deronda did

not formally say, "I will stay over to-night, because it is Friday, and

I should like to go to the evening service at the synagogue where they

must all have gone; and besides, I may see the Grandcourts again." But

simply, instead of packing and ringing for his bill, he sat doing

nothing at all, while his mind went to the synagogue and saw faces

there probably little different from those of his grandfather's time,

and heard the Spanish-Hebrew liturgy which had lasted through the

seasons of wandering generations like a plant with wandering seed, that

gives the far-off lands a kinship to the exile's home--while, also, his

mind went toward Gwendolen, with anxious remembrance of what had been,

and with a half-admitted impression that it would be hardness in him

willingly to go away at once without making some effort, in spite of

Grandcourt's probable dislike, to manifest the continuance of his

sympathy with her since their abrupt parting.

In this state of mind he deferred departure, ate his dinner without

sense of flavor, rose from it quickly to find the synagogue, and in

passing the porter asked if Mr. and Mrs. Grandcourt were still in the

hotel, and what was the number of their apartment. The porter gave him

the number, but added that they were gone out boating. That information

had somehow power enough over Deronda to divide his thoughts with the

memories wakened among the sparse \_talithim\_ and keen dark faces of

worshippers whose way of taking awful prayers and invocations with the

easy familiarity which might be called Hebrew dyed Italian, made him

reflect that his grandfather, according to the Princess's hints of his

character, must have been almost as exceptional a Jew as Mordecai. But

were not men of ardent zeal and far-reaching hope everywhere

exceptional? the men who had the visions which, as Mordecai said, were

the creators and feeders of the world--moulding and feeding the more

passive life which without them would dwindle and shrivel into the

narrow tenacity of insects, unshaken by thoughts beyond the reach of

their antennae. Something of a mournful impatience perhaps added itself

to the solicitude about Gwendolen (a solicitude that had room to grow

in his present release from immediate cares) as an incitement to hasten

from the synagogue and choose to take his evening walk toward the quay,

always a favorite haunt with him, and just now attractive with the

possibility that he might be in time to see the Grandcourts come in

from their boating. In this case, he resolved that he would advance to

greet them deliberately, and ignore any grounds that the husband might

have for wishing him elsewhere.

The sun had set behind a bank of cloud, and only a faint yellow light

was giving its farewell kisses to the waves, which were agitated by an

active breeze. Deronda, sauntering slowly within sight of what took

place on the strand, observed the groups there concentrating their

attention on a sailing-boat which was advancing swiftly landward, being

rowed by two men. Amidst the clamorous talk in various languages,

Deronda held it the surer means of getting information not to ask

questions, but to elbow his way to the foreground and be an

unobstructed witness of what was occurring. Telescopes were being used,

and loud statements made that the boat held somebody who had been

drowned. One said it was the \_milord\_ who had gone out in a sailing

boat; another maintained that the prostrate figure he discerned was

\_miladi\_; a Frenchman who had no glass would rather say that it was

\_milord\_ who had probably taken his wife out to drown her, according to

the national practice--a remark which an English skipper immediately

commented on in our native idiom (as nonsense which--had undergone a

mining operation), and further dismissed by the decision that the

reclining figure was a woman. For Deronda, terribly excited by

fluctuating fears, the strokes of the oars as he watched them were

divided by swift visions of events, possible and impossible, which

might have brought about this issue, or this broken-off fragment of an

issue, with a worse half undisclosed--if this woman apparently snatched

from the waters were really Mrs. Grandcourt.

But soon there was no longer any doubt: the boat was being pulled to

land, and he saw Gwendolen half raising herself on her hands, by her

own effort, under her heavy covering of tarpaulin and pea-jackets--pale

as one of the sheeted dead, shivering, with wet hair streaming, a wild

amazed consciousness in her eyes, as if she had waked up in a world

where some judgment was impending, and the beings she saw around were

coming to seize her. The first rower who jumped to land was also wet

through, and ran off; the sailors, close about the boat, hindered

Deronda from advancing, and he could only look on while Gwendolen gave

scared glances, and seemed to shrink with terror as she was carefully,

tenderly helped out, and led on by the strong arms of those rough,

bronzed men, her wet clothes clinging about her limbs, and adding to

the impediment of her weakness. Suddenly her wandering eyes fell on

Deronda, standing before her, and immediately, as if she had been

expecting him and looking for him, she tried to stretch out her arms,

which were held back by her supporters, saying, in a muffled voice--

"It is come, it is come! He is dead!"

"Hush, hush!" said Deronda, in a tone of authority; "quiet yourself."

Then to the men who were assisting her, "I am a connection of this

lady's husband. If you will get her on to the \_Italia\_ as quickly as

possible, I will undertake everything else."

He stayed behind to hear from the remaining boatman that her husband

had gone down irrecoverably, and that his boat was left floating empty.

He and his comrade had heard a cry, had come up in time to see the lady

jump in after her husband, and had got her out fast enough to save her

from much damage.

After this, Deronda hastened to the hotel to assure himself that the

best medical help would be provided; and being satisfied on this point,

he telegraphed the event to Sir Hugo, begging him to come forthwith,

and also to Mr. Gascoigne, whose address at the rectory made his

nearest known way of getting the information to Gwendolen's mother.

Certain words of Gwendolen's in the past had come back to him with the

effectiveness of an inspiration: in moments of agitated confession she

had spoken of her mother's presence, as a possible help, if she could

have had it.

CHAPTER LVI.

"The pang, the curse with which they died,

Had never passed away:

I could not draw my eyes from theirs,

Nor lift them up to pray."

--COLERIDGE.

Deronda did not take off his clothes that night. Gwendolen, after

insisting on seeing him again before she would consent to be undressed,

had been perfectly quiet, and had only asked him, with a whispering,

repressed eagerness, to promise that he would come to her when she sent

for him in the morning. Still, the possibility that a change might come

over her, the danger of a supervening feverish condition, and the

suspicion that something in the late catastrophe was having an effect

which might betray itself in excited words, acted as a foreboding

within him. He mentioned to her attendant that he should keep himself

ready to be called if there were any alarming change of symptoms,

making it understood by all concerned that he was in communication with

her friends in England, and felt bound meanwhile to take all care on

her behalf--a position which it was the easier for him to assume,

because he was well known to Grandcourt's valet, the only old servant

who had come on the late voyage.

But when fatigue from the strangely various emotion of the day at last

sent Deronda to sleep, he remained undisturbed except by the morning

dreams, which came as a tangled web of yesterday's events, and finally

waked him, with an image drawn by his pressing anxiety.

Still, it was morning, and there had been no summons--an augury which

cheered him while he made his toilet, and reflected that it was too

early to send inquiries. Later, he learned that she had passed a too

wakeful night, but had shown no violent signs of agitation, and was at

last sleeping. He wondered at the force that dwelt in this creature, so

alive to dread; for he had an irresistible impression that even under

the effects of a severe physical shock she was mastering herself with a

determination of concealment. For his own part, he thought that his

sensibilities had been blunted by what he had been going through in the

meeting with his mother: he seemed to himself now to be only fulfilling

claims, and his more passionate sympathy was in abeyance. He had lately

been living so keenly in an experience quite apart from Gwendolen's

lot, that his present cares for her were like a revisiting of scenes

familiar in the past, and there was not yet a complete revival of the

inward response to them.

Meanwhile he employed himself in getting a formal, legally recognized

statement from the fisherman who had rescued Gwendolen. Few details

came to light. The boat in which Grandcourt had gone out had been found

drifting with its sail loose, and had been towed in. The fishermen

thought it likely that he had been knocked overboard by the flapping of

the sail while putting about, and that he had not known how to swim;

but, though they were near, their attention had been first arrested by

a cry which seemed like that of a man in distress, and while they were

hastening with their oars, they heard a shriek from the lady, and saw

her jump in.

On re-entering the hotel, Deronda was told that Gwendolen had risen,

and was desiring to see him. He was shown into a room darkened by

blinds and curtains, where she was seated with a white shawl wrapped

round her, looking toward the opening door like one waiting uneasily.

But her long hair was gathered up and coiled carefully, and, through

all, the blue stars in her ears had kept their place: as she started

impulsively to her full height, sheathed in her white shawl, her face

and neck not less white, except for a purple line under her eyes, her

lips a little apart with the peculiar expression of one accused and

helpless, she looked like the unhappy ghost of that Gwendolen Harleth

whom Deronda had seen turning with firm lips and proud self-possession

from her losses at the gaming table. The sight pierced him with pity,

and the effects of all their past relations began to revive within him.

"I beseech you to rest--not to stand," said Deronda, as he approached

her; and she obeyed, falling back into her chair again.

"Will you sit down near me?" she said. "I want to speak very low."

She was in a large arm-chair, and he drew a small one near to her side.

The action seemed to touch her peculiarly: turning her pale face full

upon his, which was very near, she said, in the lowest audible tone,

"You know I am a guilty woman?"

Deronda himself turned paler as he said, "I know nothing." He did not

dare to say more.

"He is dead." She uttered this with the same undertoned decision.

"Yes," said Deronda, in a mournful suspense which made him reluctant to

speak.

"His face will not be seen above the water again," said Gwendolen, in a

tone that was not louder, but of a suppressed eagerness, while she held

both her hands clenched.

"No."

"Not by any one else--only by me--a dead face--I shall never get away

from it."

It was with an inward voice of desperate self-repression that she spoke

these last words, while she looked away from Deronda toward something

at a distance from her on the floor. She was seeing the whole

event--her own acts included--through an exaggerating medium of

excitement and horror? Was she in a state of delirium into which there

entered a sense of concealment and necessity for self-repression? Such

thoughts glanced through Deronda as a sort of hope. But imagine the

conflict of feeling that kept him silent. She was bent on confession,

and he dreaded hearing her confession. Against his better will he

shrank from the task that was laid on him: he wished, and yet rebuked

the wish as cowardly, that she could bury her secrets in her own bosom.

He was not a priest. He dreaded the weight of this woman's soul flung

upon his own with imploring dependence. But she spoke again, hurriedly,

looking at him--

"You will not say that I ought to tell the world? you will not say that

I ought to be disgraced? I could not do it. I could not bear it. I

cannot have my mother know. Not if I were dead. I could not have her

know. I must tell you; but you will not say that any one else should

know."

"I can say nothing in my ignorance," said Deronda, mournfully, "except

that I desire to help you."

"I told you from the beginning--as soon as I could--I told you I was

afraid of myself." There was a piteous pleading in the low murmur in

which Deronda turned his ear only. Her face afflicted him too much. "I

felt a hatred in me that was always working like an evil

spirit--contriving things. Everything I could do to free myself came

into my mind; and it got worse--all things got worse. That is why I

asked you to come to me in town. I thought then I would tell you the

worst about myself. I tried. But I could not tell everything. And \_he\_

came in."

She paused, while a shudder passed through her; but soon went on.

"I will tell you everything now. Do you think a woman who cried, and

prayed, and struggled to be saved from herself, could be a murderess?"

"Great God!" said Deronda, in a deep, shaken voice, "don't torture me

needlessly. You have not murdered him. You threw yourself into the

water with the impulse to save him. Tell me the rest afterward. This

death was an accident that you could not have hindered."

"Don't be impatient with me." The tremor, the childlike beseeching in

these words compelled Deronda to turn his head and look at her face.

The poor quivering lips went on. "You said--you used to say--you felt

more for those who had done something wicked and were miserable; you

said they might get better--they might be scourged into something

better. If you had not spoken in that way, Everything would have been

worse. I \_did\_ remember all you said to me. It came to me always. It

came to me at the very last--that was the reason why I--But now, if you

cannot bear with me when I tell you everything--if you turn away from

me and forsake me, what shall I do? Am I worse than I was when you

found me and wanted to make me better? All the wrong I have done was in

me then--and more--and more--if you had not come and been patient with

me. And now--will you forsake me?"

Her hands, which had been so tightly clenched some minutes before, were

now helplessly relaxed and trembling on the arm of her chair. Her

quivering lips remained parted as she ceased speaking. Deronda could

not answer; he was obliged to look away. He took one of her hands, and

clasped it as if they were going to walk together like two children: it

was the only way in which he could answer, "I will not forsake you."

And all the while he felt as if he were putting his name to a blank

paper which might be filled up terribly. Their attitude, his adverted

face with its expression of a suffering which he was solemnly resolved

to undergo, might have told half the truth of the situation to a

beholder who had suddenly entered.

That grasp was an entirely new experience to Gwendolen: she had never

before had from any man a sign of tenderness which her own being had

needed, and she interpreted its powerful effect on her into a promise

of inexhaustible patience and constancy. The stream of renewed strength

made it possible for her to go on as she had begun--with that fitful,

wandering confession where the sameness of experience seems to nullify

the sense of time or of order in events. She began again in a

fragmentary way--

"All sorts of contrivances in my mind--but all so difficult. And I

fought against them--I was terrified at them--I saw his dead

face"--here her voice sank almost to a whisper close to Deronda's

ear--"ever so long ago I saw it and I wished him to be dead. And yet it

terrified me. I was like two creatures. I could not speak--I wanted to

kill--it was as strong as thirst--and then directly--I felt beforehand

I had done something dreadful, unalterable--that would make me like an

evil spirit. And it came--it came."

She was silent a moment or two, as if her memory had lost itself in a

web where each mesh drew all the rest.

"It had all been in my mind when I first spoke to you--when we were at

the Abbey. I had done something then. I could not tell you that. It was

the only thing I did toward carrying out my thoughts. They went about

over everything; but they all remained like dreadful dreams--all but

one. I did one act--and I never undid it--it is there still--as long

ago as when we were at Ryelands. There it was--something my fingers

longed for among the beautiful toys in the cabinet in my boudoir--small

and sharp like a long willow leaf in a silver sheath. I locked it in

the drawer of my dressing-case. I was continually haunted with it and

how I should use it. I fancied myself putting it under my pillow. But I

never did. I never looked at it again. I dared not unlock the drawer:

it had a key all to itself; and not long ago, when we were in the

yacht, I dropped the key into the deep water. It was my wish to drop it

and deliver myself. After that I began to think how I could open the

drawer without the key: and when I found we were to stay at Genoa, it

came into my mind that I could get it opened privately at the hotel.

But then, when we were going up the stairs, I met you; and I thought I

should talk to you alone and tell you this--everything I could not tell

you in town; and then I was forced to go out in the boat."

A sob had for the first time risen with the last words, and she sank

back in her chair. The memory of that acute disappointment seemed for

the moment to efface what had come since. Deronda did not look at her,

but he said, insistently--

"And it has all remained in your imagination. It has gone on only in

your thought. To the last the evil temptation has been resisted?"

There was silence. The tears had rolled down her cheeks. She pressed

her handkerchief against them and sat upright. She was summoning her

resolution; and again, leaning a little toward Deronda's ear, she began

in a whisper--

"No, no; I will tell you everything as God knows it. I will tell you no

falsehood; I will tell you the exact truth. What should I do else? I

used to think I could never be wicked. I thought of wicked people as if

they were a long way off me. Since then I have been wicked. I have felt

wicked. And everything has been a punishment to me--all the things I

used to wish for--it is as if they had been made red-hot. The very

daylight has often been a punishment to me. Because--you know--I ought

not to have married. That was the beginning of it. I wronged some one

else. I broke my promise. I meant to get pleasure for myself, and it

all turned to misery. I wanted to make my gain out of another's

loss--you remember?--it was like roulette--and the money burned into

me. And I could not complain. It was as if I had prayed that another

should lose and I should win. And I had won, I knew it all--I knew I

was guilty. When we were on the sea, and I lay awake at night in the

cabin, I sometimes felt that everything I had done lay open without

excuse--nothing was hidden--how could anything be known to me only?--it

was not my own knowledge, it was God's that had entered into me, and

even the stillness--everything held a punishment for me--everything but

you. I always thought that you would not want me to be punished--you

would have tried and helped me to be better. And only thinking of that

helped me. You will not change--you will not want to punish me now?"

Again a sob had risen.

"God forbid!" groaned Deronda. But he sat motionless.

This long wandering with the conscious-stricken one over her past was

difficult to bear, but he dared not again urge her with a question. He

must let her mind follow its own need. She unconsciously left intervals

in her retrospect, not clearly distinguishing between what she said and

what she had only an inward vision of. Her next words came after such

an interval.

"That all made it so hard when I was forced to go in the boat. Because

when I saw you it was an unexpected joy, and I thought I could tell you

everything--about the locked-up drawer and what I had not told you

before. And if I had told you, and knew it was in your mind, it would

have less power over me. I hoped and trusted in that. For after all my

struggles and my crying, the hatred and rage, the temptation that

frightened me, the longing, the thirst for what I dreaded, always came

back. And that disappointment--when I was quite shut out from speaking

to you, and was driven to go in the boat--brought all the evil back, as

if I had been locked in a prison with it and no escape. Oh, it seems so

long ago now since I stepped into that boat! I could have given up

everything in that moment, to have the forked lightning for a weapon to

strike him dead."

Some of the compressed fierceness that she was recalling seemed to find

its way into her undertoned utterance. After a little silence she said,

with agitated hurry--

"If he were here again, what should I do? I cannot wish him here--and

yet I cannot bear his dead face. I was a coward. I ought to have borne

contempt. I ought to have gone away--gone and wandered like a beggar

rather than to stay to feel like a fiend. But turn where I would there

was something I could not bear. Sometimes I thought he would kill \_me\_

if I resisted his will. But now--his dead face is there, and I cannot

bear it."

Suddenly loosing Deronda's hand, she started up, stretching her arms to

their full length upward, and said with a sort of moan--

"I have been a cruel woman! What can \_I\_ do but cry for help? \_I\_ am

sinking. Die--die--you are forsaken--go down, go down into darkness.

Forsaken--no pity--\_I\_ shall be forsaken."

She sank in her chair again and broke into sobs. Even Deronda had no

place in her consciousness at that moment. He was completely unmanned.

Instead of finding, as he had imagined, that his late experience had

dulled his susceptibility to fresh emotion, it seemed that the lot of

this young creature, whose swift travel from her bright rash girlhood

into this agony of remorse he had had to behold in helplessness,

pierced him the deeper because it came close upon another sad

revelation of spiritual conflict: he was in one of those moments when

the very anguish of passionate pity makes us ready to choose that we

will know pleasure no more, and live only for the stricken and

afflicted. He had risen from his seat while he watched that terrible

outburst--which seemed the more awful to him because, even in this

supreme agitation, she kept the suppressed voice of one who confesses

in secret. At last he felt impelled to turn his back toward her and

walk to a distance.

But presently there was stillness. Her mind had opened to the sense

that he had gone away from her. When Deronda turned round to approach

her again, he saw her face bent toward him, her eyes dilated, her lips

parted. She was an image of timid forlorn beseeching--too timid to

entreat in words while he kept himself aloof from her. Was she forsaken

by him--now--already? But his eyes met hers sorrowfully--met hers for

the first time fully since she had said, "You know I am a guilty

woman," and that full glance in its intense mournfulness seemed to say,

"I know it, but I shall all the less forsake you." He sat down by her

side again in the same attitude--without turning his face toward her

and without again taking her hand.

Once more Gwendolen was pierced, as she had been by his face of sorrow

at the Abbey, with a compunction less egoistic than that which urged

her to confess, and she said, in a tone of loving regret--

"I make you very unhappy."

Deronda gave an indistinct "Oh," just shrinking together and changing

his attitude a little. Then he had gathered resolution enough to say

clearly, "There is no question of being happy or unhappy. What I most

desire at this moment is what will most help you. Tell me all you feel

it a relief to tell."

Devoted as these words were, they widened his spiritual distance from

her, and she felt it more difficult to speak: she had a vague need of

getting nearer to that compassion which seemed to be regarding her from

a halo of superiority, and the need turned into an impulse to humble

herself more. She was ready to throw herself on her knees before him;

but no--her wonderfully mixed consciousness held checks on that

impulse, and she was kept silent and motionless by the pressure of

opposing needs. Her stillness made Deronda at last say--

"Perhaps you are too weary. Shall I go away, and come again whenever

you wish it?"

"No, no," said Gwendolen--the dread of his leaving her bringing back

her power of speech. She went on with her low-toned eagerness, "I want

to tell you what it was that came over me in that boat. I was full of

rage at being obliged to go--full of rage--and I could do nothing but

sit there like a galley slave. And then we got away--out of the

port--into the deep--and everything was still--and we never looked at

each other, only he spoke to order me--and the very light about me

seemed to hold me a prisoner and force me to sit as I did. It came over

me that when I was a child I used to fancy sailing away into a world

where people were not forced to live with any one they did not like--I

did not like my father-in-law to come home. And now, I thought, just

the opposite had come to me. I had stepped into a boat, and my life was

a sailing and sailing away--gliding on and no help--always into

solitude with \_him\_, away from deliverance. And because I felt more

helpless than ever, my thoughts went out over worse things--I longed

for worse things--I had cruel wishes--I fancied impossible ways of--I

did not want to die myself; I was afraid of our being drowned together.

If it had been any use I should have prayed--I should have prayed that

something might befall him. I should have prayed that he might sink out

of my sight and leave me alone. I knew no way of killing him there, but

I did, I did kill him in my thoughts."

She sank into silence for a minute, submerged by the weight of memory

which no words could represent.

"But yet, all the while I felt that I was getting more wicked. And what

had been with me so much, came to me just then--what you once

said--about dreading to increase my wrong-doing and my remorse--I

should hope for nothing then. It was all like a writing of fire within

me. Getting wicked was misery--being shut out forever from knowing what

you--what better lives were. That had always been coming back to me

then--but yet with a despair--a feeling that it was no use--evil wishes

were too strong. I remember then letting go the tiller and saying 'God

help me!' But then I was forced to take it again and go on; and the

evil longings, the evil prayers came again and blotted everything else

dim, till, in the midst of them--I don't know how it was--he was

turning the sail--there was a gust--he was struck--I know nothing--I

only know that I saw my wish outside me."

She began to speak more hurriedly, and in more of a whisper.

"I saw him sink, and my heart gave a leap as if it were going out of

me. I think I did not move. I kept my hands tight. It was long enough

for me to be glad, and yet to think it was no use--he would come up

again. And he \_was\_ come--farther off--the boat had moved. It was all

like lightning. 'The rope!' he called out in a voice--not his own--I

hear it now--and I stooped for the rope--I felt I must--I felt sure he

could swim, and he would come back whether or not, and I dreaded him.

That was in my mind--he would come back. But he was gone down again,

and I had the rope in my hand--no, there he was again--his face above

the water--and he cried again--and I held my hand, and my heart said,

'Die!'--and he sank; and I felt 'It is done--I am wicked, I am

lost!--and I had the rope in my hand--I don't know what I thought--I

was leaping away from myself--I would have saved him then. I was

leaping from my crime, and there it was--close to me as I fell--there

was the dead face--dead, dead. It can never be altered. That was what

happened. That was what I did. You know it all. It can never be

altered."

She sank back in her chair, exhausted with the agitation of memory and

speech. Deronda felt the burden on his spirit less heavy than the

foregoing dread. The word "guilty" had held a possibility of

interpretations worse than the fact; and Gwendolen's confession, for

the very reason that her conscience made her dwell on the determining

power of her evil thoughts, convinced him the more that there had been

throughout a counterbalancing struggle of her better will. It seemed

almost certain that her murderous thought had had no outward

effect--that, quite apart from it, the death was inevitable. Still, a

question as to the outward effectiveness of a criminal desire dominant

enough to impel even a momentary act, cannot alter our judgment of the

desire; and Deronda shrank from putting that question forward in the

first instance. He held it likely that Gwendolen's remorse aggravated

her inward guilt, and that she gave the character of decisive action to

what had been an inappreciably instantaneous glance of desire. But her

remorse was the precious sign of a recoverable nature; it was the

culmination of that self-disapproval which had been the awakening of a

new life within her; it marked her off from the criminals whose only

regret is failure in securing their evil wish. Deronda could not utter

one word to diminish that sacred aversion to her worst self--that

thorn-pressure which must come with the crowning of the sorrowful

better, suffering because of the worse. All this mingled thought and

feeling kept him silent; speech was too momentous to be ventured on

rashly. There were no words of comfort that did not carry some

sacrilege. If he had opened his lips to speak, he could only have

echoed, "It can never be altered--it remains unaltered, to alter other

things." But he was silent and motionless--he did not know how

long--before he turned to look at her, and saw her sunk back with

closed eyes, like a lost, weary, storm-beaten white doe, unable to rise

and pursue its unguided way. He rose and stood before her. The movement

touched her consciousness, and she opened her eyes with a slight

quivering that seemed like fear.

"You must rest now. Try to rest: try to sleep. And may I see you again

this evening--to-morrow--when you have had some rest? Let us say no

more now."

The tears came, and she could not answer except by a slight movement of

the head. Deronda rang for attendance, spoke urgently of the necessity

that she should be got to rest, and then left her.

CHAPTER LVII.

"The unripe grape, the ripe, and the dried. All things are changes,

not into nothing, but into that which is not at present."--MARCUS

AURELIUS.

Deeds are the pulse of Time, his beating life,

And righteous or unrighteous, being done,

Must throb in after-throbs till Time itself

Be laid in darkness, and the universe

Quiver and breathe upon no mirror more.

In the evening she sent for him again. It was already near the hour at

which she had been brought in from the sea the evening before, and the

light was subdued enough with blinds drawn up and windows open. She was

seated gazing fixedly on the sea, resting her cheek on her hand,

looking less shattered than when he had left her, but with a deep

melancholy in her expression which as Deronda approached her passed

into an anxious timidity. She did not put out her hand, but said, "How

long ago it is!" Then, "Will you sit near me again a little while?"

He placed himself by her side as he had done before, and seeing that

she turned to him with that indefinable expression which implies a wish

to say something, he waited for her to speak. But again she looked

toward the window silently, and again turned with the same expression,

which yet did not issue in speech. There was some fear hindering her,

and Deronda, wishing to relieve her timidity, averted his face.

Presently he heard her cry imploringly--

"You will not say that any one else should know?"

"Most decidedly not," said Deronda. "There is no action that ought to

be taken in consequence. There is no injury that could be righted in

that way. There is no retribution that any mortal could apportion

justly."

She was so still during a pause that she seemed to be holding her

breath before she said--

"But if I had not had that murderous will--that moment--if I had thrown

the rope on the instant--perhaps it would have hindered death?"

"No--I think not," said Deronda, slowly. "If it were true that he could

swim, he must have been seized with cramp. With your quickest, utmost

effort, it seems impossible that you could have done anything to save

him. That momentary murderous will cannot, I think, have altered the

course of events. Its effect is confined to the motives in your own

breast. Within ourselves our evil will is momentous, and sooner or

later it works its way outside us--it may be in the vitiation that

breeds evil acts, but also it may be in the self-abhorrence that stings

us into better striving."

"I am saved from robbing others--there are others--they will have

everything--they will have what they ought to have. I knew that some

time before I left town. You do not suspect me of wrong desires about

those things?" She spoke hesitatingly.

"I had not thought of them," said Deronda; "I was thinking too much of

the other things."

"Perhaps you don't quite know the beginning of it all," said Gwendolen,

slowly, as if she were overcoming her reluctance. "There was some one

else he ought to have married. And I knew it, and I told her I would

not hinder it. And I went away--that was when you first saw me. But

then we became poor all at once, and I was very miserable, and I was

tempted. I thought, 'I shall do as I like and make everything right.' I

persuaded myself. And it was all different. It was all dreadful. Then

came hatred and wicked thoughts. That was how it all came. I told you I

was afraid of myself. And I did what you told me--I did try to make my

fear a safeguard. I thought of what would be if I--I felt what would

come--how I should dread the morning--wishing it would be always

night--and yet in the darkness always seeing something--seeing death.

If you did not know how miserable I was, you might--but now it has all

been no use. I can care for nothing but saving the rest from

knowing--poor mamma, who has never been happy."

There was silence again before she said with a repressed sob--"You

cannot bear to look at me any more. You think I am too wicked. You do

not believe that I can become any better--worth anything--worthy

enough--I shall always be too wicked to--" The voice broke off helpless.

Deronda's heart was pierced. He turned his eyes on her poor beseeching

face and said, "I believe that you may become worthier than you have

ever yet been--worthy to lead a life that may be a blessing. No evil

dooms us hopelessly except the evil we love, and desire to continue in,

and make no effort to escape from. You \_have\_ made efforts--you will go

on making them."

"But you were the beginning of them. You must not forsake me," said

Gwendolen, leaning with her clasped hands on the arm of her chair and

looking at him, while her face bore piteous traces of the

life-experience concentrated in the twenty-four hours--that new

terrible life lying on the other side of the deed which fulfills a

criminal desire. "I will bear any penance. I will lead any life you

tell me. But you must not forsake me. You must be near. If you had been

near me--if I could have said everything to you, I should have been

different. You will not forsake me?"

"It could never be my impulse to forsake you," said Deronda promptly,

with that voice which, like his eyes, had the unintentional effect of

making his ready sympathy seem more personal and special than it really

was. And in that moment he was not himself quite free from a foreboding

of some such self-committing effect. His strong feeling for this

stricken creature could not hinder rushing images of future difficulty.

He continued to meet her appealing eyes as he spoke, but it was with

the painful consciousness that to her ear his words might carry a

promise which one day would seem unfulfilled: he was making an

indefinite promise to an indefinite hope. Anxieties, both immediate and

distant, crowded on his thought, and it was under their influence that,

after a moment's silence, he said--

"I expect Sir Hugh Mallinger to arrive by to-morrow night at least; and

I am not without hope that Mrs. Davilow may shortly follow him. Her

presence will be the greatest comfort to you--it will give you a motive

to save her from unnecessary pain?"

"Yes, yes--I will try. And you will not go away?"

"Not till after Sir Hugo has come."

"But we shall all go to England?"

"As soon as possible," said Deronda, not wishing to enter into

particulars.

Gwendolen looked toward the window again with an expression which

seemed like a gradual awakening to new thoughts. The twilight was

perceptibly deepening, but Deronda could see a movement in her eyes and

hands such as accompanies a return of perception in one who has been

stunned.

"You will always be with Sir Hugo now!" she said presently, looking at

him. "You will always live at the Abbey--or else at Diplow?"

"I am quite uncertain where I shall live," said Deronda, coloring.

She was warned by his changed color that she had spoken too rashly, and

fell silent. After a little while she began, again looking away--

"It is impossible to think how my life will go on. I think now it would

be better for me to be poor and obliged to work."

"New promptings will come as the days pass. When you are among your

friends again, you will discern new duties," said Deronda. "Make it a

task now to get as well and calm--as much like yourself as you can,

before--" He hesitated.

"Before my mother comes," said Gwendolen. "Ah! I must be changed. I

have not looked at myself. Should you have known me," she added,

turning toward him, "if you had met me now?--should you have known me

for the one you saw at Leubronn?"

"Yes, I should have known you," said Deronda, mournfully. "The outside

change is not great. I should have seen at once that it was you, and

that you had gone through some great sorrow."

"Don't wish now that you had never seen me; don't wish that," said

Gwendolen, imploringly, while the tears gathered.

"I should despise myself for wishing it," said Deronda. "How could I

know what I was wishing? We must find our duties in what comes to us,

not in what we imagine might have been. If I took to foolish wishing of

that sort, I should wish--not that I had never seen you, but that I had

been able to save you from this."

"You have saved me from worse," said Gwendolen, in a sobbing voice. "I

should have been worse if it had not been for you. If you had not been

good, I should have been more wicked than I am."

"It will be better for me to go now," said Deronda, worn in spirit by

the perpetual strain of this scene. "Remember what we said of your

task--to get well and calm before other friends come."

He rose as he spoke, and she gave him her hand submissively. But when

he had left her she sank on her knees, in hysterical crying. The

distance between them was too great. She was a banished soul--beholding

a possible life which she had sinned herself away from.

She was found in this way, crushed on the floor. Such grief seemed

natural in a poor lady whose husband had been drowned in her presence.

BOOK VIII.--FRUIT AND SEED.

CHAPTER LVIII.

"Much adoe there was, God wot;

He wold love and she wold not."

--NICHOLAS BRETON.

Extension, we know, is a very imperfect measure of things; and the

length of the sun's journeying can no more tell us how life has

advanced than the acreage of a field can tell us what growths may be

active within it. A man may go south, and, stumbling over a bone, may

meditate upon it till he has found a new starting-point for anatomy; or

eastward, and discover a new key to language telling a new story of

races; or he may head an expedition that opens new continental

pathways, get himself mained in body, and go through a whole heroic

poem of resolve and endurance; and at the end of a few months he may

come back to find his neighbors grumbling at the same parish grievance

as before, or to see the same elderly gentleman treading the pavement

in discourse with himself, shaking his head after the same percussive

butcher's boy, and pausing at the same shop-window to look at the same

prints. If the swiftest thinking has about the pace of a greyhound, the

slowest must be supposed to move, like the limpet, by an apparent

sticking, which after a good while is discerned to be a slight

progression. Such differences are manifest in the variable intensity

which we call human experience, from the revolutionary rush of change

which makes a new inner and outer life, to that quiet recurrence of the

familiar, which has no other epochs than those of hunger and the

heavens.

Something of this contrast was seen in the year's experience which had

turned the brilliant, self-confident Gwendolen Harleth of the Archery

Meeting into the crushed penitent impelled to confess her unworthiness

where it would have been her happiness to be held worthy; while it had

left her family in Pennicote without deeper change than that of some

outward habits, and some adjustment of prospects and intentions to

reduced income, fewer visits, and fainter compliments. The rectory was

as pleasant a home as before: and the red and pink peonies on the lawn,

the rows of hollyhocks by the hedges, had bloomed as well this year as

last: the rector maintained his cheerful confidence in the good will of

patrons and his resolution to deserve it by diligence in the

fulfillment of his duties, whether patrons were likely to hear of it or

not; doing nothing solely with an eye to promotion except, perhaps, the

writing of two ecclesiastical articles, which having no signature, were

attributed to some one else, except by the patrons who had a special

copy sent them, and these certainly knew the author but did not read

the articles. The rector, however, chewed no poisonous cud of suspicion

on this point: he made marginal notes on his own copies to render them

a more interesting loan, and was gratified that the Archdeacon and

other authorities had nothing to say against the general tenor of his

argument. Peaceful authorship!--living in the air of the fields and

downs, and not in the thrice-breathed breath of criticism--bringing no

Dantesque leanness; rather, assisting nutrition by complacency, and

perhaps giving a more suffusive sense of achievement than the

production of a whole \_Divina Commedia\_. Then there was the father's

recovered delight in his favorite son, which was a happiness

outweighing the loss of eighteen hundred a year. Of whatever nature

might be the hidden change wrought in Rex by the disappointment of his

first love, it was apparently quite secondary to that evidence of more

serious ambition which dated from the family misfortune; indeed, Mr.

Gascoigne was inclined to regard the little affair which had caused him

so much anxiety the year before as an evaporation of superfluous

moisture, a kind of finish to the baking process which the human dough

demands. Rex had lately come down for a summer visit to the rectory,

bringing Anna home, and while he showed nearly the old liveliness with

his brothers and sisters, he continued in his holiday the habits of the

eager student, rising early in the morning and shutting himself up

early in the evenings to carry on a fixed course of study.

"You don't repent the choice of the law as a profession, Rex?" said his

father.

"There is no profession I would choose before it," said Rex. "I should

like to end my life as a first-rate judge, and help to draw up a code.

I reverse the famous dictum. I should say, 'Give me something to do

with making the laws, and let who will make the songs.'"

"You will have to stow in an immense amount of rubbish, I

suppose--that's the worst of it," said the rector.

"I don't see that law-rubbish is worse than any other sort. It is not

so bad as the rubbishy literature that people choke their minds with.

It doesn't make one so dull. Our wittiest men have often been lawyers.

Any orderly way of looking at things as cases and evidence seems to me

better than a perpetual wash of odds and ends bearing on nothing in

particular. And then, from a higher point of view, the foundations and

the growth of law make the most interesting aspects of philosophy and

history. Of course there will be a good deal that is troublesome,

drudging, perhaps exasperating. But the great prizes in life can't be

won easily--I see that."

"Well, my boy, the best augury of a man's success in his profession is

that he thinks it the finest in the world. But I fancy it so with most

work when a man goes into it with a will. Brewitt, the blacksmith, said

to me the other day that his 'prentice had no mind to his trade; 'and

yet, sir,' said Brewitt, 'what would a young fellow have if he doesn't

like the blacksmithing?"

The rector cherished a fatherly delight, which he allowed to escape him

only in moderation. Warham, who had gone to India, he had easily borne

parting with, but Rex was that romance of later life which a man

sometimes finds in a son whom he recognizes as superior to himself,

picturing a future eminence for him according to a variety of famous

examples. It was only to his wife that he said with decision: "Rex will

be a distinguished man, Nancy, I am sure of it--as sure as Paley's

father was about his son."

"Was Paley an old bachelor?" said Mrs. Gascoigne.

"That is hardly to the point, my dear," said the rector, who did not

remember that irrelevant detail. And Mrs. Gascoigne felt that she had

spoken rather weakly.

This quiet trotting of time at the rectory was shared by the group who

had exchanged the faded dignity of Offendene for the low white house

not a mile off, well enclosed with evergreens, and known to the

villagers, as "Jodson's." Mrs. Davilow's delicate face showed only a

slight deepening of its mild melancholy, her hair only a few more

silver lines, in consequence of the last year's trials; the four girls

had bloomed out a little from being less in the shade; and the good

Jocosa preserved her serviceable neutrality toward the pleasures and

glories of the world as things made for those who were not "in a

situation."

The low narrow drawing-room, enlarged by two quaint projecting windows,

with lattices wide open on a July afternoon to the scent of monthly

roses, the faint murmurs of the garden, and the occasional rare sound

of hoofs and wheels seeming to clarify the succeeding silence, made

rather a crowded, lively scene, Rex and Anna being added to the usual

group of six. Anna, always a favorite with her younger cousins, had

much to tell of her new experience, and the acquaintances she had made

in London, and when on her first visit she came alone, many questions

were asked her about Gwendolen's house in Grosvenor Square, what

Gwendolen herself had said, and what any one else had said about

Gwendolen. Had Anna been to see Gwendolen after she had known about the

yacht? No:--an answer which left speculation free concerning everything

connected with that interesting unknown vessel beyond the fact that

Gwendolen had written just before she set out to say that Mr.

Grandcourt and she were going yachting on the Mediterranean, and again

from Marseilles to say that she was sure to like the yachting, the

cabins were very elegant, and she would probably not send another

letter till she had written quite a long diary filled with \_dittos\_.

Also, this movement of Mr. and Mrs. Grandcourt had been mentioned in

"the newspaper;" so that altogether this new phase of Gwendolen's

exalted life made a striking part of the sisters' romance, the

book-devouring Isabel throwing in a corsair or two to make an adventure

that might end well.

But when Rex was present, the girls, according to instructions, never

started this fascinating topic, and to-day there had only been animated

descriptions of the Meyricks and their extraordinary Jewish friends,

which caused some astonished questioning from minds to which the idea

of live Jews, out of a book, suggested a difference deep enough to be

almost zoological, as of a strange race in Pliny's Natural History that

might sleep under the shade of its own ears. Bertha could not imagine

what Jews believed now; and she had a dim idea that they rejected the

Old Testament since it proved the New; Miss Merry thought that Mirah

and her brother could "never have been properly argued with," and the

amiable Alice did not mind what the Jews believed, she was sure she

"couldn't bear them." Mrs. Davilow corrected her by saying that the

great Jewish families who were in society were quite what they ought to

be both in London and Paris, but admitted that the commoner unconverted

Jews were objectionable; and Isabel asked whether Mirah talked just as

they did, or whether you might be with her and not find out that she

was a Jewess.

Rex, who had no partisanship with the Israelites, having made a

troublesome acquaintance with the minutiae of their ancient history in

the form of "cram," was amusing himself by playfully exaggerating the

notion of each speaker, while Anna begged them all to understand that

he was only joking, when the laughter was interrupted by the bringing

in of a letter for Mrs. Davilow. A messenger had run with it in great

haste from the rectory. It enclosed a telegram, and as Mrs. Davilow

read and re-read it in silence and agitation, all eyes were turned on

her with anxiety, but no one dared to speak. Looking up at last and

seeing the young faces "painted with fear," she remembered that they

might be imagining something worse than the truth, something like her

own first dread which made her unable to understand what was written,

and she said, with a sob which was half relief--

"My dears, Mr. Grandcourt--" She paused an instant, and then began

again, "Mr. Grandcourt is drowned."

Rex started up as if a missile had been suddenly thrown into the room.

He could not help himself, and Anna's first look was at him. But then,

gathering some self-command while Mrs. Davilow was reading what the

rector had written on the enclosing paper, he said--

"Can I do anything, aunt? Can I carry any word to my father from you?"

"Yes, dear. Tell him I will be ready--he is very good. He says he will

go with me to Genoa--he will be here at half-past six. Jocosa and

Alice, help me to get ready. She is safe--Gwendolen is safe--but she

must be ill. I am sure she must be very ill. Rex, dear--Rex and

Anna--go and and tell your father I will be quite ready. I would not

for the world lose another night. And bless him for being ready so

soon. I can travel night and day till we get there."

Rex and Anna hurried away through the sunshine which was suddenly

solemn to them, without uttering a word to each other: she chiefly

possessed by solicitude about any reopening of his wound, he struggling

with a tumultuary crowd of thoughts that were an offence against his

better will. The tumult being undiminished when they were at the

rectory gate, he said--

"Nannie, I will leave you to say everything to my father. If he wants

me immediately, let me know. I shall stay in the shrubbery for ten

minutes--only ten minutes."

Who has been quite free from egoistic escapes of the imagination,

picturing desirable consequences on his own future in the presence of

another's misfortune, sorrow, or death? The expected promotion or

legacy is the common type of a temptation which makes speech and even

prayer a severe avoidance of the most insistent thoughts, and sometimes

raises an inward shame, a self-distaste that is worse than any other

form of unpleasant companionship. In Rex's nature the shame was

immediate, and overspread like an ugly light all the hurrying images of

what might come, which thrust themselves in with the idea that

Gwendolen was again free--overspread them, perhaps, the more

persistently because every phantasm of a hope was quickly nullified by

a more substantial obstacle. Before the vision of "Gwendolen free" rose

the impassable vision of "Gwendolen rich, exalted, courted;" and if in

the former time, when both their lives were fresh, she had turned from

his love with repugnance, what ground was there for supposing that her

heart would be more open to him in the future?

These thoughts, which he wanted to master and suspend, were like a

tumultuary ringing of opposing chimes that he could not escape from by

running. During the last year he had brought himself into a state of

calm resolve, and now it seemed that three words had been enough to

undo all that difficult work, and cast him back into the wretched

fluctuations of a longing which he recognized as simply perturbing and

hopeless. And at this moment the activity of such longing had an

untimeliness that made it repulsive to his better self. Excuse poor

Rex; it was not much more than eighteen months since he had been laid

low by an archer who sometimes touches his arrow with a subtle,

lingering poison. The disappointment of a youthful passion has effects

as incalculable as those of small-pox which may make one person plain

and a genius, another less plain and more foolish, another plain

without detriment to his folly, and leave perhaps the majority without

obvious change. Everything depends--not on the mere fact of

disappointment, but--on the nature affected and the force that stirs

it. In Rex's well-endowed nature, brief as the hope had been, the

passionate stirring had gone deep, and the effect of disappointment was

revolutionary, though fraught with a beneficent new order which

retained most of the old virtues; in certain respects he believed that

it had finally determined the bias and color of his life. Now, however,

it seemed that his inward peace was hardly more than that of republican

Florence, and his heart no better than the alarm-bell that made work

slack and tumult busy.

Rex's love had been of that sudden, penetrating, clinging sort which

the ancients knew and sung, and in singing made a fashion of talk for

many moderns whose experience has by no means a fiery, demonic

character. To have the consciousness suddenly steeped with another's

personality, to have the strongest inclinations possessed by an image

which retains its dominance in spite of change and apart from

worthiness--nay, to feel a passion which clings faster for the tragic

pangs inflicted by a cruel, reorganized unworthiness--is a phase of

love which in the feeble and common-minded has a repulsive likeness to

his blind animalism insensible to the higher sway of moral affinity or

heaven-lit admiration. But when this attaching force is present in a

nature not of brutish unmodifiableness, but of a human dignity that can

risk itself safely, it may even result in a devotedness not unfit to be

called divine in a higher sense than the ancient. Phlegmatic

rationality stares and shakes its head at these unaccountable

prepossessions, but they exist as undeniably as the winds and waves,

determining here a wreck and there a triumphant voyage.

This sort of passion had nested in the sweet-natured, strong Rex, and

he had made up his mind to its companionship, as if it had been an

object supremely dear, stricken dumb and helpless, and turning all the

future of tenderness into a shadow of the past. But he had also made up

his mind that his life was not to be pauperized because he had had to

renounce one sort of joy; rather, he had begun life again with a new

counting-up of the treasures that remained to him, and he had even felt

a release of power such as may come from ceasing to be afraid of your

own neck.

And now, here he was pacing the shrubbery, angry with himself that the

sense of irrevocableness in his lot, which ought in reason to have been

as strong as ever, had been shaken by a change of circumstances that

could make no change in relation to him. He told himself the truth

quite roughly--

"She would never love me; and that is not the question--I could never

approach her as a lover in her present position. I am exactly of no

consequence at all, and am not likely to be of much consequence till my

head is turning gray. But what has that to do with it? She would not

have me on any terms, and I would not ask her. It is a meanness to be

thinking about it now--no better than lurking about the battle-field to

strip the dead; but there never was more gratuitous sinning. I have

nothing to gain there--absolutely nothing. Then why can't I face the

facts, and behave as they demand, instead of leaving my father to

suppose that there are matters he can't speak to me about, though I

might be useful in them?"

The last thought made one wave with the impulse that sent Rex walking

firmly into the house and through the open door of the study, where he

saw his father packing a traveling-desk.

"Can I be of any use, sir?" said Rex, with rallied courage, as his

father looked up at him.

"Yes, my boy; when I'm gone, just see to my letters, and answer where

necessary, and send me word of everything. Dymock will manage the

parish very well, and you will stay with your mother, or, at least, go

up and down again, till I come back, whenever that may be."

"You will hardly be very long, sir, I suppose," said Rex, beginning to

strap a railway rug. "You will perhaps bring my cousin back to

England?" He forced himself to speak of Gwendolen for the first time,

and the rector noticed the epoch with satisfaction.

"That depends," he answered, taking the subject as a matter-of-course

between them. "Perhaps her mother may stay there with her, and I may

come back very soon. This telegram leaves us in ignorance which is

rather anxious. But no doubt the arrangements of the will lately made

are satisfactory, and there may possibly be an heir yet to be born. In

any case, I feel confident that Gwendolen will be liberally--I should

expect, splendidly--provided for."

"It must have been a great shock for her," said Rex, getting more

resolute after the first twinge had been borne. "I suppose he was a

devoted husband."

"No doubt of it," said the rector, in his most decided manner. "Few men

of his position would have come forward as he did under the

circumstances."

Rex had never seen Grandcourt, had never been spoken to about him by

any one of the family, and knew nothing of Gwendolen's flight from her

suitor to Leubronn. He only knew that Grandcourt, being very much in

love with her, had made her an offer in the first weeks of her sudden

poverty, and had behaved very handsomely in providing for her mother

and sisters. That was all very natural and what Rex himself would have

liked to do. Grandcourt had been a lucky fellow, and had had some

happiness before he got drowned. Yet Rex wondered much whether

Gwendolen had been in love with the successful suitor, or had only

forborne to tell him that she hated being made love to.

CHAPTER LIX.

"I count myself in nothing else so happy

As in a soul remembering my good friends."

--SHAKESPEARE.

Sir Hugo Mallinger was not so prompt in starting for Genoa as Mr.

Gascoigne had been, and Deronda on all accounts would not take his

departure until he had seen the baronet. There was not only

Grandcourt's death, but also the late crisis in his own life to make

reasons why his oldest friend would desire to have the unrestrained

communication of speech with him, for in writing he had not felt able

to give any details concerning the mother who had come and gone like an

apparition. It was not till the fifth evening that Deronda, according

to telegram, waited for Sir Hugo at the station, where he was to arrive

between eight and nine; and while he was looking forward to the sight

of the kind, familiar face, which was part of his earliest memories,

something like a smile, in spite of his late tragic experience, might

have been detected in his eyes and the curve of his lips at the idea of

Sir Hugo's pleasure in being now master of his estates, able to leave

them to his daughters, or at least--according to a view of inheritance

which had just been strongly impressed on Deronda's imagination--to

take makeshift feminine offspring as intermediate to a satisfactory

heir in a grandson. We should be churlish creatures if we could have no

joy in our fellow-mortals' joy, unless it were in agreement with our

theory of righteous distribution and our highest ideal of human good:

what sour corners our mouths would get--our eyes, what frozen glances!

and all the while our own possessions and desires would not exactly

adjust themselves to our ideal. We must have some comradeship with

imperfection; and it is, happily, possible to feel gratitude even where

we discern a mistake that may have been injurious, the vehicle of the

mistake being an affectionate intention prosecuted through a life-time

of kindly offices. Deronda's feeling and judgment were strongly against

the action of Sir Hugo in making himself the agent of a falsity--yes, a

falsity: he could give no milder name to the concealment under which he

had been reared. But the baronet had probably had no clear knowledge

concerning the mother's breach of trust, and with his light, easy way

of taking life, had held it a reasonable preference in her that her son

should be made an English gentleman, seeing that she had the

eccentricity of not caring to part from her child, and be to him as if

she were not. Daniel's affectionate gratitude toward Sir Hugo made him

wish to find grounds of excuse rather than blame; for it is as possible

to be rigid in principle and tender in blame, as it is to suffer from

the sight of things hung awry, and yet to be patient with the hanger

who sees amiss. If Sir Hugo in his bachelorhood had been beguiled into

regarding children chiefly as a product intended to make life more

agreeable to the full-grown, whose convenience alone was to be

consulted in the disposal of them--why, he had shared an assumption

which, if not formally avowed, was massively acted on at that date of

the world's history; and Deronda, with all his keen memory of the

painful inward struggle he had gone through in his boyhood, was able

also to remember the many signs that his experience had been entirely

shut out from Sir Hugo's conception. Ignorant kindness may have the

effect of cruelty; but to be angry with it as if it were direct cruelty

would be an ignorant \_un\_kindness, the most remote from Deronda's large

imaginative lenience toward others. And perhaps now, after the

searching scenes of the last ten days, in which the curtain had been

lifted for him from the secrets of lives unlike his own, he was more

than ever disposed to check that rashness of indignation or resentment

which has an unpleasant likeness to the love of punishing. When he saw

Sir Hugo's familiar figure descending from the railway carriage, the

life-long affection which had been well accustomed to make excuses,

flowed in and submerged all newer knowledge that might have seemed

fresh ground for blame.

"Well, Dan," said Sir Hugo, with a serious fervor, grasping Deronda's

hand. He uttered no other words of greeting; there was too strong a

rush of mutual consciousness. The next thing was to give orders to the

courier, and then to propose walking slowly in, the mild evening, there

being no hurry to get to the hotel.

"I have taken my journey easily, and am in excellent condition," he

said, as he and Deronda came out under the starlight, which was still

faint with the lingering sheen of day. "I didn't hurry in setting off,

because I wanted to inquire into things a little, and so I got sight of

your letter to Lady Mallinger before I started. But now, how is the

widow?"

"Getting calmer," said Deronda. "She seems to be escaping the bodily

illness that one might have feared for her, after her plunge and

terrible excitement. Her uncle and mother came two days ago, and she is

being well taken care of."

"Any prospect of an heir being born?"

"From what Mr. Gascoigne said to me, I conclude not. He spoke as if it

were a question whether the widow would have the estates for her life."

"It will not be much of a wrench to her affections, I fancy, this loss

of the husband?" said Sir Hugo, looking round at Deronda.

"The suddenness of the death has been a great blow to her," said

Deronda, quietly evading the question.

"I wonder whether Grandcourt gave her any notion what were the

provisions of his will?" said Sir Hugo.

"Do you know what they are, sir?" parried Deronda.

"Yes, I do," said the baronet, quickly. "Gad! if there is no prospect

of a legitimate heir, he has left everything to a boy he had by a Mrs.

Glasher; you know nothing about the affair, I suppose, but she was a

sort of wife to him for a good many years, and there are three older

children--girls. The boy is to take his father's name; he is Henleigh

already, and he is to be Henleigh Mallinger Grandcourt. The Mallinger

will be of no use to him, I am happy to say; but the young dog will

have more than enough with his fourteen years' minority--no need to

have had holes filled up with my fifty thousand for Diplow that he had

no right to: and meanwhile my beauty, the young widow, is to put up

with a poor two thousand a year and the house at Gadsmere--a nice kind

of banishment for her if she chose to shut herself up there, which I

don't think she will. The boy's mother has been living there of late

years. I'm perfectly disgusted with Grandcourt. I don't know that I'm

obliged to think the better of him because he's drowned, though, so far

as my affairs are concerned, nothing in his life became him like the

leaving it."

"In my opinion he did wrong when he married this wife--not in leaving

his estates to the son," said Deronda, rather dryly.

"I say nothing against his leaving the land to the lad," said Sir Hugo;

"but since he had married this girl he ought to have given her a

handsome provision, such as she could live on in a style fitted to the

rank he had raised her to. She ought to have had four or five thousand

a year and the London house for her life; that's what I should have

done for her. I suppose, as she was penniless, her friends couldn't

stand out for a settlement, else it's ill trusting to the will a man

may make after he's married. Even a wise man generally lets some folly

ooze out of him in his will--my father did, I know; and if a fellow has

any spite or tyranny in him, he's likely to bottle off a good deal for

keeping in that sort of document. It's quite clear Grandcourt meant

that his death should put an extinguisher on his wife, if she bore him

no heir."

"And, in the other case, I suppose everything would have been

reversed--illegitimacy would have had the extinguisher?" said Deronda,

with some scorn.

"Precisely--Gadsmere and the two thousand. It's queer. One nuisance is

that Grandcourt has made me an executor; but seeing he was the son of

my only brother, I can't refuse to act. And I shall mind it less if I

can be of any use to the widow. Lush thinks she was not in ignorance

about the family under the rose, and the purport of the will. He hints

that there was no very good understanding between the couple. But I

fancy you are the man who knew most about what Mrs. Grandcourt felt or

did not feel--eh, Dan?" Sir Hugo did not put this question with his

usual jocoseness, but rather with a lowered tone of interested inquiry;

and Deronda felt that any evasion would be misinterpreted. He answered

gravely--

"She was certainly not happy. They were unsuited to each other. But as

to the disposal of the property--from all I have seen of her, I should

predict that she will be quite contented with it."

"Then she is not much like the rest of her sex; that's all I can say,"

said Sir Hugo, with a slight shrug. "However, she ought to be something

extraordinary, for there must be an entanglement between your horoscope

and hers--eh? When that tremendous telegram came, the first thing Lady

Mallinger said was, 'How very strange that it should be Daniel who

sends it!' But I have had something of the same sort in my own life. I

was once at a foreign hotel where a lady had been left by her husband

without money. When I heard of it, and came forward to help her, who

should she be but an early flame of mine, who had been fool enough to

marry an Austrian baron with a long mustache and short affection? But

it was an affair of my own that called me there--nothing to do with

knight-errantry, any more than you coming to Genoa had to do with the

Grandcourts."

There was silence for a little while. Sir Hugo had begun to talk of the

Grandcourts as the less difficult subject between himself and Deronda;

but they were both wishing to overcome a reluctance to perfect

frankness on the events which touched their relation to each other.

Deronda felt that his letter, after the first interview with his

mother, had been rather a thickening than a breaking of the ice, and

that he ought to wait for the first opening to come from Sir Hugo. Just

when they were about to lose sight of the port, the baronet turned, and

pausing as if to get a last view, said in a tone of more serious

feeling--"And about the main business of your coming to Genoa, Dan? You

have not been deeply pained by anything you have learned, I hope? There

is nothing that you feel need change your position in any way? You

know, whatever happens to you must always be of importance to me."

"I desire to meet your goodness by perfect confidence, sir," said

Deronda. "But I can't answer those questions truly by a simple yes or

no. Much that I have heard about the past has pained me. And it has

been a pain to meet and part with my mother in her suffering state, as

I have been compelled to do, But it is no pain--it is rather a clearing

up of doubts for which I am thankful, to know my parentage. As to the

effect on my position, there will be no change in my gratitude to you,

sir, for the fatherly care and affection you have always shown me. But

to know that I was born a Jew, may have a momentous influence on my

life, which I am hardly able to tell you of at present."

Deronda spoke the last sentence with a resolve that overcame some

diffidence. He felt that the differences between Sir Hugo's nature and

his own would have, by-and-by, to disclose themselves more markedly

than had ever yet been needful. The baronet gave him a quick glance,

and turned to walk on. After a few moments' silence, in which he had

reviewed all the material in his memory which would enable him to

interpret Deronda's words, he said--

"I have long expected something remarkable from you, Dan; but, for

God's sake, don't go into any eccentricities! I can tolerate any man's

difference of opinion, but let him tell it me without getting himself

up as a lunatic. At this stage of the world, if a man wants to be taken

seriously, he must keep clear of melodrama. Don't misunderstand me. I

am not suspecting you of setting up any lunacy on your own account. I

only think you might easily be led arm in arm with a lunatic,

especially if he wanted defending. You have a passion for people who

are pelted, Dan. I'm sorry for them too; but so far as company goes,

it's a bad ground of selection. However, I don't ask you to anticipate

your inclination in anything you have to tell me. When you make up your

mind to a course that requires money, I have some sixteen thousand

pounds that have been accumulating for you over and above what you have

been having the interest of as income. And now I am come, I suppose you

want to get back to England as soon as you can?"

"I must go first to Mainz to get away a chest of my grandfather's, and

perhaps to see a friend of his," said Deronda. "Although the chest has

been lying there these twenty years, I have an unreasonable sort of

nervous eagerness to get it away under my care, as if it were more

likely now than before that something might happen to it. And perhaps I

am the more uneasy, because I lingered after my mother left, instead of

setting out immediately. Yet I can't regret that I was here--else Mrs.

Grandcourt would have had none but servants to act for her."

"Yes, yes," said Sir Hugo, with a flippancy which was an escape of some

vexation hidden under his more serious speech; "I hope you are not

going to set a dead Jew above a living Christian."

Deronda colored, and repressed a retort. They were just turning into

the \_Italia\_.

CHAPTER LX.

"But I shall say no more of this at this time; for this is to be felt

and not to be talked of; and they who never touched it with their

fingers may secretly perhaps laugh at it in their hearts and be never

the wiser."--JEREMY TAYLOR.

The Roman Emperor in the legend put to death ten learned Israelites to

avenge the sale of Joseph by his brethren. And there have always been

enough of his kidney, whose piety lies in punishing who can see the

justice of grudges but not of gratitude. For you shall never convince

the stronger feeling that it hath not the stronger reason, or incline

him who hath no love to believe that there is good ground for loving.

As we may learn from the order of word-making, wherein \_love\_

precedeth \_lovable\_.

When Deronda presented his letter at the banking-house in the \_Schuster

Strasse\_ at Mainz, and asked for Joseph Kalonymos, he was presently

shown into an inner room, where, seated at a table arranging open

letters, was the white-bearded man whom he had seen the year before in

the synagogue at Frankfort. He wore his hat--it seemed to be the same

old felt hat as before--and near him was a packed portmanteau with a

wrap and overcoat upon it. On seeing Deronda enter he rose, but did not

advance or put out his hand. Looking at him with small penetrating eyes

which glittered like black gems in the midst of his yellowish face and

white hair, he said in German--

"Good! It is now you who seek me, young man."

"Yes; I seek you with gratitude, as a friend of my grandfather's," said

Deronda, "and I am under an obligation to you for giving yourself much

trouble on my account." He spoke without difficulty in that liberal

German tongue which takes many strange accents to its maternal bosom.

Kalonymos now put out his hand and said cordially, "So you are no

longer angry at being something more than an Englishman?"

"On the contrary. I thank you heartily for helping to save me from

remaining in ignorance of my parentage, and for taking care of the

chest that my grandfather left in trust for me."

"Sit down, sit down," said Kalonymos, in a quick undertone, seating

himself again, and pointing to a chair near him. Then deliberately

laying aside his hat and showing a head thickly covered, with white

hair, he stroked and clutched his beard while he looked examiningly at

the young face before him. The moment wrought strongly on Deronda's

imaginative susceptibility: in the presence of one linked still in

zealous friendship with the grandfather whose hope had yearned toward

him when he was unborn, and who, though dead, was yet to speak with him

in those written memorials which, says Milton, "contain a potency of

life in them to be as active as that soul whose progeny they are," he

seemed to himself to be touching the electric chain of his own

ancestry; and he bore the scrutinizing look of Kalonymos with a

delighted awe, something like what one feels in the solemn

commemoration of acts done long ago but still telling markedly on the

life of to-day. Impossible for men of duller, fibre--men whose

affection is not ready to diffuse itself through the wide travel of

imagination, to comprehend, perhaps even to credit this sensibility of

Deronda's; but it subsisted, like their own dullness, notwithstanding

their lack of belief in it--and it gave his face an expression which

seemed very satisfactory to the observer.

He said in Hebrew, quoting from one of the fine hymns in the Hebrew

liturgy, "As thy goodness has been great to the former generations,

even so may it be to the latter." Then after pausing a little he began,

"Young man, I rejoice that I was not yet set off again on my travels,

and that you are come in time for me to see the image of my friend as

he was in his youth--no longer perverted from the fellowship of your

people--no longer shrinking in proud wrath from the touch of him who

seemed to be claiming you as a Jew. You come with thankfulness yourself

to claim the kindred and heritage that wicked contrivance would have

robbed you of. You come with a willing soul to declare, 'I am the

grandson of Daniel Charisi.' Is it not so?"

"Assuredly it is," said Deronda. "But let me say that I should at no

time have been inclined to treat a Jew with incivility simply because

he was a Jew. You can understand that I shrank from saying to a

stranger, 'I know nothing of my mother.'"

"A sin, a sin!" said Kalonymos, putting up his hand and closing his

eyes in disgust. "A robbery of our people--as when our youths and

maidens were reared for the Roman Edom. But it is frustrated. I have

frustrated it. When Daniel Charisi--may his Rock and his Redeemer guard

him!--when Daniel Charisi was a stripling and I was a lad little above

his shoulder, we made a solemn vow always to be friends. He said, 'Let

us bind ourselves with duty, as if we were sons of the same mother.'

That was his bent from first to last--as he said, to fortify his soul

with bonds. It was a saying of his, 'Let us bind love with duty; for

duty is the love of law; and law is the nature of the Eternal.' So we

bound ourselves. And though we were much apart in our later life, the

bond has never been broken. When he was dead, they sought to rob him;

but they could not rob him of me. I rescued that remainder of him which

he had prized and preserved for his offspring. And I have restored to

him the offspring they had robbed him of. I will bring you the chest

forthwith."

Kalonymos left the room for a few minutes, and returned with a clerk

who carried the chest, set it down on the floor, drew off a leather

cover, and went out again. It was not very large, but was made heavy by

ornamental bracers and handles of gilt iron. The wood was beautifully

incised with Arabic lettering.

"So!" said Kalonymos, returning to his seat. "And here is the curious

key," he added, taking it from a small leathern bag. "Bestow it

carefully. I trust you are methodic and wary." He gave Deronda the

monitory and slightly suspicious look with which age is apt to commit

any object to the keeping of youth.

"I shall be more careful of this than of any other property," said

Deronda, smiling and putting the key in his breast-pocket. "I never

before possessed anything that was a sign to me of so much cherished

hope and effort. And I shall never forget that the effort was partly

yours. Have you time to tell me more of my grandfather? Or shall I be

trespassing in staying longer?"

"Stay yet a while. In an hour and eighteen minutes I start for

Trieste," said Kalonymos, looking at his watch, "and presently my sons

will expect my attention. Will you let me make you known to them, so

that they may have the pleasure of showing hospitality to my friend's

grandson? They dwell here in ease and luxury, though I choose to be a

wanderer."

"I shall be glad if you will commend me to their acquaintance for some

future opportunity," said Deronda. "There are pressing claims calling

me to England--friends who may be much in need of my presence. I have

been kept away from them too long by unexpected circumstances. But to

know more of you and your family would be motive enough to bring me

again to Mainz."

"Good! Me you will hardly find, for I am beyond my threescore years and

ten, and I am a wanderer, carrying my shroud with me. But my sons and

their children dwell here in wealth and unity. The days are changed for

us since Karl the Great fetched my ancestors from Italy to bring some

tincture of knowledge to our rough German brethren. I and my

contemporaries have had to fight for it too. Our youth fell on evil

days; but this we have won; we increase our wealth in safety, and the

learning of all Germany is fed and fattened by Jewish brains--though

they keep not always their Jewish hearts. Have you been left altogether

ignorant of your people's life, young man?"

"No," said Deronda, "I have lately, before I had any true suspicion of

my parentage, been led to study everything belonging to their history

with more interest than any other subject. It turns out that I have

been making myself ready to understand my grandfather a little." He was

anxious less the time should be consumed before this circuitous course

of talk could lead them back to the topic he most cared about. Age does

not easily distinguish between what it needs to express and what youth

needs to know-distance seeming to level the objects of memory; and

keenly active as Joseph Kalonymos showed himself, an inkstand in the

wrong place would have hindered his imagination from getting to

Beyrout: he had been used to unite restless travel with punctilious

observation. But Deronda's last sentence answered its purpose.

"So-you would perhaps have been such a man as he if your education had

not hindered; for you are like him in features:--yet not altogether,

young man. He had an iron will in his face: it braced up everybody

about him. When he was quite young he had already got one deep upright

line in his brow. I see none of that in you. Daniel Charisi used to

say, 'Better, a wrong will than a wavering; better a steadfast enemy

than an uncertain friend; better a false belief than no belief at all.'

What he despised most was indifference. He had longer reasons than I

can give you."

"Yet his knowledge was not narrow?" said Deronda, with a tacit

reference to the usual excuse for indecision--that it comes from

knowing too much.

"Narrow? no," said Kalonymos, shaking his head with a compassionate

smile "From his childhood upward, he drank in learning as easily as the

plant sucks up water. But he early took to medicine and theories about

life and health. He traveled to many countries, and spent much of his

substance in seeing and knowing. What he used to insist on was that the

strength and wealth of mankind depended on the balance of separateness

and communication, and he was bitterly against our people losing

themselves among the Gentiles; 'It's no better,' said he, 'than the

many sorts of grain going back from their variety into sameness.' He

mingled all sorts of learning; and in that he was like our Arabic

writers in the golden time. We studied together, but he went beyond me.

Though we were bosom friends, and he poured himself out to me, we were

as different as the inside and outside of the bowl. I stood up for two

notions of my own: I took Charisi's sayings as I took the shape of the

trees: they were there, not to be disputed about. It came to the same

thing in both of us; we were both faithful Jews, thankful not to be

Gentiles. And since I was a ripe man, I have been what I am now, for

all but age-loving to wander, loving transactions, loving to behold all

things, and caring nothing about hardship. Charisi thought continually

of our people's future: he went with all his soul into that part of our

religion: I, not. So we have freedom, I am content. Our people wandered

before they were driven. Young man when I am in the East, I lie much on

deck and watch the greater stars. The sight of them satisfies me. I

know them as they rise, and hunger not to know more. Charisi was

satisfied with no sight, but pieced it out with what had been before

and what would come after. Yet we loved each other, and as he said, he

bound our love with duty; we solemnly pledged ourselves to help and

defend each other to the last. I have fulfilled my pledge." Here

Kalonymos rose, and Deronda, rising also, said--

"And in being faithful to him you have caused justice to be done to me.

It would have been a robbery of me too that I should never have known

of the inheritance he had prepared for me. I thank you with my whole

soul."

"Be worthy of him, young man. What is your vocation?" This question was

put with a quick abruptness which embarrassed Deronda, who did not feel

it quite honest to allege his law-reading as a vocation. He answered--

"I cannot say that I have any."

"Get one, get one. The Jew must be diligent. You will call yourself a

Jew and profess the faith of your fathers?" said Kalonymos, putting his

hand on Deronda's shoulder and looking sharply in his face.

"I shall call myself a Jew," said Deronda, deliberately, becoming

slightly paler under the piercing eyes of his questioner. "But I will

not say that I shall profess to believe exactly as my fathers have

believed. Our fathers themselves changed the horizon of their belief

and learned of other races. But I think I can maintain my grandfather's

notion of separateness with communication. I hold that my first duty is

to my own people, and if there is anything to be done toward restoring

or perfecting their common life, I shall make that my vocation."

It happened to Deronda at that moment, as it has often happened to

others, that the need for speech made an epoch in resolve. His respect

for the questioner would not let him decline to answer, and by the

necessity to answer he found out the truth for himself.

"Ah, you argue and you look forward--you are Daniel Charisi's

grandson," said Kalonymos, adding a benediction in Hebrew.

With that they parted; and almost as soon as Deronda was in London, the

aged man was again on shipboard, greeting the friendly stars without

any eager curiosity.

CHAPTER LXI.

"Within the gentle heart Love shelters him,

As birds within the green shade of the grove.

Before the gentle heart, in Nature's scheme,

Love was not, nor the gentle heart ere Love."

--GUIDO GUNICELLI (\_Rossetti's Translation\_).

There was another house besides the white house at Pennicote, another

breast besides Rex Gascoigne's, in which the news of Grandcourt's death

caused both strong agitation and the effort to repress it.

It was Hans Meyrick's habit to send or bring in the \_Times\_ for his

mother's reading. She was a great reader of news, from the

widest-reaching politics to the list of marriages; the latter, she

said, giving her the pleasant sense of finishing the fashionable novels

without having read them, and seeing the heroes and heroines happy

without knowing what poor creatures they were. On a Wednesday, there

were reasons why Hans always chose to bring the paper, and to do so

about the time that Mirah had nearly ended giving Mab her weekly

lesson, avowing that he came then because he wanted to hear Mirah sing.

But on the particular Wednesday now in question, after entering the

house as quietly as usual with his latch-key, he appeared in the

parlor, shaking the \_Times\_ aloft with a crackling noise, in

remorseless interruption of Mab's attempt to render \_Lascia ch'io

pianga\_ with a remote imitation of her teacher. Piano and song ceased

immediately; Mirah, who had been playing the accompaniment,

involuntarily started up and turned round, the crackling sound, after

the occasional trick of sounds, having seemed to her something

thunderous; and Mab said--

"O-o-o, Hans! why do you bring a more horrible noise than my singing?"

"What on earth is the wonderful news?" said Mrs. Meyrick, who was the

only other person in the room. "Anything about Italy--anything about

the Austrians giving up Venice?"

"Nothing about Italy, but something from Italy," said Hans, with a

peculiarity in his tone and manner which set his mother interpreting.

Imagine how some of us feel and behave when an event, not disagreeable

seems to be confirming and carrying out our private constructions. We

say, "What do you think?" in a pregnant tone to some innocent person

who has not embarked his wisdom in the same boat with ours, and finds

our information flat.

"Nothing bad?" said Mrs. Meyrick anxiously, thinking immediately of

Deronda; and Mirah's heart had been already clutched by the same

thought.

"Not bad for anybody we care much about," said Hans, quickly; "rather

uncommonly lucky, I think. I never knew anybody die conveniently

before. Considering what a dear gazelle I am, I am constantly wondering

to find myself alive."

"Oh me, Hans!" said Mab, impatiently, "if you must talk of yourself,

let it be behind your own back. What \_is\_ it that has happened?"

"Duke Alfonso is drowned, and the Duchess is alive, that's all," said

Hans, putting the paper before Mrs. Meyrick, with his finger against a

paragraph. "But more than all is--Deronda was at Genoa in the same

hotel with them, and he saw her brought in by the fishermen who had got

her out of the water time enough to save her from any harm. It seems

they saw her jump in after her husband, which was a less judicious

action than I should have expected of the Duchess. However Deronda is a

lucky fellow in being there to take care of her."

Mirah had sunk on the music stool again, with her eyelids down and her

hands tightly clasped; and Mrs. Meyrick, giving up the paper to Mab,

said--

"Poor thing! she must have been fond of her husband to jump in after

him."

"It was an inadvertence--a little absence of mind," said Hans, creasing

his face roguishly, and throwing himself into a chair not far from

Mirah. "Who can be fond of a jealous baritone, with freezing glances,

always singing asides?--that was the husband's \_rÃ´le\_, depend upon it.

Nothing can be neater than his getting drowned. The Duchess is at

liberty now to marry a man with a fine head of hair, and glances that

will melt instead of freezing her. And I shall be invited to the

wedding."

Here Mirah started from her sitting posture, and fixing her eyes on

Hans, with an angry gleam in them, she said, in a deeply-shaken voice

of indignation--

"Mr. Hans, you ought not to speak in that way. Mr. Deronda would not

like you to speak so. Why will you say he is lucky--why will you use

words of that sort about life and death--when what is life to one is

death to another? How do you know it would be lucky if he loved Mrs.

Grandcourt? It might be a great evil to him. She would take him away

from my brother--I know she would. Mr. Deronda would not call that

lucky to pierce my brother's heart."

All three were struck with the sudden transformation. Mirah's face,

with a look of anger that might have suited Ithuriel, pale, even to the

lips that were usually so rich of tint, was not far from poor Hans, who

sat transfixed, blushing under it as if he had been a girl, while he

said, nervously--

"I am a fool and a brute, and I withdraw every word. I'll go and hang

myself like Judas--if it's allowable to mention him." Even in Hans's

sorrowful moments, his improvised words had inevitably some drollery.

But Mirah's anger was not appeased: how could it be? She had burst into

indignant speech as creatures in intense pain bite and make their teeth

meet even through their own flesh, by way of making their agony

bearable. She said no more, but, seating herself at the piano, pressed

the sheet of music before her, as if she thought of beginning to play

again.

It was Mab who spoke, while Mrs. Meyrick's face seemed to reflect some

of Hans' discomfort.

"Mirah is quite right to scold you, Hans. You are always taking Mr.

Deronda's name in vain. And it is horrible, joking in that way about

his marrying Mrs. Grandcourt. Men's minds must be very black, I think,"

ended Mab, with much scorn.

"Quite true, my dear," said Hans, in a low tone, rising and turning on

his heel to walk toward the back window.

"We had better go on, Mab; you have not given your full time to the

lesson," said Mirah, in a higher tone than usual. "Will you sing this

again, or shall I sing it to you?"

"Oh, please sing it to me," said Mab, rejoiced to take no more notice

of what had happened.

And Mirah immediately sang \_Lascia ch'io pianga\_, giving forth its

melodious sobs and cries with new fullness and energy. Hans paused in

his walk and leaned against the mantel-piece, keeping his eyes

carefully away from his mother's. When Mirah had sung her last note and

touched the last chord, she rose and said, "I must go home now. Ezra

expects me."

She gave her hand silently to Mrs. Meyrick and hung back a little, not

daring to look at her, instead of kissing her, as usual. But the little

mother drew Mirah's face down to hers, and said, soothingly, "God bless

you, my dear." Mirah felt that she had committed an offense against

Mrs. Meyrick by angrily rebuking Hans, and mixed with the rest of her

suffering was the sense that she had shown something like a proud

ingratitude, an unbecoming assertion of superiority. And her friend had

divined this compunction.

Meanwhile Hans had seized his wide-awake, and was ready to open the

door.

"Now, Hans," said Mab, with what was really a sister's tenderness

cunningly disguised, "you are not going to walk home with Mirah. I am

sure she would rather not. You are so dreadfully disagreeable to-day."

"I shall go to take care of her, if she does not forbid me," said Hans,

opening the door.

Mirah said nothing, and when he had opened the outer door for her and

closed it behind him, he walked by her side unforbidden. She had not

the courage to begin speaking to him again--conscious that she had

perhaps been unbecomingly severe in her words to him, yet finding only

severer words behind them in her heart. Besides, she was pressed upon

by a crowd of thoughts thrusting themselves forward as interpreters of

that consciousness which still remained unaltered to herself.

Hans, on his side, had a mind equally busy. Mirah's anger had waked in

him a new perception, and with it the unpleasant sense that he was a

dolt not to have had it before. Suppose Mirah's heart were entirely

preoccupied with Deronda in another character than that of her own and

her brother's benefactor; the supposition was attended in Hans's mind

with anxieties which, to do him justice, were not altogether selfish.

He had a strong persuasion, which only direct evidence to the contrary

could have dissipated, and that was that there was a serious attachment

between Deronda and Mrs. Grandcourt; he had pieced together many

fragments of observation, and gradually gathered knowledge, completed

by what his sisters had heard from Anna Gascoigne, which convinced him

not only that Mrs. Grandcourt had a passion for Deronda, but also,

notwithstanding his friend's austere self-repression, that Deronda's

susceptibility about her was the sign of concealed love. Some men,

having such a conviction, would have avoided allusions that could have

roused that susceptibility; but Hans's talk naturally fluttered toward

mischief, and he was given to a form of experiment on live animals

which consisted in irritating his friends playfully. His experiments

had ended in satisfying him that what he thought likely was true.

On the other hand, any susceptibility Deronda had manifested about a

lover's attentions being shown to Mirah, Hans took to be sufficiently

accounted for by the alleged reason, namely, her dependent position;

for he credited his friend with all possible unselfish anxiety for

those whom he could rescue and protect. And Deronda's insistence that

Mirah would never marry one who was not a Jew necessarily seemed to

exclude himself, since Hans shared the ordinary opinion, which he knew

nothing to disturb, that Deronda was the son of Sir Hugo Mallinger.

Thus he felt himself in clearness about the state of Deronda's

affections; but now, the events which really struck him as concurring

toward the desirable union with Mrs. Grandcourt, had called forth a

flash of revelation from Mirah--a betrayal of her passionate feeling on

this subject which had made him melancholy on her account as well as

his own--yet on the whole less melancholy than if he had imagined

Deronda's hopes fixed on her. It is not sublime, but it is common, for

a man to see the beloved object unhappy because his rival loves

another, with more fortitude and a milder jealousy than if he saw her

entirely happy in his rival. At least it was so with the mercurial

Hans, who fluctuated between the contradictory states of feeling,

wounded because Mirah was wounded, and of being almost obliged to

Deronda for loving somebody else. It was impossible for him to give

Mirah any direct sign of the way in which he had understood her anger,

yet he longed that his speechless companionship should be eloquent in a

tender, penitent sympathy which is an admissible form of wooing a

bruised heart.

Thus the two went side by side in a companionship that yet seemed an

agitated communication, like that of two chords whose quick vibrations

lie outside our hearing. But when they reached the door of Mirah's

home, and Hans said "Good-bye," putting out his hand with an appealing

look of penitence, she met the look with melancholy gentleness, and

said, "Will you not come in and see my brother?"

Hans could not but interpret this invitation as a sign of pardon. He

had not enough understanding of what Mirah's nature had been wrought

into by her early experience, to divine how the very strength of her

late excitement had made it pass more quickly into the resolute

acceptance of pain. When he had said, "If you will let me," and they

went in together, half his grief was gone, and he was spinning a little

romance of how his devotion might make him indispensable to Mirah in

proportion as Deronda gave his devotion elsewhere. This was quite fair,

since his friend was provided for according to his own heart; and on

the question of Judaism Hans felt thoroughly fortified:--who ever heard

in tale or history that a woman's love went in the track of her race

and religion? Moslem and Jewish damsels were always attracted toward

Christians, and now if Mirah's heart had gone forth too precipitately

toward Deronda, here was another case in point. Hans was wont to make

merry with his own arguments, to call himself a Giaour, and antithesis

the sole clue to events; but he believed a little in what he laughed

at. And thus his bird-like hope, constructed on the lightest

principles, soared again in spite of heavy circumstances.

They found Mordecai looking singularly happy, holding a closed letter

in his hand, his eyes glowing with a quiet triumph which in his

emaciated face gave the idea of a conquest over assailing death. After

the greeting between him and Hans, Mirah put her arm round her

brother's neck and looked down at the letter in his hand, without the

courage to ask about it, though she felt sure that it was the cause of

his happiness.

"A letter from Daniel Deronda," said Mordecai, answering her look.

"Brief--only saying that he hopes soon to return. Unexpected claims

have detained him. The promise of seeing him again is like the bow in

the cloud to me," continued Mordecai, looking at Hans; "and to you it

must be a gladness. For who has two friends like him?"

While Hans was answering Mirah slipped away to her own room; but not to

indulge in any outburst of the passion within her. If the angels, once

supposed to watch the toilet of women, had entered the little chamber

with her and let her shut the door behind them, they would only have

seen her take off her hat, sit down and press her hands against her

temples as if she had suddenly reflected that her head ached; then rise

to dash cold water on her eyes and brow and hair till her backward

curls were full of crystal beads, while she had dried her brow and

looked out like a freshly-opened flower from among the dewy tresses of

the woodland; then give deep sighs of relief, and putting on her little

slippers, sit still after that action for a couple of minutes, which

seemed to her so long, so full of things to come, that she rose with an

air of recollection, and went down to make tea.

Something of the old life had returned. She had been used to remember

that she must learn her part, must go to rehearsal, must act and sing

in the evening, must hide her feelings from her father; and the more

painful her life grew, the more she had been used to hide. The force of

her nature had long found its chief action in resolute endurance, and

to-day the violence of feeling which had caused the first jet of anger

had quickly transformed itself into a steady facing of trouble, the

well-known companion of her young years. But while she moved about and

spoke as usual, a close observer might have discerned a difference

between this apparent calm, which was the effect of restraining energy,

and the sweet genuine calm of the months when she first felt a return

of her infantine happiness.

Those who have been indulged by fortune and have always thought of

calamity as what happens to others, feel a blind incredulous rage at

the reversal of their lot, and half believe that their wild cries will

alter the course of the storm. Mirah felt no such surprise when

familiar Sorrow came back from brief absence, and sat down with her

according to the old use and wont. And this habit of expecting trouble

rather than joy, hindered her from having any persistent belief in

opposition to the probabilities which were not merely suggested by

Hans, but were supported by her own private knowledge and long-growing

presentiment. An attachment between Deronda and Mrs. Grandcourt, to end

in their future marriage, had the aspect of a certainty for her

feeling. There had been no fault in him: facts had ordered themselves

so that there was a tie between him and this woman who belonged to

another world than hers and Ezra's--nay, who seemed another sort of

being than Deronda, something foreign that would be a disturbance in

his life instead of blending with it. Well, well--but if it could have

been deferred so as to make no difference while Ezra was there! She did

not know all the momentousness of the relation between Deronda and her

brother, but she had seen, and instinctively felt enough to forebode

its being incongruous with any close tie to Mrs. Grandcourt; at least

this was the clothing that Mirah first gave to her mortal repugnance.

But in the still, quick action of her consciousness, thoughts went on

like changing states of sensation unbroken by her habitual acts; and

this inward language soon said distinctly that the mortal repugnance

would remain even if Ezra were secured from loss.

"What I have read about and sung about and seen acted, is happening to

me--this that I am feeling is the love that makes jealousy;" so

impartially Mirah summed up the charge against herself. But what

difference could this pain of hers make to any one else? It must remain

as exclusively her own, and hidden, as her early yearning and devotion

to her lost mother. But unlike that devotion, it was something that she

felt to be a misfortune of her nature--a discovery that what should

have been pure gratitude and reverence had sunk into selfish pain, that

the feeling she had hitherto delighted to pour out in words was

degraded into something she was ashamed to betray--an absurd longing

that she who had received all and given nothing should be of importance

where she was of no importance--an angry feeling toward another woman

who possessed the good she wanted. But what notion, what vain reliance

could it be that had lain darkly within her and was now burning itself

into sight as disappointment and jealousy? It was as if her soul had

been steeped in poisonous passion by forgotten dreams of deep sleep,

and now flamed out in this unaccountable misery. For with her waking

reason she had never entertained what seemed the wildly unfitting

thought that Deronda could love her. The uneasiness she had felt before

had been comparatively vague and easily explained as part of a general

regret that he was only a visitant in her and her brother's world, from

which the world where his home lay was as different as a portico with

lights and lacqueys was different from the door of a tent, where the

only splendor came from the mysterious inaccessible stars. But her

feeling was no longer vague: the cause of her pain--the image of Mrs.

Grandcourt by Deronda's side, drawing him farther and farther into the

distance, was as definite as pincers on her flesh. In the Psyche-mould

of Mirah's frame there rested a fervid quality of emotion, sometimes

rashly supposed to require the bulk of a Cleopatra; her impressions had

the thoroughness and tenacity that give to the first selection of

passionate feeling the character of a lifelong faithfulness. And now a

selection had declared itself, which gave love a cruel heart of

jealousy: she had been used to a strong repugnance toward certain

objects that surrounded her, and to walk inwardly aloof from them while

they touched her sense. And now her repugnance concentrated itself on

Mrs. Grandcourt, of whom she involuntarily conceived more evil than she

knew. "I could bear everything that used to be--but this is worse--this

is worse,--I used not to have horrible feelings!" said the poor child

in a loud whisper to her pillow. Strange that she should have to pray

against any feeling which concerned Deronda!

But this conclusion had been reached through an evening spent in

attending to Mordecai, whose exaltation of spirit in the prospect of

seeing his friend again, disposed him to utter many thoughts aloud to

Mirah, though such communication was often interrupted by intervals

apparently filled with an inward utterance that animated his eyes and

gave an occasional silent action to his lips. One thought especially

occupied him.

"Seest thou, Mirah," he said once, after a long silence, "the \_Shemah\_,

wherein we briefly confess the divine Unity, is the chief devotional

exercise of the Hebrew; and this made our religion the fundamental

religion for the whole world; for the divine Unity embraced as its

consequence the ultimate unity of mankind. See, then--the nation which

has been scoffed at for its separateness, has given a binding theory to

the human race. Now, in complete unity a part possesses the whole as

the whole possesses every part: and in this way human life is tending

toward the image of the Supreme Unity: for as our life becomes more

spiritual by capacity of thought, and joy therein, possession tends to

become more universal, being independent of gross material contact; so

that in a brief day the soul of man may know in fuller volume the good

which has been and is, nay, is to come, than all he could possess in a

whole life where he had to follow the creeping paths of the senses. In

this moment, my sister, I hold the joy of another's future within me: a

future which these eyes will not see, and which my spirit may not then

recognize as mine. I recognize it now, and love it so, that I can lay

down this poor life upon its altar and say: 'Burn, burn indiscernibly

into that which shall be, which is my love and not me.' Dost thou

understand, Mirah?"

"A little," said Mirah, faintly, "but my mind is too poor to have felt

it."

"And yet," said Mordecai, rather insistently, "women are specially

framed for the love which feels possession in renouncing, and is thus a

fit image of what I mean. Somewhere in the later \_Midrash\_, I think, is

the story of a Jewish maiden who loved a Gentile king so well, that

this was what she did:--she entered into prison and changed clothes

with the woman who was beloved by the king, that she might deliver that

woman from death by dying in her stead, and leave the king to be happy

in his love which was not for her. This is the surpassing love, that

loses self in the object of love."

"No, Ezra, no," said Mirah, with low-toned intensity, "that was not it.

She wanted the king when she was dead to know what she had done, and

feel that she was better than the other. It was her strong self,

wanting to conquer, that made her die."

Mordecai was silent a little, and then argued--

"That might be, Mirah. But if she acted so, believing the king would

never know."

"You can make the story so in your mind, Ezra, because you are great,

and like to fancy the greatest that could be. But I think it was not

really like that. The Jewish girl must have had jealousy in her heart,

and she wanted somehow to have the first place in the king's mind. That

is what she would die for."

"My sister, thou hast read too many plays, where the writers delight in

showing the human passions as indwelling demons, unmixed with the

relenting and devout elements of the soul. Thou judgest by the plays,

and not by thy own heart, which is like our mother's."

Mirah made no answer.

CHAPTER LXII.

"Das Gluck ist eine leichte Dirne,

Und weilt nicht gern am selben Ort;

Sie streicht das Haar dir von der Stirn

Und kusst dich rasch und flattert fort

Frau Ungluck hat im Gegentheile

Dich liebefest an's Herz gedruckt;

Sie sagt, sie habe keine Eile,

Setzt sich zu dir ans Bett und strickt."

--HEINE.

Something which Mirah had lately been watching for as the fulfilment of

a threat, seemed now the continued visit of that familiar sorrow which

had lately come back, bringing abundant luggage.

Turning out of Knightsbridge, after singing at a charitable morning

concert in a wealthy house, where she had been recommended by Klesmer,

and where there had been the usual groups outside to see the departing

company, she began to feel herself dogged by footsteps that kept an

even pace with her own. Her concert dress being simple black, over

which she had thrown a dust cloak, could not make her an object of

unpleasant attention, and render walking an imprudence; but this

reflection did not occur to Mirah: another kind of alarm lay uppermost

in her mind. She immediately thought of her father, and could no more

look round than if she had felt herself tracked by a ghost. To turn and

face him would be voluntarily to meet the rush of emotions which

beforehand seemed intolerable. If it were her father he must mean to

claim recognition, and he would oblige her to face him. She must wait

for that compulsion. She walked on, not quickening her pace--of what

use was that?--but picturing what was about to happen as if she had the

full certainty that the man behind her was her father; and along with

her picturing went a regret that she had given her word to Mrs. Meyrick

not to use any concealment about him. The regret at last urged her, at

least, to try and hinder any sudden betrayal that would cause her

brother an unnecessary shock. Under the pressure of this motive, she

resolved to turn before she reached her own door, and firmly will the

encounter instead of merely submitting to it. She had already reached

the entrance of the small square where her home lay, and had made up

her mind to turn, when she felt her embodied presentiment getting

closer to her, then slipping to her side, grasping her wrist, and

saying, with a persuasive curl of accent, "Mirah!"

She paused at once without any start; it was the voice she expected,

and she was meeting the expected eyes. Her face was as grave as if she

had been looking at her executioner, while his was adjusted to the

intention of soothing and propitiating her. Once a handsome face, with

bright color, it was now sallow and deep-lined, and had that peculiar

impress of impudent suavity which comes from courting favor while

accepting disrespect. He was lightly made and active, with something of

youth about him which made the signs of age seem a disguise; and in

reality he was hardly fifty-seven. His dress was shabby, as when she

had seen him before. The presence of this unreverend father now, more

than ever, affected Mirah with the mingled anguish of shame and grief,

repulsion and pity--more than ever, now that her own world was changed

into one where there was no comradeship to fence him from scorn and

contempt.

Slowly, with a sad, tremulous voice, she said, "It is you, father."

"Why did you run away from me, child?" he began with rapid speech which

was meant to have a tone of tender remonstrance, accompanied with

various quick gestures like an abbreviated finger-language. "What were

you afraid of? You knew I never made you do anything against your will.

It was for your sake I broke up your engagement in the Vorstadt,

because I saw it didn't suit you, and you repaid me by leaving me to

the bad times that came in consequence. I had made an easier engagement

for you at the Vorstadt Theater in Dresden: I didn't tell you, because

I wanted to take you by surprise. And you left me planted

there--obliged to make myself scarce because I had broken contract.

That was hard lines for me, after I had given up everything for the

sake of getting you an education which was to be a fortune to you. What

father devoted himself to his daughter more than I did to you? You know

how I bore that disappointment in your voice, and made the best of it:

and when I had nobody besides you, and was getting broken, as a man

must who has had to fight his way with his brains--you chose that time

to leave me. Who else was it you owed everything to, if not to me? and

where was your feeling in return? For what my daughter cared, I might

have died in a ditch."

Lapidoth stopped short here, not from lack of invention, but because he

had reached a pathetic climax, and gave a sudden sob, like a woman's,

taking out hastily an old yellow silk handkerchief. He really felt that

his daughter had treated him ill--a sort of sensibility which is

naturally strong in unscrupulous persons, who put down what is owing to

them, without any \_per contra\_. Mirah, in spite of that sob, had energy

enough not to let him suppose that he deceived her. She answered more

firmly, though it was the first time she had ever used accusing words

to him.

"You know why I left you, father; and I had reason to distrust you,

because I felt sure that you had deceived my mother. If I could have

trusted you, I would have stayed with you and worked for you."

"I never meant to deceive your mother, Mirah," said Lapidoth, putting

back his handkerchief, but beginning with a voice that seemed to

struggle against further sobbing. "I meant to take you back to her, but

chances hindered me just at the time, and then there came information

of her death. It was better for you that I should stay where I was, and

your brother could take care of himself. Nobody had any claim on me but

you. I had word of your mother's death from a particular friend, who

had undertaken to manage things for me, and I sent him over money to

pay expenses. There's one chance to be sure--" Lapidoth had quickly

conceived that he must guard against something unlikely, yet

possible--"he may have written me lies for the sake of getting the

money out of me."

Mirah made no answer; she could not bear to utter the only true one--"I

don't believe one word of what you say"--and she simply showed a wish

that they should walk on, feeling that their standing still might draw

down unpleasant notice. Even as they walked along, their companionship

might well have made a passer-by turn back to look at them. The figure

of Mirah, with her beauty set off by the quiet, careful dress of an

English lady, made a strange pendant to this shabby, foreign-looking,

eager, and gesticulating man, who withal had an ineffaceable jauntiness

of air, perhaps due to the bushy curls of his grizzled hair, the

smallness of his hands and feet, and his light walk.

"You seem to have done well for yourself, Mirah? \_You\_ are in no want,

I see," said the father, looking at her with emphatic examination.

"Good friends who found me in distress have helped me to get work,"

said Mirah, hardly knowing what she actually said, from being occupied

with what she would presently have to say. "I give lessons. I have sung

in private houses. I have just been singing at a private concert." She

paused, and then added, with significance, "I have very good friends,

who know all about me."

"And you would be ashamed they should see your father in this plight?

No wonder. I came to England with no prospect, but the chance of

finding you. It was a mad quest; but a father's heart is

superstitious--feels a loadstone drawing it somewhere or other. I might

have done very well, staying abroad: when I hadn't you to take care of,

I could have rolled or settled as easily as a ball; but it's hard being

lonely in the world, when your spirit's beginning to break. And I

thought my little Mirah would repent leaving her father when she came

to look back. I've had a sharp pinch to work my way; I don't know what

I shall come down to next. Talents like mine are no use in this

country. When a man's getting out at elbows nobody will believe in him.

I couldn't get any decent employ with my appearance. I've been obliged

to get pretty low for a shilling already."

Mirah's anxiety was quick enough to imagine her father's sinking into a

further degradation, which she was bound to hinder if she could. But

before she could answer his string of inventive sentences, delivered

with as much glibness as if they had been learned by rote, he added

promptly--

"Where do you live, Mirah?"

"Here, in this square. We are not far from the house."

"In lodgings?"

"Yes."

"Any one to take care of you?"

"Yes," said Mirah again, looking full at the keen face which was turned

toward hers--"my brother."

The father's eyelids fluttered as if the lightning had come across

them, and there was a slight movement of the shoulders. But he said,

after a just perceptible pause: "Ezra? How did you know--how did you

find him?"

"That would take long to tell. Here we are at the door. My brother

would not wish me to close it on you."

Mirah was already on the doorstep, but had her face turned toward her

father, who stood below her on the pavement. Her heart had begun to

beat faster with the prospect of what was coming in the presence of

Ezra; and already in this attitude of giving leave to the father whom

she had been used to obey--in this sight of him standing below her,

with a perceptible shrinking from the admission which he had been

indirectly asking for, she had a pang of the peculiar, sympathetic

humiliation and shame--the stabbed heart of reverence--which belongs to

a nature intensely filial.

"Stay a minute, \_Liebchen\_," said Lapidoth, speaking in a lowered tone;

"what sort of man has Ezra turned out?"

"A good man--a wonderful man," said Mirah, with slow emphasis, trying

to master the agitation which made her voice more tremulous as she went

on. She felt urged to prepare her father for the complete penetration

of himself which awaited him. "But he was very poor when my friends

found him for me--a poor workman. Once--twelve years ago--he was strong

and happy, going to the East, which he loved to think of; and my mother

called him back because--because she had lost me. And he went to her,

and took care of her through great trouble, and worked for her till she

died--died in grief. And Ezra, too, had lost his health and strength.

The cold had seized him coming back to my mother, because she was

forsaken. For years he has been getting weaker--always poor, always

working--but full of knowledge, and great-minded. All who come near him

honor him. To stand before him is like standing before a prophet of

God"--Mirah ended with difficulty, her heart throbbing--"falsehoods are

no use."

She had cast down her eyes that she might not see her father while she

spoke the last words--unable to bear the ignoble look of frustration

that gathered in his face. But he was none the less quick in invention

and decision.

"Mirah, \_Liebchen\_," he said, in the old caressing way, "shouldn't you

like me to make myself a little more respectable before my son sees me?

If I had a little sum of money, I could fit myself out and come home to

you as your father ought, and then I could offer myself for some decent

place. With a good shirt and coat on my back, people would be glad

enough to have me. I could offer myself for a courier, if I didn't look

like a broken-down mountebank. I should like to be with my children,

and forget and forgive. But you have never seen your father look like

this before. If you had ten pounds at hand--or I could appoint you to

bring it me somewhere--I could fit myself out by the day after

to-morrow."

Mirah felt herself under a temptation which she must try to overcome.

She answered, obliging herself to look at him again--

"I don't like to deny you what you ask, father; but I have given a

promise not to do things for you in secret. It \_is\_ hard to see you

looking needy; but we will bear that for a little while; and then you

can have new clothes, and we can pay for them." Her practical sense

made her see now what was Mrs. Meyrick's wisdom in exacting a promise

from her.

Lapidoth's good humor gave way a little. He said, with a sneer, "You

are a hard and fast young lady--you have been learning useful

virtues--keeping promises not to help your father with a pound or two

when you are getting money to dress yourself in silk--your father who

made an idol of you, and gave up the best part of his life to providing

for you."

"It seems cruel--I know it seems cruel," said Mirah, feeling this a

worse moment than when she meant to drown herself. Her lips were

suddenly pale. "But, father, it is more cruel to break the promises

people trust in. That broke my mother's heart--it has broken Ezra's

life. You and I must eat now this bitterness from what has been. Bear

it. Bear to come in and be cared for as you are."

"To-morrow, then," said Lapidoth, almost turning on his heel away from

this pale, trembling daughter, who seemed now to have got the

inconvenient world to back her; but he quickly turned on it again, with

his hands feeling about restlessly in his pockets, and said, with some

return to his appealing tone, "I'm a little cut up with all this,

Mirah. I shall get up my spirits by to-morrow. If you've a little money

in your pocket, I suppose it isn't against your promise to give me a

trifle--to buy a cigar with."

Mirah could not ask herself another question--could not do anything

else than put her cold trembling hands in her pocket for her

\_portemonnaie\_ and hold it out. Lapidoth grasped it at once, pressed

her fingers the while, said, "Good-bye, my little girl--to-morrow

then!" and left her. He had not taken many steps before he looked

carefully into all the folds of the purse, found two half-sovereigns

and odd silver, and, pasted against the folding cover, a bit of paper

on which Ezra had inscribed, in a beautiful Hebrew character, the name

of his mother, the days of her birth, marriage, and death, and the

prayer, "May Mirah be delivered from evil." It was Mirah's liking to

have this little inscription on many articles that she used. The father

read it, and had a quick vision of his marriage day, and the bright,

unblamed young fellow he was at that time; teaching many things, but

expecting by-and-by to get money more easily by writing; and very fond

of his beautiful bride Sara--crying when she expected him to cry, and

reflecting every phase of her feeling with mimetic susceptibility.

Lapidoth had traveled a long way from that young self, and thought of

all that this inscription signified with an unemotional memory, which

was like the ocular perception of a touch to one who has lost the sense

of touch, or like morsels on an untasting palate, having shape and

grain, but no flavor. Among the things we may gamble away in a lazy

selfish life is the capacity for ruth, compunction, or any unselfish

regret--which we may come to long for as one in slow death longs to

feel laceration, rather than be conscious of a widening margin where

consciousness once was. Mirah's purse was a handsome one--a gift to

her, which she had been unable to reflect about giving away--and

Lapidoth presently found himself outside of his reverie, considering

what the purse would fetch in addition to the sum it contained, and

what prospect there was of his being able to get more from his daughter

without submitting to adopt a penitential form of life under the eyes

of that formidable son. On such a subject his susceptibilities were

still lively.

Meanwhile Mirah had entered the house with her power of reticence

overcome by the cruelty of her pain. She found her brother quietly

reading and sifting old manuscripts of his own, which he meant to

consign to Deronda. In the reaction from the long effort to master

herself, she fell down before him and clasped his knees, sobbing, and

crying, "Ezra, Ezra!"

He did not speak. His alarm for her spending itself on conceiving the

cause of her distress, the more striking from the novelty in her of

this violent manifestation. But Mirah's own longing was to be able to

speak and tell him the cause. Presently she raised her hand, and still

sobbing, said brokenly--

"Ezra, my father! our father! He followed me. I wanted him to come in.

I said you would let him come in. And he said No, he would not--not

now, but to-morrow. And he begged for money from me. And I gave him my

purse, and he went away."

Mirah's words seemed to herself to express all the misery she felt in

them. Her brother found them less grievous than his preconceptions, and

said gently, "Wait for calm, Mirah, and then tell me all,"--putting off

her hat and laying his hands tenderly on her head. She felt the

soothing influence, and in a few minutes told him as exactly as she

could all that had happened.

"He will not come to-morrow," said Mordecai. Neither of them said to

the other what they both thought, namely, that he might watch for

Mirah's outgoings and beg from her again.

"Seest thou," he presently added, "our lot is the lot of Israel. The

grief and the glory are mingled as the smoke and the flame. It is

because we children have inherited the good that we feel the evil.

These things are wedded for us, as our father was wedded to our mother."

The surroundings were of Brompton, but the voice might have come from a

Rabbi transmitting the sentences of an elder time to be registered in

\_Babli\_--by which (to our ears) affectionate-sounding diminutive is

meant the voluminous Babylonian Talmud. "The Omnipresent," said a

Rabbi, "is occupied in making marriages." The levity of the saying lies

in the ear of him who hears it; for by marriages the speaker meant all

the wondrous combinations of the universe whose issue makes our good

and evil.

CHAPTER LXIII.

"Moses, trotz seiner Bafeindung der Kunst, dennoch selber ein grosser

KÃ¼nstler war und den wahren KÃ¼nstlergeist besass. Nur war dieser

KÃ¼nstlergeist bei ihm, wie bei seinen Ã¤gyptischen Landsleuteu, nurauf

das Colossale und Unverwustliche gerichtet. Aber nicht vie die

Aegypter formirte er seine Kunstwerke aus Backstem und Granit, sondern

er baute Menchen-pyramiden, er meisselte Menschen Obelisken, ernahm

einen armen Hirtenstamm und Schuf daraus ein Volk, das ebenfalls den

Jahrhahunderten, trotzen sollte \* \* \* er Schuf Israel."--HEINE:

\_Gestandnisse\_.

Imagine the difference in Deronda's state of mind when he left England

and when he returned to it. He had set out for Genoa in total

uncertainty how far the actual bent of his wishes and affections would

be encouraged--how far the claims revealed to him might draw him into

new paths, far away from the tracks his thoughts had lately been

pursuing with a consent of desire which uncertainty made dangerous. He

came back with something like a discovered charter warranting the

inherited right that his ambition had begun to yearn for: he came back

with what was better than freedom--with a duteous bond which his

experience had been preparing him to accept gladly, even if it had been

attended with no promise of satisfying a secret passionate longing

never yet allowed to grow into a hope. But now he dared avow to himself

the hidden selection of his love. Since the hour when he left the house

at Chelsea in full-hearted silence under the effect of Mirah's farewell

look and words--their exquisite appealingness stirring in him that

deep-laid care for womanhood which had begun when his own lip was like

a girl's--her hold on his feeling had helped him to be blameless in

word and deed under the difficult circumstances we know of. There

seemed no likelihood that he could ever woo this creature who had

become dear to him amidst associations that forbade wooing; yet she had

taken her place in his soul as a beloved type--reducing the power of

other fascination and making a difference in it that became deficiency.

The influence had been continually strengthened. It had lain in the

course of poor Gwendolen's lot that her dependence on Deronda tended to

rouse in him the enthusiasm of self-martyring pity rather than of

personal love, and his less constrained tenderness flowed with the

fuller stream toward an indwelling image in all things unlike

Gwendolen. Still more, his relation to Mordecai had brought with it a

new nearness to Mirah which was not the less agitating because there

was no apparent change in his position toward her; and she had

inevitably been bound up in all the thoughts that made him shrink from

an issue disappointing to her brother. This process had not gone on

unconsciously in Deronda: he was conscious of it as we are of some

covetousness that it would be better to nullify by encouraging other

thoughts than to give it the insistency of confession even to

ourselves: but the jealous fire had leaped out at Hans's pretensions,

and when his mother accused him of being in love with a Jewess any

evasion suddenly seemed an infidelity. His mother had compelled him to

a decisive acknowledgment of his love, as Joseph Kalonymos had

compelled him to a definite expression of his resolve. This new state

of decision wrought on Deronda with a force which surprised even

himself. There was a release of all the energy which had long been

spent in self-checking and suppression because of doubtful conditions;

and he was ready to laugh at his own impetuosity when, as he neared

England on his way from Mainz, he felt the remaining distance more and

more of an obstruction. It was as if he had found an added soul in

finding his ancestry--his judgment no longer wandering in the mazes of

impartial sympathy, but choosing, with that partiality which is man's

best strength, the closer fellowship that makes sympathy

practical--exchanging that bird's eye reasonableness which soars to

avoid preference and loses all sense of quality for the generous

reasonableness of drawing shoulder to shoulder with men of like

inheritance. He wanted now to be again with Mordecai, to pour forth

instead of restraining his feeling, to admit agreement and maintain

dissent, and all the while to find Mirah's presence without the

embarrassment of obviously seeking it, to see her in the light of a new

possibility, to interpret her looks and words from a new

starting-point. He was not greatly alarmed about the effect of Hans's

attentions, but he had a presentiment that her feeling toward himself

had from the first lain in a channel from which it was not likely to be

diverted into love. To astonish a woman by turning into her lover when

she has been thinking of you merely as a Lord Chancellor is what a man

naturally shrinks from: he is anxious to create an easier transition.

What wonder that Deronda saw no other course than to go straight from

the London railway station to the lodgings in that small square in

Brompton? Every argument was in favor of his losing no time. He had

promised to run down the next day to see Lady Mallinger at the Abbey,

and it was already sunset. He wished to deposit the precious chest with

Mordecai, who would study its contents, both in his absence and in

company with him; and that he should pay this visit without pause would

gratify Mordecai's heart. Hence, and for other reasons, it gratified

Deronda's heart. The strongest tendencies of his nature were rushing in

one current--the fervent affectionateness which made him delight in

meeting the wish of beings near to him, and the imaginative need of

some far-reaching relation to make the horizon of his immediate, daily

acts. It has to be admitted that in this classical, romantic,

world-historic position of his, bringing as it were from its

hiding-place his hereditary armor, he wore--but so, one must suppose,

did the most ancient heroes, whether Semitic or Japhetic--the summer

costume of his contemporaries. He did not reflect that the drab tints

were becoming to him, for he rarely went to the expense of such

thinking; but his own depth of coloring, which made the becomingness,

got an added radiance in the eyes, a fleeting and returning glow in the

skin, as he entered the house wondering what exactly he should find. He

made his entrance as noiseless as possible.

It was the evening of that same afternoon on which Mirah had had the

interview with her father. Mordecai, penetrated by her grief, and also

the sad memories which the incident had awakened, had not resumed his

task of sifting papers: some of them had fallen scattered on the floor

in the first moments of anxiety, and neither he nor Mirah had thought

of laying them in order again. They had sat perfectly still together,

not knowing how long; while the clock ticked on the mantelpiece, and

the light was fading, Mirah, unable to think of the food that she ought

to have been taking, had not moved since she had thrown off her

dust-cloak and sat down beside Mordecai with her hand in his, while he

had laid his head backward, with closed eyes and difficult breathing,

looking, Mirah thought, as he would look when the soul within him could

no longer live in its straitened home. The thought that his death might

be near was continually visiting her when she saw his face in this way,

without its vivid animation; and now, to the rest of her grief, was

added the regret that she had been unable to control the violent

outburst which had shaken him. She sat watching him--her oval cheeks

pallid, her eyes with the sorrowful brilliancy left by young tears, her

curls in as much disorder as a just-awakened child's--watching that

emaciated face, where it might have been imagined that a veil had been

drawn never to be lifted, as if it were her dead joy which had left her

strong enough to live on in sorrow. And life at that moment stretched

before Mirah with more than a repetition of former sadness. The shadow

of the father was there, and more than that, a double bereavement--of

one living as well as one dead.

But now the door was opened, and while none entered, a well-known voice

said: "Daniel Deronda--may he come in?"

"Come! come!" said Mordecai, immediately rising with an irradiated face

and opened eyes--apparently as little surprised as if he had seen

Deronda in the morning, and expected this evening visit; while Mirah

started up blushing with confused, half-alarmed expectation.

Yet when Deronda entered, the sight of him was like the clearness after

rain: no clouds to come could hinder the cherishing beam of that

moment. As he held out his right hand to Mirah, who was close to her

brother's left, he laid his other hand on Mordecai's right shoulder,

and stood so a moment, holding them both at once, uttering no word, but

reading their faces, till he said anxiously to Mirah, "Has anything

happened?--any trouble?"

"Talk not of trouble now," said Mordecai, saving her from the need to

answer. "There is joy in your face--let the joy be ours."

Mirah thought, "It is for something he cannot tell us." But they all

sat down, Deronda drawing a chair close in front of Mordecai.

"That is true," he said, emphatically. "I have a joy which will remain

to us even in the worst trouble. I did not tell you the reason of my

journey abroad, Mordecai, because--never mind--I went to learn my

parentage. And you were right. I am a Jew."

The two men clasped hands with a movement that seemed part of the flash

from Mordecai's eyes, and passed through Mirah like an electric shock.

But Deronda went on without pause, speaking from Mordecai's mind as

much as from his own--

"We have the same people. Our souls have the same vocation. We shall

not be separated by life or by death."

Mordecai's answer was uttered in Hebrew, and in no more than a loud

whisper. It was in the liturgical words which express the religious

bond: "Our God and the God of our fathers."

The weight of feeling pressed too strongly on that ready-winged speech

which usually moved in quick adaptation to every stirring of his fervor.

Mirah fell on her knees by her brother's side, and looked at his now

illuminated face, which had just before been so deathly. The action was

an inevitable outlet of the violent reversal from despondency to a

gladness which came over her as solemnly as if she had been beholding a

religious rite. For the moment she thought of the effect on her own

life only through the effect on her brother.

"And it is not only that I am a Jew," Deronda went on, enjoying one of

those rare moments when our yearnings and our acts can be completely

one, and the real we behold is our ideal good; "but I come of a strain

that has ardently maintained the fellowship of our race--a line of

Spanish Jews that has borne many students and men of practical power.

And I possess what will give us a sort of communion with them. My

grandfather, Daniel Charisi, preserved manuscripts, family records

stretching far back, in the hope that they would pass into the hands of

his grandson. And now his hope is fulfilled, in spite of attempts to

thwart it by hiding my parentage from me. I possess the chest

containing them, with his own papers, and it is down below in this

house. I mean to leave it with you, Mordecai, that you may help me to

study the manuscripts. Some of them I can read easily enough--those in

Spanish and Italian. Others are in Hebrew, and, I think, Arabic; but

there seem to be Latin translations. I was only able to look at them

cursorily while I stayed at Mainz. We will study them together."

Deronda ended with that bright smile which, beaming out from the

habitual gravity of his face, seemed a revelation (the reverse of the

continual smile that discredits all expression). But when this happy

glance passed from Mordecai to rest on Mirah, it acted like a little

too much sunshine, and made her change her attitude. She had knelt

under an impulse with which any personal embarrassment was incongruous,

and especially any thoughts about how Mrs. Grandcourt might stand to

this new aspect of things--thoughts which made her color under

Deronda's glance, and rise to take her seat again in her usual posture

of crossed hands and feet, with the effort to look as quiet as

possible. Deronda, equally sensitive, imagined that the feeling of

which he was conscious, had entered too much into his eyes, and had

been repugnant to her. He was ready enough to believe that any

unexpected manifestation might spoil her feeling toward him--and then

his precious relation to brother and sister would be marred. If Mirah

could have no love for him, any advances of love on his part would make

her wretched in that continual contact with him which would remain

inevitable.

While such feelings were pulsating quickly in Deronda and Mirah,

Mordecai, seeing nothing in his friend's presence and words but a

blessed fulfillment, was already speaking with his old sense of

enlargement in utterance--

"Daniel, from the first, I have said to you, we know not all the

pathways. Has there not been a meeting among them, as of the operations

in one soul, where an idea being born and breathing draws the elements

toward it, and is fed and glows? For all things are bound together in

that Omnipresence which is the place and habitation of the world, and

events are of a glass wherethrough our eyes see some of the pathways.

And if it seems that the erring and unloving wills of men have helped

to prepare you, as Moses was prepared, to serve your people the better,

that depends on another order than the law which must guide our

footsteps. For the evil will of man makes not a people's good except by

stirring the righteous will of man; and beneath all the clouds with

which our thought encompasses the Eternal, this is clear--that a people

can be blessed only by having counsellors and a multitude whose will

moves in obedience to the laws of justice and love. For see, now, it

was your loving will that made a chief pathway, and resisted the effect

of evil; for, by performing the duties of brotherhood to my sister, and

seeking out her brother in the flesh, your soul has been prepared to

receive with gladness this message of the Eternal, 'behold the

multitude of your brethren.'"

"It is quite true that you and Mirah have been my teachers," said

Deronda. "If this revelation had been made to me before I knew you

both, I think my mind would have rebelled against it. Perhaps I should

have felt then--'If I could have chosen, I would not have been a Jew.'

What I feel now is--that my whole being is a consent to the fact. But

it has been the gradual accord between your mind and mine which has

brought about that full consent."

At the moment Deronda was speaking, that first evening in the book-shop

was vividly in his remembrance, with all the struggling aloofness he

had then felt from Mordecai's prophetic confidence. It was his nature

to delight in satisfying to the utmost the eagerly-expectant soul,

which seemed to be looking out from the face before him, like the

long-enduring watcher who at last sees the mountain signal-flame; and

he went on with fuller fervor--

"It is through your inspiration that I have discerned what may be my

life's task. It is you who have given shape to what, I believe, was an

inherited yearning--the effect of brooding, passionate thoughts in many

ancestors--thoughts that seem to have been intensely present in my

grandfather. Suppose the stolen offspring of some mountain tribe

brought up in a city of the plain, or one with an inherited genius for

painting, and born blind--the ancestral life would lie within them as a

dim longing for unknown objects and sensations, and the spell-bound

habit of their inherited frames would be like a cunningly-wrought

musical instrument, never played on, but quivering throughout in uneasy

mysterious meanings of its intricate structure that, under the right

touch, gives music. Something like that, I think, has been my

experience. Since I began to read and know, I have always longed for

some ideal task, in which I might feel myself the heart and brain of a

multitude--some social captainship, which would come to me as a duty,

and not be striven for as a personal prize. You have raised the image

of such a task for me--to bind our race together in spite of heresy.

You have said to me--'Our religion united us before it divided us--it

made us a people before it made Rabbanites and Karaites.' I mean to try

what can be done with that union--I mean to work in your spirit.

Failure will not be ignoble, but it would be ignoble for me not to try."

"Even as my brother that fed at the breasts of my mother," said

Mordecai, falling back in his chair with a look of exultant repose, as

after some finished labor.

To estimate the effect of this ardent outpouring from Deronda we must

remember his former reserve, his careful avoidance of premature assent

or delusive encouragement, which gave to this decided pledge of himself

a sacramental solemnity, both for his own mind and Mordecai's. On Mirah

the effect was equally strong, though with a difference: she felt a

surprise which had no place in her brother's mind, at Deronda's

suddenly revealed sense of nearness to them: there seemed to be a

breaking of day around her which might show her other facts unlike her

forebodings in the darkness. But after a moment's silence Mordecai

spoke again--

"It has begun already--the marriage of our souls. It waits but the

passing away of this body, and then they who are betrothed shall unite

in a stricter bond, and what is mine shall be thine. Call nothing mine

that I have written, Daniel; for though our masters delivered rightly

that everything should be quoted in the name of him that said it--and

their rule is good--yet it does not exclude the willing marriage which

melts soul into soul, and makes thought fuller as the clear waters are

made fuller, where the fullness is inseparable and the clearness is

inseparable. For I have judged what I have written, and I desire the

body that I gave my thought to pass away as this fleshly body will

pass; but let the thought be born again from our fuller soul which

shall be called yours."

"You must not ask me to promise that," said Deronda, smiling. "I must

be convinced first of special reasons for it in the writings

themselves. And I am too backward a pupil yet. That blent transmission

must go on without any choice of ours; but what we can't hinder must

not make our rule for what we ought to choose. I think our duty is

faithful tradition where we can attain it. And so you would insist for

any one but yourself. Don't ask me to deny my spiritual parentage, when

I am finding the clue of my life in the recognition of natural

parentage."

"I will ask for no promise till you see the reason," said Mordecai.

"You have said the truth: I would obey the Master's rule for another.

But for years my hope, nay, my confidence, has been, not that the

imperfect image of my thought, which is an ill-shaped work of the

youthful carver who has seen a heavenly pattern, and trembles in

imitating the vision--not that this should live, but that my vision and

passion should enter into yours--yea, into yours; for he whom I longed

for afar, was he not you whom I discerned as mine when you came near?

Nevertheless, you shall judge. For my soul is satisfied." Mordecai

paused, and then began in a changed tone, reverting to previous

suggestions from Deronda's disclosure: "What moved your parents----?"

but he immediately checked himself, and added, "Nay, I ask not that you

should tell me aught concerning others, unless it is your pleasure."

"Some time--gradually--you will know all," said Deronda. "But now tell

me more about yourselves, and how the time has passed since I went

away. I am sure there has been some trouble. Mirah has been in distress

about something."

He looked at Mirah, but she immediately turned to her brother,

appealing to him to give the difficult answer. She hoped he would not

think it necessary to tell Deronda the facts about her father on such

an evening as this. Just when Deronda had brought himself so near, and

identified himself with her brother, it was cutting to her that he

should hear of this disgrace clinging about them, which seemed to have

become partly his. To relieve herself she rose to take up her hat and

cloak, thinking she would go to her own room: perhaps they would speak

more easily when she had left them. But meanwhile Mordecai said--

"To-day there has been a grief. A duty which seemed to have gone far

into the distance, has come back and turned its face upon us, and

raised no gladness--has raised a dread that we must submit to. But for

the moment we are delivered from any visible yoke. Let us defer

speaking of it as if this evening which is deepening about us were the

beginning of the festival in which we must offer the first fruits of

our joy, and mingle no mourning with them."

Deronda divined the hinted grief, and left it in silence, rising as he

saw Mirah rise, and saying to her, "Are you going? I must leave almost

immediately--when I and Mrs. Adam have mounted the precious chest, and

I have delivered the key to Mordecai--no, Ezra,--may I call him Ezra

now? I have learned to think of him as Ezra since I have heard you call

him so."

"Please call him Ezra," said Mirah, faintly, feeling a new timidity

under Deronda's glance and near presence. Was there really something

different about him, or was the difference only in her feeling? The

strangely various emotions of the last few hours had exhausted her; she

was faint with fatigue and want of food. Deronda, observing her pallor

and tremulousness, longed to show more feeling, but dared not. She put

out her hand with an effort to smile, and then he opened the door for

her. That was all.

A man of refined pride shrinks from making a lover's approaches to a

woman whose wealth or rank might make them appear presumptuous or

low-motived; but Deronda was finding a more delicate difficulty in a

position which, superficially taken, was the reverse of that--though to

an ardent reverential love, the loved woman has always a kind of wealth

and rank which makes a man keenly susceptible about the aspect of his

addresses. Deronda's difficulty was what any generous man might have

felt in some degree; but it affected him peculiarly through his

imaginative sympathy with a mind in which gratitude was strong. Mirah,

he knew, felt herself bound to him by deep obligations, which to her

sensibilities might give every wish of his the aspect of a claim; and

an inability to fulfill it would cause her a pain continually revived

by their inevitable communion in care of Ezra. Here were fears not of

pride only, but of extreme tenderness. Altogether, to have the

character of a benefactor seemed to Deronda's anxiety an insurmountable

obstacle to confessing himself a lover, unless in some inconceivable

way it could be revealed to him that Mirah's heart had accepted him

beforehand. And the agitation on his own account, too, was not small.

Even a man who has practised himself in love-making till his own

glibness has rendered him sceptical, may at last be overtaken by the

lover's awe--may tremble, stammer, and show other signs of recovered

sensibility no more in the range of his acquired talents than pins and

needles after numbness: how much more may that energetic timidity

possess a man whose inward history has cherished his susceptibilities

instead of dulling them, and has kept all the language of passion fresh

and rooted as the lovely leafage about the hill-side spring!

As for Mirah her dear head lay on its pillow that night with its former

suspicions thrown out of shape but still present, like an ugly story

which had been discredited but not therefore dissipated. All that she

was certain of about Deronda seemed to prove that he had no such

fetters upon him as she had been allowing herself to believe in. His

whole manner as well as his words implied that there were no hidden

bonds remaining to have any effect in determining his future. But

notwithstanding this plainly reasonable inference, uneasiness still

clung about Mirah's heart. Deronda was not to blame, but he had an

importance for Mrs. Grandcourt which must give her some hold on him.

And the thought of any close confidence between them stirred the little

biting snake that had long lain curled and harmless in Mirah's gentle

bosom.

But did she this evening feel as completely as before that her jealousy

was no less remote from any possibility for herself personally than if

her human soul had been lodged in the body of a fawn that Deronda had

saved from the archers? Hardly. Something indefinable had happened and

made a difference. The soft warm rain of blossoms which had fallen just

where she was--did it really come because she was there? What spirit

was there among the boughs?

CHAPTER LXIV.

"Questa montagna e tale,

Che sempre al cominciar di sotto a grave.

E quanto uom piu va su e men fa male."

--DANTE: \_Il Purgatorio\_.

It was not many days after her mother's arrival that Gwendolen would

consent to remain at Genoa. Her desire to get away from that gem of the

sea, helped to rally her strength and courage. For what place, though

it were the flowery vale of Enna, may not the inward sense turn into a

circle of punishment where the flowers are no better than a crop of

flame-tongues burning the soles of our feet?

"I shall never like to see the Mediterranean again," said Gwendolen, to

her mother, who thought that she quite understood her child's

feeling--even in her tacit prohibition of any express reference to her

late husband.

Mrs. Davilow, indeed, though compelled formally to regard this time as

one of severe calamity, was virtually enjoying her life more than she

had ever done since her daughter's marriage. It seemed that her darling

was brought back to her not merely with all the old affection, but with

a conscious cherishing of her mother's nearness, such as we give to a

possession that we have been on the brink of losing.

"Are you there, mamma?" cried Gwendolen, in the middle of the night (a

bed had been made for her mother in the same room with hers), very much

as she would have done in her early girlhood, if she had felt

frightened in lying awake.

"Yes, dear; can I do anything for you?"

"No, thank you; only I like so to know you are there. Do you mind my

waking you?" (This question would hardly have been Gwendolen's in her

early girlhood.)

"I was not asleep, darling."

"It seemed not real that you were with me. I wanted to make it real. I

can bear things if you are with me. But you must not lie awake, anxious

about me. You must be happy now. You must let me make you happy now at

last--else what shall I do?"

"God bless you, dear; I have the best happiness I can have, when you

make much of me."

But the next night, hearing that she was sighing and restless Mrs.

Davilow said, "Let me give you your sleeping-draught, Gwendolen."

"No, mamma, thank you; I don't want to sleep."

"It would be so good for you to sleep more, my darling."

"Don't say what would be good for me, mamma," Gwendolen answered,

impetuously. "You don't know what would be good for me. You and my

uncle must not contradict me and tell me anything is good for me when I

feel it is not good."

Mrs. Davilow was silent, not wondering that the poor child was

irritable. Presently Gwendolen said--

"I was always naughty to you, mamma."

"No, dear, no."

"Yes, I was," said Gwendolen insistently. "It is because I was always

wicked that I am miserable now."

She burst into sobs and cries. The determination to be silent about all

the facts of her married life and its close, reacted in these escapes

of enigmatic excitement.

But dim lights of interpretation were breaking on the mother's mind

through the information that came from Sir Hugo to Mr. Gascoigne, and,

with some omissions, from Mr. Gascoigne to herself. The good-natured

baronet, while he was attending to all decent measures in relation to

his nephew's death, and the possible washing ashore of the body,

thought it the kindest thing he could do to use his present friendly

intercourse with the rector as an opportunity for communicating with

him, in the mildest way, the purport of Grandcourt's will, so as to

save him the additional shock that would be in store for him if he

carried his illusions all the way home. Perhaps Sir Hugo would have

been communicable enough without that kind motive, but he really felt

the motive. He broke the unpleasant news to the rector by degrees: at

first he only implied his fear that the widow was not so splendidly

provided for as Mr. Gascoigne, nay, as the baronet himself had

expected; and only at last, after some previous vague reference to

large claims on Grandcourt, he disclosed the prior relations which, in

the unfortunate absence of a legitimate heir, had determined all the

splendor in another direction.

The rector was deeply hurt, and remembered, more vividly than he had

ever done before, how offensively proud and repelling the manners of

the deceased had been toward him--remembered also that he himself, in

that interesting period just before the arrival of the new occupant at

Diplow, had received hints of former entangling dissipations, and an

undue addiction to pleasure, though he had not foreseen that the

pleasure which had probably, so to speak, been swept into private

rubbish-heaps, would ever present itself as an array of live

caterpillars, disastrous to the green meat of respectable people. But

he did not make these retrospective thoughts audible to Sir Hugo, or

lower himself by expressing any indignation on merely personal grounds,

but behaved like a man of the world who had become a conscientious

clergyman. His first remark was--

"When a young man makes his will in health, he usually counts on living

a long while. Probably Mr. Grandcourt did not believe that this will

would ever have its present effect." After a moment, he added, "The

effect is painful in more ways than one. Female morality is likely to

suffer from this marked advantage and prominence being given to

illegitimate offspring."

"Well, in point of fact," said Sir Hugo, in his comfortable way, "since

the boy is there, this was really the best alternative for the disposal

of the estates. Grandcourt had nobody nearer than his cousin. And it's

a chilling thought that you go out of this life only for the benefit of

a cousin. A man gets a little pleasure in making his will, if it's for

the good of his own curly heads; but it's a nuisance when you're giving

the bequeathing to a used-up fellow like yourself, and one you don't

care two straws for. It's the next worse thing to having only a life

interest in your estates. No; I forgive Grandcourt for that part of his

will. But, between ourselves, what I don't forgive him for, is the

shabby way he has provided for your niece--\_our\_ niece, I will say--no

better a position than if she had been a doctor's widow. Nothing grates

on me more than that posthumous grudgingness toward a wife. A man ought

to have some pride and fondness for his widow. \_I\_ should, I know. I

take it as a test of a man, that he feels the easier about his death

when he can think of his wife and daughters being comfortable after it.

I like that story of the fellows in the Crimean war, who were ready to

go to the bottom of the sea if their widows were provided for."

"It has certainly taken me by surprise," said Mr. Gascoigne, "all the

more because, as the one who stood in the place of father to my niece,

I had shown my reliance on Mr. Grandcourt's apparent liberality in

money matters by making no claims for her beforehand. That seemed to me

due to him under the circumstances. Probably you think me blamable."

"Not blamable exactly. I respect a man for trusting another. But take

my advice. If you marry another niece, though it may be to the

Archbishop of Canterbury, bind him down. Your niece can't be married

for the first time twice over. And if he's a good fellow, he'll wish to

be bound. But as to Mrs. Grandcourt, I can only say that I feel my

relation to her all the nearer because I think that she has not been

well treated. And I hope you will urge her to rely on me as a friend."

Thus spake the chivalrous Sir Hugo, in his disgust at the young and

beautiful widow of a Mallinger Grandcourt being left with only two

thousand a year and a house in a coal-mining district. To the rector

that income naturally appeared less shabby and less accompanied with

mortifying privations; but in this conversation he had devoured a much

keener sense than the baronet's of the humiliation cast over his niece,

and also over her nearest friends, by the conspicuous publishing of her

husband's relation to Mrs. Glasher. And like all men who are good

husbands and fathers, he felt the humiliation through the minds of the

women who would be chiefly affected by it; so that the annoyance of

first hearing the facts was far slighter than what he felt in

communicating them to Mrs. Davilow, and in anticipating Gwendolen's

feeling whenever her mother saw fit to tell her of them. For the good

rector had an innocent conviction that his niece was unaware of Mrs.

Glasher's existence, arguing with masculine soundness from what maidens

and wives were likely to know, do, and suffer, and having had a most

imperfect observation of the particular maiden and wife in question.

Not so Gwendolen's mother, who now thought that she saw an explanation

of much that had been enigmatic in her child's conduct and words before

and after her engagement, concluding that in some inconceivable way

Gwendolen had been informed of this left-handed marriage and the

existence of the children. She trusted to opportunities that would

arise in moments of affectionate confidence before and during their

journey to England, when she might gradually learn how far the actual

state of things was clear to Gwendolen, and prepare her for anything

that might be a disappointment. But she was spared from devices on the

subject.

"I hope you don't expect that I am going to be rich and grand, mamma,"

said Gwendolen, not long after the rector's communication; "perhaps I

shall have nothing at all."

She was dressed, and had been sitting long in quiet meditation. Mrs.

Davilow was startled, but said, after a moment's reflection--

"Oh yes, dear, you will have something. Sir Hugo knows all about the

will."

"That will not decide," said Gwendolen, abruptly.

"Surely, dear: Sir Hugo says you are to have two thousand a year and

the house at Gadsmere."

"What I have will depend on what I accept," said Gwendolen. "You and my

uncle must not attempt to cross me and persuade me about this. I will

do everything I can do to make you happy, but in anything about my

husband I must not be interfered with. Is eight hundred a year enough

for you, mamma?"

"More than enough, dear. You must not think of giving me so much." Mrs.

Davilow paused a little, and then said, "Do you know who is to have the

estates and the rest of the money?"

"Yes," said Gwendolen, waving her hand in dismissal of the subject. "I

know everything. It is all perfectly right, and I wish never to have it

mentioned."

The mother was silent, looked away, and rose to fetch a fan-screen,

with a slight flush on her delicate cheeks. Wondering, imagining, she

did not like to meet her daughter's eyes, and sat down again under a

sad constraint. What wretchedness her child had perhaps gone through,

which yet must remain as it always had been, locked away from their

mutual speech. But Gwendolen was watching her mother with that new

divination which experience had given her; and in tender relenting at

her own peremptoriness, said, "Come and sit nearer to me, mamma, and

don't be unhappy."

Mrs. Davilow did as she was told, but bit her lips in the vain attempt

to hinder smarting tears. Gwendolen leaned toward her caressingly and

said, "I mean to be very wise; I do, really. And good--oh, so good to

you, dear, old, sweet mamma, you won't know me. Only you must not cry."

The resolve that Gwendolen had in her mind was that she would ask

Deronda whether she ought to accept any of her husband's money--whether

she might accept what would enable her to provide for her mother. The

poor thing felt strong enough to do anything that would give her a

higher place in Deronda's mind.

An invitation that Sir Hugo pressed on her with kind urgency was that

she and Mrs. Davilow should go straight with him to Park Lane, and make

his house their abode as long as mourning and other details needed

attending to in London. Town, he insisted, was just then the most

retired of places; and he proposed to exert himself at once in getting

all articles belonging to Gwendolen away from the house in Grosvenor

Square. No proposal could have suited her better than this of staying a

little while in Park Lane. It would be easy for her there to have an

interview with Deronda, if she only knew how to get a letter into his

hands, asking him to come to her. During the journey, Sir Hugo, having

understood that she was acquainted with the purport of her husband's

will, ventured to talk before her and to her about her future

arrangements, referring here and there to mildly agreeable prospects as

matters of course, and otherwise shedding a decorous cheerfulness over

her widowed position. It seemed to him really the more graceful course

for a widow to recover her spirits on finding that her husband had not

dealt as handsomely by her as he might have done; it was the testator's

fault if he compromised all her grief at his departure by giving a

testamentary reason for it, so that she might be supposed to look sad,

not because he had left her, but because he had left her poor. The

baronet, having his kindliness doubly fanned by the favorable wind on

his fortunes and by compassion for Gwendolen, had become quite fatherly

in his behavior to her, called her "my dear," and in mentioning

Gadsmere to Mr. Gascoigne, with its various advantages and

disadvantages, spoke of what "we" might do to make the best of that

property. Gwendolen sat by in pale silence while Sir Hugo, with his

face turned toward Mrs. Davilow or Mr. Gascoigne, conjectured that Mrs.

Grandcourt might perhaps prefer letting Gadsmere to residing there

during any part of the year, in which case he thought that it might be

leased on capital terms to one of the fellows engaged with the coal:

Sir Hugo had seen enough of the place to know that it was as

comfortable and picturesque a box as any man need desire, providing his

desires were circumscribed within a coal area.

"\_I\_ shouldn't mind about the soot myself," said the baronet, with that

dispassionateness which belongs to the potential mood. "Nothing is more

healthy. And if one's business lay there, Gadsmere would be a paradise.

It makes quite a feature in Scrogg's history of the county, with the

little tower and the fine piece of water--the prettiest print in the

book."

"A more important place than Offendene, I suppose?" said Mr. Gascoigne.

"Much," said the baronet, decisively. "I was there with my poor

brother--it is more than a quarter of a century ago, but I remember it

very well. The rooms may not be larger, but the grounds are on a

different scale."

"Our poor dear Offendene is empty after all," said Mrs. Davilow. "When

it came to the point, Mr. Haynes declared off, and there has been no

one to take it since. I might as well have accepted Lord Brackenshaw's

kind offer that I should remain in it another year rent-free: for I

should have kept the place aired and warmed."

"I hope you've something snug instead," said Sir Hugo.

"A little too snug," said Mr. Gascoigne, smiling at his sister-in-law.

"You are rather thick upon the ground."

Gwendolen had turned with a changed glance when her mother spoke of

Offendene being empty. This conversation passed during one of the long

unaccountable pauses often experienced in foreign trains at some

country station. There was a dreamy, sunny stillness over the hedgeless

fields stretching to the boundary of poplars; and to Gwendolen the talk

within the carriage seemed only to make the dreamland larger with an

indistinct region of coal-pits, and a purgatorial Gadsmere which she

would never visit; till at her mother's words, this mingled, dozing

view seemed to dissolve and give way to a more wakeful vision of

Offendene and Pennicote under their cooler lights. She saw the gray

shoulders of the downs, the cattle-specked fields, the shadowy

plantations with rutted lanes where the barked timber lay for a wayside

seat, the neatly-clipped hedges on the road from the parsonage to

Offendene, the avenue where she was gradually discerned from the

window, the hall-door opening, and her mother or one of the troublesome

sisters coming out to meet her. All that brief experience of a quiet

home which had once seemed a dullness to be fled from, now came back to

her as a restful escape, a station where she found the breath of

morning and the unreproaching voice of birds after following a lure

through a long Satanic masquerade, which she had entered on with an

intoxicated belief in its disguises, and had seen the end of in

shrieking fear lest she herself had become one of the evil spirits who

were dropping their human mummery and hissing around her with serpent

tongues.

In this way Gwendolen's mind paused over Offendene and made it the

scene of many thoughts; but she gave no further outward sign of

interest in this conversation, any more than in Sir Hugo's opinion on

the telegraphic cable or her uncle's views of the Church Rate Abolition

Bill. What subjects will not our talk embrace in leisurely

day-journeying from Genoa to London? Even strangers, after glancing

from China to Peru and opening their mental stores with a liberality

threatening a mutual impression of poverty on any future meeting, are

liable to become excessively confidential. But the baronet and the

rector were under a still stronger pressure toward cheerful

communication: they were like acquaintances compelled to a long drive

in a mourning-coach who having first remarked that the occasion is a

melancholy one, naturally proceed to enliven it by the most

miscellaneous discourse. "I don't mind telling \_you\_," said Sir Hugo to

the rector, in mentioning some private details; while the rector,

without saying so, did not mind telling the baronet about his sons, and

the difficulty of placing them in the world. By the dint of discussing

all persons and things within driving-reach of Diplow, Sir Hugo got

himself wrought to a pitch of interest in that former home, and of

conviction that it was his pleasant duty to regain and strengthen his

personal influence in the neighborhood, that made him declare his

intention of taking his family to the place for a month or two before

the autumn was over; and Mr. Gascoigne cordially rejoiced in that

prospect. Altogether, the journey was continued and ended with mutual

liking between the male fellow-travellers.

Meanwhile Gwendolen sat by like one who had visited the spirit-world

and was full to the lips of an unutterable experience that threw a

strange unreality over all the talk she was hearing of her own and the

world's business; and Mrs. Davilow was chiefly occupied in imagining

what her daughter was feeling, and in wondering what was signified by

her hinted doubt whether she would accept her husband's bequest.

Gwendolen in fact had before her the unsealed wall of an immediate

purpose shutting off every other resolution. How to scale the wall? She

wanted again to see and consult Deronda, that she might secure herself

against any act he would disapprove. Would her remorse have maintained

its power within her, or would she have felt absolved by secrecy, if it

had not been for that outer conscience which was made for her by

Deronda? It is hard to say how much we could forgive ourselves if we

were secure from judgment by another whose opinion is the

breathing-medium of all our joy--who brings to us with close pressure

and immediate sequence that judgment of the Invisible and Universal

which self-flattery and the world's tolerance would easily melt and

disperse. In this way our brother may be in the stead of God to us, and

his opinion which has pierced even to the joints and marrow, may be our

virtue in the making. That mission of Deronda to Gwendolen had begun

with what she had felt to be his judgment of her at the gaming-table.

He might easily have spoiled it:--much of our lives is spent in marring

our own influence and turning others' belief in us into a widely

concluding unbelief which they call knowledge of the world, while it is

really disappointment in you or me. Deronda had not spoiled his mission.

But Gwendolen had forgotten to ask him for his address in case she

wanted to write, and her only way of reaching him was through Sir Hugo.

She was not in the least blind to the construction that all witnesses

might put on her giving signs of dependence on Deronda, and her seeking

him more than he sought her: Grandcourt's rebukes had sufficiently

enlightened her pride. But the force, the tenacity of her nature had

thrown itself into that dependence, and she would no more let go her

hold on Deronda's help, or deny herself the interview her soul needed,

because of witnesses, than if she had been in prison in danger of being

condemned to death. When she was in Park Lane and knew that the baronet

would be going down to the Abbey immediately (just to see his family

for a couple of days and then return to transact needful business for

Gwendolen), she said to him without any air of hesitation, while her

mother was present--

"Sir Hugo, I wish to see Mr. Deronda again as soon as possible. I don't

know his address. Will you tell it me, or let him know that I want to

see him?"

A quick thought passed across Sir Hugo's face, but made no difference

to the ease with which he said, "Upon my word, I don't know whether

he's at his chambers or the Abbey at this moment. But I'll make sure of

him. I'll send a note now to his chambers telling him to come, and if

he's at the Abbey I can give him your message and send him up at once.

I am sure he will want to obey your wish," the baronet ended, with

grave kindness, as if nothing could seem to him more in the appropriate

course of things than that she should send such a message.

But he was convinced that Gwendolen had a passionate attachment to

Deronda, the seeds of which had been laid long ago, and his former

suspicion now recurred to him with more strength than ever, that her

feeling was likely to lead her into imprudences--in which kind-hearted

Sir Hugo was determined to screen and defend her as far as lay in his

power. To him it was as pretty a story as need be that this fine

creature and his favorite Dan should have turned out to be formed for

each other, and that the unsuitable husband should have made his exit

in such excellent time. Sir Hugo liked that a charming woman should be

made as happy as possible. In truth, what most vexed his mind in this

matter at present was a doubt whether the too lofty and inscrutable Dan

had not got some scheme or other in his head, which would prove to be

dearer to him than the lovely Mrs. Grandcourt, and put that

neatly-prepared marriage with her out of the question. It was among the

usual paradoxes of feeling that Sir Hugo, who had given his fatherly

cautions to Deronda against too much tenderness in his relations with

the bride, should now feel rather irritated against him by the

suspicion that he had not fallen in love as he ought to have done. Of

course all this thinking on Sir Hugo's part was eminently premature,

only a fortnight or so after Grandcourt's death. But it is the trick of

thinking to be either premature or behind-hand.

However, he sent the note to Deronda's chambers, and it found him there.

CHAPTER LXV.

"O, welcome, pure-eyed Faith, white-handed Hope,

Thou hovering angel, girt with golden wings!"

--MILTON.

Deronda did not obey Gwendolen's new summons without some agitation.

Not his vanity, but his keen sympathy made him susceptible to the

danger that another's heart might feel larger demands on him than he

would be able to fulfill; and it was no longer a matter of argument

with him, but of penetrating consciousness, that Gwendolen's soul clung

to his with a passionate need. We do not argue the existence of the

anger or the scorn that thrills through us in a voice; we simply feel

it, and it admits of no disproof. Deronda felt this woman's destiny

hanging on his over a precipice of despair. Any one who knows him

cannot wonder at his inward confession, that if all this had happened

little more than a year ago, he would hardly have asked himself whether

he loved her; the impetuous determining impulse which would have moved

him would have been to save her from sorrow, to shelter her life

forevermore from the dangers of loneliness, and carry out to the last

the rescue he had begun in that monitory redemption of the necklace.

But now, love and duty had thrown other bonds around him, and that

impulse could no longer determine his life; still, it was present in

him as a compassionate yearning, a painful quivering at the very

imagination of having again and again to meet the appeal of her eyes

and words. The very strength of the bond, the certainty of the resolve,

that kept him asunder from her, made him gaze at her lot apart with the

more aching pity.

He awaited her coming in the back drawing-room--part of that white and

crimson space where they had sat together at the musical party, where

Gwendolen had said for the first time that her lot depended on his not

forsaking her, and her appeal had seemed to melt into the melodic

cry--\_Per pietÃ  non dirmi addio\_. But the melody had come from Mirah's

dear voice.

Deronda walked about this room, which he had for years known by heart,

with a strange sense of metamorphosis in his own life. The familiar

objects around him, from Lady Mallinger's gently smiling portrait to

the also human and urbane faces of the lions on the pilasters of the

chimney-piece, seemed almost to belong to a previous state of existence

which he was revisiting in memory only, not in reality; so deep and

transforming had been the impressions he had lately experienced, so new

were the conditions under which he found himself in the house he had

been accustomed to think of as a home--standing with his hat in his

hand awaiting the entrance of a young creature whose life had also been

undergoing a transformation--a tragic transformation toward a wavering

result, in which he felt with apprehensiveness that his own action was

still bound up.

But Gwendolen was come in, looking changed; not only by her mourning

dress, but by a more satisfied quietude of expression than he had seen

in her face at Genoa. Her satisfaction was that Deronda was there; but

there was no smile between them as they met and clasped hands; each was

full of remembrance--full of anxious prevision. She said, "It was good

of you to come. Let us sit down," immediately seating herself in the

nearest chair. He placed himself opposite to her.

"I asked you to come because I want you to tell me what I ought to do,"

she began, at once. "Don't be afraid of telling me what you think is

right, because it seems hard. I have made up my mind to do it. I was

afraid once of being poor; I could not bear to think of being under

other people; and that was why I did something--why I married. I have

borne worse things now. I think I could bear to be poor, if you think I

ought. Do you know about my husband's will?"

"Yes, Sir Hugo told me," said Deronda, already guessing the question

she had to ask.

"Ought I to take anything he has left me? I will tell you what I have

been thinking," said Gwendolen, with a more nervous eagerness. "Perhaps

you may not quite know that I really did think a good deal about my

mother when I married. I \_was\_ selfish, but I did love her, and feel

about her poverty; and what comforted me most at first, when I was

miserable, was her being better off because I had married. The thing

that would be hardest to me now would be to see her in poverty again;

and I have been thinking that if I took enough to provide for her, and

no more--nothing for myself--it would not be wrong; for I was very

precious to my mother--and he took me from her--and he meant--and if

she had known--"

Gwendolen broke off. She had been preparing herself for this interview

by thinking of hardly anything else than this question of right toward

her mother; but the question had carried with it thoughts and reasons

which it was impossible for her to utter, and these perilous

remembrances swarmed between her words, making her speech more and more

agitated and tremulous. She looked down helplessly at her hands, now

unladen of all rings except her wedding-ring.

"Do not hurt yourself by speaking of that," said Deronda, tenderly.

"There is no need; the case is very simple. I think I can hardly judge

wrongly about it. You consult me because I am the only person to whom

you have confided the most painful part of your experience: and I can

understand your scruples." He did not go on immediately, waiting for

her to recover herself. The silence seemed to Gwendolen full of the

tenderness that she heard in his voice, and she had courage to lift up

her eyes and look at him as he said, "You are conscious of something

which you feel to be a crime toward one who is dead. You think that you

have forfeited all claim as a wife. You shrink from taking what was

his. You want to keep yourself from profiting by his death. Your

feeling even urges you to some self-punishment--some scourging of the

self that disobeyed your better will--the will that struggled against

temptation. I have known something of that myself. Do I understand you?"

"Yes--at least, I want to be good--not like what I have been," said

Gwendolen. "I will try to bear what you think I ought to bear. I have

tried to tell you the worst about myself. What ought I to do?"

"If no one but yourself were concerned in this question of income,"

said Deronda, "I should hardly dare to urge you against any remorseful

prompting; but I take as a guide now, your feeling about Mrs. Davilow,

which seems to me quite just. I cannot think that your husband's dues

even to yourself are nullified by any act you have committed. He

voluntarily entered into your life, and affected its course in what is

always the most momentous way. But setting that aside, it was due from

him in his position that he should provide for your mother, and he of

course understood that if this will took effect she would share the

provision he had made for you."

"She has had eight hundred a year. What I thought of was to take that

and leave the rest," said Gwendolen. She had been so long inwardly

arguing for this as a permission, that her mind could not at once take

another attitude.

"I think it is not your duty to fix a limit in that way," said Deronda.

"You would be making a painful enigma for Mrs. Davilow; an income from

which you shut yourself out must be embittered to her. And your own

course would become too difficult. We agreed at Genoa that the burden

on your conscience is one what no one ought to be admitted to the

knowledge of. The future beneficence of your life will be best

furthered by your saving all others from the pain of that knowledge. In

my opinion you ought simply to abide by the provisions of your

husband's will, and let your remorse tell only on the use that you will

make of your monetary independence."

In uttering the last sentence Deronda automatically took up his hat

which he had laid on the floor beside him. Gwendolen, sensitive to his

slightest movement, felt her heart giving a great leap, as if it too

had a consciousness of its own, and would hinder him from going: in the

same moment she rose from her chair, unable to reflect that the

movement was an acceptance of his apparent intention to leave her; and

Deronda, of course, also rose, advancing a little.

"I will do what you tell me," said Gwendolen, hurriedly; "but what else

shall I do?" No other than these simple words were possible to her; and

even these were too much for her in a state of emotion where her proud

secrecy was disenthroned: as the child-like sentences fell from her

lips they re-acted on her like a picture of her own helplessness, and

she could not check the sob which sent the large tears to her eyes.

Deronda, too, felt a crushing pain; but imminent consequences were

visible to him, and urged him to the utmost exertion of conscience.

When she had pressed her tears away, he said, in a gently questioning

tone--

"You will probably be soon going with Mrs. Davilow into the country."

"Yes, in a week or ten days." Gwendolen waited an instant, turning her

eyes vaguely toward the window, as if looking at some imagined

prospect. "I want to be kind to them all--they can be happier than I

can. Is that the best I can do?"

"I think so. It is a duty that cannot be doubtful," said Deronda. He

paused a little between his sentences, feeling a weight of anxiety on

all his words. "Other duties will spring from it. Looking at your life

as a debt may seem the dreariest view of things at a distance; but it

cannot really be so. What makes life dreary is the want of motive: but

once beginning to act with that penitential, loving purpose you have in

your mind, there will be unexpected satisfactions--there will be

newly-opening needs--continually coming to carry you on from day to

day. You will find your life growing like a plant."

Gwendolen turned her eyes on him with the look of one athirst toward

the sound of unseen waters. Deronda felt the look as if she had been

stretching her arms toward him from a forsaken shore. His voice took an

affectionate imploringness when he said--

"This sorrow, which has cut down to the root, has come to you while you

are so young--try to think of it not as a spoiling of your life, but as

a preparation for it. Let it be a preparation----" Any one overhearing

his tones would have thought he was entreating for his own happiness.

"See! you have been saved from the worst evils that might have come

from your marriage, which you feel was wrong. You have had a vision of

injurious, selfish action--a vision of possible degradation; think that

a severe angel, seeing you along the road of error, grasped you by the

wrist and showed you the horror of the life you must avoid. And it has

come to you in your spring-time. Think of it as a preparation. You can,

you will, be among the best of women, such as make others glad that

they were born."

The words were like the touch of a miraculous hand to Gwendolen.

Mingled emotions streamed through her frame with a strength that seemed

the beginning of a new existence, having some new power or other which

stirred in her vaguely. So pregnant is the divine hope of moral

recovery with the energy that fulfills it. So potent in us is the

infused action of another soul, before which we bow in complete love.

But the new existence seemed inseparable from Deronda: the hope seemed

to make his presence permanent. It was not her thought, that he loved

her, and would cling to her--a thought would have tottered with

improbability; it was her spiritual breath. For the first time since

that terrible moment on the sea a flush rose and spread over her cheek,

brow and neck, deepened an instant or two, and then gradually

disappeared. She did not speak.

Deronda advanced and put out his hand, saying, "I must not weary you."

She was startled by the sense that he was going, and put her hand in

his, still without speaking.

"You look ill yet--unlike yourself," he added, while he held her hand.

"I can't sleep much," she answered, with some return of her dispirited

manner. "Things repeat themselves in me so. They come back--they will

all come back," she ended, shudderingly, a chill fear threatening her.

"By degrees they will be less insistent," said Deronda. He could not

drop her hand or move away from her abruptly.

"Sir Hugo says he shall come to stay at Diplow," said Gwendolen,

snatching at previously intended words which had slipped away from her.

"You will come too."

"Probably," said Deronda, and then feeling that the word was cold, he

added, correctively, "Yes, I shall come," and then released her hand,

with the final friendly pressure of one who has virtually said good-bye.

"And not again here, before I leave town?" said Gwendolen, with timid

sadness, looking as pallid as ever.

What could Deronda say? "If I can be of any use--if you wish

me--certainly I will."

"I must wish it," said Gwendolen, impetuously; "you know I must wish

it. What strength have I? Who else is there?" Again a sob was rising.

Deronda felt a pang, which showed itself in his face. He looked

miserable as he said, "I will certainly come."

Gwendolen perceived the change in his face; but the intense relief of

expecting him to come again could not give way to any other feeling,

and there was a recovery of the inspired hope and courage in her.

"Don't be unhappy about me," she said, in a tone of affectionate

assurance. "I shall remember your words--every one of them. I shall

remember what you believe about me; I shall try."

She looked at him firmly, and put out her hand again as if she had

forgotten what had passed since those words of his which she promised

to remember. But there was no approach to a smile on her lips. She had

never smiled since her husband's death. When she stood still and in

silence, she looked like a melancholy statue of the Gwendolen whose

laughter had once been so ready when others were grave.

It is only by remembering the searching anguish which had changed the

aspect of the world for her that we can understand her behavior to

Deronda--the unreflecting openness, nay, the importunate pleading, with

which she expressed her dependence on him. Considerations such as would

have filled the minds of indifferent spectators could not occur to her,

any more than if flames had been mounting around her, and she had flung

herself into his open arms and clung about his neck that he might carry

her into safety. She identified him with the struggling regenerative

process in her which had begun with his action. Is it any wonder that

she saw her own necessity reflected in his feeling? She was in that

state of unconscious reliance and expectation which is a common

experience with us when we are preoccupied with our own trouble or our

own purposes. We diffuse our feeling over others, and count on their

acting from our motives. Her imagination had not been turned to a

future union with Deronda by any other than the spiritual tie which had

been continually strengthening; but also it had not been turned toward

a future separation from him. Love-making and marriage--how could they

now be the imagery in which poor Gwendolen's deepest attachment could

spontaneously clothe itself? Mighty Love had laid his hand upon her;

but what had he demanded of her? Acceptance of rebuke--the hard task of

self-change--confession--endurance. If she cried toward him, what then?

She cried as the child cries whose little feet have fallen

backward--cried to be taken by the hand, lest she should lose herself.

The cry pierced Deronda. What position could have been more difficult

for a man full of tenderness, yet with clear foresight? He was the only

creature who knew the real nature of Gwendolen's trouble: to withdraw

himself from any appeal of hers would be to consign her to a dangerous

loneliness. He could not reconcile himself to the cruelty of apparently

rejecting her dependence on him; and yet in the nearer or farther

distance he saw a coming wrench, which all present strengthening of

their bond would make the harder.

He was obliged to risk that. He went once and again to Park Lane before

Gwendolen left; but their interviews were in the presence of Mrs.

Davilow, and were therefore less agitating. Gwendolen, since she had

determined to accept her income, had conceived a project which she

liked to speak of: it was, to place her mother and sisters with herself

in Offendene again, and, as she said, piece back her life unto that

time when they first went there, and when everything was happiness

about her, only she did not know it. The idea had been mentioned to Sir

Hugo, who was going to exert himself about the letting of Gadsmere for

a rent which would more than pay the rent of Offendene. All this was

told to Deronda, who willingly dwelt on a subject that seemed to give

some soothing occupation to Gwendolen. He said nothing and she asked

nothing, of what chiefly occupied himself. Her mind was fixed on his

coming to Diplow before the autumn was over; and she no more thought of

the Lapidoths--the little Jewess and her brother--as likely to make a

difference in her destiny, than of the fermenting political and social

leaven which was making a difference in the history of the world. In

fact poor Gwendolen's memory had been stunned, and all outside the

lava-lit track of her troubled conscience, and her effort to get

deliverance from it, lay for her in dim forgetfulness.

CHAPTER LXVI.

"One day still fierce 'mid many a day struck calm."

--BROWNING: \_The King and the Book\_.

Meanwhile Ezra and Mirah, whom Gwendolen did not include in her

thinking about Deronda, were having their relation to him drawn closer

and brought into fuller light.

The father Lapidoth had quitted his daughter at the doorstep, ruled by

that possibility of staking something in play or betting which

presented itself with the handling of any sum beyond the price of

staying actual hunger, and left no care for alternative prospects or

resolutions. Until he had lost everything he never considered whether

he would apply to Mirah again or whether he would brave his son's

presence. In the first moment he had shrunk from encountering Ezra as

he would have shrunk from any other situation of disagreeable

constraint; and the possession of Mirah's purse was enough to banish

the thought of future necessities. The gambling appetite is more

absolutely dominant than bodily hunger, which can be neutralized by an

emotional or intellectual excitation; but the passion for watching

chances--the habitual suspensive poise of the mind in actual or

imaginary play--nullifies the susceptibility of other excitation. In

its final, imperious stage, it seems the unjoyous dissipation of

demons, seeking diversion on the burning marl of perdition.

But every form of selfishness, however abstract and unhuman, requires

the support of at least one meal a day; and though Lapidoth's appetite

for food and drink was extremely moderate, he had slipped into a

shabby, unfriendly form of life in which the appetite could not be

satisfied without some ready money. When, in a brief visit at a house

which announced "Pyramids" on the window-blind, he had first doubled

and trebled and finally lost Mirah's thirty shillings, he went out with

her empty purse in his pocket, already balancing in his mind whether he

should get another immediate stake by pawning the purse, or whether he

should go back to her giving himself a good countenance by restoring

the purse, and declaring that he had used the money in paying a score

that was standing against him. Besides, among the sensibilities still

left strong in Lapidoth was the sensibility to his own claims, and he

appeared to himself to have a claim on any property his children might

possess, which was stronger than the justice of his son's resentment.

After all, to take up his lodging with his children was the best thing

he could do; and the more he thought of meeting Ezra the less he winced

from it, his imagination being more wrought on by the chances of his

getting something into his pocket with safety and without exertion,

than by the threat of a private humiliation. Luck had been against him

lately; he expected it to turn--and might not the turn begin with some

opening of supplies which would present itself through his daughter's

affairs and the good friends she had spoken of? Lapidoth counted on the

fascination of his cleverness--an old habit of mind which early

experience had sanctioned: and it is not only women who are unaware of

their diminished charm, or imagine that they can feign not to be worn

out.

The result of Lapidoth's rapid balancing was that he went toward the

little square in Brompton with the hope that, by walking about and

watching, he might catch sight of Mirah going out or returning, in

which case his entrance into the house would be made easier. But it was

already evening--the evening of the day next to that which he had first

seen her; and after a little waiting, weariness made him reflect that

he might ring, and if she were not at home he might ask the time at

which she was expected. But on coming near the house he knew that she

was at home: he heard her singing.

Mirah, seated at the piano, was pouring forth "\_Herz, mein Herz\_,"

while Ezra was listening with his eyes shut, when Mrs. Adam opened the

door, and said in some embarrassment--

"A gentleman below says he is your father, miss."

"I will go down to him," said Mirah, starting up immediately and

looking at her brother.

"No, Mirah, not so," said Ezra, with decision. "Let him come up, Mrs.

Adam."

Mirah stood with her hands pinching each other, and feeling sick with

anxiety, while she continued looking at Ezra, who had also risen, and

was evidently much shaken. But there was an expression in his face

which she had never seen before; his brow was knit, his lips seemed

hardened with the same severity that gleamed from his eye.

When Mrs. Adam opened the door to let in the father, she could not help

casting a look at the group, and after glancing from the younger man to

the elder, said to herself as she closed the door, "Father, sure

enough." The likeness was that of outline, which is always most

striking at the first moment; the expression had been wrought into the

strongest contrasts by such hidden or inconspicuous differences as can

make the genius of a Cromwell within the outward type of a father who

was no more than a respectable parishioner.

Lapidoth had put on a melancholy expression beforehand, but there was

some real wincing in his frame as he said--

"Well, Ezra, my boy, you hardly know me after so many years."

"I know you--too well--father," said Ezra, with a slow biting solemnity

which made the word father a reproach.

"Ah, you are not pleased with me. I don't wonder at it. Appearances

have been against me. When a man gets into straits he can't do just as

he would by himself or anybody else, \_I\_'ve suffered enough, I know,"

said Lapidoth, quickly. In speaking he always recovered some glibness

and hardihood; and now turning toward Mirah, he held out her purse,

saying, "Here's your little purse, my dear. I thought you'd be anxious

about it because of that bit of writing. I've emptied it, you'll see,

for I had a score to pay for food and lodging. I knew you would like me

to clear myself, and here I stand--without a single farthing in my

pocket--at the mercy of my children. You can turn me out if you like,

without getting a policeman. Say the word, Mirah; say, 'Father, I've

had enough of you; you made a pet of me, and spent your all on me, when

I couldn't have done without you; but I can do better without you

now,'--say that, and I'm gone out like a spark. I shan't spoil your

pleasure again." The tears were in his voice as usual, before he had

finished.

"You know I could never say it, father," answered Mirah, with not the

less anguish because she felt the falsity of everything in his speech

except the implied wish to remain in the house.

"Mirah, my sister, leave us!" said Ezra, in a tone of authority.

She looked at her brother falteringly, beseechingly--in awe of his

decision, yet unable to go without making a plea for this father who

was like something that had grown in her flesh with pain. She went

close to her brother, and putting her hand in his, said, in a low

voice, but not so low as to be unheard by Lapidoth, "Remember,

Ezra--you said my mother would not have shut him out."

"Trust me, and go," said Ezra.

She left the room, but after going a few steps up the stairs, sat down

with a palpitating heart. If, because of anything her brother said to

him, he went away---

Lapidoth had some sense of what was being prepared for him in his son's

mind, but he was beginning to adjust himself to the situation and find

a point of view that would give him a cool superiority to any attempt

at humiliating him. This haggard son, speaking as from a sepulchre, had

the incongruity which selfish levity learns to see in suffering, and

until the unrelenting pincers of disease clutch its own flesh. Whatever

preaching he might deliver must be taken for a matter of course, as a

man finding shelter from hail in an open cathedral might take a little

religious howling that happened to be going on there.

Lapidoth was not born with this sort of callousness: he had achieved it.

"This home that we have here," Ezra began, "is maintained partly by the

generosity of a beloved friend who supports me, and partly by the

labors of my sister, who supports herself. While we have a home we will

not shut you out from it. We will not cast you out to the mercy of your

vices. For you are our father, and though you have broken your bond, we

acknowledge ours. But I will never trust you. You absconded with money,

leaving your debts unpaid; you forsook my mother; you robbed her of her

little child and broke her heart; you have become a gambler, and where

shame and conscience were there sits an insatiable desire; you were

ready to sell my sister--you had sold her, but the price was denied

you. The man who has done these things must never expect to be trusted

any more. We will share our food with you--you shall have a bed, and

clothing. We will do this duty to you, because you are our father. But

you will never be trusted. You are an evil man: you made the misery of

our mother. That such a man is our father is a brand on our flesh which

will not cease smarting. But the Eternal has laid it upon us; and

though human justice were to flog you for crimes, and your body fell

helpless before the public scorn, we would still say, 'This is our

father; make way, that we may carry him out of your sight.'"

Lapidoth, in adjusting himself to what was coming, had not been able to

foresee the exact intensity of the lightning or the exact course it

would take--that it would not fall outside his frame but through it. He

could not foresee what was so new to him as this voice from the soul of

his son. It touched that spring of hysterical excitability which Mirah

used to witness in him when he sat at home and sobbed. As Ezra ended,

Lapidoth threw himself into a chair and cried like a woman, burying his

face against the table--and yet, strangely, while this hysterical

crying was an inevitable reaction in him under the stress of his son's

words, it was also a conscious resource in a difficulty; just as in

early life, when he was a bright-faced curly young man, he had been

used to avail himself of this subtly-poised physical susceptibility to

turn the edge of resentment or disapprobation.

Ezra sat down again and said nothing--exhausted by the shock of his own

irrepressible utterance, the outburst of feelings which for years he

had borne in solitude and silence. His thin hands trembled on the arms

of the chair; he would hardly have found voice to answer a question; he

felt as if he had taken a step toward beckoning Death. Meanwhile

Mirah's quick expectant ear detected a sound which her heart

recognized: she could not stay out of the room any longer. But on

opening the door her immediate alarm was for Ezra, and it was to his

side that she went, taking his trembling hand in hers, which he pressed

and found support in; but he did not speak or even look at her. The

father with his face buried was conscious that Mirah had entered, and

presently lifted up his head, pressed his handkerchief against his

eyes, put out his hand toward her, and said with plaintive hoarseness,

"Good-bye, Mirah; your father will not trouble you again. He deserves

to die like a dog by the roadside, and he will. If your mother had

lived, she would have forgiven me--thirty-four years ago I put the ring

on her finger under the \_Chuppa\_, and we were made one. She would have

forgiven me, and we should have spent our old age together. But I

haven't deserved it. Good-bye."

He rose from the chair as he said the last "good-bye." Mirah had put

her hand in his and held him. She was not tearful and grieving, but

frightened and awe-struck, as she cried out--

"No, father, no!" Then turning to her brother, "Ezra, you have not

forbidden him?--Stay, father, and leave off wrong things. Ezra, I

cannot bear it. How can I say to my father, 'Go and die!'"

"I have not said it," Ezra answered, with great effort. "I have said,

stay and be sheltered."

"Then you will stay, father--and be taken care of--and come with me,"

said Mirah, drawing him toward the door.

This was really what Lapidoth wanted. And for the moment he felt a sort

of comfort in recovering his daughter's dutiful attendance, that made a

change of habits seem possible to him. She led him down to the parlor

below, and said--

"This is my sitting-room when I am not with Ezra, and there is a

bed-room behind which shall be yours. You will stay and be good,

father. Think that you are come back to my mother, and that she has

forgiven you--she speaks to you through me." Mirah's tones were

imploring, but she could not give one of her former caresses.

Lapidoth quickly recovered his composure, began to speak to Mirah of

the improvement in her voice, and other easy subjects, and when Mrs.

Adam came to lay out his supper, entered into converse with her in

order to show her that he was not a common person, though his clothes

were just now against him.

But in his usual wakefulness at night, he fell to wondering what money

Mirah had by her, and went back over old Continental hours at

\_Roulette\_, reproducing the method of his play, and the chances that

had frustrated it. He had had his reasons for coming to England, but

for most things it was a cursed country.

These were the stronger visions of the night with Lapidoth, and not the

worn frame of his ireful son uttering a terrible judgment. Ezra did

pass across the gaming-table, and his words were audible; but he passed

like an insubstantial ghost, and his words had the heart eaten out of

them by numbers and movements that seemed to make the very tissue of

Lapidoth's consciousness.

CHAPTER LXVII.

The godhead in us wrings our noble deeds

From our reluctant selves.

It was an unpleasant surprise to Deronda when he returned from the

Abbey to find the undesirable father installed in the lodgings at

Brompton. Mirah had felt it necessary to speak of Deronda to her

father, and even to make him as fully aware as she could of the way in

which the friendship with Ezra had begun, and of the sympathy which had

cemented it. She passed more lightly over what Deronda had done for

her, omitting altogether the rescue from drowning, and speaking of the

shelter she had found in Mrs. Meyrick's family so as to leave her

father to suppose that it was through these friends Deronda had become

acquainted with her. She could not persuade herself to more

completeness in her narrative: she could not let the breath of her

father's soul pass over her relation to Deronda. And Lapidoth, for

reasons, was not eager in his questioning about the circumstances of

her flight and arrival in England. But he was much interested in the

fact of his children having a beneficent friend apparently high in the

world.

It was the brother who told Deronda of this new condition added to

their life. "I am become calm in beholding him now," Ezra ended, "and I

try to think it possible that my sister's tenderness, and the daily

tasting a life of peace, may win him to remain aloof from temptation. I

have enjoined her, and she has promised, to trust him with no money. I

have convinced her that he will buy with it his own destruction."

Deronda first came on the third day from Ladipoth's arrival. The new

clothes for which he had been measured were not yet ready, and wishing

to make a favorable impression, he did not choose to present himself in

the old ones. He watched for Deronda's departure, and, getting a view

of him from the window, was rather surprised at his youthfulness, which

Mirah had not mentioned, and which he had somehow thought out of the

question in a personage who had taken up a grave friendship and hoary

studies with the sepulchral Ezra. Lapidoth began to imagine that

Deronda's real or chief motive must be that he was in love with Mirah.

And so much the better; for a tie to Mirah had more promise of

indulgence for her father than a tie to Ezra: and Lapidoth was not

without the hope of recommending himself to Deronda, and of softening

any hard prepossessions. He was behaving with much amiability, and

trying in all ways at his command to get himself into easy

domestication with his children--entering into Mirah's music, showing

himself docile about smoking, which Mrs. Adam could not tolerate in her

parlor, and walking out in the square with his German pipe, and the

tobacco with which Mirah supplied him. He was too acute to offer any

present remonstrance against the refusal of money, which Mirah told him

that she must persist in as a solemn duty promised to her brother. He

was comfortable enough to wait.

The next time Deronda came, Lapidoth, equipped in his new clothes, and

satisfied with his own appearance, was in the room with Ezra, who was

teaching himself, as a part of his severe duty, to tolerate his

father's presence whenever it was imposed. Deronda was cold and

distant, the first sight of this man, who had blighted the lives of his

wife and children, creating in him a repulsion that was even a physical

discomfort. But Lapidoth did not let himself be discouraged, asked

leave to stay and hear the reading of papers from the old chest, and

actually made himself useful in helping to decipher some difficult

German manuscript. This led him to suggest that it might be desirable

to make a transcription of the manuscript, and he offered his services

for this purpose, and also to make copies of any papers in Roman

characters. Though Ezra's young eyes he observed were getting weak, his

own were still strong. Deronda accepted the offer, thinking that

Lapidoth showed a sign of grace in the willingness to be employed

usefully; and he saw a gratified expression in Ezra's face, who,

however, presently said, "Let all the writing be done here; for I

cannot trust the papers out of my sight, lest there be an accident by

burning or otherwise." Poor Ezra felt very much as if he had a convict

on leave under his charge. Unless he saw his father working, it was not

possible to believe that he would work in good faith. But by this

arrangement he fastened on himself the burden of his father's presence,

which was made painful not only through his deepest, longest

associations, but also through Lapidoth's restlessness of temperament,

which showed itself the more as he become familiarized with his

situation, and lost any awe he had felt of his son. The fact was, he

was putting a strong constraint on himself in confining his attention

for the sake of winning Deronda's favor; and like a man in an

uncomfortable garment he gave himself relief at every opportunity,

going out to smoke, or moving about and talking, or throwing himself

back in his chair and remaining silent, but incessantly carrying on a

dumb language of facial movement or gesticulation: and if Mirah were in

the room, he would fall into his old habit of talk with her, gossiping

about their former doings and companions, or repeating quirks and

stories, and plots of the plays he used to adapt, in the belief that he

could at will command the vivacity of his earlier time. All this was a

mortal infliction to Ezra; and when Mirah was at home she tried to

relieve him, by getting her father down into the parlor and keeping

watch over him there. What duty is made of a single difficult resolve?

The difficulty lies in the daily unflinching support of consequences

that mar the blessed return of morning with the prospect of irritation

to be suppressed or shame to be endured. And such consequences were

being borne by these, as by many other heroic children of an unworthy

father--with the prospect, at least to Mirah, of their stretching

onward through the solid part of life.

Meanwhile Lapidoth's presence had raised a new impalpable partition

between Deronda and Mirah--each of them dreading the soiling inferences

of his mind, each of them interpreting mistakenly the increased reserve

and diffidence of the other. But it was not very long before some light

came to Deronda.

As soon as he could, after returning from his brief visit to the Abbey,

he had called at Hans Meyrick's rooms, feeling it, on more grounds than

one, a due of friendship that Hans should be at once acquainted with

the reasons of his late journey, and the changes of intention it had

brought about. Hans was not there; he was said to be in the country for

a few days; and Deronda, after leaving a note, waited a week, rather

expecting a note in return. But receiving no word, and fearing some

freak of feeling in the incalculably susceptible Hans, whose proposed

sojourn at the Abbey he knew had been deferred, he at length made a

second call, and was admitted into the painting-room, where he found

his friend in a light coat, without a waistcoat, his long hair still

wet from a bath, but with a face looking worn and wizened--anything but

country-like. He had taken up his palette and brushes, and stood before

his easel when Deronda entered, but the equipment and attitude seemed

to have been got up on short notice.

As they shook hands, Deronda said, "You don't look much as if you had

been in the country, old fellow. Is it Cambridge you have been to?"

"No," said Hans, curtly, throwing down his palette with the air of one

who has begun to feign by mistake; then pushing forward a chair for

Deronda, he threw himself into another, and leaned backward with his

hands behind his head, while he went on, "I've been to

I-don't-know-where--No man's land--and a mortally unpleasant country it

is."

"You don't mean to say you have been drinking, Hans," said Deronda, who

had seated himself opposite, in anxious survey.

"Nothing so good. I've been smoking opium. I always meant to do it some

time or other, to try how much bliss could be got by it; and having

found myself just now rather out of other bliss, I thought it judicious

to seize the opportunity. But I pledge you my word I shall never tap a

cask of that bliss again. It disagrees with my constitution."

"What has been the matter? You were in good spirits enough when you

wrote to me."

"Oh, nothing in particular. The world began to look seedy--a sort of

cabbage-garden with all the cabbages cut. A malady of genius, you may

be sure," said Hans, creasing his face into a smile; "and, in fact, I

was tired of being virtuous without reward, especially in this hot

London weather."

"Nothing else? No real vexation?" said Deronda.

Hans shook his head.

"I came to tell you of my own affairs, but I can't do it with a good

grace if you are to hide yours."

"Haven't an affair in the world," said Hans, in a flighty way, "except

a quarrel with a bric-Ã -brac man. Besides, as it is the first time in

our lives that you ever spoke to me about your own affairs, you are

only beginning to pay a pretty long debt."

Deronda felt convinced that Hans was behaving artificially, but he

trusted to a return of the old frankness by-and-by if he gave his own

confidence.

"You laughed at the mystery of my journey to Italy, Hans," he began.

"It was for an object that touched my happiness at the very roots. I

had never known anything about my parents, and I really went to Genoa

to meet my mother. My father has been long dead--died when I was an

infant. My mother was the daughter of an eminent Jew; my father was her

cousin. Many things had caused me to think of this origin as almost a

probability before I set out. I was so far prepared for the result that

I was glad of it--glad to find myself a Jew."

"You must not expect me to look surprised, Deronda," said Hans, who had

changed his attitude, laying one leg across the other and examining the

heel of his slipper.

"You knew it?"

"My mother told me. She went to the house the morning after you had

been there--brother and sister both told her. You may imagine we can't

rejoice as they do. But whatever you are glad of, I shall come to be

glad of in the end--\_when\_ exactly the end may be I can't predict,"

said Hans, speaking in a low tone, which was as usual with him as it

was to be out of humor with his lot, and yet bent on making no fuss

about it.

"I quite understand that you can't share my feeling," said Deronda;

"but I could not let silence lie between us on what casts quite a new

light over my future. I have taken up some of Mordecai's ideas, and I

mean to try and carry them out, so far as one man's efforts can go. I

dare say I shall by and by travel to the East and be away for some

years."

Hans said nothing, but rose, seized his palette and began to work his

brush on it, standing before his picture with his back to Deronda, who

also felt himself at a break in his path embarrassed by Hans's

embarrassment.

Presently Hans said, again speaking low, and without turning, "Excuse

the question, but does Mrs. Grandcourt know of all this?"

"No; and I must beg of you, Hans," said Deronda, rather angrily, "to

cease joking on that subject. Any notions you have are wide of the

truth--are the very reverse of the truth."

"I am no more inclined to joke than I shall be at my own funeral," said

Hans. "But I am not at all sure that you are aware what are my notions

on that subject."

"Perhaps not," said Deronda. "But let me say, once for all, that in

relation to Mrs. Grandcourt, I never have had, and never shall have the

position of a lover. If you have ever seriously put that interpretation

on anything you have observed, you are supremely mistaken."

There was silence a little while, and to each the silence was like an

irritating air, exaggerating discomfort.

"Perhaps I have been mistaken in another interpretation, also," said

Hans, presently.

"What is that?"

"That you had no wish to hold the position of a lover toward another

woman, who is neither wife nor widow."

"I can't pretend not to understand you, Meyrick. It is painful that our

wishes should clash. I hope you will tell me if you have any ground for

supposing that you would succeed."

"That seems rather a superfluous inquiry on your part, Deronda," said

Hans, with some irritation.

"Why superfluous?"

"Because you are perfectly convinced on the subject--and probably have

had the very best evidence to convince you."

"I will be more frank with you than you are with me," said Deronda,

still heated by Hans' show of temper, and yet sorry for him. "I have

never had the slightest evidence that I should succeed myself. In fact,

I have very little hope."

Hans looked round hastily at his friend, but immediately turned to his

picture again.

"And in our present situation," said Deronda, hurt by the idea that

Hans suspected him of insincerity, and giving an offended emphasis to

his words, "I don't see how I can deliberately make known my feeling to

her. If she could not return it, I should have embittered her best

comfort; for neither she nor I can be parted from her brother, and we

should have to meet continually. If I were to cause her that sort of

pain by an unwilling betrayal of my feeling, I should be no better than

a mischievous animal."

"I don't know that I have ever betrayed \_my\_ feeling to her," said

Hans, as if he were vindicating himself.

"You mean that we are on a level, then; you have no reason to envy me."

"Oh, not the slightest," said Hans, with bitter irony. "You have

measured my conceit and know that it out-tops all your advantages."

"I am a nuisance to you, Meyrick. I am sorry, but I can't help it,"

said Deronda, rising. "After what passed between us before, I wished to

have this explanation; and I don't see that any pretensions of mine

have made a real difference to you. They are not likely to make any

pleasant difference to myself under present circumstances. Now the

father is there--did you know that the father is there?"

"Yes. If he were not a Jew I would permit myself to damn him--with

faint praise, I mean," said Hans, but with no smile.

"She and I meet under greater constraint than ever. Things might go on

in this way for two years without my getting any insight into her

feeling toward me. That is the whole state of affairs, Hans. Neither

you nor I have injured the other, that I can see. We must put up with

this sort of rivalry in a hope that is likely enough to come to

nothing. Our friendship can bear that strain, surely."

"No, it can't," said Hans, impetuously, throwing down his tools,

thrusting his hands into his coat-pockets, and turning round to face

Deronda, who drew back a little and looked at him with amazement. Hans

went on in the same tone--

"Our friendship--my friendship--can't bear the strain of behaving to

you like an ungrateful dastard and grudging you your happiness. For you

\_are\_ the happiest dog in the world. If Mirah loves anybody better than

her brother, \_you are the man\_."

Hans turned on his heel and threw himself into his chair, looking up at

Deronda with an expression the reverse of tender. Something like a

shock passed through Deronda, and, after an instant, he said--

"It is a good-natured fiction of yours, Hans."

"I am not in a good-natured mood. I assure you I found the fact

disagreeable when it was thrust on me--all the more, or perhaps all the

less, because I believed then that your heart was pledged to the

duchess. But now, confound you! you turn out to be in love in the right

place--a Jew--and everything eligible."

"Tell me what convinced you--there's a good fellow," said Deronda,

distrusting a delight that he was unused to.

"Don't ask. Little mother was witness. The upshot is, that Mirah is

jealous of the duchess, and the sooner you relieve your mind the

better. There! I've cleared off a score or two, and may be allowed to

swear at you for getting what you deserve--which is just the very best

luck I know of."

"God bless you, Hans!" said Deronda, putting out his hand, which the

other took and wrung in silence.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

"All thoughts, all passions, all delights,

Whatever stirs this mortal frame,

All are but ministers of Love,

And feed his sacred flame."

--COLERIDGE.

Deronda's eagerness to confess his love could hardly have had a

stronger stimulus than Hans had given it in his assurance that Mirah

needed relief from jealousy. He went on his next visit to Ezra with the

determination to be resolute in using--nay, in requesting--an

opportunity of private conversation with her. If she accepted his love,

he felt courageous about all other consequences, and as her betrothed

husband he would gain a protective authority which might be a desirable

defense for her in future difficulties with her father. Deronda had not

observed any signs of growing restlessness in Lapidoth, or of

diminished desire to recommend himself; but he had forebodings of some

future struggle, some mortification, or some intolerable increase of

domestic disquietude in which he might save Ezra and Mirah from being

helpless victims.

His forebodings would have been strengthened if he had known what was

going on in the father's mind. That amount of restlessness, that

desultoriness of attention, which made a small torture to Ezra, was to

Lapidoth an irksome submission to restraint, only made bearable by his

thinking of it as a means of by-and-by securing a well-conditioned

freedom. He began with the intention of awaiting some really good

chance, such as an opening for getting a considerable sum from Deronda;

but all the while he was looking about curiously, and trying to

discover where Mirah deposited her money and her keys. The imperious

gambling desire within him, which carried on its activity through every

other occupation, and made a continuous web of imagination that held

all else in its meshes, would hardly have been under the control of a

contracted purpose, if he had been able to lay his hands on any sum

worth capturing. But Mirah, with her practical clear-sightedness,

guarded against any frustration of the promise she had given to Ezra,

by confiding all money, except what she was immediately in want of, to

Mrs. Meyrick's care, and Lapidoth felt himself under an irritating

completeness of supply in kind as in a lunatic asylum where everything

was made safe against him. To have opened a desk or drawer of Mirah's,

and pocketed any bank-notes found there, would have been to his mind a

sort of domestic appropriation which had no disgrace in it; the degrees

of liberty a man allows himself with other people's property being

often delicately drawn, even beyond the boundary where the law begins

to lay its hold--which is the reason why spoons are a safer investment

than mining shares. Lapidoth really felt himself injuriously treated by

his daughter, and thought that he ought to have had what he wanted of

her other earnings as he had of her apple-tart. But he remained

submissive; indeed, the indiscretion that most tempted him, was not any

insistance with Mirah, but some kind of appeal to Deronda. Clever

persons who have nothing else to sell can often put a good price on

their absence, and Lapidoth's difficult search for devices forced upon

him the idea that his family would find themselves happier without him,

and that Deronda would be willing to advance a considerable sum for the

sake of getting rid of him. But, in spite of well-practiced hardihood,

Lapidoth was still in some awe of Ezra's imposing friend, and deferred

his purpose indefinitely.

On this day, when Deronda had come full of a gladdened consciousness,

which inevitably showed itself in his air and speech, Lapidoth was at a

crisis of discontent and longing that made his mind busy with schemes

of freedom, and Deronda's new amenity encouraged them. This

pre-occupation was at last so strong as to interfere with his usual

show of interest in what went forward, and his persistence in sitting

by even when there was reading which he could not follow. After sitting

a little while, he went out to smoke and walk in the square, and the

two friends were all the easier. Mirah was not at home, but she was

sure to be in again before Deronda left, and his eyes glowed with a

secret anticipation: he thought that when he saw her again he should

see some sweetness of recognition for himself to which his eyes had

been sealed before. There was an additional playful affectionateness in

his manner toward Ezra.

"This little room is too close for you, Ezra," he said, breaking off

his reading. "The week's heat we sometimes get here is worse than the

heat in Genoa, where one sits in the shaded coolness of large rooms.

You must have a better home now. I shall do as I like with you, being

the stronger half." He smiled toward Ezra, who said--

"I am straitened for nothing except breath. But you, who might be in a

spacious palace, with the wide green country around you, find this a

narrow prison. Nevertheless, I cannot say, 'Go.'"

"Oh, the country would be a banishment while you are here," said

Deronda, rising and walking round the double room, which yet offered no

long promenade, while he made a great fan of his handkerchief. "This is

the happiest room in the world to me. Besides, I will imagine myself in

the East, since I am getting ready to go there some day. Only I will

not wear a cravat and a heavy ring there," he ended emphatically,

pausing to take off those superfluities and deposit them on a small

table behind Ezra, who had the table in front of him covered with books

and papers.

"I have been wearing my memorable ring ever since I came home," he went

on, as he reseated himself. "But I am such a Sybarite that I constantly

put it off as a burden when I am doing anything. I understand why the

Romans had summer rings--\_if\_ they had them. Now then, I shall get on

better."

They were soon absorbed in their work again. Deronda was reading a

piece of rabbinical Hebrew under Ezra's correction and comment, and

they took little notice when Lapidoth re-entered and took a seat

somewhat in the background.

His rambling eyes quickly alighted on the ring that sparkled on the bit

of dark mahogany. During his walk, his mind had been occupied with the

fiction of an advantageous opening for him abroad, only requiring a sum

of ready money, which, on being communicated to Deronda in private,

might immediately draw from him a question as to the amount of the

required sum: and it was this part of his forecast that Lapidoth found

the most debatable, there being a danger in asking too much, and a

prospective regret in asking too little. His own desire gave him no

limit, and he was quite without guidance as to the limit of Deronda's

willingness. But now, in the midst of these airy conditions preparatory

to a receipt which remained indefinite, this ring, which on Deronda's

finger had become familiar to Lapidoth's envy, suddenly shone detached

and within easy grasp. Its value was certainly below the smallest of

the imaginary sums that his purpose fluctuated between; but then it was

before him as a solid fact, and his desire at once leaped into the

thought (not yet an intention) that if he were quietly to pocket that

ring and walk away he would have the means of comfortable escape from

present restraint, without trouble, and also without danger; for any

property of Deronda's (available without his formal consent) was all

one with his children's property, since their father would never be

prosecuted for taking it. The details of this thinking followed each

other so quickly that they seemed to rise before him as one picture.

Lapidoth had never committed larceny; but larceny is a form of

appropriation for which people are punished by law; and, take this ring

from a virtual relation, who would have been willing to make a much

heavier gift, would not come under the head of larceny. Still, the

heavier gift was to be preferred, if Lapidoth could only make haste

enough in asking for it, and the imaginary action of taking the ring,

which kept repeating itself like an inward tune, sank into a rejected

idea. He satisfied his urgent longing by resolving to go below, and

watch for the moment of Deronda's departure, when he would ask leave to

join him in his walk and boldly carry out his meditated plan. He rose

and stood looking out of the window, but all the while he saw what lay

beyond him--the brief passage he would have to make to the door close

by the table where the ring was. However he was resolved to go down;

but--by no distinct change of resolution, rather by a dominance of

desire, like the thirst of the drunkard--it so happened that in passing

the table his fingers fell noiselessly on the ring, and he found

himself in the passage with the ring in his hand. It followed that he

put on his hat and quitted the house. The possibility of again throwing

himself on his children receded into the indefinite distance, and

before he was out on the square his sense of haste had concentrated

itself on selling the ring and getting on shipboard.

Deronda and Ezra were just aware of his exit; that was all. But,

by-and-by, Mirah came in and made a real interruption. She had not

taken off her hat; and when Deronda rose and advanced to shake hands

with her, she said, in a confusion at once unaccountable and

troublesome to herself--

"I only came in to see that Ezra had his new draught. I must go

directly to Mrs. Meyrick's to fetch something."

"Pray allow me to walk with you," said Deronda urgently. "I must not

tire Ezra any further; besides my brains are melting. I want to go to

Mrs. Meyrick's: may I go with you?"

"Oh, yes," said Mirah, blushing still more, with the vague sense of

something new in Deronda, and turning away to pour out Ezra's draught;

Ezra meanwhile throwing back his head with his eyes shut, unable to get

his mind away from the ideas that had been filling it while the reading

was going on. Deronda for a moment stood thinking of nothing but the

walk, till Mirah turned round again and brought the draught, when he

suddenly remembered that he had laid aside his cravat, and

saying--"Pray excuse my dishabille--I did not mean you to see it," he

went to the little table, took up his cravat, and exclaimed with a

violent impulse of surprise, "Good heavens, where is my ring gone?"

beginning to search about on the floor.

Ezra looked round the corner of his chair. Mirah, quick as thought,

went to the spot where Deronda was seeking, and said, "Did you lay it

down?"

"Yes," said Deronda, still unvisited by any other explanation than that

the ring had fallen and was lurking in shadow, indiscernable on the

variegated carpet. He was moving the bits of furniture near, and

searching in all possible and impossible places with hand and eyes.

But another explanation had visited Mirah and taken the color from her

cheeks. She went to Ezra's ear and whispered "Was my father here?" He

bent his head in reply, meeting her eyes with terrible understanding.

She darted back to the spot where Deronda was still casting down his

eyes in that hopeless exploration which are apt to carry on over a

space we have examined in vain. "You have not found it?" she said,

hurriedly.

He, meeting her frightened gaze, immediately caught alarm from it and

answered, "I perhaps put it in my pocket," professing to feel for it

there.

She watched him and said, "It is not there?--you put it on the table,"

with a penetrating voice that would not let him feign to have found it

in his pocket; and immediately she rushed out of the room. Deronda

followed her--she was gone into the sitting-room below to look for her

father--she opened the door of the bedroom to see if he were there--she

looked where his hat usually hung--she turned with her hands clasped

tight and her lips pale, gazing despairingly out of the window. Then

she looked up at Deronda, who had not dared to speak to her in her

white agitation. She looked up at him, unable to utter a word--the look

seemed a tacit acceptance of the humiliation she felt in his presence.

But he, taking her clasped hands between both his, said, in a tone of

reverent adoration--

"Mirah, let me think that he is my father as well as yours--that we can

have no sorrow, no disgrace, no joy apart. I will rather take your

grief to be mine than I would take the brightest joy of another woman.

Say you will not reject me--say you will take me to share all things

with you. Say you will promise to be my wife--say it now. I have been

in doubt so long--I have had to hide my love so long. Say that now and

always I may prove to you that I love you with complete love."

The change in Mirah had been gradual. She had not passed at once from

anguish to the full, blessed consciousness that, in this moment of

grief and shame, Deronda was giving her the highest tribute man can

give to woman. With the first tones and the first words, she had only a

sense of solemn comfort, referring this goodness of Deronda's to his

feeling for Ezra. But by degrees the rapturous assurance of unhoped-for

good took possession of her frame: her face glowed under Deronda's as

he bent over her; yet she looked up still with intense gravity, as when

she had first acknowledged with religious gratitude that he had thought

her "worthy of the best;" and when he had finished, she could say

nothing--she could only lift up her lips to his and just kiss them, as

if that were the simplest "yes." They stood then, only looking at each

other, he holding her hands between his--too happy to move, meeting so

fully in their new consciousness that all signs would have seemed to

throw them farther apart, till Mirah said in a whisper: "Let us go and

comfort Ezra."

CHAPTER LXIX.

"The human nature unto which I felt

That I belonged, and reverenced with love,

Was not a punctual presence, but a spirit

Diffused through time and space, with aid derived

Of evidence from monuments, erect,

Prostrate, or leaning toward their common rest

In earth, the widely scattered wreck sublime

Of vanished nations."

--WORDSWORTH: \_The Prelude\_.

Sir Hugo carried out his plan of spending part of the autumn at Diplow,

and by the beginning of October his presence was spreading some

cheerfulness in the neighborhood, among all ranks and persons

concerned, from the stately home of Brackenshaw and Quetcham to the

respectable shop-parlors in Wanchester. For Sir Hugo was a man who

liked to show himself and be affable, a Liberal of good lineage, who

confided entirely in reform as not likely to make any serious

difference in English habits of feeling, one of which undoubtedly is

the liking to behold society well fenced and adorned with hereditary

rank. Hence he made Diplow a most agreeable house, extending his

invitations to old Wanchester solicitors and young village curates, but

also taking some care in the combination of the guests, and not feeding

all the common poultry together, so that they should think their meal

no particular compliment. Easy-going Lord Brackenshaw, for example,

would not mind meeting Robinson the attorney, but Robinson would have

been naturally piqued if he had been asked to meet a set of people who

passed for his equals. On all these points Sir Hugo was well informed

enough at once to gain popularity for himself and give pleasure to

others--two results which eminently suited his disposition. The rector

of Pennicote now found a reception at Diplow very different from the

haughty tolerance he had undergone during the reign of Grandcourt. It

was not that the baronet liked Mr. Gascoigne; it was that he desired to

keep up a marked relation of friendliness with him on account of Mrs.

Grandcourt, for whom Sir Hugo's chivalry had become more and more

engaged. Why? The chief reason was one that he could not fully

communicate, even to Lady Mallinger--for he would not tell what he

thought one woman's secret to another, even though the other was his

wife--which shows that his chivalry included a rare reticence.

Deronda, after he had become engaged to Mirah, felt it right to make a

full statement of his position and purposes to Sir Hugo, and he chose

to make it by letter. He had more than a presentiment that his fatherly

friend would feel some dissatisfaction, if not pain, at this turn of

his destiny. In reading unwelcome news, instead of hearing it, there is

the advantage that one avoids a hasty expression of impatience which

may afterward be repented of. Deronda dreaded that verbal collision

which makes otherwise pardonable feeling lastingly offensive.

And Sir Hugo, though not altogether surprised, was thoroughly vexed.

His immediate resource was to take the letter to Lady Mallinger, who

would be sure to express an astonishment which her husband could argue

against as unreasonable, and in this way divide the stress of his

discontent. And in fact when she showed herself astonished and

distressed that all Daniel's wonderful talents, and the comfort of

having him in the house, should have ended in his going mad in this way

about the Jews, the baronet could say--

"Oh, nonsense, my dear! depend upon it, Dan will not make a fool of

himself. He has large notions about Judaism--political views which you

can't understand. No fear but Dan will keep himself head uppermost."

But with regard to the prospective marriage she afforded him no

counter-irritant. The gentle lady observed, without rancor, that she

had little dreamed of what was coming when she had Mirah to sing at her

musical party and give lessons to Amabel. After some hesitation,

indeed, she confessed it \_had\_ passed through her mind that after a

proper time Daniel might marry Mrs. Grandcourt--because it seemed so

remarkable that he should be at Genoa just at that time--and although

she herself was not fond of widows she could not help thinking that

such a marriage would have been better than his going altogether with

the Jews. But Sir Hugo was so strongly of the same opinion that he

could not correct it as a feminine mistake; and his ill-humor at the

disproof of his disagreeable conclusions on behalf of Gwendolen was

left without vent. He desired Lady Mallinger not to breathe a word

about the affair till further notice, saying to himself, "If it is an

unkind cut to the poor thing (meaning Gwendolen), the longer she is

without knowing it the better, in her present nervous state. And she

will best learn it from Dan himself." Sir Hugo's conjectures had worked

so industriously with his knowledge, that he fancied himself well

informed concerning the whole situation.

Meanwhile his residence with his family at Diplow enabled him to

continue his fatherly attentions to Gwendolen; and in these Lady

Mallinger, notwithstanding her small liking for widows, was quite

willing to second him.

The plan of removal to Offendene had been carried out; and Gwendolen,

in settling there, maintained a calm beyond her mother's hopes. She was

experiencing some of that peaceful melancholy which comes from the

renunciation of demands for self, and from taking the ordinary good of

existence, and especially kindness, even from a dog, as a gift above

expectation. Does one who has been all but lost in a pit of darkness

complain of the sweet air and the daylight? There is a way of looking

at our life daily as an escape, and taking the quiet return of morn and

evening--still more the star-like out-glowing of some pure

fellow-feeling, some generous impulse breaking our inward darkness--as

a salvation that reconciles us to hardship. Those who have a

self-knowledge prompting such self-accusation as Hamlet's, can

understand this habitual feeling of rescue. And it was felt by

Gwendolen as she lived through and through again the terrible history

of her temptations, from their first form of illusory self-pleasing

when she struggled away from the hold of conscience, to their latest

form of an urgent hatred dragging her toward its satisfaction, while

she prayed and cried for the help of that conscience which she had once

forsaken. She was now dwelling on every word of Deronda's that pointed

to her past deliverance from the worst evil in herself, and the worst

infliction of it on others, and on every word that carried a force to

resist self-despair.

But she was also upborne by the prospect of soon seeing him again: she

did not imagine him otherwise than always within her reach, her supreme

need of him blinding her to the separateness of his life, the whole

scene of which she filled with his relation to her--no unique

preoccupation of Gwendolen's, for we are all apt to fall into this

passionate egoism of imagination, not only toward our fellow-men, but

toward God. And the future which she turned her face to with a willing

step was one where she would be continually assimilating herself to

some type that he would hold before her. Had he not first risen on her

vision as a corrective presence which she had recognized in the

beginning with resentment, and at last with entire love and trust? She

could not spontaneously think of an end to that reliance, which had

become to her imagination like the firmness of the earth, the only

condition of her walking.

And Deronda was not long before he came to Diplow, which was a more

convenient distance from town than the Abbey. He had wished to carry

out a plan for taking Ezra and Mirah to a mild spot on the coast, while

he prepared another home which Mirah might enter as his bride, and

where they might unitedly watch over her brother. But Ezra begged not

to be removed, unless it were to go with them to the East. All outward

solicitations were becoming more and more of a burden to him; but his

mind dwelt on the possibility of this voyage with a visionary joy.

Deronda, in his preparations for the marriage, which he hoped might not

be deferred beyond a couple of months, wished to have fuller

consultation as to his resources and affairs generally with Sir Hugo,

and here was a reason for not delaying his visit to Diplow. But he

thought quite as much of another reason--his promise to Gwendolen. The

sense of blessedness in his own lot had yet an aching anxiety at his

heart: this may be held paradoxical, for the beloved lover is always

called happy, and happiness is considered as a well-fleshed

indifference to sorrow outside it. But human experience is usually

paradoxical, if that means incongruous with the phrases of current talk

or even current philosophy. It was no treason to Mirah, but a part of

that full nature which made his love for her the more worthy, that his

joy in her could hold by its side the care for another. For what is

love itself, for the one we love best?--an enfolding of immeasurable

cares which yet are better than any joys outside our love.

Deronda came twice to Diplow, and saw Gwendolen twice--and yet he went

back to town without having told her anything about the change in his

lot and prospects. He blamed himself; but in all momentous

communication likely to give pain we feel dependent on some preparatory

turn of words or associations, some agreement of the other's mood with

the probable effect of what we have to impart. In the first interview

Gwendolen was so absorbed in what she had to say to him, so full of

questions which he must answer, about the arrangement of her life, what

she could do to make herself less ignorant, how she could be kindest to

everybody, and make amends for her selfishness and try to be rid of it,

that Deronda utterly shrank from waiving her immediate wants in order

to speak of himself, nay, from inflicting a wound on her in these

moments when she was leaning on him for help in her path. In the second

interview, when he went with new resolve to command the conversation

into some preparatory track, he found her in a state of deep

depression, overmastered by some distasteful miserable memories which

forced themselves on her as something more real and ample than any new

material out of which she could mould her future. She cried

hysterically, and said that he would always despise her. He could only

seek words of soothing and encouragement: and when she gradually

revived under them, with that pathetic look of renewed childlike

interest which we see in eyes where the lashes are still beaded with

tears, it was impossible to lay another burden on her.

But time went on, and he felt it a pressing duty to make the difficult

disclosure. Gwendolen, it was true, never recognized his having any

affairs; and it had never even occurred to her to ask him why he

happened to be at Genoa. But this unconsciousness of hers would make a

sudden revelation of affairs that were determining his course in life

all the heavier blow to her; and if he left the revelation to be made

by different persons, she would feel that he had treated her with cruel

inconsiderateness. He could not make the communication in writing: his

tenderness could not bear to think of her reading his virtual farewell

in solitude, and perhaps feeling his words full of a hard gladness for

himself and indifference for her. He went down to Diplow again, feeling

that every other peril was to be incurred rather than that of returning

and leaving her still in ignorance.

On this third visit Deronda found Hans Meyrick installed with his easel

at Diplow, beginning his picture of the three daughters sitting on a

bank, "in the Gainsborough style," and varying his work by rambling to

Pennicote to sketch the village children and improve his acquaintance

with the Gascoignes. Hans appeared to have recovered his vivacity, but

Deronda detected some feigning in it, as we detect the artificiality of

a lady's bloom from its being a little too high-toned and steadily

persistent (a "Fluctuating Rouge" not having yet appeared among the

advertisements). Also with all his grateful friendship and admiration

for Deronda, Hans could not help a certain irritation against him, such

as extremely incautious, open natures are apt to feel when the breaking

of a friend's reserve discloses a state of things not merely

unsuspected but the reverse of what had been hoped and ingeniously

conjectured. It is true that poor Hans had always cared chiefly to

confide in Deronda, and had been quite incurious as to any confidence

that might have been given in return; but what outpourer of his own

affairs is not tempted to think any hint of his friend's affairs is an

egotistic irrelevance? That was no reason why it was not rather a sore

reflection to Hans that while he had been all along naively opening his

heart about Mirah, Deronda had kept secret a feeling of rivalry which

now revealed itself as the important determining fact. Moreover, it is

always at their peril that our friends turn out to be something more

than we were aware of. Hans must be excused for these promptings of

bruised sensibility, since he had not allowed them to govern his

substantial conduct: he had the consciousness of having done right by

his fortunate friend; or, as he told himself, "his metal had given a

better ring than he would have sworn to beforehand." For Hans had

always said that in point of virtue he was a \_dilettante\_: which meant

that he was very fond of it in other people, but if he meddled with it

himself he cut a poor figure. Perhaps in reward of his good behavior he

gave his tongue the more freedom; and he was too fully possessed by the

notion of Deronda's happiness to have a conception of what he was

feeling about Gwendolen, so that he spoke of her without hesitation.

"When did you come down, Hans?" said Deronda, joining him in the

grounds where he was making a study of the requisite bank and trees.

"Oh, ten days ago; before the time Sir Hugo fixed. I ran down with Rex

Gascoigne and stayed at the rectory a day or two. I'm up in all the

gossip of these parts; I know the state of the wheelwright's interior,

and have assisted at an infant school examination. Sister Anna, with

the good upper lip, escorted me, else I should have been mobbed by

three urchins and an idiot, because of my long hair and a general

appearance which departs from the Pennicote type of the beautiful.

Altogether, the village is idyllic. Its only fault is a dark curate

with broad shoulders and broad trousers who ought to have gone into the

heavy drapery line. The Gascoignes are perfect--besides being related

to the Vandyke duchess. I caught a glimpse of her in her black robes at

a distance, though she doesn't show to visitors."

"She was not staying at the rectory?" said Deronda.

"No; but I was taken to Offendene to see the old house, and as a

consequence I saw the duchess' family. I suppose you have been there

and know all about them?"

"Yes, I have been there," said Deronda, quietly.

"A fine old place. An excellent setting for a widow with romantic

fortunes. And she seems to have had several romances. I think I have

found out that there was one between her and my friend Rex."

"Not long before her marriage, then?" said Deronda, really interested,

"for they had only been a year at Offendene. How came you to know

anything of it?"

"Oh--not ignorant of what it is to be a miserable devil, I learn to

gloat on the signs of misery in others. I found out that Rex never goes

to Offendene, and has never seen the duchess since she came back; and

Miss Gascoigne let fall something in our talk about charade-acting--for

I went through some of my nonsense to please the young ones--something

that proved to me that Rex was once hovering about his fair cousin

close enough to get singed. I don't know what was her part in the

affair. Perhaps the duke came in and carried her off. That is always

the way when an exceptionally worthy young man forms an attachment. I

understand now why Gascoigne talks of making the law his mistress and

remaining a bachelor. But these are green resolves. Since the duke did

not get himself drowned for your sake, it may turn out to be for my

friend Rex's sake. Who knows?"

"Is it absolutely necessary that Mrs. Grandcourt should marry again?"

said Deronda, ready to add that Hans's success in constructing her

fortunes hitherto had not been enough to warrant a new attempt.

"You monster!" retorted Hans, "do you want her to wear weeds for \_you\_

all her life--burn herself in perpetual suttee while you are alive and

merry?"

Deronda could say nothing, but he looked so much annoyed that Hans

turned the current of his chat, and when he was alone shrugged his

shoulders a little over the thought that there really had been some

stronger feeling between Deronda and the duchess than Mirah would like

to know of. "Why didn't she fall in love with me?" thought Hans,

laughing at himself. "She would have had no rivals. No woman ever

wanted to discuss theology with me."

No wonder that Deronda winced under that sort of joking with a

whip-lash. It touched sensibilities that were already quivering with

the anticipation of witnessing some of that pain to which even Hans's

light words seemed to give more reality:--any sort of recognition by

another giving emphasis to the subject of our anxiety. And now he had

come down with the firm resolve that he would not again evade the

trial. The next day he rode to Offendene. He had sent word that he

intended to call and to ask if Gwendolen could receive him; and he

found her awaiting him in the old drawing-room where some chief crises

of her life had happened. She seemed less sad than he had seen her

since her husband's death; there was no smile on her face, but a placid

self-possession, in contrast with the mood in which he had last found

her. She was all the more alive to the sadness perceptible in Deronda;

and they were no sooner seated--he at a little distance opposite to

her--than she said:

"You were afraid of coming to see me, because I was so full of grief

and despair the last time. But I am not so today. I have been sorry

ever since. I have been making it a reason why I should keep up my hope

and be as cheerful as I can, because I would not give you any pain

about me."

There was an unwonted sweetness in Gwendolen's tone and look as she

uttered these words that seemed to Deronda to infuse the utmost cruelty

into the task now laid upon him. But he felt obliged to make his answer

a beginning of the task.

"I \_am\_ in some trouble to-day," he said, looking at her rather

mournfully; "but it is because I have things to tell you which you will

almost think it a want of confidence on my part not to have spoken of

before. They are things affecting my own life--my own future. I shall

seem to have made an ill return to you for the trust you have placed in

me--never to have given you an idea of events that make great changes

for me. But when we have been together we have hardly had time to enter

into subjects which at the moment were really less pressing to me than

the trials you have been going through." There was a sort of timid

tenderness in Deronda's deep tones, and he paused with a pleading look,

as if it had been Gwendolen only who had conferred anything in her

scenes of beseeching and confession.

A thrill of surprise was visible in her. Such meaning as she found in

his words had shaken her, but without causing fear. Her mind had flown

at once to some change in his position with regard to Sir Hugo and Sir

Hugo's property. She said, with a sense of comfort from Deronda's way

of asking her pardon--

"You never thought of anything but what you could do to help me; and I

was so troublesome. How could you tell me things?"

"It will perhaps astonish you," said Deronda, "that I have only quite

lately known who were my parents."

Gwendolen was not astonished: she felt the more assured that her

expectations of what was coming were right. Deronda went on without

check.

"The reason why you found me in Italy was that I had gone there to

learn that--in fact, to meet my mother. It was by her wish that I was

brought up in ignorance of my parentage. She parted with me after my

father's death, when I was a little creature. But she is now very ill,

and she felt that the secrecy ought not to be any longer maintained.

Her chief reason had been that she did not wish me to know I was a Jew."

"\_A Jew\_!" Gwendolen exclaimed, in a low tone of amazement, with an

utterly frustrated look, as if some confusing potion were creeping

through her system.

Deronda colored, and did not speak, while Gwendolen, with her eyes

fixed on the floor, was struggling to find her way in the dark by the

aid of various reminiscences. She seemed at last to have arrived at

some judgment, for she looked up at Deronda again and said, as if

remonstrating against the mother's conduct--

"What difference need that have made?"

"It has made a great difference to me that I have known it," said

Deronda, emphatically; but he could not go on easily--the distance

between her ideas and his acted like a difference of native language,

making him uncertain what force his words would carry.

Gwendolen meditated again, and then said feelingly, "I hope there is

nothing to make you mind. \_You\_ are just the same as if you were not a

Jew."

She meant to assure him that nothing of that external sort could affect

the way in which she regarded him, or the way in which he could

influence her. Deronda was a little helped by this misunderstanding.

"The discovery was far from being painful to me," he said, "I had been

gradually prepared for it, and I was glad of it. I had been prepared

for it by becoming intimate with a very remarkable Jew, whose ideas

have attracted me so much that I think of devoting the best part of my

life to some effort at giving them effect."

Again Gwendolen seemed shaken--again there was a look of frustration,

but this time it was mingled with alarm. She looked at Deronda with

lips childishly parted. It was not that she had yet connected his words

with Mirah and her brother, but that they had inspired her with a

dreadful presentiment of mountainous travel for her mind before it

could reach Deronda's. Great ideas in general which she had attributed

to him seemed to make no great practical difference, and were not

formidable in the same way as these mysteriously-shadowed particular

ideas. He could not quite divine what was going on within her; he could

only seek the least abrupt path of disclosure.

"That is an object," he said, after a moment, "which will by-and-by

force me to leave England for some time--for some years. I have

purposes which will take me to the East."

Here was something clearer, but all the more immediately agitating.

Gwendolen's lips began to tremble. "But you will come back?" she said,

tasting her own tears as they fell, before she thought of drying them.

Deronda could not sit still. He rose, and went to prop himself against

the corner of the mantel-piece, at a different angle from her face. But

when she had pressed her handkerchief against her cheeks, she turned

and looked up at him, awaiting an answer.

"If I live," said Deronda--"\_some time\_."

They were both silent. He could not persuade himself to say more unless

she led up to it by a question; and she was apparently meditating

something that she had to say.

"What are you going to do?" she asked, at last, very mildly. "Can I

understand the ideas, or am I too ignorant?"

"I am going to the East to become better acquainted with the condition

of my race in various countries there," said Deronda, gently--anxious

to be as explanatory as he could on what was the impersonal part of

their separateness from each other. "The idea that I am possessed with

is that of restoring a political existence to my people, making them a

nation again, giving them a national center, such as the English have,

though they too are scattered over the face of the globe. That is a

task which presents itself to me as a duty; I am resolved to begin it,

however feebly. I am resolved to devote my life to it. At the least, I

may awaken a movement in other minds, such as has been awakened in my

own."

There was a long silence between them. The world seemed getting larger

round poor Gwendolen, and she more solitary and helpless in the midst.

The thought that he might come back after going to the East, sank

before the bewildering vision of these wild-stretching purposes in

which she felt herself reduced to a mere speck. There comes a terrible

moment to many souls when the great movements of the world, the larger

destinies of mankind, which have lain aloof in newspapers and other

neglected reading, enter like an earthquake into their own lives--where

the slow urgency of growing generations turns into the tread of an

invading army or the dire clash of civil war, and gray fathers know

nothing to seek for but the corpses of their blooming sons, and girls

forget all vanity to make lint and bandages which may serve for the

shattered limbs of their betrothed husbands. Then it is as if the

Invisible Power that had been the object of lip-worship and

lip-resignation became visible, according to the imagery of the Hebrew

poet, making the flames his chariot, and riding on the wings of the

wind, till the mountains smoke and the plains shudder under the rolling

fiery visitations. Often the good cause seems to lie prostrate under

the thunder of relenting force, the martyrs live reviled, they die, and

no angel is seen holding forth the crown and the palm branch. Then it

is that the submission of the soul to the Highest is tested, and even

in the eyes of frivolity life looks out from the scene of human

struggle with the awful face of duty, and a religion shows itself which

is something else than a private consolation.

That was the sort of crisis which was at this moment beginning in

Gwendolen's small life: she was for the first time feeling the pressure

of a vast mysterious movement, for the first time being dislodged from

her supremacy in her own world, and getting a sense that her horizon

was but a dipping onward of an existence with which her own was

revolving. All the troubles of her wifehood and widowhood had still

left her with the implicit impression which had accompanied her from

childhood, that whatever surrounded her was somehow specially for her,

and it was because of this that no personal jealousy had been roused in

her relation to Deronda: she could not spontaneously think of him as

rightfully belonging to others more than to her. But here had come a

shock which went deeper than personal jealousy--something spiritual and

vaguely tremendous that thrust her away, and yet quelled all her anger

into self-humiliation.

There had been a long silence. Deronda had stood still, even thankful

for an interval before he needed to say more, and Gwendolen had sat

like a statue with her wrists lying over each other and her eyes

fixed--the intensity of her mental action arresting all other

excitation. At length something occurred to her that made her turn her

face to Deronda and say in a trembling voice--

"Is that all you can tell me?"

The question was like a dart to him. "The Jew whom I mentioned just

now," he answered, not without a certain tremor in his tones too, "the

remarkable man who has greatly influenced my mind, has not perhaps been

totally unheard of by you. He is the brother of Miss Lapidoth, whom you

have often heard sing."

A great wave of remembrance passed through Gwendolen and spread as a

deep, painful flush over neck and face. It had come first at the scene

of that morning when she had called on Mirah, and heard Deronda's voice

reading, and been told, without then heeding it, that he was reading

Hebrew with Mirah's brother.

"He is very ill--very near death now," Deronda went on, nervously, and

then stopped short. He felt that he must wait. Would she divine the

rest?

"Did she tell you that I went to her?" said Gwendolen, abruptly,

looking up at him.

"No," said Deronda. "I don't understand you."

She turned away her eyes again, and sat thinking. Slowly the color

dried out of face and neck, and she was as pale as before--with that

almost withered paleness which is seen after a painful flush. At last

she said--without turning toward him--in a low, measured voice, as if

she were only thinking aloud in preparation for future speech--

"But \_can\_ you marry?"

"Yes," said Deronda, also in a low voice. "I am going to marry."

At first there was no change in Gwendolen's attitude: she only began to

tremble visibly; then she looked before her with dilated eyes, as at

something lying in front of her, till she stretched her arms out

straight, and cried with a smothered voice--

"I said I should be forsaken. I have been a cruel woman. And I am

forsaken."

Deronda's anguish was intolerable. He could not help himself. He seized

her outstretched hands and held them together, and kneeled at her feet.

She was the victim of his happiness.

"I am cruel, too, I am cruel," he repeated, with a sort of groan,

looking up at her imploringly.

His presence and touch seemed to dispel a horrible vision, and she met

his upward look of sorrow with something like the return of

consciousness after fainting. Then she dwelt on it with that growing

pathetic movement of the brow which accompanies the revival of some

tender recollection. The look of sorrow brought back what seemed a very

far-off moment--the first time she had ever seen it, in the library at

the Abbey. Sobs rose, and great tears fell fast. Deronda would not let

her hands go--held them still with one of his, and himself pressed her

handkerchief against her eyes. She submitted like a half-soothed child,

making an effort to speak, which was hindered by struggling sobs. At

last she succeeded in saying, brokenly--

"I said--I said--it should be better--better with me--for having known

you."

His eyes too were larger with tears. She wrested one of her hands from

his, and returned his action, pressing his tears away.

"We shall not be quite parted," he said. "I will write to you always,

when I can, and you will answer?"

He waited till she said in a whisper, "I will try."

"I shall be more with you than I used to be," Deronda said with gentle

urgency, releasing her hands and rising from his kneeling posture. "If

we had been much together before, we should have felt our differences

more, and seemed to get farther apart. Now we can perhaps never see

each other again. But our minds may get nearer."

Gwendolen said nothing, but rose too, automatically. Her withered look

of grief, such as the sun often shines on when the blinds are drawn up

after the burial of life's joy, made him hate his own words: they

seemed to have the hardness of easy consolation in them. She felt that

he was going, and that nothing could hinder it. The sense of it was

like a dreadful whisper in her ear, which dulled all other

consciousness; and she had not known that she was rising.

Deronda could not speak again. He thought that they must part in

silence, but it was difficult to move toward the parting, till she

looked at him with a sort of intention in her eyes, which helped him.

He advanced to put out his hand silently, and when she had placed hers

within it, she said what her mind had been laboring with--

"You have been very good to me. I have deserved nothing. I will

try--try to live. I shall think of you. What good have I been? Only

harm. Don't let me be harm to \_you\_. It shall be the better for me--"

She could not finish. It was not that she was sobbing, but that the

intense effort with which she spoke made her too tremulous. The burden

of that difficult rectitude toward him was a weight her frame tottered

under.

She bent forward to kiss his cheek, and he kissed hers. Then they

looked at each other for an instant with clasped hands, and he turned

away.

When he was quite gone, her mother came in and found her sitting

motionless.

"Gwendolen, dearest, you look very ill," she said, bending over her and

touching her cold hands.

"Yes, mamma. But don't be afraid. I am going to live," said Gwendolen,

bursting out hysterically.

Her mother persuaded her to go to bed, and watched by her. Through the

day and half the night she fell continually into fits of shrieking, but

cried in the midst of them to her mother, "Don't be afraid. I shall

live. I mean to live."

After all, she slept; and when she waked in the morning light, she

looked up fixedly at her mother and said tenderly, "Ah, poor mamma! You

have been sitting up with me. Don't be unhappy. I shall live. I shall

be better."

CHAPTER LXX.

In the checkered area of human experience the seasons are all mingled

as in the golden age: fruit and blossom hang together; in the same

moment the sickle is reaping and the seed is sprinkled; one tends the

green cluster and another treads the winepress. Nay, in each of our

lives harvest and spring-time are continually one, until himself

gathers us and sows us anew in his invisible fields.

Among the blessings of love there is hardly one more exquisite than the

sense that in uniting the beloved life to ours we can watch over its

happiness, bring comfort where hardship was, and over memories of

privation and suffering open the sweetest fountains of joy. Deronda's

love for Mirah was strongly imbued with that blessed protectiveness.

Even with infantine feet she had begun to tread among thorns; and the

first time he had beheld her face it had seemed to him the girlish

image of despair.

But now she was glowing like a dark-tipped yet delicate ivory-tinted

flower in the warm sunlight of content, thinking of any possible grief

as part of that life with Deronda, which she could call by no other

name than good. And he watched the sober gladness which gave new beauty

to her movements; and her habitual attitudes of repose, with a delight

which made him say to himself that it was enough of personal joy for

him to save her from pain. She knew nothing of Hans's struggle or of

Gwendolen's pang; for after the assurance that Deronda's hidden love

had been for her, she easily explained Gwendolen's eager solicitude

about him as part of a grateful dependence on his goodness, such as she

herself had known. And all Deronda's words about Mrs. Grandcourt

confirmed that view of their relation, though he never touched on it

except in the most distant manner. Mirah was ready to believe that he

had been a rescuing angel to many besides herself. The only wonder was,

that she among them all was to have the bliss of being continually by

his side.

So, when the bridal veil was around Mirah it hid no doubtful

tremors--only a thrill of awe at the acceptance of a great gift which

required great uses. And the velvet canopy never covered a more goodly

bride and bridegroom, to whom their people might more wisely wish

offspring; more truthful lips never touched the sacrament

marriage-wine; the marriage-blessing never gathered stronger promise of

fulfillment than in the integrity of their mutual pledge. Naturally,

they were married according to the Jewish rite. And since no religion

seems yet to have demanded that when we make a feast we should invite

only the highest rank of our acquaintances, few, it is to be hoped,

will be offended to learn that among the guests at Deronda's little

wedding-feast was the entire Cohen family, with the one exception of

the baby who carried on her teething intelligently at home. How could

Mordecai have borne that those friends of his adversity should have

been shut out from rejoicing in common with him?

Mrs. Meyrick so fully understood this that she had quite reconciled

herself to meeting the Jewish pawnbroker, and was there with her three

daughters--all of them enjoying the consciousness that Mirah's marriage

to Deronda crowned a romance which would always make a sweet memory to

them. For which of them, mother or girls, had not had a generous part

in it--giving their best in feeling and in act to her who needed? If

Hans could have been there, it would have been better; but Mab had

already observed that men must suffer for being so inconvenient;

suppose she, Kate, and Amy had all fallen in love with Mr.

Deronda?--but being women they were not so ridiculous.

The Meyricks were rewarded for conquering their prejudices by hearing a

speech from Mr. Cohen, which had the rare quality among speeches of not

being quite after the usual pattern. Jacob ate beyond his years, and

contributed several small whinnying laughs as a free accompaniment of

his father's speech, not irreverently, but from a lively sense that his

family was distinguishing itself; while Adelaide Rebekah, in a new

Sabbath frock, maintained throughout a grave air of responsibility.

Mordecai's brilliant eyes, sunken in their large sockets, dwelt on the

scene with the cherishing benignancy of a spirit already lifted into an

aloofness which nullified only selfish requirements and left sympathy

alive. But continually, after his gaze had been traveling round on the

others, it returned to dwell on Deronda with a fresh gleam of trusting

affection.

The wedding-feast was humble, but Mirah was not without splendid

wedding-gifts. As soon as the betrothal had been known, there were

friends who had entertained graceful devices. Sir Hugo and Lady

Mallinger had taken trouble to provide a complete equipment for Eastern

travel, as well as a precious locket containing an inscription--"\_To

the bride of our dear Daniel Deronda all blessings. H. and L. M.\_" The

Klesmers sent a perfect watch, also with a pretty inscription.

But something more precious than gold and gems came to Deronda from the

neighborhood of Diplow on the morning of his marriage. It was a letter

containing these words:--

Do not think of me sorrowfully on your wedding-day. I have remembered

your words--that I may live to be one of the best of women, who

make others glad that they were born. I do not yet see how that can

be, but you know better than I. If it ever comes true, it will be

because you helped me. I only thought of myself, and I made you

grieve. It hurts me now to think of your grief. You must not grieve

any more for me. It is better--it shall be better with me because I

have known you.

GWENDOLEN GRANDCOURT.

The preparations for the departure of all three to the East began at

once; for Deronda could not deny Ezra's wish that they should set out

on the voyage forthwith, so that he might go with them, instead of

detaining them to watch over him. He had no belief that Ezra's life

would last through the voyage, for there were symptoms which seemed to

show that the last stage of his malady had set in. But Ezra himself had

said, "Never mind where I die, so that I am with you."

He did not set out with them. One morning early he said to Deronda, "Do

not quit me to-day. I shall die before it is ended."

He chose to be dressed and sit up in his easy chair as usual, Deronda

and Mirah on each side of him, and for some hours he was unusually

silent, not even making the effort to speak, but looking at them

occasionally with eyes full of some restful meaning, as if to assure

them that while this remnant of breathing-time was difficult, he felt

an ocean of peace beneath him.

It was not till late in the afternoon, when the light was falling, that

he took a hand of each in his and said, looking at Deronda, "Death is

coming to me as the divine kiss which is both parting and

reunion--which takes me from your bodily eyes and gives me full

presence in your soul. Where thou goest, Daniel, I shall go. Is it not

begun? Have I not breathed my soul into you? We shall live together."

He paused, and Deronda waited, thinking that there might be another

word for him. But slowly and with effort Ezra, pressing on their hands,

raised himself and uttered in Hebrew the confession of the divine

Unity, which long for generations has been on the lips of the dying

Israelite.

He sank back gently into his chair, and did not speak again. But it was

some hours before he had ceased to breathe, with Mirah's and Deronda's

arms around him.

"Nothing is here for tears, nothing to wail

Or knock the breast; no weakness, no contempt,

Dispraise or blame; nothing but well and fair,

And what may quiet us in a death so noble."